This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

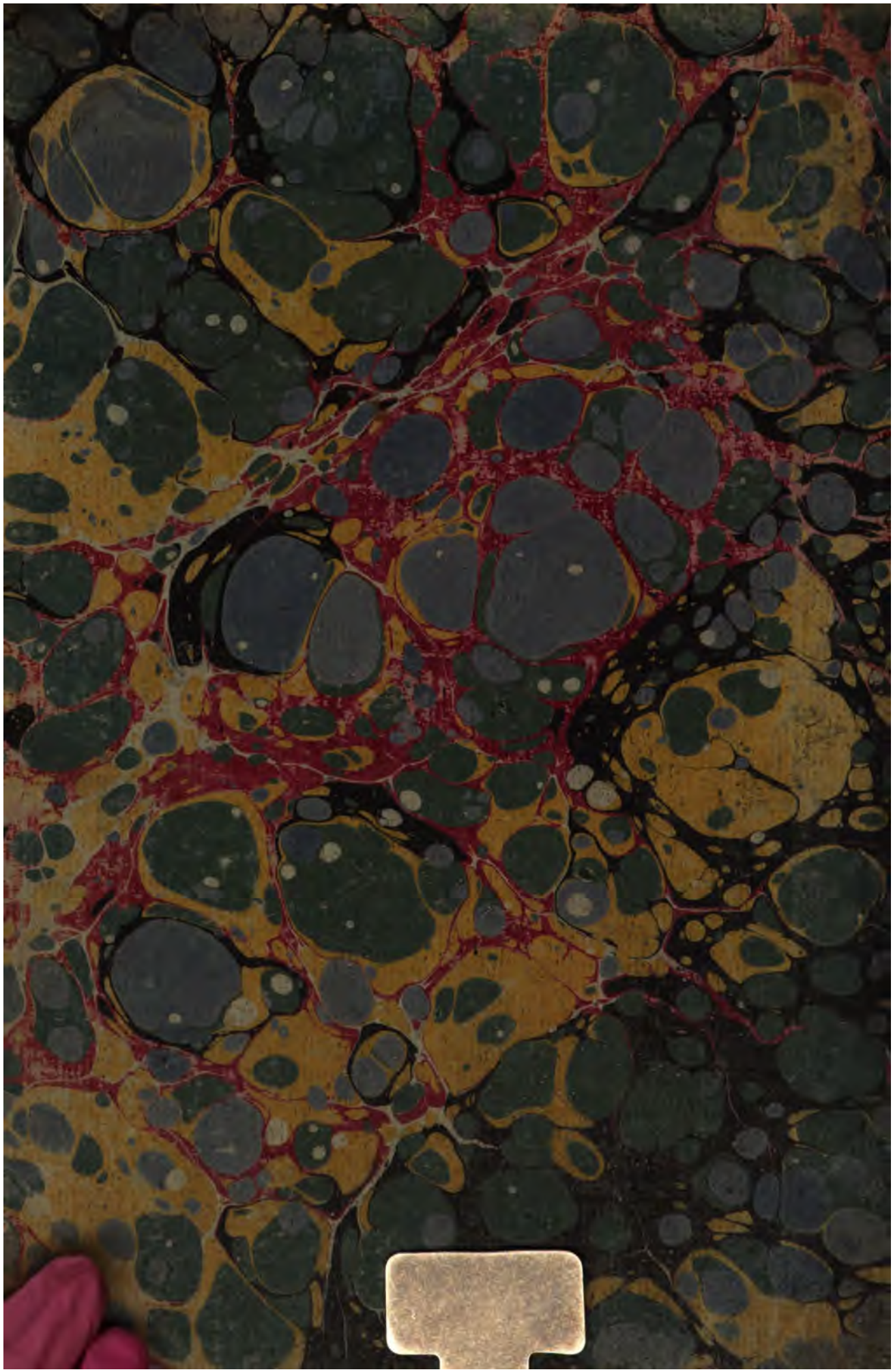
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

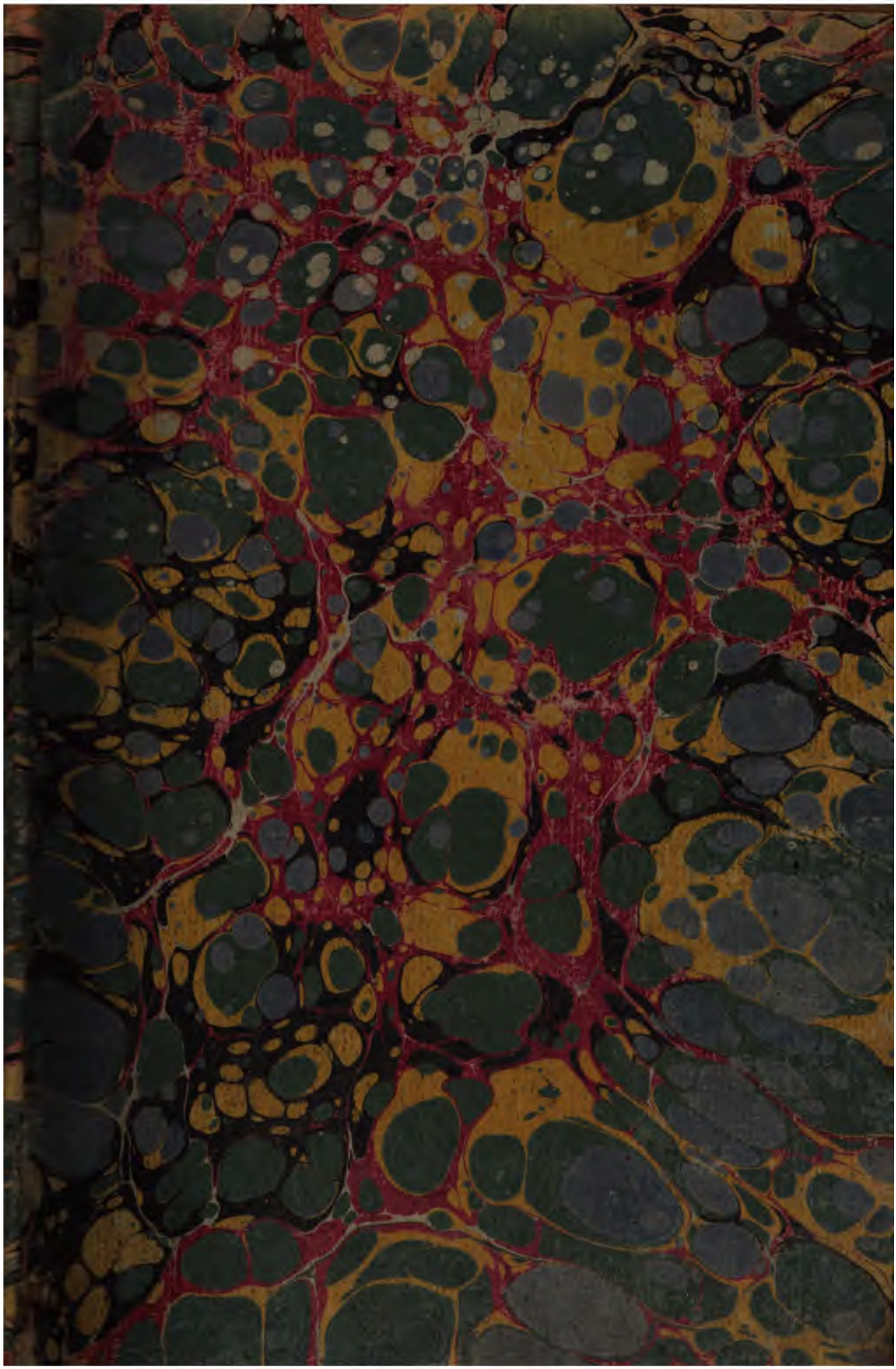
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`





30/.

203 h. 272.

387 PINTO (Fernão Mendes) Historia Oriental de las Peregrinaciones, traduzida en Castellano por Herrera Maldonado, sm. folio, *calf, fine copy*, 30*s*
*Valencia*, 1645

388 ——— Voyages and Adventures, done into English by H(enry) C(ogan), sm. folio, 30*s* 1653

The extraordinary and amusing adventures related by this traveller have procured for him the reputation of being the Prince of Longbow-men, and sometime the name of the "*Prince of Liars.*" Modern research has established Pinto's character for veracity. The English translation contains an Apologetical Defence.

# THE VOYAGES AND ADVENTURES, OF Fernand Mendez Pinto,

A *Portugal*: During his

# TRAVELS

for the ſpace of one and twenty years in The Kingdoms of Ethiopia, China, Tartaria, Cauchin-china, Calaminham, Siam, Pegu, Japan, and a great part of the Eaſt-Indiaes.

With a *Relation* and *Deſcription* of moſt of the Places thereof; their Religion, Laws, Riches, Cuſtoms, and Government in time of Peace and War.

Where he five times ſuffered Shipwrack, was ſixteen times ſold, and thirteen times made a Slave.

Written Originally by himſelf in the Portugal Tongue, and Dedicated to the *Majeſty of Philip King of Spain.*

Done into Engliſh by *H. C.* Gent.

*LONDON*,
Printed by *J. Macock*, for *Henry Cripps*, and *Lodowick Lloyd*, and are to be ſold at their ſhop in *Popes head Alley* neer *Lumbar-Street*. 1653.

203. h. 272

TO THE

Right Noble Lord, and worthy of all Honor,

# William, Earl of Strafford,

Vicount *Wentworth*, Baron *Wentworth* of *Wentworth*, *Woodhouſe*, *Newmarſh*, *Overſley*, and *Raby*.

*My Lord*,

PUrchas, a Writer of good credit here in *England*, gives this teſtimony of my Author, that no man before him, to his knowledg, hath ſpoken ſo much, and ſo truly, of thoſe Oriental parts of the World, which are ſo little known to us, as he hath done: And that too, not upon hearſay, and report, but for the moſt part as an ocular Witneſs, and perſonal Actor, of, and in, all that he hath related, which is ſo full of Variety, and ſtrange Occurrences, that, as another Writer affirms, the like will hardly be met withall elſewhere: So that the moſt curious Wits, which delight in reading of rare Books, will, I beleeve, find all the ſatisfaction they can deſire in this ſame of his; where, without ſo much as ſtirring out of their Studies, or runnin[illegible]er of Shipwrack, they may traverſe the Seas[illegible]d

lieſt Provinces of the World, entertain themſelves with ſtupendious and unheard-of things, conſider in the manner of thoſe peoples living, whom we term *Barbarians*, their Laws, their Riches, their Government in time of Peace and War; and, in a word, repreſent unto themſelves, as in a picture, all that is moſt exquiſite, and of greateſt marvel, in the extent of *Europe*, *Affrica*, and *Aſia*. Theſe, together with many other remarkable matters, are contained in this Work, which I have taken the preſumption to preſent unto your Honor, being invited thereunto by the example of two Tranſlators of it into the *Spaniſh* and *French* Tongues, whereof the one dedicated it to the Archbiſhop of *Toledo* in *Spain*, and the other to the Cardinal *Richelieu* of *France*, both of them, the moſt eminent perſons, of their time, in thoſe Kingdoms: And with whom your Honor may juſtly be ranked, eſpecially in reſpect of the Nobility of your Birth, as well as for the great Hope, which your many preſent Vertues, and Abilities, do give unto the World, of your future Worth, and Eſtimation. Be pleaſed then, my Lord, to receive it favorably, as a tender of the great deſire I have to appear in all occaſions,

*Your Honors moſt humble,*

*and devoted Servant,*

HENRY COGAN.

# AN Apologetical Defence OF FERNAND MENDEZ PINTO HIS HISTORY.

*IF it be true that Authors do render themſelvs commendable by their Works, there is no doubt, but that* Fernand Mendez Pinto *hath by this ſame of his juſtly acquired ſuch reputation, as will make him be eſteemed for ever. He was a man of a ſtrong wit, and ſound judgment, and indued with a moſt rare, and extraordinary memory, as appears in the Relation of his Voyages and Adventures; which ſufficiently teſtifie how far he excelled therein, retaining in his remembrance an infinitie of ſuch ſtrange and wonderful things, (whereof to his coſt he was for the moſt part an eye witneſs) as many great Perſonages of* Aſia *and* Europe *took no little delight in hearing him recount them; eſpecially* Philip *the ſecond King of* Spain, *who at ſeveral times ſpent many houres in diſcourſing with him there about, which queſtionleſs he would never have done, being a Prince, in the opinion of all the world, of a moſt exact and profound judgment, had he not been verily perſwaded that what he delivered was true. Nevertheleſs ſince there may be ſome who in regard of the ſtupendious things which he delivers, will ſeem to give no credit thereunto; I have held it very neceſſary to cite here many ſeveral authentick Authors, that in their writings have confirmed the verity of his Narrations, as followeth.*

*Of the Riches and Grandeurs of theſe Orientall Countries, and perticularly of the Kingdome of* China, Nicholas Trigault, *the Jeſuite treates diffuſedly in his book intituled,* De Chriſtiana expeditione apud Sinas, *in the firſt part thereof, principally in the 6th Chapter.* Gaſper de la Cruz, *in his book of* China, *the third, fourth, fifth, and nineteen Chapters.* John de Lucena, *in the life of* Francis Xavier *the Jeſuite, in the tenth Book, from the ſeventeenth to the twenty fourth Chapter.* Anthony Galuan *in his Treatiſe of the Diſcovery of thoſe Parts, fol. 39. and in his Hiſtory of* Florida. Mendoza, *in his Hiſtory of* China, *the ſecond Chapter of the third Book.* Trigault, *in his firſt Book, the ſeventh Chapter, Palatii Regis. Doctor* Babia, *in the third part of his Pontifical Hiſtory, the 18 Chapter, in the life of* Sixtus Quintus. Boterus, *in his Relations.* John de Sanctis, *in his Orientall Æthiopian Hiſtory, Chap. 8. and in the Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory of* Rebulloſa. Ribadeneyra, Mathew, *and* Lewes Guſman, *in divers Chapters of the Orientall Hiſtories.* Joſephus de Acoſta, Peter *of* Leon, Zarate, Michael Vazquez de Padilla, Peter Martyr, Ceſas *Biſhop of* Chiapa, Franceſco Lopez de Gomorra, Hieroſme du Pré, Ferdinand de Cordoua, Hieroſme Romain, Illeſcas, Antonio

Antonio de Herrera, Pineda, Prudentius de Sandobal, *and* Garcilaſſo *in divers places of his Royal Commentaries, and in the* 20th *Chapter of his third Book.*

*Touching that which* Fernand Mendez *writes of the Governors of thoſe Kingdomes, of the ſtrict obſervation of Juſtice, of the Names of the Judges, Vice-Royes, Magiſtrates, Captains, Governours, and Miniſters of the State,* Boterus, *in his univerſal Relations, ſayes the ſame.* Trigault, *in divers places, particularly in the ſixth Chapter of the firſt book,* de Senenſis Reipublicæ adminiſtratione. Gaſpar de la Cruz, *in the* 16. 17. 18. *and* 19. *Chapters.* Babia, *in the third page of his Pontifical book, in the life of* Sixtus Quintus. Lucena, *in the life of* Francis Xavier, *the tenth book.* Mendoza, *in the ninth and tenth chapters of his third Book, and in many other Chapters of his new world.* Maſeus, *in his Oriental Hiſtory; and in the Letters of* China, *written by* Guerrier *the Jeſuit. Concerning the great number of priſons, and other particularities, the ſame may be ſeen at large in the Hiſtory of* China. Mendoza, *in the twelfth Chapter of his firſt book.* Gaſpar de la Cruz, *Chapter ninth and twenty ſecond.* Trigault, *in divers places of his Hiſtory.* Lucena, *in the twenty firſt Chapter of his tenth book. and* Alexander Valignario, *in his Letters miſsive.*

*That which he ſpeaks of the great multitudes of people that are in thoſe Countries, read in* Lucena, *the nineteenth Chapter of his tenth Book.* Trigault, *in ſundry places, chiefly in the ſecond Chapter,* de nomine, ſitu, et magnitudine Regni Sinarum.

Fernand Mendez *in the eighty ninth Chapter writes of a Temple built upon a great company of pillars; Read* de la Cruz, *the ſeventh Chapter.* Mendoza, *the third Chapter of his firſt Book.* Maſeus; Anthony de *St Romain, and* George Bruno, *in his book of the City of the World.*

*In this Hiſtory are ſet forth huge Statues of Braſs and Iron. See the firſt, third, fourth, fifth, Chapters of the firſt book of* Gaſper de la Cruz. Mendoza, *the ninth and tenth Chapters of his firſt Book. The ſecond Book of* Boterus, *in his relation of* Siam. Rebulloſa, *in his Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, fol.* 117. *and* 118. John de Santis, *in his Æthiopian Hiſtory, the ſeventh, and twelfth Chapters.* Lucena, *in the* 1. 6. 8. *and* 9. *Chapters of his ſeventh book.* Trigault, *in the ninth and eighteenth Chapters of his firſt Book.* Maſeus, *and S.* Romain, *in the* 90th *Chapter.* Mendoza, *in the ſeventh Chapter of his firſt Book, and in the fourteenth Chapter of his ſecond Part, as alſo in divers places of his Itinerary.* Lucena, *in the nineteenth Chapter of his nineteenth Book; and many other Authors.*

*Touching the manner of breeding and keeping of wilde Ducks in Rivers, mentioned in the* 97. *Chapter. See* De la Cruz, *the* 7. *and* 8. *Chapters.* Mendoza, *the* 21. *Chapter.* Trigault, *the ſecond chapter of his firſt Book; and divers others.*

*As for that which he writes of the Towns that are made on Rivers and the Sea, with an infinite company of ſhips in the* 98. *Chap. read* Lucena, *in the* 19. *chapter of his* 10. *Book.* Mendoza, *in his Itineraries the* 17. *chap.* De la Cruz, *in the* 8. *and* 12. *Chapters.* Trigault, *in the third Chapter of his firſt Book, Navium Copia.* Lucena, *in his firſt Book the* 19. *Chapter.*

*For ſo much as is ſpoken of the Wall which ſeparates* Tartaria *from* China: *See* Lucena, *in the* 21. *Chapter of his tenth Book.* Gaſper de la Cruz, *the ſecond and fourth Chapters.* Trigault, *in the ſecond Chapter of his firſt Book, and in the* 12. *Chapter of his fifth Book.* Galvan, *in his Commentaries fol.* 70. Mendoza, *the firſt part, in the fifth chapter of his firſt book, and in the ſeventeenth chapter of the*

*ſecond*

*ſecond part.* Babia, *in the ſecond part of his Pontifical Hiſtory, chap.* 18. *and generally all that write of thoſe parts of* China.

*Concerning that which* Fernand *ſayes of the Treaſure of the Dead, read* Lucean, *in the eighth chapter of the ſeventh Book.* De la Cruz, *and* Mendoza. Paulus Jovius, *in his Hiſtory of the Turks. But that which* Paſſavinus *delivers in the Deſcription of the* Perſians, *and* Belorus, *in his Chronologie of the Kings of* Perſia, *is yet a greater mervel. The like do* Celius *and* Auguſtinus Corion *write of the War of the* Cimbrians, *wherein ſuch an infinite number of* Saracens *were ſlain, neer to* Marſeilles, *as they made up the fences of their fields with the bones of them.* Anthony Bouſſin *in his Decades of* Hungary.

*Our Author imploys many Chapters in the deſcription of the ſtately edifices of thoſe Eaſtern Countries; The ſame may be ſeen in all the other Writers, that intreat of thoſe parts of* Aſia, *who ſet them forth ſtrangely rich and great.* Lucena, *in the fifth Book of the life of* Frances Xavier. *Father* Lewis *in his Letters. The ſame* Lucena, *in the eighth Chapter.*

*For the innumerable company of Religious men and women (as they term them) which ſerve for the worſhip of their falſe Gods, it ſhall ſuffice to read* De la Cruz, *in his firſt Chapter.*

*And for a full clearing thereof read* Damien De Gois, *in the Hiſtory of King* Don Emanuel. Maſeus, *in his eleventh and fourteenth Books.* S^t^ Romain, *and* Trigault. *As alſo for the removing of all doubt in the reading of thoſe things, as incridible, look on the ſixteenth Chapter of the Book of Preſter John, written by* Franceſco Alvarez. John de Sanctis, *in his Ethiopian Hiſtory, the* 17^th^ *Chapter.* Levis de Parama, de Origine Inquiſitionis, *the nineteenth Chapter of his ſecond Book, entituled* In ſexta ætate Mundi Razis, *in his Chronicle* Sancti Dominice, *folio* 299. Galvan, *in his Diſcoveries, folio* 70. Lucena, *in divers places of his Book.* Mendoza, *in the eighteenth, nineteenth, twentieth, and twenty third Chapters, and throughout his firſt and ſecond Books.* Gaſpar de la Cruz, *the fifth, ſeventh, and nineth Chapters.* Boterus, *in his Relations of* China, Narſingua, Japon, *and* Siam. Rebulloſa, *fol* 141. Leonard Abel *in his Relations.* Paul Maria, *in his Journey into* Egypt; *and many others.*

*Concerning the ſetting forth, ſumptuouſneſs, and magnificence of thoſe peoples Banquets; their Comedies, Feaſts, Dances, Muſick, and diverſity of Inſtruments; ſee* Lucena, *in the thirteenth Chapter of his tenth Book.* Mendoza, *in the twenty fourth and twenty eighth Chapters of his firſt Book; as alſo in the fourteenth and eightéenth Chapters of his third Book.* Trigault, *in the ſeventh Chapter of his firſt Book,* Conrinia. *Touching their Feaſts read* Maſeus, *in the ſixth Book of his Hiſtory,* S^t^ Romain *in his, and generally* Trigault, de expeditione apud Chinas.

*For the manner of their ſacrificing, ſee* de Sanctis, *in the eighth Chapter of his* Ethiophia. Damen de Gois, *in the Hiſtory of King* Emanuel. Mendoza, *in the twenty ſixt Chapter of his* Itenerary. Trigault, *throughout the whole tenth Chapter of his firſt Book.* Lucena, *in ſeveral places of his ſeventh Book.* De la Cruz, *the thirteenth Chapter.* Boterus, *in his Relations. The Maps of* Japon, *and* China. Mathew Ricio, S^t^ Romain, *and* Maſeus.

*In the* 116. *and* 117. *Chapters of the preſent Book, the Author treats of the Caſtle of* Nixiancoo, *for which peruſe* Trigault, de Chriſtiana expeditione, *the eleventh Chapter of his fourth Book.* Polenus, *in his Book of Stratagems.* Vegetius, de re militari; Vanitius, *and* Vaſionzelos.

*Touching that which* Fernand *ſpeaks of the* Chineſes, *their penances and mortifications in the Temple of* Tinagoogoo; *as alſo of their proceſſions, and the ſacrificing of themſelves there, reade* John de Sanctis, *in the eighth Chapter of his* Ethiopian *Hiſtory.* Mendoza, *in the twenty eighth Chapter of his Itinerary.* Trigault, *in the tenth Chapter of his firſt Book; and in the ſecond part of the Hiſtory of* China. Galvan, *in his diſcoveries, fol.* 56. Maſeus, S^t. Romain, Boterus, *and* Anthony de Govea, *in the Archbiſhop of* Goa *his Voyage.*

*Of that which is ſaid concerning the great number of Idols and Statues,* Mendoza *ſpeakes amply, in the ninth Chapter of his firſt Book, in the ſeventh Chapter of his ſecond Book, and in many other places;* de ſanctis, *in the ſecond part of his* Æthiopian *Hiſtory, the ſeventh Chapter.* Lucena, *throughout his whole ſeventh Book.* Trigault, *in the tenth Chapter of his firſt Book,* §. Idolorum multitudo. Rebulloſa; *from* folio 116. *to* folio 120. De la Cruz, *in many places of his Book.* Damien de Gois; Boterus, *in his relations of* Pegu: Babia, *in the third part of his Pontifall Hiſtory, the eighteenth Chapter,* In vita Sexti Quinti.

Fernand *makes a narration of certain men, whom he calls* Caloges, *and* Fingaos, *which have their feet round, like unto thoſe of Cows, and hands all over hairy; for the clearing of the truth whereof read* Galvan, *in his diſcoveries,* folio 32. *and* 72. Gaſpar de la Cruz, *the ſeventh Chapter.*

*Touching the tryumphant Arches, which they have in their ſtreets, together with their manner of accommodating, and inriching them, when as they ſolemniſed certain Feaſts, read* de la Cruz, *the ſeventh chapter.*

*Of the Univerſities, which they have in* China, *ſee* Trigault, *in the third and fifth Chapters of his firſt Book,* De Artibus apud Sinas liberalibus, ac Scientiis, &c. *And in another, entituled,* De Artibus apud Sinas mechanicis.

*For a Confirmation of that which our Author ſays of the ſtrange Ceremonies and Complements, uſed by them at their ſaluting one another, when they meet together by chance in the ſtreets, and in their viſits, read* Maſeus, *in the ſixth Book of his* Indian *Hiſtory,* folio 134. *beginning with theſe words,* Salutandi ritus miter plebeios, &c. *And* Mendoza, *in divers places of his Book declares the ſame.* Trigault, *in the ſeventh Chapter of his firſt Book, at the title,* De Sinarum ritibus non nullis, *deſcribes their manner of Salutations.* Babia, *in the third Part of his Pontifical Hiſtory, in the life of* Gregory *the thirteenth.*

*The Hiſtory of the King of* Bramaa, *together with his Victories and Conqueſts, may be found in the Relations of* Boterus. De la Cruz, *in the ſecond and fourth Chapters.* Maſeus, *and* S^t Romain.

*Of the entrance of the* Tartars *into* China, *and their beſieging of* Pequin: Boterus *in his Relations;* De la Cruz, *the fourth Chapter;* Paulus Jovius, Antonius Armenius, *and* Mathias de Micuy, *diſcourſe at large.*

*That which is written of the ſubverſion of the Provinces of* Cuy, *and* Sanſii, *and of the dolefull and dreadful events enſuing thereupon,* Gaſpar de la Cruz *hath ſpoken of ſufficiently in the* 29^th *Chapter of his Book.*

*As for that which* Fernand *ſays of their Gods,* Fatoquis, Amida, Xaca, Gizon, *and* Canom; *as alſo of the fooleries, dreams, and leaſings, which they recount of them; and of their original, and the reſpects and reverences they bear unto them; it may be all ſeen in the twelfth Book of* Maſeus *his* Indian *Hiſtory; and in the firſt and fourth Chapters of his Epiſtles.* Trigault, *in his firſt and ſecond Book.* Boterus, *in his Relations.* S^t Romain, *and many others.*

By

*By all this now is my Author throughly vindicated from all aſperſions of falſhood, that may be caſt upon this his Work, which, were it otherwiſe, and meerly deviſed, yet is it ſo full of variety, and of ſuch ſtrange, both Comick and Tragick Events, as cannot chuſe but delight far more then any* Romance, *or other of that kind. But being accompanyed with the truth, as I have ſufficiently proved, it will no doubt give all the ſatisfaction and content, that can be deſired of the Reader.*

# The Contents.


CHAP. I.

*IN what manner I paſt my youth in the Kingdom of* Portugal, *until my going to the* Indiaes. Fol. 1.

CHAP. II.

*My Departure from* Portugal *for the* Eaſt-Idiaes; *and my imbarquing there for the Straight of* Mecqua. 3

CHAP. III.

*Our travelling from* Mazua *by Land to the Mother of* Preſter John; *as alſo our re-imbarquing at the Port of* Arquico; *and that which befell us by the encounter of three* Turkiſh *Veſſels.* 5

CHAP. IV.

*A Mutiny happening in the Town of* Mocaa; *the occaſion thereof; that which befell thereupon, and by what means I was carryed to* Ormuz; *as alſo my ſailing from thence to* Goa; *and what ſucceſs I had in that Voyage.* 8.

CHAP. V.

Goncalo vas Cotinhoes *Treaty with the Queen of* Onor; *his aſſaulting of a* Turkiſh *Galley; and that which happened unto us as we were upon our return to* Goa. 11

CHAP. VI.

*What paſſed till ſuch time as* Pedro de Faria *arrived at* Malaca; *his receiving an Embaſſador from the King of* Batas, *with his ſending me to that King, and that which arrived unto me in that Voyage.* 14

CHAP. VII.

*What happened to me at* Panaiu, *with the King of* Batas *expedition againſt the Tyrant of* Achem, *and what he did after his Victory over him.* 18

CHAP. VIII.

*That which paſt between the King of* Batas *and me, until ſuch time as I imbarqued for* Malaca; *my arrival in the Kingdom of* Queda, *and my return from thence to* Malaca. 21

CHAP. IX.

*The arrival of an Embaſſador at the Fortreſs of* Malaca, *from the King of* Aaru *to the Captain thereof; his ſending me to the ſaid King, my coming to* Aaru, *and that which happened unto me after my departure from thence.* 26

CHAP. X.

*By what means I was carryed to the Town of* Siaca, *and that which befell me there; my going to* Malaca *with a* Mahometan *Merchant; and the Tyrant of* Achems *Army marching againſt the King of* Aaru.

CHAP. XI.

*The death of the King of* Aaru, *and the cruel juſtice that was executed on him by his Enemies; the going of his Queen to* Malaca, *and her reception there.* 33

CHAP. XII.

*The Queen of* Aaru's *departure from* Malaca, *her going to the King of* Jantana, *his ſummoning the Tyrant of* Achem *to reſtore the Kingdom of* Aaru; *and that which paſt between them thereupon.* 36


CHAP.

# The Contents.


CHAP. XLII.

*My departure to go to* Pan; *that which fortuned after my arrival there, with the murther of the King of* Pan, *and the cauſe thereof.* 39

CHAP. XLV.

*The misfortune that befell us at our entry into the River of* Luger; *our hiding our ſelves in a Wood, with that which happened unto us afterwards; and our return unto* Malaca. 42

CHAP. XV.

Antonio de Faria *his ſetting forth for the Iſle of* Aruan, *his arrival at the River of* Tinacoreu; *and that which befell us in this Voyage.* 46

CHAP. XVI.

Antonio de Faria's *arrival at the Bay of* Camoy, *where was the fiſhing of Pearls for the King of* China; *the relation made to him of the Iſle of* Aynan; *with that which happened to him by the means of a Renegado Pirate, and other ways.* 52

CHAP. XVII.

*The information that* Antonio de Faria *had of the Country; ſome paſſages betwixt him and the* Nautarel *of the Town; his going to the River of* Madel, *with his encountering a Pirate there, and that which paſſed between them.* 58

CHAP. XVIII.

*What* Antonio de Faria *did with the Captain of the Pirates Junck; that which paſt between him and the people of the Country; with our caſting away upon the Iſland of Thieves.* 61

CHAP. XIX.

*In what ſort we eſcaped miraculouſly out of this Iſland; our paſſage from thence to the River of* Xingrau; *our encountering with a* Chineſe *Pirate, and the agreement we made with him.* 65

CHAP. XX.

*Our encounter at Sea with eight* Portugals *very ſorely hurt, and* Antonio de Faria's *meeting and fighting with* Coia Acem *the Pirate.* 69

CHAP. XXI.

*What* Antonio de Faria *did after his Victory; his departure from the River of* Tinlau, *with his ill ſucceſs thereupon, and the ſuccor we met withall.* 73

CHAP. XXII.

Antonio de Faria *hath news of the five* Portugals *that were made Captives; his Letter to the* Mandarin *of* Nouday *about them, and his aſſaulting the ſaid Town.* 76

CHAP. XXIII.

Antonio de Faria's *Navigation till he came to the Port of* Liampoo; *his arrival, and gallant reception there by the* Portugals. 81

CHAP. XXIV.

Antonio de Faria *departs from* Liampoo *for to go and ſeek out the Iſland of* Calempluy; *the ſtrange things that we ſaw, and the hazard we ran in our Voyage thither.* 87

CHAP. XXV.

*Our arrival at the Iſland of* Calempluy, *with the deſcription thereof; what happened to* Antonio de Faria *in one of the Hermitages there, and how we were diſcovered.* 92

CHAP. XXVI.

*Our caſting away in the gulph of* Nanquin, *with all that befell us after this lamentable ſhipwrack.* 97


CHAP.

# The Contents.


CHAP. XXVII.

*Our arrival at the Town of* Taypor, *where we were made Priſoners; and ſo ſent to the City of* Nanquin. 103

CHAP. XXVIII.

*The Marvels of the City of* Nanquin; *our departure from thence towards* Pequin, *and that which happened unto us till we arrived at the Town of* Sempitay. 107

CHAP. XXIX.

*Our arrival at* Sempitay, *our encounter there with a Chriſtian woman; together with the original and foundation of the Empire of* China, *and who they were that firſt peopled it.* 112

CHAP. XXX.

*The foundation of the four chief Cities of* China; *together with which of the Kings of* China *it was that built the wall betwixt* China *and* Tartaria; *and many things that we ſaw as we paſt along.* 116

CHAP. XXXI.

*The order which is obſerved in the moving Towns, that are made upon the Rivers; and that which further befell us.* 122

CHAP. XXXII.

*Our arrival at the City of* Pequin; *with our impriſonment, and that which moreover happened unto us there; as alſo the great Majeſty of the Officers of their Court of Juſtice.* 125

CHAP. XXXIII.

*What paſt between us and the* Tanigores *of Mercy, with the great favor they did us; and a brief relation of the City of* Pequin, *where the King of* China *keeps his Court.* 131

CHAP. XXXIV.

*The order which is obſerved in the Feaſts that are made in certain Inns, and the ſtate which the* Chaems *of the two and thirty Univerſities keeps, with certain remarkable things in the City of* Pequin. 134

CHAP. XXXV.

*The Priſon of* Ximanguibaleu, *wherein thoſe are kept which have been condemned to ſerve at the reparations of the wall of* Tartaria; *and another Incloſure, called the Treaſure of the dead, with the revenues whereof this Priſon is maintained.* 137

CHAP. XXXVI.

*Of an Edifice ſcituated in the midſt of the River, wherein were the hundred and thirteen Chappels of the Kings of* China, *and the publique* Granaries *eſtabliſhed for the relief of the poor.* 142

CHAP. XXXVII.

*The great number of Officers and other people, which are in the King of* China's *Pallace; with our going to* Quincay *to accompliſh the time of our Exile, and what befell us there.* 144

CHAP. XXXVIII.

*A* Tartar *Commander enters with his Army into the Town of* Quincay, *and that which followed thereupon; with the* Nauticors *beſieging the Caſtle of* Nixiamcoo, *and the taking of it by the means of ſome of us* Portugals. 149

CHAP. XXXIX.

*The* Mitaquer *departs from the Caſtle of* Nixiamcoo, *and goes to the King of* Tartaria's *Camp before* Pequin; *with that which we ſaw till we arrived there; and the* Mitaquers *preſenting us unto the King.* 154

CHAP. XL.

*The King of* Tartaria's *raiſing his ſiege from before* Pequin *for to return into his Country; and that which paſſed until his arrival there.* 158


CHAP.

# The Contents.


CHAP. XLI.

*In what manner we were brought again before the King of* Tartaria, *with our departure from that Kingdom; and all that we saw and befell us in our Voyage, till our arrival at the Court of the King of* Chauchinchina. 160

CHAP. XLII.

*The reception of the* Tartarian *Embaſſador by the King of* Chauchinchina, *with the ſaid Kings going to the City of* Uzanguea, *and his triumphal entry thereinto.* 167

CHAP. XLIII.

*Our departure from the City of* Uzanguea, *and our adventures till our arrival at the Iſle of* Tanixumma, *with our going a ſhore there.* 170

CHAP. XLIV.

*The great Honor, which the* Nautaquin, *Lord of the Iſle, did to one of us for having ſeen him ſhoot with an Harquebuſe; and his ſending me to the King of* Bungo, *with that which paſſed till my arrival at this Court.* 172

CHAP. XLV.

*The great miſhap which befell the King of* Bungo's *ſon, with the extream danger that I was in for the ſame, and what followed thereupon.* 176

CHAP. XLVI.

*My curing the young Prince of* Bungo; *with my return to* Tanixumma, *and imbarquing there for* Liampoo; *and alſo that which happened to us on land after the ſhipwrack we ſuffered by the way thither.* 178

CHAP. XLVII.

*The carrying of us to the Town of* Pungor, *and preſenting us to the* Broquen, *Governor of the Kingdom, with that which enſued upon it.* 181

CHAP. XLVIII.

*The King of* Lequios *ſending a cruel ſentence againſt us to the* Broquen *of the Town where we were Priſoners, to the end he ſhould put it in execution; and that which further happened unto us till our arrival at* Liampoo. 184

CHAP. XLIX.

*My ſailing from* Liampoo *to* Malaca, *with the ſending me by the Capitão of the Fortreſs there to the* Chaubainham *as* Martibano; *and all that befell us in our Voyage thither.* 189

CHAP. L.

*The Continuance of our Voyage to the Bar of* Martibano, *and certain memorable particularities happening there.* 195

CHAP. LI.

*In what manner the* Chaubainha *rendered himſelf to the King of* Brama; *and the cruel proceeding againſt the Queen of* Martibano, *and the Ladies her attendants.* 201

CHAP. LII.

*In what manner the ſentence of death was executed on the perſon of the* Chaubainha, *King of* Martibano, Nilay Canteo *his wife, and an hundred and forty women; with that which the King of* Brama *did after his return to* Pegu. 205

CHAP. LIII.

*That which paſſed between the Queen of* Prom *and the King of* Brama, *together with the firſt aſſault that was given to the City, and the ſucceſs thereof.* 209

CHAP. LIV.

*The King of* Brama *his beſieging the Fortreſs of* Mieyeny, *with his going from thence to* Ava, *and that which paſſed there.* 282

CHAP. LV.

*Our going with the King of* Brama's *Embaſſador to the* Calaminham; *with the courſe which we held until we arrived at the Temple, or Pagode of* Tinagogogo; *and a deſcription thereof.* 215

CHAP. LVI.

*The great and ſumptuous Proceſſion made in this Pagode; together with their Sacrifices, and other particularities.* 218

CHAP. LVII.

*What we ſaw in the continuing of our Voyage, until we arrived at the City of* Timplan. 223


CHAP.

# The Contents.


CHAP. LVIII. *The Magnificent Reception of the King of* Braman *his Embaſſador, at the City of* Timplan; *and that which paſſed betwixt the* Calaminham, *and him.* 226

CHAP. LIX. *An ampli Relation of the Empire of* Calaminham, *and of the Kingdoms of* Pegu, *and* Bramas; *with the continuance of our Voyage, and what we ſaw during the ſame.* 241

CHAP. LX. *Our arrival at* Pegu, *with the death of the* Roolim *of* Mounay. 245

CHAP. LXI. *The Election of the new* Roolim *of* Mounay, *the grand* Talagrepo *of theſe* Gentiles *of the Kingdom of* Pegu. 248

CHAP. LXII. *In what manner the* Roolim *of* Mounay *was conducted to the Iſle of* Mounay, *and put into poſſeſſion of his Dignity.* 252

CHAP. LXIII. *A continuation of the ſucceſs which we had in this Voyage; with my departure from* Goa *to* Zunda, *and what paſſed during my abode there.* 255

CHAP. LXIV. *The expedition of the* Panguenram, *Emperor of* Jaoa, *and King of* Demaa, *againſt the King of* Paſſeruan; *and all that which paſſed in this War.* 258

CHAP. LXV. *The death of the King of* Demaa *by a very ſtrange accident, and that which arrived thereupon.* 263

CHAP. LXVI. *That which befell us until our departure towards the Port of* Zunda, *from whence we ſet ſail for* China, *and what afterwards happened unto us.* 266

CHAP. LXVII. *My paſſing from* Zunda *to* Siam, *where in the company of* Portugals *I went to the War of* Chyamay; *and that which the King of* Siam *did until he returned into his Kingdom, where his Queen poyſoned him.* 269

CHAP. LXVIII. *The lamentable death of the King of* Siam; *with certain illuſtrious and memorable things done by him during his life; and many other accidents, which arrived in that Kingdom.* 273

CHAP. LXIX. *The King of* Braman's *enterprize againſt the Kingdom of* Siam, *and that which paſt until his arrival at the City of* Odiaa, *with his beſieging of it, and all that enſued thereupon.* 278

CHAP. LXX. *The King of* Braman's *raiſing his ſiege from before the City of* Odiaa, *with a deſcription of the Kingdom of* Siam, *and the fertility thereof.* 283

CHAP. LXXI. *A continuation of that which happened in the Kingdom of* Pegu, *as well during the life, as after the death of the King of* Braman. 286

CHAP. LXXII. *That which arrived in the time of* Xemin de Saran, *and an abominable caſe that happened to* Diego Suarez, *together with the* Xemindooes *expedition againſt* Xemin de Saran, *and that which enſued thereupon.* 289

CHAP. LXXIII. *That which the* Xemindoo *did, after he was crowned King of* Pegu; *with the* Chanmigrema, *the King of* Braman's *Foſter-brothers marching againſt him with a great Army; and divers other memorable things.* 295

CHAP. LXXIV. *The finding of the* Xemindoo, *and bringing him to the King of* Braman; *with the manner of his execution and death; and other particularities concerning the ſame.* 301

CHAP. LXXV. *My imbarquing in the Kingdom of* Pegu *to go to* Malaca, *and from thence to* Japon; *with a ſtrange accident which arrived there.* 305

CHAP. LXXVI. *Our paſſing from the Town of* Fucheo *to the Port of* Hiamangoo, *and that which befell us there, together with my departure from* Malaca, *and arrival at* Goa. 310

CHAP. LXXVII. *Father* Belquiors *and my departure from the* Indies *to go to* Japon; *and that which befell us till my arrival at the Iſland of* Champeiloo. 312

CHAP. LXXVIII. *Our departure from the Iſland of* Champeiloo, *and our arrival at that of* Lampacau; *with a relation of two great diſaſters, which happened in* China *unto two* Portugal *Colonies; and of a ſtrange accident beſides that fell out in the Country.* 314

CHAP. LXXIX. *Our arrival in the Kingdom of* Bungo, *and that which paſt thereupon.* 318

CHAP. LXXX. *My reception by the King of* Bungo, *as Embaſſador from the* Vice-Roy *of the* Indies. 321

CHAP. LXXXI. *What paſt after our departure from* Zeqna, *till my arrival in the* Indies, *and from thence into the Kingdom of* Portugal. 323


THE

# THE
# Travels, Voyages & Adventures
## OF
# Ferdinand Mendez Pinto.

---

## CHAP. I.

### *After what manner I paſt my Youth in the Kingdom of* Portugal, *until my going to the Indiaes.*

SO often as I repreſent unto my ſelf the great and continual Travels that S. I.
have accompanied me from my birth, and amidſt the which I have ſpent my firſt years, I find that I have a great deal of reaſon to complain of Fortune, for that ſhe ſeemeth to have taken a particular care to perſecute me, and to make me feel that which is moſt inſupportable in her, as if her glory had no other foundation then her cruelty. For not content to have made me be born, and to live miſerably in my Country during my youth, ſhe conducted me, notwithſtanding the fear I had of the dangers that menaced me, to the *Eaſt-Indiaes*, where inſtead of the relief which I went thither to ſeek, ſhe made me find an increaſe of my pains, according to the increaſe of my age. Since then it hath pleaſed God to deliver me from ſo many dangers, and to protect me from the fury of that adverſe Fortune, for to bring me into a Port of ſafety and aſſurance, I ſee that I have not ſo much cauſe to complain of my Travels paſt, as I have to render him thanks for the benefits which until now I have received of him, ſeeing that by his divine bounty he hath preſerved my life, to the end I might have means to leave this rude and unpoliſhed Diſcourſe unto my children for a memorial and an inheritance. For my intention is no other but to write it for them, that they may behold what ſtrange fortunes I have run for the ſpace of one and twenty years, during the which I was thirteen times a captive, and ſeventeen times ſold in the *Indiaes*, in *Æthiopia*, in *Arabia*, in *China*, in *Tartaria*, in *Madagaſcar*, in *Sumatra*, and in divers other Kingdoms and Provinces of that Oriental Archipelage upon the Confines of *Aſia*, which the *Chineſes*, *Siames*, *Gueos*, and *Lucquios* name, and that with reaſon in their Geography, the eye-lids of the World, whereof I hope to entreat more particularly and largely hereafter. Whereby men, for the time to come, may take example, and a reſolution not to be diſcouraged for any croſſes that may arrive unto them in the courſe of their lives. For no diſgrace of Fortune ought to eſloign us never ſo little from the duty which we are bound to render unto God, becauſe there is no adverſity, how great ſoever, but the nature of man may well undergo it, being favored with

the aſſiſtance of Heaven. Now that others may help me to praiſe the Lord Almighty for the infinite mercy he hath ſhewed me, without any regard to my ſins, which I confeſs were the cauſe and original of all my miſ-fortunes, and that from the ſame divine Power I received ſtrength and courage to reſiſt them, eſcaping out of ſo many dangers with my life ſaved, I take for the beginning of my Voyage the time which I ſpent in this Kingdom of *Portugal*, and ſay, That after I had lived there till I was about eleven or twelve years old in the miſery and poverty of my fathers houſe within the Town of *Monte-mor Ovelho*, an Uncle of mine, deſirous to advance me to a better fortune then that whereunto I was reduced at that time, and to take me from the careſſes and cockering of my Mother, brought me to this City of *Liſbon*, where he put me into the ſervice of a very honorable Lady: To the which he was carried out of the hope he had, that by the favor of her ſelf and her friends he might attain to his deſire for my advancement, and this was in the ſame year, that the funeral pomp of the deceaſed King *Emanuel* of happy memory was celebrated at *Liſbon*, namely Saint *Lucies* day, the thirteenth of *December*, 1521. which is the furtheſt thing I can remember. In the mean time my Uncles deſigns had ſucceeded quite contrary to that which he had promiſed to himſelf in favor of me; For having been in the ſervice of this Lady about a year and an half, an accident befell me, that caſt me into manifeſt peril of my life, ſo that to ſave my ſelf I was conſtrained to abandon her houſe with all the ſpeed that poſſibly I could. Flying away then in very great fear, I arrived before I was aware at the Ford of *Pedra*, which is a ſmall Port ſo called; There I found a Carvel of *Alfama*, that was laden with the houſes and ſtuff of a Lord, who was going to *Setuval*, where at that inſtant King *Joana* the Third kept his Court by reaſon of a great plague that raigned in divers parts of the Kingdom.

Perceiving then that this Carvel was ready to put to Sea, I imbarqued my ſelf in her, and departed the next day. But alas! a little after we had ſet ſail, having gotten to a place named *Cezmibra*, we were ſet upon by a *French* Pirate, who having boarded us, cauſed fifteen or ſixteen of his men to leap into our Veſſel, who finding no reſiſtance made themſelves Maſters of her: Now after they had pillaged every one of us, they emptied all the Merchandiſe wherewithall ours was laden, which amounted to above ſix thouſand duckets, into their ſhip, and then ſunk her; ſo that of ſeventeen of us that remained alive, not ſo much as one could eſcape ſlavery, for they clapped us up all bound hand and foot under hatches, with an intent to go and ſell us at *La Rache* in *Barbary*, whither alſo, as we found by being amongſt them, they carried Arms to the *Mahometans* in way of Trade; for this purpoſe they kept us thirteen days together, continually whipping us; but at the end thereof it fortuned that about Sun-ſet they diſcovered a ſhip, unto which they gave chaſe all the night, following her cloſe, like old Pirates long uſed to ſuch Theeveries; Having fetcht her up by break of day, they gave her a volley of three pieces of Ordnance, and preſently inveſted her with a great deal of courage; Now though at firſt they found ſome reſiſtance, yet they quickly rendred themſelves Maſters of her, killing ſix *Portugals*, and ten or eleven ſlaves. This was a goodly Veſſel, and belonged to a *Portugal* Merchant of the Town of *Condé*, named *Silveſtre Godinho*, which divers other Merchants of *Liſbon* had laden at Saint *Tome* with great ſtore of Sugar and Slaves. In ſuch ſort that thoſe poor people ſeeing themſelves thus taken and robbed fell to lament their loſs, which they eſtimated to be forty thouſand Duckets. Whereupon theſe Pirates, having gotten ſo rich a booty, changed their deſign for going to *la Rache*, and bent their courſe for the Coaſt of *France*, carrying with them ſuch of ours for ſlaves, as they judged fit for the ſervice of their Navigation. The remainder of us they left at night in the Road, at a place called *Melides*, where we were landed miſerably naked, our bodies covered with nothing but with the ſtripes of the laſhes which ſo cruelly we had received the days before. In this pitiful caſe we arrived the next morning at Saint *Jago de Cacen*, where we were relieved by the inhabitants of the place, eſpecially by a Lady, that was there at that time, named *Donna Beatrix*, daughter to the Earl of *Villanova*, and wife to *Alonſo Perez Pantoia*, Commander and grand Provoſt of the Town. Now after the ſick and wounded were recovered, each of us departed, and got him where he hoped to find beſt aſſiſtance; for my ſelf, poor wretch, I went with ſix or ſeven that accompanied me in my miſery to *Setuval*. Thither I was no ſooner come, but my good fortune placed me in the ſervice of *Franciſco de Faria*, a Gentleman belonging to the great Commander of Saint *Jago*, who in recompence of four years ſervice, that I did him, put me to the ſaid Commander to wait on him in his chamber, which I performed for an year and an half after. But in regard the entertainment, which was given at that time in Noble-mens houſes, was ſo ſmall as I was not able

able to live on it, neceſſity conſtrained me to quit my Maſter, with a deſign to imbarque my ſelf by his favor to go to the *Indiaes*; for that I thought was the beſt way I could take to free me of my poverty. So albeit I were but meanly accommodated I imbarqued my ſelf notwithſtanding, ſubmitting my ſelf to whatſoever fortune ſhould arrive unto me in thoſe far Countries, either good or bad.

## Chap. II.

### *My departure from Portugal for the Indiaes, and my imbarquing there for the Straight of Mecqua.*

IT was in the year 1537. and the eleventh of *March*, that I parted from this Kingdom in a Fleet of five Ships, whereof there was no General; for each of thoſe Veſſels was commanded by a particular Captain: For example, in the ſhip named the Queen, commanded *Don Pedro de Silva*, ſurnamed the Cock, ſon to the Admiral *Don Vaſco de Gama*; In the ſhip, called S^t^ Rock, commanded *Don Fernando de Lima*, ſon to *Diego Lopez de Lima*, grand Provoſt of the Town of *Guimaranes*, who dyed valiantly in defence of the Fortreſs of *Ormuz*, whereof he was Captain the year following, 1538. In the S. *Barba*, commanded *Don Fernando de Lima*, who was to be Governor of the Town of *Chaul*; Of that, which was called the *Flower of the Sea*, *Lope Vaz Vagado* was Captain; And in the fifth and laſt ſhip, named *Galega*, commanded *Martinde Freitas*, born in the Iſle of *Madera*, who the ſame year was ſlain at *Damao*, together with five and thirty men that followed him. Theſe Veſſels, ſailing different ways, arrived at length at a good Port called *Mozambique*; There we met with the S. *Michel*, that wintered there, and was commanded by *Duart Triſtao*, who parted thence richly laden for to return into *Portugal*; Howbeit I beleeve ſhe was taken, or ſuffered ſhipwrack, as it happens but too often in this Voyage to the *Indiaes*, for he was never heard of ſince. After our five Veſſels were equipped with all that was neceſſary for them, and ready to ſet ſail from *Mozambique*, the Lieutenant of the Fortreſs, called *Vincent Pegado*, ſhewed the Captains of the ſaid five ſhips a Mandate from the Governor, named *Nunho de Cunha*, whereby he expreſſly commanded that all *Portugal* ſhips, which did arrive in that Port this year, ſhould go to *Diu*, and leave their men there for the guard of the Fortreſs, becauſe of the fear they were in of the *Turkiſh* Army, which was every hour expected in the *Indiaes*, by reaſon of the death of *Sultan Bandur* King of *Cambaya*, whom the ſaid Governor had put to death the Summer before. In regard this affair was of great importance, it was the cauſe that all the Captains aſſembled together to deliberate thereupon; At length to meet with the preſent neceſſity they concluded, that three of thoſe five ſhips, appertaining to the King, ſhould go to *Diu*, conformable to the contents of the ſaid Mandate, and that the other two, which belonged to particular Merchants, ſhould purſue their courſe to *Goa*: The Kings three ſhips ſailing to *Diu*, and the other two Merchants towards *Goa*, it pleaſed God to conduct them ſafe thither. Now as ſoon as the Kings three ſhips came to the mouth of the River of the Port of *Diu*, which fell on the fifth of *September* the ſame year, 1538. *Antonio de Silveira*, the Brother of *Louys Silveira*, Earl of *Sortelha*, who was Captain there at that time, gave them all the teſtimony that poſſibly he could of the joy he took at this their arrival; For proof whereof he beſtowed liberally on every one, keeping a ſet table for above ſeven hundred perſons which they brought along with them, beſides his ſecret rewards, and extraordinary gifts, whereby he ſupplyed the neceſſities they had ſuffered during their Voyage. Whereupon the Soldiers conſidering how this Captain entreated them very royally, that he payed them before-hand, diſtributed their pay and munition unto them with his own hands, cauſed the ſick to be carefully tended, and ſhewed himſelf moſt ready to aſſiſt every one, it ſo wrought upon them, that of their own accord they offered to ſtay there for to ſerve him, being no way conſtrained thereunto, as they uſe to be in thoſe Countries in all the Fortreſſes which expect a ſiege. This done, as ſoon as the three ſhips had ſold the Merchandiſe they had brought, they ſet ſail for *Goa*, carrying none with them but the Officers of the Veſſels, and ſome Sea-men to conduct them; where they abode till ſuch time as the Governor had given them diſpatches for to go to *Cochin*, where being arrived they took in their lading, and returned all five ſafe into *Portugal*.

§. 1.

Seventeen days after we were arrived at the Fortreſs of *Diu*, where at that time two Foiſts were ready prepared to go to the Streight of *Mecqua*, for to diſcover, and find out the deſign of the *Turkiſh* Army, whoſe coming was greatly feared in the *Indiaes*, becauſe one of thoſe

§. 2.

Foiſie was commanded by a Captain that was a great friend of mine, who gave me good hope of the Voyage he was bound for. I imbarqued my ſelf with him; Relying then on the promiſes which the Captain made me, that by his favor and means I ſhould quickly be rich, the only thing in the world that I moſt deſired, and ſuffering my ſelf to be deceived by my hopes, I imagined that I was already Maſter of great wealth, never conſidering how vain and uncertain the promiſes of men are, and that I could not reap much benefit by the Voyage I was going to undertake, by reaſon it was dangerous, and unſeaſonable for Navigation in that Country. Now being departed from *Diu*, we ſailed in a time full of ſtorms, becauſe it was about the end of Winter, which ſeemed to begin anew, ſo impetuous were the winds, and ſo great was the rain: Nevertheleſs, how violent ſoever the Tempeſt was, and dark the weather, we letted not to diſcover the Iſles of *Curia*, *Muria*, and *Avedalcuria*, at the ſight whereof we thought our ſelves quite loſt, and without hope of life. Whereupon to decline the danger we turned the prow of our Veſſel to the South-eaſt, knowing no other mean then that to avoyd ſhipwrack; But by good fortune for us, it pleaſed God, that we let fall an anchor at the point of the Iſland of *Socotora*; there we preſently anchored, a league below the place, where *Don Franciſco d'Almeyda* cauſed a Fortreſs to be built in the year 1507. when he came from *Portugal*, as the firſt Victory that ever was in the *Indies*. In the ſaid place we took in freſh water, and ſome proviſion of Victuals, that we bought of the Chriſtians of the Country, which are the deſcendants of thoſe, whom the Apoſtle S. *Thomas* converted in thoſe parts. Being refreſhed thus, we parted from thence with a purpoſe to enter the *Straights*, ſo that after we had ſailed nine days with a favorable wind we found our ſelves right againſt *Mecca*; There about Sun ſet we deſcryed a ſail at Sea, whereunto we gave ſo hard chace, that before the firſt watch of the night we came up cloſe to her, and then to ſatisfie the deſire we had for to learn ſomething of the Captain by gentleneſs touching the *Turkiſh* Army, we demanded of him whether it was parted from *Suez*, or whether he had not met with it in any place; and that we might be the better informed we ſpake aloud to all thoſe that were in the ſhip. But in ſtead of anſwer, without ſpeaking a word, and in contempt of us, they gave us a dozen pieces of Ordnance, whereof, five were ſmall, and the other ſeven, field Pieces, together with good ſtore of Muſquet ſhot; And withall, in a kind of jollity, and as it were believing that we were already theirs, they made all the ſpe about reſounded again with their confuſed cries; After this, to brave and terrifie us the more, they flouriſhed a many flags and ſtreamers up and down, and from the top of their poop they brandiſhed a number of naked Scymiters, commanding us with great threatening to come aboard and yield our ſelves unto them. At the firſt view of ſo many Rhodomontades and bravings we were in ſome doubt and amaze, which cauſed the Captains of our Foiſts to call the Soldiers to Counſel for to know what they ſhould do, and the concluſion was to continue ſhooting at them till the next morning, that ſo by day-light they might be the better fought withall and inveſted, it being agreed upon of all ſides that they were not to be let go unpuniſhed for their preſumption: Which accordingly was performed, and all the reſt of the night we gave them chace, plying them with our Ordnance. So morning came, their ſhip being ſhot through and through in many places, and cruelly battered all over, they rendred themſelves into our hands. In the incounter there were threeſcore and four of their men killed, and of fourſcore that remained, the moſt part, ſeeing themſelves reduced to extremity, caſt themſelves into the Sea, chooſing rather there to be drowned, then to be burnt in their ſhip with the artificial fires that we had hurled into her, ſo that of all the fourſcore there eſcaped but five very ſore hurt, whereof one was the Captain. This ſame, by force of torture, whereunto he was expoſed by the Command of our two Captains, confeſſed that he came from *Judea*, and that the *Turkiſh* Army was already departed from *Suez*, with a deſign to take in *Aden*, and then to build a Fortreſs there before they attempted any thing in the *Indies*, according to an expreſs charge ſent by the great *Turk* from *Conſtantinople* to the *Baſſa* of *grand Cairo*, who was going to be General of the Army: Beſides this, he confeſſed many other things conformable to our deſire, amongſt the which he ſaid, that he was a renegado Chriſtian, a *Majorquin* by Nation, born at *Cerdenha*, and ſon to one named *Paul Andrea*, a Merchant of that Iſland, and that about four years before growing enamored of a very fair *Greekiſh Mahumetan*, that was then his wife, for the love of her he had abjured Chriſtianity, and imbraced the Law of *Mahomet*. Our Captains much amazed hereat, gently perſwaded him to acquit this abominable belief, and become a Chriſtian again, whereunto the wicked Caytiff made anſwer with a brutiſh obſtinacy, that at no hand he would yield to forſake his Law, ſhewing himſelf ſo hardened in the reſolution

to

to continue therein, as if he had been born in it, and never had profeſt any other. By theſe ſpeeches of his, the Captains, perceiving there was no hope of recalling him from his damnable error, cauſed him to be bound hand and foot, and ſo with a great ſtone tyed about his neck to be caſt alive into the Sea, ſending him to participate with the torments of his *Mahomet*, and to be his companion in the other world, as he had been his confident in this. This Infidel being executed in this ſort, we put the other priſoners into one of our Foiſts, and then ſunk their Veſſel with all the goods that were in her, which conſiſted moſt in packs of ſtained Cloths, whereof we had no uſe, and a few pieces of Chamlet that the Soldiers got to make them apparel.

## Chap. III.

### *Our travelling from Mazua by land to the Mother of Preſter John; as alſo our reimbarquing at the Port of Arquico, and that which befell us by the incounter of three Turkiſh Veſſels.*

§. 1. WE departed from this place with an intent to go to *Arquico*, the Territory of *Preſter John*, Emperor of *Æthiopia*, for we had a Letter to deliver, which *Antonio de Sylveira* ſent to a Factor of his, named *Enrique Barboſa*, who had been three years reſident in that Country by the Commandment of the Governor *Nuno de Cunha*. When we were arrived at *Gottor*, a league lower then the Port of *Mazua*, we were all received there very courteouſly, as well by the Inhabitants, as by a *Portugal*, called *Vaſco Martins de Seixas*, born in the Town of *Obidos*, who was come thither by *Henrico Barboſa's* order, and had been there a month attending the arrival of ſome *Portugal* ſhip. The cauſe of that his abode was to deliver a Letter from the ſaid *Henrico*, as accordingly he did to the Captains of our Foiſts; By this Letter he certified the eſtate of the *Turkiſh* Army, and beſought them at my hand to ſend him ſome *Portugals*, to induce them whereunto, he remonſtrated unto them how it much imported the ſervice both of God and the King, and that for his own part he could not come unto them, becauſe he was employed with forty other *Portugals* in the Fort of *Gilogtor* for the guard of the perſon of the Princeſs of *Tigremahon*, Mother to *Preſter John*. The two Captains, having peruſed this Letter, communicated it to the chiefeſt of the Soldiers, and ſat in Counſel upon it, where it was determined that four of them ſhould go along with *Vaſco Martins* to *Barboſa*, and that they ſhould carry the Letter which *Antonio de Sylveira* had ſent him: This was no ſooner reſolved then executed, for the next day three other *Portugals*, and my ſelf, departed accordingly, and we went by Land mounted upon good Mules, which the *Cigueay*, Captain of the Town, ſent us by the Command of the Princeſs, the Emperors Mother, together with ſix *Abiſſins* to accompany us. The firſt night we lay at a very fair Monaſtery, called *Satilgam*; The next day before the Sun roſe we travelled along by a River, and by that time we had rode five leagues we arrived at a place, named *Bitonte*, where we ſpent that night in a Convent of religious perſons, dedicated to S. *Michael*; there we were very well entertained both by the Prior, and the Fryers: A little after our arrival, the ſon of *Bernagah*, Governor of that Empire of *Æthiopia*, a very proper and courteous Gentleman, about ſeventeen years old, came to ſee us, accompanied with thirty men, all mounted upon Mules, and himſelf on a horſe furniſhed after the *Portugal* manner; the furniture was of Purple Velvet trimmed with Gold fringe, which two years before the Governor *Nuno de Cunha* ſent him from the *Indies*, by one *Lopez Chanoca*, who was afterwards made a ſlave at *Gran Cairo*, whereof this young Prince being advertiſed, he preſently diſpatched away a *Jewiſh* Merchant of *Arabiba* to redeem him, but as ill fortune would he dyed before the Jew could get thither, which ſo grieved this Prince when he underſtood of it, as the ſaid *Vaſco Martins* aſſured us that in the ſaid Monaſtery of S. *Michael* he cauſed the moſt honorable funerals to be celebrated for him that ever he ſaw, wherein aſſiſted above four thouſand Prieſts, beſides a greater number of Novices, which in their language are called *Semiteos*: Nor was this all, for this Prince hearing that the deceaſed had been married at *Goa*, and likewiſe that he had left three daughters there behind him, which were very young and poor, he beſtowed on them three hundred *Oqueas* of Gold, that are worth twelve *Cruſados* of our money a piece, a liberality truly royal, and which I r[illegible] to amplifie the nobleneſs of this Prince, as that it may ſerve for an example to [illegible] them more charitable upon like occaſions.

The next morning we continued our journey, making all the haſte that [illegible] ſo which end we got upon good Horſes, that were given us [illegible]

pointed four of his ſervants to accompany us, who during our Voyage entertained us every where very ſumptuouſly. That day our lodging was at a goodly place, called *Betemigu*, which ſignifies a royal houſe, and in-truth it was not without reaſon ſo named, for on whatſoever part one caſt an eye it was invironed with gallant high Trees for three leagues about, nor is it to be credited how pleaſing this Wood was, for that it was compoſed all of Cedars, Cypres, Palm, Date Trees, and Cocos, like to thoſe in the *Indiaes*; Here we paſt the night with all kind of contentment; In the morning we proceeded on our journey, and travelling after five leagues a day we paſt over a great Plain, all full of goodly Corn; Then we arrived at a Mountain, named *Vangalen*, inhabited by Jews, which were very white and handſom; Two days and an half after we came to a good Town, called *Fumbau*, not above two leagues diſtant from the Fort of *Gileytor*, there we found *Barboſa*, and the forty *Portugals* aforeſaid, who received us with great demonſtrations of joy, but not without ſhedding of ſome tears, for though they lived there at their eaſe, and were abſolute Maſters of all the Country, as they ſaid, yet the conſideration how they were as men baniſhed from their Country into this place, did very much trouble them.

Now becauſe it was night when we arrived, and that we had all need of reſt, *Barboſa* was of the opinion that we ſhould not ſee the Emperors Mother till the next morning, which was a Sunday, the fourth of *October*; that come, and we well refreſhed, we went, accompanied with *Barboſa* and his forty *Portugals*, to the Princeſſes Palace, where we found her at Maſs in her Chappel: A while after being advertiſed of our arrival, ſhe cauſed us to be admitted into her preſence; Whereupon we fell on our knees before her, and with all kind of humility kiſſed the Veetilow that ſhe held in her hand; To theſe ſubmiſsions we adjoyned many other Ceremonies according to their faſhion, conformable to the inſtructions we had taken from the *Portugals* that conducted us thither. She received us with a ſmiling countenance, and to teſtifie how much ſhe was pleaſed with our coming; *Verily*, ſaid ſhe, *you cannot imagine how glad I am to ſee you, that are right Chriſtians, for it hath been a thing which I have always as much deſired, as a fair garden enameled with flowers deſires the mornings dew, wherefore you are moſt welcome come, and may your entrance into my houſe be as propitious, as that of the vertuous Queen Helena's was into the bleſſed Jeruſalem.* Herewith ſhe made us to ſit down upon mats, not above five or ſix paces diſtant from her; Then ſhe being her ſelf exceedingly contented, ſhe queſtioned us about certain matters, of which, ſhe aſſured us, that ſhe very much longed to be ſatisfied: Firſt ſhe asked us the name of our holy Father the Pope, alſo how many Kings there were in Chriſtendom, and whether any of us had ever been in the holy Land; whereupon ſhe much condemned the Chriſtian Princes, for their neglect and want of care in ſeeking to ruine the power of the *Turk*, who, ſhe ſaid, was the common Enemy of them all. Likewiſe ſhe would know of us whether the King of *Portugal* was great in the *Indiaes*, what Forts he had there, in what places they were ſeated, and how defended. She made us many other like demands, to the which we anſwered the beſt we could for to content her; whereupon ſhe diſmiſſed us, and we returning to our lodging, continued there nine days, which we ſpent in waiting on this Princeſs, with whom we had much diſcourſe on ſeveral ſubjects: That Term expired, we went to take our leaves of her, and in kiſſing of her hands ſhe ſeemed to be ſomewhat troubled at our departure. *Truly*, ſaid ſhe, *it grieves me that you will be gone ſo ſoon, but ſince there is no remedy, I wiſh your Voyage may be ſo proſperous, that at your arrival in the Indiaes you may be as well received by yours, as the Queen of* Sheba *was heretofore by King* Solomon *in the admirable Palace of his greatneſs.* Now before we departed ſhe beſtowed on us twenty four *Oques* of Gold, which make two hundred forty Duckets of our mony; She cauſed us alſo to be conducted by a *Neigus*, and twenty *Abiſſins*, as well to ſerve us for Guides, and guard us from Robbers, whereof that Country was full, as to furniſh us with Victuals and Horſes until ſuch time as we got to *Arquico*, where our Foiſts attended for us. This Princeſs alſo ſent a rich preſent of divers Jewels of Gold and Stones by *Vaſco Martins de Seixas* unto the Governor of the *Indiaes*, which by ill fortune was loſt in this Voyage, as ſhall be declared hereafter.

§. 2. After we were returned to the Port of *Arquico*, where we found our companions caulking of our Foiſts, and furniſhing them with all that was neceſſary for our Voyage, we fell to work with them for the ſpace of nine days. At length all things being ready, we ſet ſail, and parted from thence on Tueſday, the ſixth of *November*, 1538. We carried with us both *Vaſco Martins de Seixas*, that had the Preſent and a Letter from the Princeſs to the Governor of the *Indiaes*,

*Indiaes*, as alſo an *Abiſſin* Biſhop, who was bound for *Portugal*, with an intent to go from thence to *Galicia*, *Rome*, and *Venice*, and afterwards to travel to *Jeruſalem*, which eſpecially he deſired to ſee in regard of the holineſs of the place. An hour before day we left the Port, and ſailed along the Coaſt afore the wind, until ſuch time as about noon we reached the point of the Cape of *Coçam*, and before we arrived at the Iſland of Rocks, we diſcerned three Veſſels on the other ſide, that ſeemed to us to be *Gelves* or *Terrades*, which are the names of the Veſſels of that Country; Whereupon we gave them chace, and with the ſtrength of our oars, becauſe the wind was then ſomewhat down; we purſued them in ſuch ſort, that in leſs then two hours, having gotten up to them, we might eaſily perceive them to be *Turkiſh* Gallies, whereof we were no ſooner aſſured, but that we preſently betook our ſelves to flight, and made towards the Land with all the haſte that might be, ſo if it were poſſible to eſcape the danger that inevitably threatned us: But whether the *Turks* ſuſpected our deſign, or knew it, in leſs then a quarter of an hour they hoiſted up all their ſails, and having the wind favorable they followed us very hard, ſo as in a little while getting within a ſmall Falcon ſhot of us, they diſcharged all their Ordnance upon us, wherewith they not only killed nine of our men, and hurt ſix and twenty, but ſo battered our Foiſts, that we were fain to caſt a great part of our goods into the Sea; Mean while the *Turks* loſt no time, but joyned us ſo cloſe, that from their poop they hurt us eaſily with their pikes: Now there were four and forty good Soldiers remaining yet unhurt in our Foiſts, who knowing that upon their valor, and the force of their arms, depended the lives both of themſelves, and all the reſt, they determined to fight it out; With this reſolution they ſet courageouſly upon the Admiral of the three Gallies, wherein was *Solyman Dragut*, General of the Fleet; Their onſet was ſo furious, as they inveſted her from poop to prow, and killed ſeven and twenty *Janizaries*, nevertheleſs ſhe being inſtantly ſuccored with freſh men by the other two Gallies, which had ſtayed a little behind, we were ſo wearied and oppreſſed with numbers, that we were not able to make any further reſiſtance, for of four and fifty that we were at firſt, there was but eleven left alive, whereof two alſo dyed the next day, whom the *Turks* cauſed to be cut in quarters, which they hung at the end of their main yards for a ſign of their Victory, and in that manner carried them to the Town of *Mocaa*, whereof the Father-in-law of the ſaid *Solyman Dragut*, that had taken us, was Governor; who with all the Inhabitants waited the coming of his Son-in-law at the entry into the Port, to receive and welcome him for his Victory. In his Company he had a certain *Cacis*, who was *Moulana*, the chiefeſt Sacerdotal dignity, and becauſe he had been a little before in pilgrimage at the Temple of their Prophet *Mahomet* in *Mecca*, he was held by all the people for a very holy man: This Impoſtor rode up and down the Town in a triumphant Charret, covered all over with Silk Tapeſtry, and with a deal of Ceremony bleſſed the people as he went along, exhorting them to render all poſſible thanks unto their Prophet for the Victory, which *Solyman Dragut* had obtained over us. As ſoon as they arrived at this place, we nine that remained alive were ſet on ſhore, tyed altogether with a great chain, and amongſt us was the *Abiſſin* Biſhop, ſo pitifully wounded that he dyed the next day, and in his end ſhewed the repentance of a true Chriſtian, which very much encouraged and comforted us. In the mean time all the Inhabitants, that were aſſembled about us, hearing that we were the Chriſtians which were taken Captives, being exceedingly tranſported with choller, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, as for my own part I never thought to have eſcaped alive out of their hands, whereunto they were eſpecially incited by the wicked *Cacis*, who made them believe that they ſhould obtain the more favor and mercy from their *Mahomet*, the worſe they intreated us. Thus chained all together, and perſecuted by every one, we were led in triumph over all the Town, where nothing was heard but acclamations and ſhouts, intermingled with a world of muſick, as well of inſtruments, as voyces. Moreover, there was not a woman, were ſhe never ſo retired, that came not forth then to ſee us, and to do us ſome outrage; for from the very leaſt children to the oldeſt men, all that beheld us paſs by caſt out of the windows and balcons upon us pots of piſs, and other filth, in contempt and deriſion of a name of a Chriſtian, wherein every one ſtrived to be moſt forward, in regard their curſed Prieſt continued ſtill preaching unto them, that they ſhould gain remiſſion of their ſins by abuſing us. Having been tormented in this ſort until the evening, they went and laid us bound as we were in a dark Dungeon, where we remained ſeventeen days, expoſed to all kind of miſery, having no other victual all that time, but a little oatmeal, which was diſtributed to us every morning to ſerve us all the day. Sometimes they gave us the ſame meaſure in dry Peaſon a little ſoaked in water, and this w

ad.

## Chap. IV.

*A Mutiny happening in the Town of* Mocas, *the occaſion thereof, that which befell thereupon, and by what means I was carried to* Ormuz; *as alſo my ſailing from thence to* Goa, *and what ſucceſs I had in that Voyage.*

§. 1. THe next day, in regard that we had been ſo miſerably moiled, and our hurts, that were great, but ill looked unto, of us nine there dyed two, whereof one was named *Nuno Delgado*, and the other *Andre Borges*, both of them men of courage, and of good families. The Jaylor, which in their language is called *Mocadan*, repairing in the morning to us, and finding our two companions dead, goes away in all haſte therewith to acquaint the *Ganzil*, which is as the Judg with us, who came in perſon to the priſon, attended by a great many of Officers, and other people; Where having cauſed their irons to be ſtriken off, and their feet to be tyed together with a rope, he commanded them ſo to be dragged from thence clean through the Town, where the whole multitude, to the very children, purſued and palted them with ſtaves and ſtones, until ſuch time as being wearied with harrying thoſe poor bodies in ſuch faſhion, they caſt them all battered to pieces into the Sea. At laſt we ſeven, that were left alive, were chained all together, and brought forth into the publique place of the Town, to be ſold to them that would give moſt: There all the people being met together, I was the firſt that was put to ſale; whereupon, juſt as the Cryer was offering to deliver me unto whomſoever would buy me, in comes that very *Cacis Moulana*, whom they held for a Saint, with ten or eleven other *Cacis* his Inferiors, all Prieſts like himſelf of their wicked Sect, and addreſſing his ſpeech to *Heredrin Sofo*, the Governor of the Town, who ſate as Preſident of the Portſale, he required him to ſend us, as an alms, unto the Temple of *Mecqua*, ſaying, that he was upon returning thither, and having reſolved to make that pilgrimage in the name of all the people, it were not fit to go thither without carrying ſome offering to the Prophet *Noby*, (ſo they termed their *Mahomet*,) a thing, ſaid he, that would utterly diſpleaſe *Razadas Moulana*, the Chief Prieſt of *Medina Talnab*, who without that would grant no kind of grace or pardon to the Inhabitants of this Town, which by reaſon of their great offences ſtood in extream need of the favor of God, and of his Prophet.

The Governor having heard the *Cacis* ſpeak thus, declared unto him that for his particular he had no power to diſpoſe with any part of the booty, and that therefore he ſhould apply himſelf to *Selyman Dragut* his Son-in-law, who had made us ſlaves, ſo that in right it appertained only unto him to do with us as he pleaſed; and I do not think, added he, that he will contradict ſo holy an intention as this is. Thou haſt reaſon for it, anſwered the *Cacis*, but withall thou muſt know, that the things of God, and the alms that are done in his name, loſe their value and force, when they are ſifted through ſo many hands, and turmoiled with ſuch humane opinions, for which very cauſe ſeldom doth any divine reſolution follow thereupon, eſpecially in a ſubject ſuch as this is, which thou mayſt abſolutely diſpoſe of, as thou art ſoveraign Commander of this people: Moreover, as there is no body can be diſpleaſed therewith, ſo I do not ſee how it can bring thee any diſcontent. For beſides that, this demand is very juſt, it is alſo moſt agreeable to our Prophet *Noby*, who is the abſolute Lord of this prize, in regard the Victory came ſolely from his holy hand, though with as much falſhood as malice thou goeſt about to attribute the glory of it to the valor of thy Son-in-law, and the courage of his Soldiers. At this inſtant a *Janizary* was preſent, Captain of one of the three Gallies that took us, a man that for his exceeding valor was in great eſteem amongſt them, called *Copa Geynal*, who nettled with that which he heard the *Cacis* ſpeak, ſo much in contempt both of himſelf, and the reſt of the Soldiers, that had carried themſelves very valiantly in the fight with us, returned him this anſwer. Certainly you might do better for the Salvation of your Soul, to diſtribute ſome part of the exceſſive riches you poſſeſs amongſt theſe poor Soldiers, then ſeek with feigned ſpeeches, full of hypocriſie and deceit, to rob them of theſe ſlaves, which have coſt the lives of ſo many brave men, their fellows in arms, and have been dearly bought by us that ſurvive, even with our deareſt blood, as the wounds we have upon us can but too well witneſs; ſo can it not be ſaid of your Cabayage (a Sacerdotal Robe after their faſhion,) which for all it ſits ſo trim and neat upon you, covers a pernicious habit you have of purloyning other mens eſtates from them: Wherefore I would with you to deſiſt from the damnable plot you have layd againſt the abſolute Maſters of this Prize, whereof you ſhall not have ſo much as a token, and

ſeek

ſeek out ſome other Preſent for the *Cacis* of *Adecque*, to the end he may conceal your theeveries, and impiety, provided it be not done with the expence of our lives and blood, but rather with the goods you have ſo lewdly gotten by your wicked and cunning devices.

This *Cacis Moulana* having received ſo bold an anſwer from this Captain, found it very rude, and hard of digeſtion, which made him in bitter terms, and voyd of all reſpects, exceedingly to blame the Captain, and the Soldiers that were there preſent; who, as well *Turks* as *Saracens*, being much offended with his ill language, combined together and mutined againſt him, and the reſt of the people, in whoſe favor he had ſpoken ſo inſolently; nor could this mutiny be appeaſed by any kind of meanes, though the Governor of the Town, Father-in-law to the ſaid *Solyman Dragut*, together with the Officers of Juſtice, did all that poſſibly they could. In a word, that I may not ſtand longer upon the particulars of this affair, I ſay, that from this ſmall mutiny did ariſe ſo cruel and enraged a contention, as it ended not but with the death of ſix hundred perſons, of the one and the other ſide: But at length the Soldiers party prevailing, they pillaged the moſt part of the Town, eſpecially the ſaid *Cacis Moulana's* houſe, killing ſeven wives and nine children that he had, whoſe bodies together with his own were dismembered, and caſt into the Sea with a great deal of cruelty. In the ſame manner they intreated all that belonged unto him, not ſo much as giving life to one that was known to be his. As for us ſeven *Portugals*, which were expoſed to ſale in the publique place, we could find out no better expedient to ſave our lives, then to return into the ſame hole, from whence we came, and that too without any Officer of Juſtice to carry us thither; neither did we take it for a ſmall favor that the Jaylor would receive us into the priſon. Now this Mutiny had not ceaſed but by the authority of *Solyman Dragut*, General of the Gallies aforeſaid: For this man with very gentle words gave an end to the ſedition of the people, and pacified the Mutiners, which ſhews of what power courteſie is, even with ſuch as are altogether ignorant of it. In the mean time *Heredrin Sopho*, Governor of the Town, came off but ill from this hurly burly, by reaſon that in the very firſt incounter he had one of his arms almoſt cut off. Three days after this diſorder was quieted we were led all ſeven again to the Market place, there to be ſold with the reſt of the booty, which conſiſted of our Stuff, and Ordnance, that they had taken in our Foiſts, and were ſold at a very eaſie rate: For my ſelf, miſerable that I was, and the moſt wretched of them all, Fortune, my ſworn enemy, made me fall into the hands of a Greek renegado, whom I ſhall deteſt as long as I have a day to live, becauſe that in the ſpace of three Months I was with him, he uſed me ſo cruelly, that becoming even deſperate, for that I was not able to endure the evil he did me, I was ſeven or eight times upon the point to have poyſoned my ſelf, which queſtionleſs I had done, if God of his infinite mercy and goodneſs had not diverted me from it, whereunto I was the rather induced to make him loſe the mony he payd for me, becauſe he was the moſt covetous man in the world, and the moſt inhumane, and cruelleſt enemy to the name of a Chriſtian. But at the end of three Months it pleaſed the Almighty to deliver me out of the hands of this Tyrant, who for fear of loſing the mony I coſt him, if I ſhould chance to make my ſelf away, as one of his neighbors perſwaded him I would, telling him that he had diſcovered ſo much by my countenance, and manner of behavior, wherefore in pity of me he counſelled him to ſell me away, as he did not long after unto a Jew, named *Abrahams Muça*, Native of a Town, called in thoſe quarters *Toro*, not above a league and an half diſtant from Mount *Sinay*: This man gave for me the value of three hundred Reals in Dates, which was the Merchandiſe that this Jew did ordinarily trade in with my late Maſter, and ſo I parted with him in the company of divers Merchants for to go from *Babylon* to *Cayxem*, whence he carried me to *Ormuz*, and there preſented me to *Don Fernand de Lima*, who was at that time Captain of the Fort, and to Doctor *Pedro Fernandez*, Commiſſary General of the *Indiaes*, that was then reſiding at *Ormuz* for the ſervice of the King by order from the Governor *Nunho de Cunha*. Theſe two, namely *Fernandez* and *de Lima* gave the Jew in recompence for me two hundred *Pardaos*, which are worth three ſhillings and nine pence a piece of our coyn, whereof part was their own mony, and the reſt was raiſed of the alms which they cauſed to be gathered for me in the Town, ſo we both remained contented, the Jew for the ſatisfaction he had received from them, and I to find my ſelf at full liberty as before.

Seeing my ſelf by Gods mercy delivered from the miſeries I had endured; after I had been §. 2.
ſeventeen days at *Ormuz*, I imbarqued my ſelf for the *Indiaes* in a ſhip that belonged to one *Jorge Fernandez Taborda*, who was to carry Horſes to *Goa*. In the courſe that we held we ſailed with ſo proſperous a gale, that in ſeventeen days we arrived in view of the Fort of *Diu*;

There, by the advice of the Captains, coasting along by the Land for to learn some news, we descryed a great number of fires all that night, also at times we heard divers Pieces of Ordnance discharged, which very much troubled us, by reason we could not imagine what those fires, or that shooting in the night should mean, in so much that we were divided into several opinions. During this incertainty our best advice was, to sail the rest of the night with as little cloth as might be, until that on the next morning by the favor of day light we perceived a great many sails, which invironed the Fort on all sides. Some affirmed that it was the Governor newly come from *Goa* to make peace for the death of *Sultan Bandur*, King of *Cambaya*, that was slain a little before. Others said that it was the Infant, Brother to the King *Dom Joan*, lately arrived there from *Portugal*, because he was every day expected in the *Indians*. Some thought that it was the *Portugals*, with the King of *Cabiens* hundred Foists of *Canarin*. And the last assured us, how they could justifie with good and sufficient reasons that they were the *Turks*. As we were in this diversity of minds, and terrified with that which we discerned before our eyes, five very great Gallies came forth of the midst of this Fleet, with a many of banners, flags, and streamers, which we saw on the tops of their Masts, and the ends of their sail-yards, whereof some were so long that they touched even the very water. These Gallies, being come forth in this sort, turned their prows towards us in such a courageous and confident manner, that by their sailing we presently judged them to be *Turks*; Which we no sooner knew to be so indeed, but we clapt on all our cloth, for to avoyd them, and to get into the main Sea, not without exceeding fear, lest for our sins we should fall into the like estate, from whence I was so lately escaped. These five Gallies having observed our flight, took a resolution to pursue us, and chased us till night, at which time it pleased God that they tacked about, and returned to the Army from whence they came. Seeing our selves freed from so great a danger we went joyfully on, and two days after arrived at the Town of *Chaul*, where our Captain and the Merchants only landed for to visit the Captain of the Fort, named *Simon Guedez*, unto whom they reported that which had befallen them. Assuredly, said he, you are very much bound to give God thanks for delivering you from one of the greatest perils that ever you were in; for without his assistance it had been impossible for you ever to have declined it, or to tell me of it with such joy as now you do: Thereupon he declared unto them, that the Army they had encountred was the very same, which had held *Antonio de Silveyra* twenty days together besieged, being composed of a great number of *Turks*, whereof *Solyman* the *Bassa*, Vice-roy of *Cairo*, was General, and that those Sails they had seen, were eight and fifty Gallies great and small, each of which carried five Pieces of Ordnance in her prow, and some of them more Pieces of Battery, besides eight other great Vessels, full of *Turks*, that were kept in reserve to succor the Army, and supply the places of such as should be killed; Moreover he added, that they had great abundance of victuals, amongst the which there was twelve Basilisks. This news having much amazed us, we rendered infinite praise to the Lord for shewing us such grace, as to deliver us from so imminent a danger.

§. 3. We stayed at *Chaul* but one day, and then we set sail for *Goa*; Being advanced as far as to the River of *Carapatan*, we met with *Fernand de Morais*, Captain of three Foists, who by the command of the Vice-roy, *Dom Garcia de Noronha*, was going to *Dabul*, to the end he might see whether he could take or burn a *Turkish* Vessel, which was in the Port, laden with Victuals by order from the *Bassa*. This *Fernand de Morais* had no sooner gotten acquaintance of our ship, but he desired our Captain to lend him fifteen men, of twenty that he had, for to supply the great necessity he was in that way, by reason of the Vice-roys hastening him away upon the sudden, which, said he, would much advance the service both of God, and his Highness. After many contestations of either part upon this occasion, and which, to make short, I will pass under silence, at length they were agreed, that our Captain should let *Fernand de Morais* have twelve, of fifteen men, that he requested, wherewithall he was very well satisfied: Of this number I was one, as being always of the least respected. The ship departing for *Goa*, *Fernand de Morais* with his three Foists continued his Voyage towards the Port of *Dabul*, where we arrived the next day about nine of the clock in the morning, and presently took a Patach of *Malabar*, which laden with Cotton Wool and Pepper, rode at anchor in the midst of the Port. Having taken it we put the Captain and Pilot to torture, who instantly confessed that a few days before a ship came into that Port expressly from the *Bassa* to lade Victuals, and that there was in her an Embassador, who had brought *Hidalcan* a very rich *Cabaya*, that is a garment worn by the Gentlemen of that Country, which he would not accept of, for that

thereby

thereby he would not acknowledg himſelf ſubject to the *Turk*, it being a cuſtom among the *Mahumetans*, for the Lord to do that honor to his Vaſſal; and further, that this refuſal had ſo much vexed the Embaſſador, as he returned without taking any kind of proviſion of Victuals, and that *Hidalcan* had anſwered, he made much more eſteem of the King of *Portugals* amity, than of his, which was nothing but deceit, as having uſurped the Town of *Goa* upon him, after he had offered to ayd him with his favor and forces to regain it. Moreover they ſaid, that it was not above two days ſince the ſhip, they ſpake of, parted from the Port, and that the Captain of her, named *Cide Ale*, had denounced War againſt *Hidalcan*, vowing that as ſoon as the Fort of *Diu* was taken, which could not hold out above eight days, according to the eſtate wherein he had left it, *Hidalcan* ſhould loſe his Kingdom, or life, and that then he ſhould to his coſt know how little the *Portugals*, in whom he put his confidence, could avail him. With theſe news Captain *Moraes* returned towards *Goa*, where he arrived two days after, and gave account to the Vice-roy of that which had paſt. There we found *Gonçalo vaz Coutinho*, who was going with five Foiſts to *Onor*, to demand of the Queen thereof one of the Galliſs of *Solymans* Army, which by a contrary wind had been driven into her Ports: Now one of the Captains of thoſe Foiſts my ſpecial friend, ſeeing me poor and neceſſitous, perſwaded me to accompany him in this Voyage, and to that end got me five duckets pay, which I very gladly accepted of, out of the hope I had that God would thereby open me a way to a better fortune. Being imbarqued then, the Captain and Soldiers pitying the caſe I was in, beſtowed ſuch ſpare clothes as they had upon me, by which means being reaſonably well pieced up again, we parted the next morning from the Road of *Bardees*, and the Monday following we caſt anchor in the Port of *Onor*; where, that the inhabitants of the place might know how little account we made of that mighty Army, we gave them a great peal of Ordnance, putting forth all our ſights, beating our Drums, and ſounding our Trumpets, to the end that by theſe exterior demonſtrations they might conclude we regarded not the *Turks* a whit.

## Chap. V.

### *Gonçalo vaz Coutinho's Treaty with the Queen of* Onor; *his aſſaulting of a Turkiſh Galley, and that which happned unto us as we were upon our return to* Goa.

§. 1. OUr Fleet making a ſtand upon the diſcharging of our peal of Ordnance, the General *Gonçalo vaz Coutinho* ſent *Bento Caſtanho*, a very diſcreet and eloquent man, to the Queen of *Onor*, to preſent her with a Letter from the Vice-roy, and to tell her that he was come to complain of her, for that ſhe had ſworn a peace and amity with the King of *Portugal*, and yet ſuffered the *Turks*, mortal enemies to the *Portugals*, to abide in her Ports. Hereunto ſhe returned this anſwer; *That both himſelf and his company were very welcome, that ſhe greatly eſteemed of them, becauſe they were Vaſſals to the King of* Portugal, *and as touching that he ſaid of the peace which ſhe had with the King, and his Governors, it was moſt true, and that ſhe deſired to maintain it as long as ſhe lived: For that which he ſaid of the Turks, ſhe took her God to witneſs how much againſt her will ſhe had received and ſuffered them in her Ports, but that finding her ſelf too weak for to reſiſt ſuch powerful enemies, ſhe was conſtrained to diſſemble, which ſhe would never have done had ſhe been furniſhed with ſufficient forces; furthermore, to clear her ſelf the better unto them, ſhe offered both her power and people for to repel them out of her Ports, and whereas he had brought men enough to chace them thence, ſhe requeſted him to do it, wherein ſhe would aſſiſt him all that poſſibly ſhe could, which ſhe confirmed with oaths, ſwearing by the golden Sandals of the Soveraign God whom ſhe adored:* To this ſpeech ſhe added, that *ſhe ſhould be as well pleaſed if God would give him the victory over them, as if the King of* Narſingua, *whoſe ſlave ſhe was, ſhould ſet her at the table with his wife.* *Gonçalo vaz Coutinho* having received this Embaſſage, and other complements from the Queen, though he had little hope of any performance on her part, yet did he wiſely diſſemble it. Afterwards being fully informed by the people of the Country of the *Turks* intention, of the place where they were, and what they did at that inſtant, he called a Councel thereupon, and having throughly debated and conſidered all things, it was unanimouſly concluded, that both for the King of *Portugal* their Maſters honor, and his own, it was expedient to ſet upon this Galley, either for to take, or fire it, wherein it was hop[illegible] whoſe glory we fought, would be aſſiſting to us againſt thoſe enemies of h[illegible] reſolution being made, and ſigned by us all, he entered [illegible] two ſanicoins [illegible] where he had

large anchored, when at a little Boat, which they call an *Almadia*, came aboard us, with a *Brachman* that spake very good *Portugoize*: This man delivered a meſſage from the Queen unto our Captain, whereby ſhe earneſtly deſired him, that for the Vice-roys ſake he would deſiſt from the enterprize he had undertaken, and not to aſſault the *Turks* any manner of way, which, ſaid ſhe, could not be done without great diſadvantage, for that ſhe had been adverniſed by her Spies, that they had fortified themſelves with a good Trench, which they had caſt up near the place where they had moored their Galley, in regard whereof it ſeemed to her almoſt impoſſible for him with no more Forces then he had to be able to prevail in ſo great an attempt: wherefore ſhe took her God to witneſs how much ſhe was troubled with the fear ſhe was in leſt ſome miſfortune ſhould befall him. Hereunto our Captain returned an anſwer full of wiſdom and courteſie, ſaying, that he kiſſed her Highneſs hands for the extraordinary favor ſhe did him in giving him ſo good advice: but as for his Combat with the *Turks* he could not follow her counſel, and therefore would proceed in his determination, it being always the cuſtom of the *Portugals* not to enquire whether their Enemies were few, or many, ſince the more they were, the more ſhould be their loſs, and the greater his profit and honor. Thus was the *Brachman* diſmiſſed, our Captain beſtowing on him a piece of green Chamlet, and an Hat lined with red Satin, wherewith he returned very well contented.

§. 2. The *Brachman* diſmiſt, *Gonçalo vas Coutinho* reſolved to fight with the *Turks*, but before he proceeded any further he was adviſed by Spies what ſtratagems the Enemy would uſe againſt us, and that the precedent night by the favor of the Queen they had moored up the Galley, and by it raiſed up a platform, whereupon they had flanked five and twenty Pieces of Ordnance, but all that ſtayed him not from advancing towards the Enemy; Seeing himſelf then within a Cannon ſhot of them, he went out of his Foiſt, and with fourſcore men only landed, the reſt which he had brought with him from *Goa* for this enterprize, being but an hundred more, he left for the guard of the Foiſts. So after he had ſet his men in Battel array, he marched couragiouſly againſt his adverſaries, who perceiving us making towards them valiantly reſolved to defend themſelves, to which end they ſallied ſome five and twenty or thirty paces out of their Trenches, where the fight began on either ſide with ſuch fury, that in leſs then a quarter of an hour five and forty lay dead in the place, amongſt the which there was not above eight of ours; Hereupon our General, not contented with this firſt charge, gave them a ſecond, by means whereof it pleaſed God to make them turn their backs, in ſuch ſort that they retired pell-mell, as men rented with fear of death: Mean while we purſued them to their very Trenches, where they turned upon us, and made head anew, in the heat hereof we were ſo far engaged and intangled together, that we knocked one another with the pummels of our ſwords; Mean while our Foiſts arrived, which were come along by the ſhore to ſuccor us, and accordingly they diſcharged all their Ordnance upon our Enemies, to ſuch good purpoſe, as they killed eleven or twelve of the valianteſt *Janizaries*, which wore green Turbants, as a mark of their Nobility. The death of theſe ſo terrified the reſt, that they preſently forſook the field, by means whereof we had leiſure to ſet the Galley on fire upon the expreſs command of our General *Gonçalo*, ſo that having caſt into her five pots of powder, the fire took hold on her with ſuch violence, as it was apparent it could not be long before ſhe were utterly conſumed, for the maſt and ſail yards were all of a flame, had not the *Turks*, knowing the danger ſhe was in, moſt couragiouſly quenched the fire; but we labored all that poſſibly we could to hinder them from it, and to make good that we had ſo bravely begun, which the enemies perceiving, as their laſt refuge they gave fire to a great Piece of Ordnance, which charged with ſtones, and other ſhot, killed ſix of ours, whereof the principal was *Diego vas Coutinho*, the Generals ſon, beſides a dozen others were hurt, that put us quite in diſorder; Whereupon the Enemies finding how they had ſpoiled us, fell to ſhouting in ſign of Victory, and to rendring of thanks to their *Mahomet*; at the naming of this their falſe Prophet, whom they invoked, our General the better to encourage his Soldiers, *Fellows in arms*, ſaid he, *ſeeing theſe Dogs call upon the Devil to aid them, let us pray unto our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt to aſſiſt us.* This ſaid, we once more aſſaulted the Trench, which the Enemies no ſooner perceived, but they craftily turned their backs, and took their flight towards the Galley, but they were inſtantly followed by ſome of ours, who within a while made themſelves Maſters of all their Trenches, in the mean-time the Infidels gave fire to a ſecret myne, which they had made a little within their Trenches, and blew up ſix of our *Portugals*, and eight Slaves, maiming many others beſides; Now the ſmoak was ſuch and ſo thick, as we could hardly diſcern one another, in regard

whereof

whereof our General, fearing leſt ſome greater loſs then the former ſhould befall him, retreated to the water ſide, carrying along with him both the dead bodies, and all the hurt men, and ſo went where his Foiſts lay, into the which every one being imbarqued, we returned with ſtrength of rowing to the place from whence we came, where with extream ſorrow he cauſed the ſlain to be interred, and all that were hurt to be dreſt, which were a very great number.

The ſame day that was ſo fatal to us, a liſt being taken of all the ſurviving Soldiers, that ſo it §. 3.
might be known how many had been loſt in the laſt fight upon aſſaulting of the Trench, we found that of fourſcore which we were, there was fifteen ſlain, fifty four hurt, and nine quite maimed for ever: The reſt of the day, and the night following, we kept very good watch to avoyd all ſurprizes of the Enemy. As ſoon as the next morning appeared, there came an Embaſſador from the Queen of *Onor* to the General *Gonçalo*, with a Preſent of Hens, Chickens, and new layd Eggs for the relief of our ſick men; Now though we had great need of thoſe things, yet inſtead of receiving our General utterly refuſed them, and ſhewing himſelf very much diſpleaſed with the Queen he could not forbear lafhing out ſome words, that were a little more harſher then was requiſite; ſaying, that the Vice-roy ſhould ere long be advertiſed of the bad Offices ſhe had rendred the King of *Portugal*, and how much he was obliged to pay her that debt, when occaſion ſhould ſerve: Further he bid him tell her, that for an aſſurance of that which he ſaid, he had left his ſon dead and buried in her Land, together with the other *Portugals*, who had been miſerably ſlaughtered through her practiſes, by aſſiſting the *Turks* againſt them: and in a word, that he would thank her more fully another time for the Preſent ſhe had ſent, the better to diſſemble what ſhe had executed againſt him, for which he would one day return her a recompence according to her merit.

The Embaſſador, very much terrified with this ſpeech, departed; and being come to the Queen his Miſtreſs, he ſo throughly repreſented *Gonçalo*'s anſwer unto her, as ſhe greatly doubted that this Galley would be an occaſion of the loſs of her Kingdom; wherefore to decline ſo great a miſchief ſhe thought it neceſſary to ſeek by all means poſſible to maintain the League with our General, to which end ſhe aſſembled her Counſel, by whoſe advice ſhe diſpatched another Embaſſador unto him, who was a *Brachman*, a grave and reverent perſonage, and her neareſt kinſman. At his arrival where our Foiſts lay, our General gave him very good entertainment, and after the ordinary ceremonies and complements the *Brachman* having demanded permiſſion to deliver his Embaſſage; *Signior*, ſaid he to our Governor, *if you will give me audience, I will declare the cauſe of my coming hither from the Queen of* Onor *my Miſtreſs.* Hereunto *Gonçalo* replyed, *That Embaſſadors had always aſſurance for their perſons, and permiſſion freely to deliver the particulars of their Embaſſy, ſo that he might boldly ſay what he would.* The *Brachman* having thanked him, *Verily*, continued he, *I am not able to expreſs unto you, how ſenſible the Queen my Miſtreſs is of the death of your ſon, and of thoſe other Portugals, that were yeſterday ſlain in the fight; And without lying I ſwear unto you by her life, and by this ſtring of a Brachman that I wear, the mark of my Prieſtly dignity, and only proper to thoſe which are of that profeſſion, wherein I have been exerciſed from my youth, that ſhe was ſo exceedingly afflicted at the notice of your diſaſter, and the unluckie ſucceſs of your conflict, as ſhe could not have been more vexed if ſhe had been made to eat Cows fleſh (which is the greateſt ſin committed amongſt us) at the principal gate of the Temple, where her father is interred: Whereby you may judg, Signior, what a ſhare ſhe bears of your ſorrow. But ſince there is no remedy for things done, ſhe deſireth, and very inſtantly beſeecheth you to confirm the Peace unto her anew which other Governers have always granted her heretofore; Whereunto ſhe the rather intreats you, becauſe ſhe knows of what power you are with the Vice-roy: Now that confirmed unto her, ſhe aſſures you, and faithfully promiſeth, Within four days to burn the Galley, that hath put you to ſo much pain, and ſcorn the Turks out of the limits of her Kingdom, which is all that ſhe can do, and which you may be moſt confident ſhe will not fail to execute accordingly.*

Our General knowing of what importance this affair was, preſently accepted of the *Brach-* §. 4.
*mans* offer, and told him that he was contented that the League ſhould be renewed betwixt them, according whereunto it was inſtantly publiſhed on either part with all the ceremonies accuſtomed in ſuch caſes; [illegible]on the *Brachman* returned to the Queen, who afterwards labored all ſhe could to [illegible]her word; But [illegible] *Gonçalo* could not ſtay the four days, which ſhe had [illegible]d of the exe[illegible]he ſhould thereby have expoſed

our

our hurt men unto, he reſolved to be gone, and ſo the ſame day after dinner we departed; Howbeit he firſt left one, named *Georgio Neogueyra*, there, with expreſs order exactly to obſerve all that was done concerning that affair, and thereof to give certain intelligence to the Vice-roy, as the Queen her ſelf had requeſted.

## CHAP. VI.

### *What paſſed till ſuch time as* Pedro de Faria *arrived at* Malaca; *his receiving an Embaſſador from the King of* Batta; *With his ſending me to that King, and that which arrived to me in that Voyage.*

§. 1. THe next day our General *Gonçallo vaz Coutinho* arrived at *Goa*, with ſo many of us as remained alive; There he was exceedingly welcomed by the Vice-roy, unto whom he rendred an accompt of his Voyage, as alſo of that which he had concluded with the Queen of *Onor*, who had promiſed to burn the Galley within four days, and to chace the *Turks* out of all the Confines of her Kingdom, wherewith the Vice-roy was very well ſatisfied. In the mean time after I had remained three and twenty days in the ſaid Town of *Goa*, where I was cured of two hurts which I had received in fight at the *Turks* Trenches, the neceſſity whereunto I ſaw my ſelf reduced, and the counſel of a Fryer, my Friend, perſwaded me to offer my ſervice unto a Gentleman, named *Pedro de Faria*, that was then newly preferred to the Charge of Captain of *Malaca*, who upon the firſt motion was very willing to entertain me for a Soldier, and promiſed me withall to give me ſomething over and above the reſt of his Company during the Voyage which he was going to make with the Vice-roy. For it was at that very time when as the Vice-roy *Dom Garcia de Noronha* was preparing to go to the ſuccor of the Fortreſs of *Diu*, which he certainly knew was beſieged, and in great danger to be taken, by reaſon of the great Forces wherewithall it was inveſted by the *Turk*, and to relieve it the Vice-roy had aſſembled a mighty Fleet at *Goa*, conſiſting of about two hundred and twenty five Veſſels, whereof fourſcore and three were great ones, namely Ships, Gallions, Carvels, and the reſt Brigantins, Foiſts, and Galleys, wherein it was ſaid there were ten thouſand Land-men, and thirty thouſand Mariners, beſides a great number of Slaves. The time of ſetting ſail being come, and the Foiſts provided of all things neceſſary, the Vice-roy imbarqued himſelf on *Saturday* the fourteenth of *November*, 1538. Howbeit five days paſt away before he put out of the Haven, in regard he ſtayed for his men that were not all ready to imbarque; the mean while a Catur arrived from the Town of *Diu* with a Letter from *Antonio de Silveyra*, Captain of the Fortreſs, whereby he advertiſed the Vice-roy, that the *Turks* had raiſed the ſiege, and were retired. Now though theſe were good news, yet was the whole Fleet grieved thereat for the great deſire every one had to fight with the Enemies of our Faith. Hereupon the Vice-roy abode there five days longer, during the which he took order for all things neceſſary to the conſervation of his Government of the *Indiaes*, and then commanding to hoiſt ſail he departed from *Goa* on a Thurſday morning the fixteenth of *December*: The fourteenth of his Navigation he went and caſt anchor at *Chaul*, where he remained three days, during the which he entred into conference with *Inezamuluco*, a *Mahometan* Prince, and took order for certain affairs very much importing the ſurety of the Fortreſs: After that he cauſed ſome of the Veſſels of the Fleet to be rigged, which he furniſhed with Soldiers and Victuals, and then departed for to go to *Diu*; But it was his ill fortune, as he was croſsing the Gulph, to be ſuddenly overtaken by ſuch a furious Tempeſt, that it not only ſeparated his Fleet, but was the loſs of many Veſſels, chiefly of the Baſtard Galley, which was caſt away at the mouth of the River *Dabul*, whereof *Dom Alvaro de Noronha*, the Vice-roys ſon, and General of the Sea-forces, was Captain; In the ſame Gulph alſo periſhed the Galley named *Eſpinheyro*, commanded by *Jovan de Souſa*, howbeit the moſt part of their men were ſaved by *Chriſtophilo de Gama*, who came moſt opportunely to their ſuccor. During this Tempeſt there were ſeven other ſhips likewiſe caſt away, the names of which I have forgotten, in ſo much that it was a month before the Vice-roy could recover himſelf of the loſs he had ſuſtained, and re-aſſemble his Fleet again which this ſtorm had ſcattered in divers places: At length the ſixteenth of *January*, 1539. he arrived at the Town of *Diu*, where he cauſed the Fortreſs to be re-built, the greater part whereof had been demoliſhed by the *Turks*, ſo as it ſeemed that it had been defended by the beſieged, rather by miracle, then force: Now to effect it the better he made proclamation, that all the Captains with their Soldiers ſhould each of them take in charge to re-build that quarter, which ſhould be allotted

lotted them; and because never a Commander there had more then *Pedro de Faria*, he thought fit to appoint him the Bulwark, which looked to the Sea, for his quarter, together with the out-wall that was on the Lands side; wherein he bestowed such care and diligence, that in six and twenty days space, both the one and the other were restored to a better state then before, by the means of three hundred Soldiers that were employed about it. This done, for that it was the fourteenth of *March*, and a fit time for Navigation to *Malaca*, *Pedro de Faria* set sail for *Goa*, where by vertue of a Patent granted him by the Vice-roy he furnished himself with all things necessary for his Voyage; Departing then from *Goa* on the thirteenth of *April* with a Fleet of eight Ships, four Foists, and one Galley, wherein there were five hundred men, he had so favorable a wind, that he arrived at *Malaca* the fifth day of *June* in the same year, 1539.

*Pedro de Faria* succeeding *Dom Estevam de Gama* in the Charge of Captain of *Malaca*, § 2. arrived there safely with his Fleet, nothing hapning in his Voyage worthy of writing. Now because at his arrival, *Estevan de Gama* had not yet ended the time of his Commission, he was not put into the possession of that Government until the day that he was to enter upon his Charge. Howbeit, in regard *Pedro de Faria* was ere long to be Governor of the Fortress, the neighboring Kings sent their Embassadors to congratulate with him, and to make a tender of their amity, and of a mutual conservation of Peace with the King of *Portugal*. Amongst these Embassadors there was one from the King of *Batas*, who reigned in the Isle of *Samatra*, where it is held for a surety that the Island of Gold is, which the King of *Portugal*, *Dom Joana* the Third, had resolved should have been discovered by the advice of certain Captains of the Country. This Embassador, that was Brother-in-law to the King of *Batas*, named *Aquarem Daboley*, brought him a rich Present of Wood of *Aloes*, *Calambac*, and five quintals of Benjamon in flowers, with a Letter written on the bark of a Palm tree, where these words were inserted.

*More ambitious then all men of the service of the crowned Lyon, seated in the dreadful Throne of the Sea, the rich and mighty Prince of* Portugal, *thy Master and mine, to Whom, in thee* Pedro de Faria, *I do now render obedience with a sincere and true amity, to the end I may become his Subject with all the purity and affection which a Vassal is obliged to carry unto his Master*; *I* Angeesiry Timotrin, *King of* Batas, *desiring to insinuate my self into thy friendship, that thy Subjects may be inriched with the fruits of this my Country, I do offer by a new Treaty to replenish the Magazins of thy King, who is also mine, with Gold, Pepper, Camfire, Benjamen, and Aloes, upon condition that with an entire confidence thou shalt send me a safe conduct, written and assigned with thine own hand, by means whereof all my* Lanchares *and* Jurupanges *may navigate in safety. Furthermore, in favor of this new amity, I do again beseech thee to succor me with some Powder and great Shot, whereof thou hast but too much in thy Store-houses, and therefore mayst well spare them; for I had never so great need of all kind of warlike munitions as at this present. This granted, I shall be much indebted to thee if by thy means I may once chastise those perjured* Achems, *the mortal and eminent Enemies of thy* Malaca, *with whom, I swear to thee, I will never have peace as long as I live, until such time as I have had satisfaction for the blood of my three children, which call upon me for vengeance, and that therewith I may assuage the sorrow of their noble Mother, who having given them suck, and brought them up, hath seen them since miserably butchered by that cruel Tyrant of* Achem *in the Towns of* Jacur *and* Lingua, *as thou shalt be more particularly informed by* Aquarem Daboley, *the Brother of those childrens desolate Mother, whom I have sent unto thee for a confirmation of our new amity, to the end, Signior, that he may treat with thee about such things as shall seem good unto thee, as well for the service of God, as for the good of thy people. From* Panisu *the fifth day of the eighth Moon.*

This Embassador received from *Pedro de Faria* all the honor that he could do him after their manner, and as soon as he had delivered him the Letter it was translated into the *Portugal* out of the *Malayan* Tongue wherein it was written. Whereupon the Embassador by his Interpreter declared the occasion of the discord, which was between the Tyrant of *Achem*, and the King of *Batas*, proceeding from th[illegible] Tyrant had not long before propounded unto this King of *Batas*, who was a Gen[illegible] of *Ma*[illegible] conditionally that he would wed him to a Sist[illegible] that was also a Gentile, and married to [illegible] *Batas* would by no means condescend [illegible]diately [illegible]unced

denounced War againſt him: So each of them having raiſed a mighty Army, they fought a moſt bloody Battel, that continued three hours, and better, during the which the Tyrant perceiving the advantage the *Batacs* had of him, after he had loſt a great number of his people, he made his retreat into a Mountain, called *Cagerrendan*, where the *Batacs* held him beſieged by the ſpace of three and twenty days, but becauſe in that time many of the Kings men fell ſick, and that alſo the Tyrants Camp began to want Victuals, they concluded a Peace, upon condition that the Tyrant ſhould give the King five bars of Gold (which are in value two hundred thouſand crowns of our money) for to pay his Soldiers, and that the King ſhould marry his eldeſt ſon to that ſiſter of the Tyrant, who had been the cauſe of making that War. This accord being ſigned by either part, the King returned into his Country, where he was no ſooner arrived, but relying on this Treaty of Peace he diſmiſt his Army, and diſcharged all his Forces. The tranquillity of this Peace laſted not above two months and an half, in which time there came to the Tyrant three hundred *Turks*, whom he had long expected from the Straight of *Mecqua*, and for them had ſent four Veſſels laden with Pepper, wherein alſo were brought a great many Caſes full of Muskets and Hargebuſezes, together with divers Pieces both of Braſs and Iron Ordnance. Whereupon the firſt thing the Tyrant did was to joyn thoſe three hundred *Turks* to ſome Forces he had ſtill afoot, then making as though he would go to *Pacem* for to take in a Captain that was revolted againſt him, he cunningly fell upon two places, named *Jacur* and *Lingua*, that appertained to the King of *Batas*, which he ſuddenly ſurprized when they within them leaſt thought of it, for the Peace newly made between them took away all the miſtruſt of ſuch an attempt, ſo as by that means it was eaſie for the Tyrant to render himſelf Maſter of thoſe Fortreſſes. Having taken them he put three of the Kings ſons to death, and ſeven hundred *Ourobalanes*, ſo are the nobleſt and the valianteſt of the Kingdom called. This while the King of *Batas*, much reſenting, and that with good cauſe, ſo great a Treachery, ſware by the head of his god *Quiay Hocombiner*, the principal Idol of the Gentiles ſect, who hold him for their god of Juſtice, never to eat either fruit, ſalt, or any other thing, that might bring the leaſt guſt to his palate, before he had revenged the death of his children, and drawn reaſon from the Tyrant for this loſs; proteſting further, that he was reſolved to dye in the maintenance of ſo juſt a War. To which end, and the better to bring it to paſs, the King of *Batas* ſtraightway aſſembled an Army of fifteen thouſand men, as well natives, as ſtrangers, wherewithall he was aſſiſted by ſome Princes his friends: and to the ſame effect he emplored the Forces of us Chriſtians, which was the reaſon why he ſought to contract that new amity, we have ſpoken of before, with *Pedro de Faria*, who was very well contented with it, in regard he knew that it greatly imported, both the ſervice of the King of *Portugal*, and the conſervation of the Fortreſs, beſides that by this means he hoped very much to augment the Revenue of the Cuſtoms, together with his own particular, and all the reſt of the *Portugals* profit, in regard of the great Trade they had in thoſe Countries of the *South*.

§. 3. After that the King of *Batas* Embaſſador had been ſeventeen days with us, *Pedro de Faria* diſmiſſed him, having firſt granted whatſoever the King his Maſter had demanded, and ſomething over and above, as fire-pots, darts, and murdering Pieces, wherewith the Embaſſador departed from the Fortreſs ſo contented, that he ſhed tears for joy, nay, it was obſerved, that paſſing by the great door of the Church, he turned himſelf towards it, with his hands and eyes lift up to Heaven, and then as it were praying to God; *Almighty Lord*, ſaid he openly, *that in reſt and great joy liveſt there above ſeated on the Treaſure of thy Riches, which are the ſpirits formed by thy Will, here I promiſe thee, if it may be thy good pleaſure to give us the victory againſt this Tyrant of* Achem, *and to permit us to regain that from him, which with ſuch notable treachery he hath taken from us in thoſe places of* Jacur *and* Lingua, *we will always moſt faithfully and ſincerely acknowledg thee according to the Law of the* Portugals, *and according to that holy Verity, wherein conſiſts the Salvation of all that are born in the World: Furthermore, in our Country we will build fair Temples unto thee, perfumed with ſweet odours, where all living Souls ſhall on their bended knees adore thee, as it hath been always uſed to be done unto this preſent in the Land of* Portugal. *And bear what beſides I promiſe, and ſwear unto thee with all the aſſuredneſs of a good and faithful ſervant, that the King my Maſter ſhall never acknowledg any other King then the great* Portugal, *Who is now Lord of Malaca.*

Having made this proteſtation, he preſently imbarqued himſelf in the ſame *Lanchara*, wherein he came thither, being accompanied with eleven or twelve *Balons*, which are ſmall Barques,

Barques, and ſo went to the Iſle of *Upa*, diſtant not above half a league from the Port. There the *Bandara* of *Malaca* (who is as it were chief Juſticer amongſt the *Mahometans*) was preſent in perſon by the expreſs commandment of *Pedro de Faria* for to entertain him; And accordingly he made him a great Feaſt, which was celebrated with Hoboys, Drums, Trumpets, and Cymbals, together with an excellent conſort of voyces framed to the tune of Harps, Lutes, and Viols after the *Portugal* manner. Whereat this Embaſſador did ſo wonder, that he would often put his finger on his mouth, an uſual action with thoſe of that Country when they marvel at any thing. About twenty days after the departure of this Embaſſador, *Pedro de Faria* being informed, that if he would ſend ſome Commodities from the *Indiaes* to the Kingdom of *Batas*, he might make great profit thereof, and much more of thoſe which ſhould be returned from thence, he to that effect ſet forth a *Jurupango*, of the bigneſs of a ſmall Carvel, wherein he ventured a matter of ſome ten thouſand duckets; In this Veſſel he ſent, as his Factor, a certain *Mahometan*, born at *Malaca*; and was deſirous to have me to accompany him, telling me that thereby I ſhould not only much oblige him, but that alſo under pretext of being ſent as Embaſſador thither, I might both ſee the King of *Batas*, and going along with him in his journey againſt the Tyrant of *Achem*, which ſome way or other would queſtionleſs redound to my benefit. Now to the end that upon my return out of thoſe Countries I might make him a true relation of all that I had ſeen, he prayed me carefully to obſerve whatſoever ſhould paſs there, and eſpecially to learn whether the Iſle of Gold, ſo much talked of, was in thoſe parts, for that he was minded, if any diſcovery of it ſhould be made, to write unto the King of *Portugal* about it. To ſpeak the truth, I would fain have excuſed my ſelf from this Voyage, by reaſon thoſe Countries were unknown to me, and for that the inhabitants were by every one accounted faithleſs and treacherous, having ſmall hope beſides to make any gain by it, in regard that all my ſtock amounted not to above an hundred duckets; But becauſe I durſt not oppoſe the Captains deſire I imbarqued my ſelf, though very unwillingly, with that Infidel who had the charge of the Merchandiſe. Our Pilot ſteered his courſe from *Malaca* to the Port of *Serevilus*, which is in the Kingdom of *Aarn*, always coaſting the Iſle of *Samatra* towards the *Mediterranean* Sea, till at length we arrived at a certain River, called *Hicandure*; After we had continued five days ſailing in this manner we came to an Harbor, named *Minhateſey*, diſtant ſome ten leagues from the Kingdom of *Peedir*. In the end finding our ſelves on the other ſide of the Ocean we ſailed on four days together, and then caſt anchor in a little river, called *Gaateamgim*, that was not above ſeven fathom deep, up the which we paſt ſome ſeven or eight leagues. Now all the while we ſailed in this River with a fair wind, we ſaw athwart a Wood, which grew on the bank of it, ſuch a many Adders, and other crawling creatures, no leſs prodigious for their length, then for the ſtrangeneſs of their forms, that I ſhall not marvel if they that read this Hiſtory will not beleeve my report of them; eſpecially ſuch as have not travelled, for they that have ſeen little beleeve not much, whereas they that have ſeen much beleeve the more. All along this River, that was not very broad, there were a number of Lizards, which might more properly be called Serpents, becauſe ſome of them were as big as an *Almadia*, with ſcales upon their backs, and mouths two foot wide. Thoſe of the Country aſſured us, that theſe creatures are ſo hardy, as there be of them that ſometimes will ſet upon an *Almadia*, chiefly when they perceive there is not above four or five perſons in her, and overturn it with their tails, ſwallowing up the men whole, without diſmembering of them. In this place alſo we ſaw ſtrange kind of creatures, which they call *Caquiſſeitan*; They are of the bigneſs of a great Gooſe, very black, and ſcaly on their backs, with a row of ſharp pricks on their chins, as long as a writing pen: Moreover, they have wings like unto thoſe of Bats, long necks, and a little bone growing on their heads reſembling a Cocks-ſpur, with a very long tail ſpotted black and green, like unto the Lizards of that Country; Theſe creatures hop and fly together, like Graſhoppers, and in that manner they hunt Apes, and ſuch other beaſts, whom they purſue even to the tops of the higheſt Trees. Alſo we ſaw Adders, that were copped on the crowns of their heads, as big as a mans thigh, and ſo venomous, as the *Negroes* of the Country informed us, that if any living thing came within the reach of their breath, it dyed preſently, there being no remedy nor antidote againſt it. We likewiſe ſaw others, that were not copped on the crowns, nor ſo venomous as the former, but far greater and longer, with an head as big as a Calves. We were told that they hunt their prey in this manner: They get up into a tree, and winding their tails about ſome branch of it, let their bodies hang down to the foot of t[illegible]n laying one of their ears cloſe to the ground, they harken whether they can [illegible]uring the ſtillneſs

neſs of the night, ſo that if an Ox, a Boar, or any other beaſt doth chance to paſs by, they preſently ſeize on it, and ſo carries it up into the tree where he devours it. In like ſort we deſcryed a number of Baboons, both grey and black, as big as a great Maſtiff, of whom the *Negroes* of the Country are more afraid, then of all the other beaſts, becauſe they will ſet upon them with that hardineſs, as they have much ado to reſiſt them.

## CHAP. VII.

*What happened to me at* Pemain *with the King of* Batas *expedition againſt the Tyrant of* Achem; *and what he did after his Victory over him.*

§. I. BY that time we had ſailed ſeven or eight leagues up the River, at the end we arrived at a little Town, named *Botterrendun*, not above a quarter of a mile diſtant from *Pamain*, where the King of *Batas* was at that time making preparation for the War he had undertaken againſt the Tyrant of *Achem*. This King underſtanding that I had brought him a Letter and a Preſent from the Captain of *Malaca*, cauſed me to be entertained by the *Xabandar*, who is he that with abſolute power governs all the affairs of the Army: This General, accompanied with five *Lanchares*, and twelve *Ballons*, came to me to the Port where I rode at anchor; Then with a great noiſe of Drums, Bells, and popular acclamations, he brought me to a certain Key of the Town, called *Campalatar*; There the *Bendara*, Governor of the Kingdom, ſtayed for me in great ſolemnity, attended by many *Ourebalms* and *Amberraias*, which are the nobleſt perſons of his Court, the moſt part of whom, for all that, were but poor and baſe, both in their habit, and manner of living, whereby I knew that the Country was not ſo rich as it was thought to be in *Malaca*. When I was come to the Kings Palace, and had paſt through the firſt Court, at the entrance of the ſecond I found an old woman, accompanied with other perſons far nobler, and better apparelled then thoſe that marched before me, who beckoning me with her hand, as if ſhe had commanded me to enter:

*Man of Malaca*, ſaid ſhe unto me, *Thy arrival in the King my Maſters Land, is as agreeable unto him, as a ſhower of rain is to a crop of Rice in dry and hot weather; Wherefore enter boldly, and be afraid of nothing, for the people, which by the goodneſs of God thou ſeeſt here, are no other then thoſe of thine own Country, ſince the hope which we have in the ſame God makes us believe that he will maintain us all together unto the end of the World.* Having ſaid ſo, ſhe carried me where the King was, unto whom I did obeyſance according to the manner of the Country, then I delivered him the Letter and the Preſent I had brought him, which he graciouſly accepted of, and asked me what occaſion drew me thither. Whereunto I anſwered, as I had in commiſſion, that I was come to ſerve his Highneſs in the Wars, where I hoped to have the honor to attend on him, and not to leave him till ſuch time as he returned Conqueror of his Enemies: Hereunto I likewiſe added, that I deſired to ſee the City of *Achem*, as alſo the ſcituation and fortifications of it, and what depth the River was of, whereby I might know whether it would bear great Veſſels and Gallions, becauſe the Captain of *Malaca* had a deſign to come and ſuccor his Higneſs, as ſoon as his men were returned from the *Indians*, and to deliver his mortal Enemy, the Tyrant of *Achem*, into his hands. This poor King preſently believed all that I ſaid to be true, and ſo much the rather, for that it was conformable to his deſire, in ſuch ſort, that riſing out of his Throne where he was ſet, I ſaw him go and fall on his knees before the carcaſs of a Cows head, ſet up againſt the wall, whoſe horns were guilt, and crowned with flowers; Then lifting up his hands and eyes, *O thou*, ſaid he, *that not conſtrained by any material love, wherewith Nature hath obliged thee, doſt continually make glad all thoſe that deſire thy milk, as the own mother doth him whom ſhe hath brought into the World, without participating either of the miſeries, or pains, which ordinarily ſhe ſuffers from whom we take our Being, be favorable unto the prayer which now with all my heart I offer up unto thee: and it is no other but this, that in the meadows of the Sun, Where with the payment and recompence which thou receiveſt, thou art contented with the good that thou doſt here below, thou wilt be pleaſed to conſerve me in the new amity of this good Captain, to the end he may put in execution all that this man here hath told me.* At theſe words all the Courtiers, which were likewiſe on their knees, ſaid three times as it were in anſwer, *How happy were he that could ſee that, and then dye incontinently?* Whereupon the King aroſe, and wiping his eyes, which were all beblubbered with the tears that proceeded from the zeal of the prayer he had made, he queſtioned me about many particular things of the *Indians*, and

*Malaca.*

*Malaca*. Having ſpent ſome time therein, he very courteouſly diſmiſſed me, with a promiſe to cauſe the Merchandiſe, which the *Mahometan* had brought in the Captain of *Malaca*'s name, to be well and profitably put off, which indeed was the thing I moſt deſired. Now for as much as the King at my arrival was making his preparations for to march againſt the Tyrant of *Achem*, and had taken order for all things neceſſary for that his Voyage, after I had remained nine days in *Panaim*, the Capital City of the Kingdom of *Batas*, he departed with ſome Troops towards a place, named *Turban*, ſome five leagues of, where he arrived an hour before Sun-ſet, without any manner of reception, or ſhew of joy, in regard of the grief he was in for the death of his children, which was ſuch as he never appeared in publique, but with great demonſtrations of ſorrow.

The next morning the King of *Batas* marched from *Turban* towards the Kingdom of *Achem*, being eighteen leagues thither: He carried with him fifteen thouſand men of War, whereof eight thouſand were *Batas*, and the reſt *Menancabes*, *Lufons*, *Andraguires*, *Jambes*, and *Bournees*, whom the Princes his neighbors had aſſiſted him with, as alſo forty Elephants, and twelve Carts with ſmall Ordnance, namely, Faulcons, Baſes, and other field Pieces, amongſt the which there were three that had the Arms of *France*, and were taken in the year 1526. at ſuch time as *Lopo Vaz de Sampayo* governed the State of the *Indias*. Now the King of *Batas* marching five leagues a day came to a River, called *Quilem*; There by ſome of the Tyrants Spies, which he had taken, he learnt that his Enemy waited for him at *Tondacur*, two leagues from *Achem*, with a purpoſe to fight with him, and that he had great ſtore of ſtrangers in his Army, namely *Turks*, *Cambayans*, and *Malabars*: Whereupon the King of *Batas* aſſembling his Councel of War, and falling into conſultation of this affair, it was concluded as moſt expedient to ſet upon the Enemy before he grew more ſtrong. With this reſolution having quit the River he marched ſomewhat faſter then ordinary, and arrived about ten of the clock in the night at the foot of a Mountain, half a league from the Enemies Camp, where, after he had repoſed himſelf a matter of three hours, he marched on in very good order, for which effect having divided his Army into four Squadrons, and paſſing along by a little hill, when he came to the end thereof he diſcovered a great Plain ſowed with Rice, where the Enemy ſtood ranged in two Battalions. As ſoon as the two Armies deſcryed one another, and that at the ſound of their Trumpets, Drums, and Bells the Soldiers had ſet up a terrible cry, they encountred very valiantly together, and after the diſcharge of their ſhot on both ſides, they came to fight hand to hand with ſuch courage, that I trembled with fear to behold their fury. The Battel continued in this manner above an hour, and yet could it not poſſibly be diſcerned which party had the better. At laſt the Tyrant foreſeeing, that if he perſiſted in the fight, he ſhould loſe the day, becauſe he perceived his men to grow faint and weary, he retreated to a riſing ground, that lay South of the *Batas*, and about a Faulcons ſhot diſtant from them. There his intention was to fortifie himſelf in certain Trenches which before he had cauſed to be caſt up againſt a Rock in form of a garden, or tilth of Rice; But a brother to the King of *Andraguire* interrupted his deſign, for ſtepping before him with two thouſand men, he cut off his way, and ſtopt him from paſſing further, in ſo much that the medly grew to be the ſame it was before, and the fight was renewed between them with ſuch fury, as cruelly wounding one another, they teſtified ſufficiently how they came but little ſhort of other Nations in courage. By this means the Tyrant, before he could recover his Trenches, loſt fifteen hundred of his men, of which number were the hundred and threeſcore *Turks*, that a little before were come to him from the Straight of *Mecqua*, with two hundred *Sarrazins*, *Malabars*, and ſome *Abiſſins*, which were the beſt men he had; Now becauſe it was about mid-day, and therefore very hot, the King of *Batas* retired towards the Mountain, where he ſpent the reſt of the day in cauſing thoſe that were wounded to be looked unto, and the dead to be buried. Hereupon, not being well reſolved what to do, in regard he was altogether ignorant of the Enemies deſign, he took care to have good watch kept all that night in every part. The next morning no ſooner began the Sun to appear but he perceived the Valley, wherein the *Achems* had been the day before, to be quite abandoned, and not one of them to be ſeen there, which made him think the Enemy was defeated: In this opinion, the better to purſue the firſt point of his Victory, he diſmiſſed all the hurt men, as being unfit for ſervice, and followed the Tyrant to the City, where arriving two hours before Sun-ſet, to ſhew that he had ſtrength and courage enough to combat his Enemies, he reſolved to give them proof of it by ſome remarkable action before he himſelf; To which effect he fired two of the Suburbs of the Town, as alſo

§. 2.

two Gallions, which were drawn on Land, and were thoſe that had brought the *Turks* from the Straight of *Mecqua*: And indeed the fire took with ſuch violence on thoſe ſix Veſſels, as they were quite conſumed in a very little time, the Enemy not daring to iſſue forth for to quench it. After this, the King of *Batas* ſeeing himſelf favored by Fortune, to loſe no opportunity began to aſſault a Fort, called *Penarao*, which with twelve Pieces of Ordnance defended the entry of the River, to the Scalado of this he went in perſon, his whole Army looking on, and having cauſed ſome ſeventy or eighty ladders to be planted, he behaved himſelf ſo well, that with the loſs only of ſeven and thirty men he entred the place, and put all to the ſword that he found in it, to the number of ſeven hundred perſons, without ſparing ſo much as one of them. Thus did he on the day of his arrival perform three memorable things, whereby his Soldiers were ſo heartned, as they would fain have aſſaulted the City the very ſame night, if he would have permitted them, but in regard it was very dark, and his men weary, he gave thanks to God, and contented himſelf with that which he had done.

§. 3. The King of *Batas* held the City beſieged by the ſpace of three and twenty days, during the which two ſallies were made, wherein nothing paſt of any reckoning, for there were but ten men ſlain on either part; Now as victories and good ſucceſs in War do ordinarily encourage the victorious, ſo oftentimes it happens that the weak become ſtrong, and cowards ſo hardy, as laying aſide all fear they dare undertake moſt difficile and dangerous things, whence alſo it as often falls out, that the one proſpers, and the other is ruined, which appeared but too evidently in that which I obſerved of theſe two Princes; For the King of *Batas*, ſeeing that the Tyrant had ſhut himſelf up in his City, thereby as it were confeſſing that he was vanquiſhed, grew to ſuch an height of confidence, that both he and his people believing it was impoſſible for them to be reſiſted, and truſting in this vain opinion, that blinded them, were twice in hazard to be loſt by the raſh and inconſiderate actions which they entred into. In the third ſally, made by the inhabitants, the King of *Batas* people encountred them very luſtily in two places, which thoſe of *Achem* perceiving, they made as though they were the weaker, and ſo retreated to the ſame Fort, that was taken from them by the *Batas* the firſt day of their arrival, being cloſely followed by one of the Kings Captains, who taking hold of the opportunity, entred pell-mell with the *Achems*, being perſwaded that the Victory was ſure his own. But when they were all together in the Trenches the *Achems* turned about, and making head afreſh defended themſelves very couragiouſly: At length in the heat of their medley, the one ſide endeavoring to go on, and the other to withſtand them, thoſe of *Achem* gave fire to a Myne they had made, which wrought ſo effectually, as it blew up the Captain of the *Batas*, and above three hundred of his Soldiers, with ſo great a noiſe, and ſo thick a ſmoak, as the place ſeemed to be the very portraiture of Hell: In the mean time the Enemies giving a great ſhout, the Tyrant ſallied forth in perſon, accompanied with five thouſand reſolute men, and charged the *Batas* very furiouſly; Now for that neither of them could ſee one another by reaſon of the ſmoak proceeding from the Myne, there was a moſt confuſed and cruel conflict between them, but to ſpeak the truth I am not able to deliver the manner of it, ſufficeth it that in a quarter of an hours ſpace, the time this fight endured, four thouſand were ſlain in the place on both ſides, whereof the King of *Batas* loſt the better part, which made him retire with the remainder of his Army to a Rock, called *Minacalem*, where cauſing his hurt men to be dreſt, he found them to be two thouſand in number, beſides thoſe that were killed, which becauſe they could not be ſo ſuddenly buried were thrown into the current of the River. Hereupon the two Kings continued quiet for four days after, at the end whereof one morning, when nothing was leſs thought of, there appeared in the midſt of the River on *Penaticaus* ſide a Fleet of fourſcore and ſix Sails, with a great noiſe of muſick, and acclamations of joy: At firſt this object much amazed the *Batas*, becauſe they knew not what it was, howbeit the night before their ſcouts had taken five fiſhermen, who put to torture confeſſed, that this was the Army which the Tyrant had ſent ſome two months before to *Tevaſſery*, in regard he had War with the *Siamus*, King of *Siam*, and it was ſaid that this Army was compoſed of five thouſand *Luſſons* and *Sornes*, all choyce men, having to their General a *Turk*, named *Hamotecam*, Nephew to the *Baſſa* of *Cairo*. Whereupon the King of *Batas* making uſe of theſe fiſhermens confeſſion, reſolved to retire himſelf in any ſort whatſoever, well conſidering that the time would not permit him to make an hours ſtay, as well becauſe his Enemies Forces were far greater then his, as for that every minute they expected ſuccors from *Pedir* and *Pazen*, whence, as it was reported for certain, there were twelve ſhips full of ſtrangers coming. No ſooner was the King fortified

in

in this reſolution, but the night enſuing he departed very ſad, and ill contented for the bad ſucceſs of his enterprize, wherein he had loſt above three thouſand and five hundred men, not comprising the wounded, which were more in number, nor thoſe that were burnt with the fire of the Mine. Five days after his departure he arrived at *Bantam*, where he diſmiſſed all his Forces, both his own ſubjects and ſtrangers; That done, he imbarqued himſelf in a ſmall *Lanchara*, and went up the River without any other company then two or three of his Favorites: With this ſmall retinue he betook himſelf to a place, called *Pacalſuran*, where he ſhut himſelf up for fourteen days, by way of penitence, in a Pagod or an Idol, named *Gimaſſeand*, which ſignifies *the God of Godneſs*. At his return to *Pantan* he ſent for me, and the *Malabaraſe* that brought *Pedro de Faria's* Merchandiſe. The firſt thing that he did was to enquire particularly of him whether he made a good ſale of it, adding withall, that if any thing were ſtill owing to him he would command it to be preſently ſatisfied; Hereunto the *Malabaraſe* and I anſwered, that through his Highneſs favor all our buſineſs had received a very good diſpatch, and that we were well paid for that we had ſold, in regard whereof the Captain of *Malaca* would not fail to acknowledge that courteſie, by ſending him ſuccor for to be revenged on his Enemy the Tyrant of *Achem*, whom he would inforce to reſtore all the places, which he had unjuſtly uſurped upon him. The King hearing me ſpeak in this manner ſtood a while muſing with himſelf, and then in anſwer to my ſpeech, *Ah Portugal*, ſaid he, *ſince thou conſtraineſt me to tell thee freely what I think, believe me thou herein ſeeſt ſo ignorant, as that thou muſt be able to perſwade me, or that I can be capable to imagine, that he, which in thirty years ſpace could not revenge himſelf, is of power to ſuccor me at this preſent in ſo ſhort a time; or if yet thou thinkeſt I deceive my ſelf, tell me I pray thee now (ſeeing I am come) it that the King and his Governors could not hinder this cruel King of Achem from taking from you the Fort of Pazem, and the Galley which went to the Molucques, as alſo the two Ships in Queda, and the Galliot of Malaca, at ſuch time as Garcia was Captain there, beſides the four Foiſts that were taken and ſunk at Salangor, with the two Ships that came from Bengala, or Lopo Chanoca's Ship and Ship, as likewiſe many other Veſſels, which I cannot now remember; in the which, as I have been aſſured, this Tyrant hath put to death ſundry of the Portugals, and got into his ſtorehouſe rich booty. Wherefore if this Tyrant ſhould happen to come and make againſt me, how can I think I have aid ready upon their account, which have been ſo often deceived. I muſt of neceſſity then continue as I am with three of my children murthered, and the greateſt part of my Kingdom deſtroyed, ſeeing you your ſelves are not much more aſſured in your Fortreſs of Malaca.* I muſt needs confeſs that this anſwer, made with ſo much reſentment, rendred me ſo aſhamed, knowing he ſpake nothing but truth, that I durſt not talk to him afterwards of any ſuccor, nor for our honor reiterate the promiſes which I had formerly made him.

## CHAP. VIII.

### *What paſt between the King of* Batas *and me, until ſuch time as I imbarqued for* Malaca; *my Arrival in the Kingdom of* Queda, *and my return from thence to* Malaca.

§. 1. THe *Malabaraſe* and I returning to our lodging, departed not in four days after, employing that time in ſhipping an hundred Bars of Tin, and thirty of Benjamin, which were ſtill on Land. Then being fully ſatisfied by our Merchants, and ready to go, I went to wait upon the King at his *Paſſeiran*, which was a great place before the Palace, where thoſe of the Country kept their moſt ſolemn Fairs; There I gave him to underſtand, that now we had nothing more to do but to depart if it would pleaſe his Majeſty to permit us: The entertainment that he gave me then was very gracious, and for anſwer he ſaid to me, I am very glad for that *Herman Xabandar* (who was chief General of the Wars) affirmed me yeſterday that your Captains commodities were well ſold, but it may be that that which he told me was not ſo, and that he delivered not the truth for to pleaſe me, and to accommodate himſelf to the deſire he knew I had to have it ſo, wherefore, continued he, I pray thee declare unto me freely whether he dealt truly with me, and whether the *Malabaraſe* that bro[illegible] fully ſatisfied, for I would not that to my diſhonor thoſe of *Malaca* ſhould ha[illegible]in of the Merchants of *Panaim*, ſaying, that they are not men of their [illegible] is not a King there who can conſtrain them to pay their debts; and I ſa[illegible]ith of Pagan,

that

that this affront would be no leſs inſupportable to my condition, then if I ſhould chance to make peace with that Tyrant, and perjured Enemy of mine, the King of *Achem*. Whereunto having replyed, that we had diſpatched all our affairs, and that there was nothing due to us in his Kingdom; Verily, ſaid he, I am very well pleaſed to hear that it is ſo, wherefore ſince thou haſt nothing elſe to do here, I hold it requiſite, that without any further delay thou ſhouldſt go, for the time is now fit to ſet ſail, and to avoyd the great heats that ordinarily are endured in paſſing the Gulph, which is the cauſe that ſhips are many times caſt upon *Pazem* by foul weather at Sea, from which I pray God deliver thee, for I aſſure thee that if thy ill fortune ſhould carry thee thither, the men of *Achem* would eat thee alive, and the Tyrant himſelf would have the fulleſt bite at thee, there being nothing in the world theſe Inhumanes ſo much vaunt of, as to carry on the creſt of their Arms the device of *Drinkers of the troubled blood of miſerable Caffres*, who they ſay are come from the end of the world, calling them *Tyrannical men, and Uſurpers in a ſovereign degree of other mens Kingdoms in the Indiaes, and Iſles of the Sea*. This is the title wherein they glory moſt, and which they attribute particularly to themſelves, as being ſent them from *Meriqua* in recompence of the golden Lamps, which they offered to the Sepulcher of their *Mahomet*, as they uſe to do every year. Furthermore, although heretofore I have often advised my Captain of *Maluca* to take careful heed of this Tyrant of *Achem*, yet do not thou omit to adviſe him of it once more from me; for know that he never had, nor ſhall have other thoughts then to labor by all means to expel him out of the *Indiaes*, and make the Turk Maſter of them, who to that end promiſeth to ſend him great ſuccors; but I hope that God will ſo order it, as all the malice and cunning of this diſloyal wretch ſhall have a contrary ſucceſs to his intentions. After he had uſed this language to me, he gave me a Letter in anſwer to my Embaſſage, together with a preſent, which he deſired me to deliver from him to Capelin de *Faria*, this was ſix ſmall Jarlins headed with Gold, twelve *Cates* of *Calambuca* Wood, every one of them weighing twenty ounces, and a box of exceeding value, made of a Tortoiſe ſhell, beautified with Gold, and full of great ſeed pearl, amongſt the which there were fifteen fair pearls of rich account: For my ſelf, he gave me two *Cates* of Gold, and a little Courtelaſſe garniſhed with the ſame. Then he diſmiſſed me with as much demonſtration of honor as he had always uſed to me before, proteſting to me in particular, that the amity which he had contracted with our Nation ſhould ever be inviolable on his part. Thus I imbarqued my ſelf with *Agnevan Dabelay*, his Brother in law, who was the ſame he had ſent Embaſſador to *Maluca*, as I have related before. Being departed from the Port of *Pansur*, we arrived about two hours in the night at a little Iſland, called *Apoſingua*, diſtant ſome league and an half from the mouth of the River, and inhabited by poor people, who lived by the fiſhing of Sheds.

§. 2. The next morning, leaving that Iſland of *Apoſingua*, we ran along by the coaſt of the Ocean Sea for the ſpace of five and twenty leagues, until ſuch time as at length we entered into the Straight of *Minbagarun*, by which we came; then paſſing by the contrary coaſt of this other *Mediterranean* Sea, we continued our courſe along by it, and at laſt arrived near to *Pulo Bugay*: There we croſt over to the firm Land, and paſſing by the Port of *Jungalan*, we ſailed two days and an half with a favorable wind, by means whereof we got to the River of *Parles* in the Kingdom of *Queda*, there we rode five days at anchor in expectation of a fit wind to carry us on. During that time, the *Mahometan* and my ſelf, by the counſel of certain Merchants of the Country, went to viſit the King with an *Odiad*, or Preſent of divers things, that we thought were convenient for our deſign, which was received with much demonſtration of being very well pleaſed therewith. When we came to his Court we found, that with a great deal of pomp, excellent muſick, dancing, and largeſs to the poor, he was ſolemnizing the funerals of his Father, whom he himſelf had poyſoned, of purpoſe for to marry his own mother, after he had got en her with child: Wherewithall not being contented, to decline the murmur, which ſo wicked and horrible an act might provoke unto, he had made proclamation, that on pain of a moſt rigorous death no perſon whatſoever ſhould be ſo daring, as to ſpeak a word of that which had paſt, and it was told us there, how for that cauſe he had moſt tyrannically put the principal Perſonages of his Kingdom, and a number of Merchants already to death, whoſe goods he had confiſcated to his own uſe, and thereby enriched his Coffers with two millions of Gold; So that upon our arrival we perceived ſuch a general fear to be amongſt the people, as not the moſt hardy of them all durſt ſo much as make the leaſt mention in the world of it. Now in regard the *Mahometan*, my companion, named *Coia Ale*, was a man liberal of his tongue,

and

and that would ſay any thing which came into his head, he perſwaded himſelf, in regard he was a ſtranger, and the Captain of *Malaca*'s Factor, that he might with more liberty then thoſe of the Country talk what he liſted, and the King not puniſh him for it, as he did his Subjects; But he found himſelf far ſhort of his account, and this preſumption coſt him his life: For being invited to a feaſt by another *Mahometan* like himſelf, a Merchant ſtranger, born at *Pasaua*, when as they were both of them high with wine and meat, as I learned ſince, they began to talk boldly, and without any reſpect of the Kings Brutality and Parricide, whereof the King, being incontinently advertiſed by Spies, which he had in every corner for that purpoſe, he cauſed the houſe to be preſently inveſted, and all the gueſts to be apprehended, to the number of ſeventeen perſons; Theſe poor wretches were no ſooner brought bound before him, but immediately, without obſerving any form of Juſtice, or hearing what they could ſay for themſelves either good or bad, he commanded them to be put to a moſt cruel kind of death, called by them *Gregoge*, which is, to ſaw off the feet, hands, and heads of them that are condemned to it, as I beheld afterwards my ſelf. This execution done, the King, fearing leſt the Captain of *Malaca* ſhould be offended for that he had executed his Factor thus with the reſt, and therefore might arreſt ſome goods that he had at *Malaca*, ſent the night following for me to the *Jurupango*, where I was ſleeping, and altogether ignorant of that which had paſt: underſtanding the Kings pleaſure away I went, and coming about midnight to the Palace I perceived in the outward Court a great many men in arms; the ſight whereof I muſt confeſs put me into a mighty amazement and miſtruſt, becauſe I could not imagine what ſhould be the cauſe of it, and doubting leſt it might be ſome ſuch Treaſon as at other times they had practiſed againſt us, I would fain have returned, but they that accompanied me, judging that my fear proceeded from the Soldiers which I beheld there, bid me be afraid of nothing, for theſe men were only going forth to apprehend an offendor by the Kings commandment; Having ſaid this with an intent to confirm me, I could not for all that be ſatisfied, but was ſeized with ſo terrible a fear, as I was not able to utter a word, howbeit at length recollecting my ſelf a little, I ſignified to them the beſt I could, how if they would permit me to return to my Skiff for to fetch a thing which I had forgotten, I would give them forty Crowns in Gold; whereunto they anſwered, that if I would give them all the Silver in *Malaca* they would not let me go, for if they ſhould, they were ſure to loſe their heads: This ſpeech of theirs redoubled my fear, which yet increaſed when I ſaw my ſelf invironned with twenty more of thoſe armed men, who guarded me all that night. The next morning the King being advertiſed that I was there, commanded me to be brought unto him, into the next Court, where I found him mounted on an Elephant, and accompanied with an hundred perſons beſides thoſe of his guard, which were far more in number; When he ſaw me coming towards him, much troubled, and indeed more dead then alive, he ſaid twice to me, *Be not afraid, but come nearer to me, and thou ſhalt know the cauſe why I ſent for thee.* Thereupon having made a ſign to me with his hand that I ſhould look that way he pointed me to, I turned me about and beheld a great many bodies extended on the place, and weltering in their own blood, amongſt the which I preſently knew the *Mahometan, Coia Alv*, with whom I came, which I no ſooner perceived, but like a man diſtraught of his wits I caſt my ſelf at the feet of the Elephant whereupon the King rode, and with tears in my eyes cryed out, O Sir, have pity on me, and take me for thy ſlave, rather then cauſe me to end my days with the torments which have taken thoſe out of the world whom I ſee here; I ſwear unto thee by the faith of a Chriſtian, that I have not deſerved death, as having no way offended thee; Conſider likewiſe, I beſeech thee, that I am Nephew to the Captain of *Malaca*, who will give thee any ranſom for me thou wilt deſire, as alſo that thou haſt the *Jurupango*, wherein I came, in thy Port, full of goods, all which thou mayſt take if thou pleaſeſt. Hearing me ſpeak in this ſort, *God forbid*, ſaid he, *that ever I ſhould do any ſuch thing, no, no, be not afraid, but ſtand up, and recollect thy ſelf, for I ſee well thou art much troubled, and when thou art in better caſe to hear me I will tell thee Wherefore I cauſed the Moor, that came with thee, to be executed; and in good faith if he had been either a Portugal, or a Chriſtian, I would not have put him to death, no, though he had killed mine own ſon.* Howbeit perceiving, that all which he could ſay would not rid me of my fear, he commanded a pot of freſh water to be brought me, whereof I drunk a pretty quantity, and withall made one of his followers to fan me with a veniloiw for to refreſh me: A quarter of an hour, or thereabouts, was ſpent in this action, at the end whereof finding that I was ſo well recovered, as I was able with good ſence to anſwer unto the queſtions he ſhould aſk me; *Portu-* *me, I know that*

thou

thou haſt bern told, ſince thy coming hither, how I killed my Father, as indeed I did, becauſe I was ſure he would have killed me, incited thereunto by the falſe reports of ſome of his ſlaves, would have made him believe that I had gotten my mother with child, whereof I had never ſo much as the leaſt thought, whereby thou mayſt ſee what ill tongues can do. Indeed it is true, that being moſt aſſured he had without all reaſon given ſuch credit to thoſe ſlanderous reports, as he was fully reſolved to have taken away my life, to decline that imminent peril I prevented him, and caught him in the ſame ſnare he had layd for me; But God knows how much againſt my mind this fell out, and how I always made it my chiefeſt glory to render him the dutiful offices of a moſt obedient ſon, as it may well appear now at this preſent: for to keep my mother from being a ſad and deſolate widow, as many others are, ſeeing my ſelf to be the cauſe of her miſery, and obliged to comfort her, I have taken her to wife; judg then whether I have been wrongfully blamed, or no, ſince that for her I have refuſed many great parties, that have been propounded unto me from *Patacia, Berdio, Tanançarin, Siaca, Jamba*, and *Andragia*, who were no leſs then Siſters and Daughters of Kings, and offered unto me with very rich dowries. Now being informed that ſuch falſe reports had been diſperſed abroad of me, for to arreſt the tongues of Detractors, which are ſo audacious as to talk of any thing comes in their heads, I cauſed it to be proclaimed, that none ſhould dare to ſpeak of that affair; But for as much as without any regard at all of this my Injunction, this fellow of thine, which lies there in the company of thoſe other Dogs, like unto himſelf, ſpoke yeſterday of me moſt reproachfully in publique, ſaying, I was an Hog, or worſe then a very Hog, and my mother a ſalt Bitch; as well to puniſh his ſlanders, as to preſerve my honor, I was conſtrained to put him to death, together with theſe other Dogs, who were no leſs ſlanderous then he: Wherefore I am to deſire thee, that as my friend thou wilt not think this procedure of mine any way ſtrange. Now if thou ſhouldſt happen to think, that I have done it on purpoſe to ſeize upon the Captain of *Malaca*'s goods, be confident that I never meant it, & thou mayſt truly certifie him ſo much; For I ſwear unto thee by my Law, that I have ever been a great friend to the *Portugals*, and ſo will continue all my life. Hereupon being ſomewhat recovered from the fear I was in a little before, I anſwered him, How his Highneſs had much obliged his very good friend, and brother, the Captain of *Malaca*, by the execution of that *Mahometan*, who had imbeazled away a great part of the goods committed to his charge, and underſtanding that I had diſcovered his knavery he had twice gone about to poyſon me; whereunto alſo I added, how this Dog when he was drunk would bark at every one, and ſpeak his pleaſure at large. This anſwer made upon the ſudden, and not knowing well what I ſaid, very much pleaſed the King, who commanding me to come nearer to him, Verily, continued he, by this ſpeech of thine I perceive thou art an honeſt man, and my friend, and being ſo I doubt not but thou wilt give a good interpretation to my actions, contrary to thoſe maſtiff Dogs that lie there welt'ring in their own blood. Having ſaid ſo, he took a purſe from his girdle trimmed with gold, and gave it me, as alſo a Letter directed to *Pedro de Faria*, whereupon I took my leave of him, with a promiſe that I would ſtay there a week longer; howbeit getting ſpeedily aboard my *Jurupango*, I made not a minutes ſtay, but inſtantly cauſed the Mariners to hoiſt ſail, and away, ſtill imagining that ſome were following to apprehend me, by reaſon of the extream fear I was in, having ſo lately eſcaped, as I thought, the danger of a moſt cruel death.

§. 3. Being departed from the River of *Parles* on a Saturday about Sun-ſet, I made all the ſpeed that poſſibly I could, and continued my courſe until the Tueſday following, when it pleaſed God that I reached to the Iſles of *Pulo Sambalin*, the firſt Land on the Coaſt of *Malayo*. There by good fortune I met with three *Portugal* ſhips (whereof two came from *Bengala*, and the other from *Pegu*) commanded by *Triſtan de Gaa*, who had ſometimes been Governor of the perſon of *Don Lorenzo*, ſon to the Vice-roy *Don Franceſco d'Almeda*, that was after ward put to death by *Miroocem* in *Chaul* Roade, as is at large delivered in the Hiſtory of the Diſcovery of the *Indies*. This ſame *Triſtan* furniſhed me with many things that I had great need of, as tackle, and Mariners, together with two Soldiers, and a Pilot; moreover, both himſelf and the other to ſhips had always a care of me until our arrival at *Malaca*. where diſ-imbarquing my ſelf, the firſt thing I did was to go to the Fortreſs for to ſalute the Captain, and to render him an account of the whole ſucceſs of my Voyage, where I diſcourſed unto him at large what Rivers, Ports, and Havens I had newly diſcovered in the Iſle of *Sumatra*, as well on the *Mediterranean*, as on the Ocean Seas ſide, as alſo what commerce the inhabitants of the Country uſed. Then I declared unto him the manner of all that Coaſt, of all thoſe Ports,

and

and of all thoſe Rivers; whereunto I added the ſcitnations, the heights, the degrees, the names, and the depths of the Ports, according to the direction he had given me at my departure. Therewithall I made him a deſcription of the Roda wherein *Roſado*, the Captain of a *French* ſhip, was loſt, and another, named *Matelote de Brigas*, as alſo the Commander of another ſhip, who by a ſtorm at Sea was caſt into the Port of *Din* in the year 1529. during the raign of *Sultan Bandur*, King of *Cambaya*. This Prince having taken them all, made fourſcore and two of them abjure their faith, who ſerved him in his Wars againſt the great *Mogor*, and were every one of them miſerably ſlain in that expedition. Moreover I brought him the deſcription of a place fit for anchorage in *Pulo Botum* Roade, where the *Biſquayn* Ship ſuffered ſhipwrack, which was ſaid to be the very ſame, wherein *Magellan* compaſſed the World, and was called the *Victoria*, which traverſing the Iſle of *Java* was caſt away at the mouth of the River of *Sonda*. I made him a recital likewiſe of many different Nations, which inhabit all along this Ocean, and the River of *Lampon*, from whence the Gold of *Menancabo* is tranſported to the Kingdom of *Campar*, upon the waters of *Jambes* and *Broteo*. For the inhabitants affirm out of their Chronicles, how in this very Town of *Lampon* there was anciently a Factory of Merchants, eſtabliſhed by the Queen of *Sheba*, whereof one, named *Nanſem*, ſent her a great quantity of Gold, which ſhe carried to the Temple of *Jeruſalem*, at ſuch time as ſhe went to viſit the wiſe King *Solomon*; From whence, ſome ſay, ſhe returned with child of a ſon, that afterwards ſucceeded to the Empire of *Æthiopia*, whom now we call *Preſter-John*, of whoſe race the *Abiſſins* vaunt they are deſcended. Further, I told him what courſe was uſually held for the fiſhing of ſeed pearl betwixt *Pulo Tiquos* and *Pulo Quenim*, which in times paſt were carried by the *Batas* to *Pazem* and *Pedir*, and exchanged with the *Turks* of the Straight of *Mecqua*, and the Ships of *India*, for ſuch Merchandiſe as they brought from *Grand Cairo*, and the Ports of *Arabia Fœlix*. Divers other things I recounted unto him, having learnt them of the King of *Batas*, and of the Merchants of *Panaim*: And for concluſion, I gave him an information in writing, as he had formerly deſired me, concerning the Iſland of Gold: I told him, how this Iſland is beyond the River of *Culandor* five degrees to the Southward, inviron'd with many ſhelfs of ſand, and currents of water, as alſo that it was diſtant ſome hundred and threeſcore leagues from the point of the Iſle of *Samatra*. With all which reports *Pedro de Faria* remained ſo well ſatisfied, that he made preſent relation thereof to the King *Dom Joan* the Third of happy memory, who the year after ordained *Franceſco d'Almeida* for Captain to diſcover the Iſle of Gold, a Gentleman of merit, and very capable of that charge, who indeed had long before petitioned the King for it in recompence of the ſervices by him performed in the Iſlands of *Banda*, of the *Moluccques*, of *Ternate*, and *Geilolo*: But by ill fortune this *Franceſco d'Almeida*, being gone from the *Indies* to diſcover that place, dyed of a feaver in the Iſles of *Nicubar*; Whereof the King of *Portugal* being advertiſed, he honored one *Diego Cabral*, born at the *Maderaes*, with that Command, but the Court of Juſtice deprived him of it by expreſs order from *Martinez Alphonſo de Souſa*, who was at that time Governor, which partly proceeded, according to report, for that he had murmured againſt him; Whereupon he gave it to *Jeronimo Fogueredo*, a Gentleman belonging to the Duke of *Braganca*, who in the year 1542. departed from *Goa* with two Foiſts, and one Carvel, wherein there were fourſcore men, as well Soldiers, as Mariners; But it is ſaid, that his Voyage was without effect, for that, according to the apparances that he gave of it afterward, it ſeemed that he deſired to enrich himſelf too ſuddenly: To which end he paſſed to the Coaſt of *Tanaſſery*, where he took certain Ships, that came from *Mecqua*, *Adem*, *Alcoſſer*, *Judaa*, and other places upon the Coaſt of *Perſia*. And verily this booty was the occaſion of his undoing, for upon an unequal partition thereof falling at difference with his Soldiers, they mutined in ſuch ſort againſt him, as after many affronts done him they bound him hand and foot, and ſo carried him to the Iſle of *Ceilan*, where they ſet him on Land; and the Carvel, with the two Foiſts, they returned to the Governor *Don Joano de Caſtro*, who in regard of the neceſſity of the time pardoned them the fault, and took them along with him in the Army, which he led to *Din* for the ſuccor of *Don Joana Maſcarenhas*, that was then ſtrictly beſieged by the King of *Cambaya*'s Forces. Since that time there hath been no talk of the diſcovery of this Iſland of Gold, although it ſeems very much to import the common good of our Kingdom of *Portugal*, if it would pleaſe God it might be brought to paſs.

## Chap. IX.

*The Arrival of an Embaſſador at* Malaca *from the King of* Aaru *to the Captain thereof; his ſending me to the ſaid King, my coming to* Aaru, *and that which happend to me after my departing from thence.*

§. 1. FIve and twenty days after my coming to *Malaca*, *Dom Stephano de Gama* being ſtill Captain of the Fortreſs, an Embaſſador arrived there from the King of *Aaru*, for to demand ſuccor of men from him, and ſome munitions of War, as Powder, and Bullets, for to defend himſelf from a great Fleet that the King of *Achem* was ſetting forth againſt him, with an intention to deprive him of his Kingdom, and ſo be a nearer neighbor unto us, to the end that having gained that paſſage, he might afterwards ſend his forces the more eaſily againſt our Fortreſs of *Malaca*: whereof *Pedro de Faria* was no ſooner advertiſed, but repreſenting unto himſelf how important this affair was for the ſervice of the King, and preſervation of the Fortreſs, he acquainted *Dom Stephano de Gama* with it, in regard his Command of the place was to continue yet ſix weeks longer; howbeit he excuſed himſelf from giving the ſuccor, which was required, ſaying, that the time of his Government was now expiring, and that his being ſhortly to come in the duty of his charge did oblige him to take care of this buſineſs, and to think of the danger that menaced him. Hereunto *Pedro de Faria* made anſwer, that if he would relinquiſh his Government for the time he had yet to come in it, or give him full power to diſpoſe of the publique Magazins, he would provide for the ſuccor that he thought was neceſſary. In a word, and not to ſtand long on that which paſt betwixt them, it ſhall ſuffice to ſay, that this Embaſſador was utterly denyed his demand by theſe two Captains, whereof the one alledged for excuſe, that he was not yet entered upon his Charge, and the other that he was upon the finiſhing of his: whereupon he returned very ill ſatisfied with this refuſal, and ſo far reſented injuſtice, which he thought was done unto his King, as the very morning wherein he imbarqued himſelf, having met by chance with the two Captains at the gate of the Fortreſs, he ſaid aloud before them publiquely with the tears in his eyes; *O God! that with a ſoveraign Power and Majeſty raigneſt in the higheſt of the Heavens, even with deep ſighs fetch'd from the bottom of my heart, I take thee for Judg of my cauſe, and for Witneſs of the juſt occaſion I have to make this requeſt to theſe Captains here, and that in the name of my King, the faithful Vaſſal of the great King of* Portugal, *upon homage ſworn by his Anceſtors to the famous* Albuquerque, *who promiſed us, that if the Kings of our Kingdom did always continue true and loyal Subjects to his Maſter, that then both he and his ſucceſſors would oblige themſelves to defend them againſt all their enemies, as belonged to their ſoveraign Lord to do; Wherefore ſince we have continued ſtill loyal to this day, what reaſon have you, my Maſters, not to accompliſh this obligation, wherein your King and you are ſo deeply engaged, eſpecially ſeeing you know that only in reſpect of you this perfidious Tyrant of* Achem *takes our Country from us; For there is nothing he ſo much reproacheth us withall, as that my King is as good a Portugal, and Chriſtian, as if he had been born in* Portugal; *and yet now that he deſires you to ſuccor him in his need, as allyes and true friends ought to do, you excuſe your ſelves with reaſons that are of no validity. The ſuccor we require of you for to ſecure us, and to keep this faithleſs wretch from ſeizing on our Kingdom, is a very ſmall matter, namely, forty or fifty* Portugals, *that may inſtruct us in the military art, together with four barrels of Powder, and two hundred Bullets for field Pieces; a poor thing in compariſon of that you have. Now if you can yet be perſwaded to grant us this little aid, you ſhall thereby ſo much oblige our King, as he will ever remain a faithful ſlave to the mighty Prince of* Portugal, *your Maſter and ours, in whoſe name I beſeech you, once, twice, nay an hundred times, that you will perform that appertains unto your duty to do, for this which I thus publikely demand of you is of ſo great importance, that therein conſiſts, not ſo much the preſervation of the Kingdom of* Aaru, *as the ſafety of this your Fortreſs of* Malaca, *which that Tyrant of* Achem *our enemy ſo extreamly deſires to poſſeſs, and to that purpoſe he hath gotten the aſſiſtance of divers ſtrange Nations; but becauſe he finds that our Kingdom is a let to the execution of his deſign, he endeavors to uſurp it upon us, and then he intends to guard this Straight in ſuch ſort, as he will quite exclude you from all Commerce with the Spices of* Banda *and the* Molucques, *and from all the Trade and Navigation of the Seas of* China, Sunda, Borneo, Timor, *and* Jappon, *and this his own people ſtick not to boaſt of even already, being alſo further manifeſted by the accord,*

*Which*

*Which he hath lately made with the Turk, through the interpoſture of the Baſſa of grand* Cairo, *who in conſideration thereof hath promiſed to aya him with great Forces: Wherefore at length give ear unto the requeſt which I have made unto you in the name of my King, and that ſo much concerns the ſervice of yours, for ſince you may yet give a remedy to the miſchief, which you ſee is ready to fall, I deſire you to do it ſpeedily; And let not one of you excuſe himſelf by alledging that the time of his Government is almoſt at an end, nor the other, that he is not as yet entered upon his Charge, for it is ſufficient that you know you are both of you equally obliged thereunto.*

Having finiſhed this ſpeech in form of a requeſt, which availed him nothing, he ſtooped down to the ground, from whence taking up two ſtones, he knocked with them upon a Piece of Ordnance, and then the tears ſtanding in his eyes he ſaid, *The Lord, who hath created us, will defend us if he pleaſe*, and ſo imbarquing himſelf he departed greatly diſcontented for the bad anſwer he carried back. Five days after his departure *Pedro de Faria* was told how all the Town murmured at the ſmall reſpect, that both he and *Dom Stephano* had carried to that poor King, who had ever been a friend both to them, and the whole *Portugal* Nation, and continually done very good offices to the Fort, for which cauſe his Kingdom was now like to be taken from him: This advice cauſing him to ſee his fault, and to be aſhamed of his proceeding, he labored to have palliated it with certain excuſes, but at laſt he ſent this King by way of ſuccor fifteen quintals of fine Powder, an hundred pots of Wild-fire, an hundred and fifty Bullets for great Ordnance, twelve Harquebuzes, forty ſacks of ſtones, threeſcore Headpieces, and a Coat of guilt Mail, lined with Crimſon Sattin for his own perſon, together with many other garments of divers ſorts, as alſo twenty pieces of *Caracas*, which are ſtained linnen, or Cotten Tapeſtry, that come from the *Indiaes*, and cloth of *Malaya*, wherewith they uſually apparel themſelves in that Country, as well for his wife, as his daughters. All theſe things being laden aboard a *Lanchara* with oars, he deſired me to conduct and preſent them from him to the King of *Aarn*, adding withall, that this buſineſs greatly concerned the King of *Portugals* ſervice, and that at my return, beſides the recompence I ſhould receive from him, he would give me an extraordinary pay, and upon all occaſions employ me in ſuch Voyages, as might redound to my profit; whereupon I undertook it, in an ill hour as I may ſay, and for a puniſhment of my ſins, in regard of what arrived unto me thereupon, as ſhall be ſeen hereafter. So then I imbarqued my ſelf on Tueſday morning, the fifth of *October*, 1539. and uſed ſuch ſpeed, that on Sunday following I arrived at the River of *Pantsican*, upon which the City of *Aarn* is ſcituated.

I no ſooner got to the River of *Pantican*, but preſently landing I went directly to a Trench, which the King in perſon was cauſing to be made at the mouth of the River for to impeach the Enemies diſ-imbarquing; Preſenting my ſelf unto him, he received me with great demonſtration of joy, whereupon I delivered him *Pedro de Faria's* Letter, which gave him ſome hope of his coming in perſon to ſuccor him, if need required, with many other complements, that coſt little the ſaying, wherewith the King was wonderfully contented, becauſe he already imagined that the effect thereof would infallibly enſue; But after he ſaw the Preſent I brought him, conſiſting of Powder, and Ammunitions, he was ſo glad, that taking me in his arms, My good friend, ſaid he unto me, I aſſure thee that the laſt night I dreamt how all theſe things, which I behold here before me, came unto me from the King of *Portugal*, my Maſters Fortreſs, by means whereof, with Gods aſſiſtance, I hope to defend my Kingdom, and to ſerve him, in the manner I have always hitherto done, that is, moſt faithfully, as all the Captains can very well teſtifie, which have heretofore commanded in *Malaca*. Hereupon queſtioning me about certain matters, that he deſired to know, as well concerning the *Indiaes*, as the Kingdom of *Portugal*, he recommended the finiſhing of the Trench to his people, who wrought very earneſtly and chearfully in it, and taking me by the hand, on foot as he was, attended only by five or ſix Gentlemen, he led me directly to the City, that was about ſome quarter of a league from the Trench, where in his Palace he entertained me moſt magnificently, yea and made me to ſalute his wife, a matter very rarely practiſed in that Country, and held for a ſpecial honor, which when I had done with abundance of tears he ſaid unto me, *Portugal*, here is the cauſe that makes me ſo much to redoubt the coming of mine Enemies, for were I not withheld by my wife I ſwear unto thee by the Law of a good and true Moor, that I would prevent them in their deſigns without any other ayd then of my own Subjects; for it is not now that I begin to know what manner of man the perfidious *Achem* is, or how far his power extends; Alas! it is the §. 2.

great ſtore of Gold, which he poſſeſſeth, that covers his weakneſs, and by means whereof he wageth ſuch forces of ſtrangers, wherewith he is continually ſerved: But now that thou mayſt on the other ſide underſtand how vile and odious poverty is, and how hurtful to a poor King, ſuch as I may be, come thee along with me, and by that little which I will preſently let thee ſee thou ſhalt perceive, whether it be not too true, that Fortune hath been exceeding niggardly to me of her goods; Saying ſo, he carried me to his Orſenal, which was covered with thatch, and ſhewed me all that he had within it, whereof he might ſay with reaſon, that it was nothing in compariſon of what he needed for to withſtand the attempts of two hundred and thirty Veſſels, repleniſhed with ſuch warlike people, as the *Achems* and *Mulabar Turks* were; Moreover, with a ſad countenance, and as one that deſired to diſcharge his mind of the grief he was in for the danger was threatened him, he recounted unto me, that he had in all but ſix thouſand men *Aaruns*, without any other forraign ſuccor, forty Pieces of ſmall Ordnance, as Falconets, and Baſes, and one caſt Piece, which he had formerly bought of a *Portugal*, named *Antonio de Garcia*, ſometimes Receiver of the Toll and Cuſtoms of the Ports of the Forteſs of *Pacem*, whom *Georgio d' Albuquerque* cauſed ſince to be hanged and quartered at *Malaca*, for that he treated by Letters with the King of *Bintham* about a plot of Treaſon, which they had contrived together; He told me beſides, that he had alſo forty Muskets, ſix and twenty Elephants, fifty Horſemen for the guard of the place, eleven or twelve thouſand ſtaves hardened in the fire, called *Saligues*, whoſe points were poyſoned, and for the defence of the Trench fifty Lances, good ſtore of Targets, a thouſand pots of unſlack'd Lime made into Powder, and to be uſed inſtead of pots of Wild-fire, and three or four Barques full laden with great flints; In a word, by the view of theſe, and ſuch other of his miſeries, I eaſily perceived he was ſo unprovided of things neceſſary for his defence, that I preſently concluded the Enemy would have no great ado to ſeize on this Kingdom: Nevertheleſs he having demanded of me what I thought of all this Ammunition in his Magazin, and whether there were not enough to receive the gueſts he expected, I anſwered him, that it would ſerve to entertain them; but he underſtanding my meaning ſtood muſing a pretty while, and then ſhaking his head, Verily, ſaid he unto me, if your King of *Portugal* did but know what a loſs it would be to him, that the Tyrant of *Achem* ſhould take my Kingdom from me, doubtleſs he would chaſtiſe the little care of his Captains, who, blinded as they are, and wallowing in their avarice, have ſuffered my Enemy to grow ſo ſtrong, that I am much afraid they ſhall not be able to reſtrain him when they would, or if they could, that then it muſt be with an infinite expence. I labored to anſwer this which he had ſaid unto me with ſuch reſentment, but he confuted all my reaſons with ſo much truth, as I had not the heart to make any further reply; withall he repreſented divers foul and enormous actions unto me, wherewithall he charged ſome particulars amongſt us, which I am contented to paſs by in ſilence, both in regard they are nothing pertinent to my diſcourſe, and that I deſire not to diſcover other mens faults; For a concluſion of his ſpeech, he related unto me the little puniſhment which was ordained for ſuch as were culpable of theſe matters, and the great rewards that he had ſeen conferred on thoſe which had not deſerved them; whereunto he added, that if the King deſired throughly to perform the duty of his Charge, and by Arms to conquer people ſo far diſtant from his Kingdom, and to preſerve them, it was as neceſſary for him to puniſh the wicked, as to recompence the good. This ſaid, he ſent me to lodg in a Merchants houſe, who for five days together, that I remained there, entertained me bravely, though to ſpeak truth I had rather have been at that time in ſome other place with any poor victuals, for here I was always in fear, by reaſon of the Enemies continual alarms, and the certain news that came to the King the next day after my arrival, how the *Achems* were already marching towards *Aaru*, and would be there within eight days at the fartheſt, which made him in all haſte to give directions for ſuch things as he had not taken order for before, and to ſend the women, and all that were unfit for War, out of the City five or ſix leagues into the Wood, amongſt the which the Queen her ſelf made one, mounted on an Elephant. Five days after my arrival, the King ſent for me, and asked me when I would be gone, whereunto I replyed, at ſuch time as it would pleaſe his Greatneſs to command me, though I ſhould be glad it might be with the ſooneſt, for that I was to be employed by my Captain with his Merchandiſe to *China*. Thou haſt reaſon, anſwered he; then taking two Bracelets of maſſy Gold off from his wriſts, worth ſome thirty Crowns, I pre-thee now, ſaid he, giving them to me, do not impute it to miſerableneſs that I beſtow ſo little on thee, for thou mayſt be aſſured, that it hath been always my deſire for to have much for to give much; withall I muſt deſire thee to preſent this Letter, and

this

this Diamond from me to thy Captain, to whom thou ſhalt ſay, that whatſoever I am further engaged to him in for the pleaſure he hath done me by ſhecoring me with thoſe Ammunitions he hath ſent me by thee, I will bring it to him my ſelf hereafter, when I ſhall be at more liberty then now I am.

Having taken leave of the King of *Aarn*, I preſently imbarqued my ſelf, and departed about Sun-ſet, rowing down the River to an Hamlet, that is at the entrance thereof, compoſed of ten or eleven houſes covered with ſtraw: This place is inhabited with very poor people, that get their living by killing of *Lezards*, of whoſe livers they make a poyſon, wherewith they anoint the heads of their arrows; For the poyſon of this place, chiefly that, which is called *Pocanſilim*, is held by them the beſt of thoſe Countries, becauſe there is no remedy for him that is hurt with it. The next day, having left this ſmall Village, we ſailed along the coaſt with a land wind until evening, that we doubled the Iſlands of *Anchepiſan*, then the day and part of the night following we put forth ſomewhat farther to Sea: But about the firſt watch the wind changed to the North-eaſt, for ſuch winds are ordinary about the Iſle of *Samatra*, and grew to be ſo tempeſtuous, that it blew our maſt over board, tore our ſails in pieces, and ſo ſhattered our Veſſel, that the water came in that abundance into her at two ſeveral places, as ſhe ſunk incontinently to the bottom, ſo that of eight & twenty perſons, which were in her, three and twenty were drowned in leſs then a quarter of an hour. For as five that eſcaped by the mercy of God, we paſſed the reſt of the night upon a Rock, where the waves of the Sea had caſt us. There all that we could do was with tears to lament our ſad fortune, not knowing what counſel or courſe to take, by reaſon the Country was ſo mooriſh, and invironned with ſo thick a Wood, that a bird, were ſhe never ſo little, could hardly make way through the branches of it, for that the trees grew ſo cloſe together; We ſat crouching for the ſpace of three whole days upon this Rock, where for all our ſuſtenance we had nothing but Snails, and ſuch filth, as the foam of the Sea produced there. After this time, which we ſpent in great miſery and pain, we walked a whole day along by the Iſle of *Samatra*, in the owze up to the girdle-ſtead, and about Sun-ſet we came to the mouth of a little River, ſome Croſsbow-ſhot broad, which we durſt not undertake to ſwim over, for that it was deep, and we very weak and weary; ſo that we were forced to paſs all that night, ſtanding up to the chin in the water. To this miſery was there adjoyned the great affliction which the Flies and Gnats brought us, that coming out of the neighboring Woods, bit and ſtung us in ſuch ſort, as not one of us but was gore blood. The next morning as ſoon as we perceived day, which we much deſired to ſee, though we had little hope of life, I demanded of my four companions, all Mariners, whether they knew the Country, or whether there was any habitation thereabout; Whereupon the eldeſt of them, who had a wife at *Malaca*, not able to contain his tears, Alas! anſwered he, the place that now is moſt proper for you, and me, is the houſe of death, where ere it be long we muſt give an account of our ſins, it therefore behoves us to prepare our ſelves for it without any further delay, and patiently to attend that which is ſent us from the hand of God: For my part, let me intreat thee to be of a good courage whatſoever thou feeſt, and not be terrified with the fear of dying, ſince, every thing well conſidered, it matters not whether it be to day, or to morrow. This ſpoken, he embraced me, and with tears in his eyes deſired me to make him a Chriſtian, becauſe he beleeved, as he ſaid, that to be ſo was ſufficient to ſave his Soul, which could not otherwiſe be done in the curſed ſect of *Mahomet*, wherein he had lived till then, and for which he craved pardon of God. Having finiſhed theſe laſt words, he remained dead in mine arms, for he was ſo weak, as he was not able to ſubſiſt any longer, as well for that he had not eaten ought in three or four days before, as in regard of a great wound the wrack of the *Lanchara* had given him in his head, through which one might ſee his brains all putrefied and corrupted, occaſioned both for want of looking unto, as by ſalt water and flies that were gotten into it. Verily this accident grieved me very much, but for my ſelf I was in little better caſe, for I was likewiſe ſo weak, that every ſtep I made in the water I was ready to ſwoon, by reaſon of certain hurts on my head and body, out of which I had loſt a great deal of blood. Having buried him in the owze the beſt we could, the other three Mariners and my ſelf reſolved to croſs the River, for to go and ſleep on certain great Trees, that we ſaw on the other ſide, for fear of the Tygers and Crocodiles, whereof that Country is full, beſides many other venomous creatures, as an infinite of thoſe copped Adders I have ſpoken of before in the ſixth Chapter, and divers ſorts of Serpents with black and green ſcales, whoſe venom is ſo contagious, as they kill men with their very breath. This reſolution being thus taken by us, I deſired two of their

§. 3.

over firſt, and the other to ſtay with me for to hold me up in the water, for that in regard of my great weakneſs I could hardly ſtand upon my legs: whereupon they two caſt themſelves preſently into the water, exhorting us to follow them, and not be afraid; But alas! they were ſcarce in the midſt of this River, when as we ſaw them caught by two great Lezards, that before our faces, and in an inſtant tearing them in pieces, dragged them to the bottom, leaving the water all bloody, which was ſo dreadful a ſpectacle to us, as we had not the power to cry out; and for my ſelf, I knew not who drew me out of the water, nor how I eſcaped thence, for I was gone before into the River as deep as my waſte, with that other Mariner which held me by the hand.

## Chap. X.

*By what means I was carried to the Town of* Ciaca, *and that which befell me there; my going to* Malaca *with a Mahometan Merchant; and the Tyrant of* Achems *Army marching againſt the King of* Aaru.

§. 1. FInding my ſelf reduced to that extremity I have ſpoken of, I was above three hours ſo beſides my ſelf, as I could neither ſpeak, nor weep; At length the other Mariner and I went into the Sea again, where we continued the reſt of that day. The next morning having diſcovered a Barque, that was ſeeking the mouth of the River, as ſoon as it was near we got out of the water, and falling on our knees with our hands lift up we deſired them to come and take us up; whereupon they gave over rowing, and conſidering the miſerable ſtate we were in they judged immediately that we had ſuffered ſhipwrack, ſo that coming ſomewhat nearer they asked us what we deſired of them; we anſwered, that we were Chriſtians, dwelling at *Malaca*, and that in our return from *Aaru* we were caſt away by a ſtorm about nine days before, and therefore prayed them for Gods ſake to take us away with them whitherſoever they pleaſed. Thereupon one amongſt them, whom we gueſſed to be the chiefeſt of them, ſpake to us thus, By that which I ſee, you are not in caſe to do us any ſervice, and gain your meat, if we ſhould receive you into our Barque, wherefore if you have any mony hidden, you ſhall do well to give it us aforehand, and then we will uſe towards you that charity you require of us, for otherwiſe it is in vain for you to hope for any help from us: Saying ſo, they made ſhew as though they would be gone; whereupon we beſought them again weeping, that they would take us for ſlaves, and go ſell us where they pleaſed; hereunto I added, how they might have any ranſom for me they would require, as having the honor to appertain very nearly unto the Captain of *Malaca*. Well, anſwered he then, we are contented to accept of thy offer, upon condition, that if that which thou ſayſt be not true, we will caſt thee, bound hand and foot, alive into the Sea. Having replyed, that they might do ſo if they found it otherwiſe, four of them got preſently to us, and carried us into their Barque, for we were ſo weak at that time, as we were not able to ſtir of our ſelves. When they had us aboard, imagining that by whipping they might make us confeſs where we had hid our mony, for ſtill they were perſwaded that we had ſome, they tyed us both to the foot of the Maſt, and then with two double coards they whipped us till we were nothing but blood all over. Now becauſe that with this beating I was almoſt dead, they gave not to me, as they did to my companion, a certain drink, made of a kind of Lime, ſteeped in Urine, which he having taken it, made him fall into ſuch a furious vomiting, as he caſt up both his lungs and his liver, ſo as he dyed within an hour after. And for that they found no gold come up in his vomit, as they hoped, it pleaſed God that that was the cauſe why they deale not ſo with me, but only they waſhed the ſtripes they had given me with the ſaid liquor, to keep them from feſtering, which notwithſtanding put me to ſuch pain, as I was even at the point of death. Being departed from this River, which was called *Ariſſumbea*, we went the next day after dinner aſhore at a place, where the houſes were covered with ſtraw, named *Ciaca*, in the Kingdom of *Jambes*, there they kept me ſeven and twenty days, in which time by the aſſiſtance of Heaven I got my ſelf throughly cured of all my hurts. Then they that had a ſhare in my perſon, who were ſeven in number, ſeeing me unfit for their Trade, which was fiſhing, expoſed me to ſale three ſeveral times, and yet could meet with no body that would buy me; whereupon being out of hope of ſelling me, they turned me out of doors, becauſe they would not be at the charge of feeding me. I had been ſix and thirty days thus abandoned by theſe Inhumanes, and put a graſing like a caſt Horſe, having no other means to live but what I got by begging from door to door, which God knows was very little, in regard

thoſe

thoſe of the Country were extream poor, when as one day, as I was lying in the Sun upon the ſand by the Sea ſide, and lamenting my ill fortune with my ſelf, it pleaſed God that a *Mahometan*, born in the Iſle of *Palimban*, came accidentally by: This man, having been ſometimes at *Malaca* in the company of *Portugals*, beholding me lie naked on the ground, asked me if I were not a *Portugal*, and willed me to tell him the truth; whereunto I anſwered, that indeed I was one, and deſcended of very rich parents, who would give him for my ranſom whatſoever he would demand, if he would carry me to *Malaca*, where I was Nephew to the Captain of the Fortreſs, as being the ſon of his ſiſter. The *Mahometan* hearing me ſay thus, If it be true, replyed he, that thou art ſuch as thou deliverest thy ſelf to be, what ſo great ſin haſt thou committed that could reduce thee to this miſerable eſtate wherein I now ſee thee? Then I recounted to him from point to point how I was caſt away, and in what ſort the fiſhermen had firſt brought me thither in their Barque, and afterwards had turned me out to the wide world, becauſe they could not find any body that would buy me. Hereat he ſeemed to be much aſtoniſhed, ſo that muſing a pretty while by himſelf, Know ſtranger, ſaid he unto me, that I am but a poor Merchant, all whoſe wealth amounts not to above an hundred *Pardains* (which are worth two ſhillings a piece of our mony) with which I trade for the rows of Shads, thereby hoping to get my living; Now I am aſſured that I might gain ſomething at *Malaca*, if ſo be the Captain, and the Officers of the Cuſtom-houſe there, would not do me the wrong, which I have heard ſay they do to many Merchants that come thither to traffique; wherefore if thou thinkſt that for thy ſake I ſhould be well uſed there, I could be contented to redeem thee from the fiſhermen, and go thither with thee. Thereunto I anſwered him, with tears in mine eyes, that conſidering the ſtate I was in at the preſent, it was not likely he could give credit to any thing I ſaid, becauſe it was probable that to free my ſelf out of my miſerable captivity I would prize my perſon at a far higher value then it would be eſteemed for at *Malaca*; howbeit if he would lend any belief to my oaths, ſince I had no other aſſurance to give him, I would ſwear to him, and alſo ſet it under my hand, that if he would carry me to *Malaca*, the Captain ſhould do him a great deal of honor for my ſake, and beſides the exempting of his Merchandiſe from paying of cuſtom, he ſhould receive ten times as much as he ſhould diſburſe for me. Well, replyed the *Mahometan*, I am contented to redeem, and reconduct thee to *Malaca*, but thou muſt take heed that thou ſpeakeſt not a word of that we have concluded on, for fear thy Maſters hold thee at ſo dear a rate, as I ſhall not be able to draw thee out of their hands though I would never ſo fain; whereupon I gave him my faith to do nothing but what he would have me do, eſpecially in that particular, which I held to be moſt neceſſary for the better effecting of our deſire.

Four days after this agreement, the *Mahometan* Merchant, that he might the more eaſily redeem me, uſed the interpoſure of a man born in the Country, who under hand went to the fiſhermen, and carried the buſineſs ſo cunningly with them, as they quickly conſented to my redemption, for they were already very weary of me, as well in regard that I was ſickly, as for that I could no way ſtand them in any ſtead, and therefore, as I delivered before, they had turned me out of doors, where I had continued a month and better; ſo by the means of this third perſon, whom the *Mahometan* had employed, the fiſhermen ſold me to the Merchant for the ſum of ſeven *mazes* of gold, which amounts in our mony to ſeventeen ſhillings and ſix pence. The *Mahometan* as ſoon as he had redeemed me, brought me to his houſe, where I was five days out of the tyranny of theſe fiſhermen, and in a far better captivity then the former; At the end whereof my new Maſter went five leagues off to a place, named *Sorobaya*, where he got his Merchandiſe aboard, which, as I ſaid before, was nothing but the rows of Shads; For there is ſuch great abundance of them in that River, as the Inhabitants do therewith every year lade above two thouſand Veſſels, which carry at leaſt an hundred and fifty, or two hundred Barrels, whereof each one contains a thouſand rows, the reſt of the fiſh not yielding them a peny. After that the *Mahometan* had laden a *Lanchara* with this commodity, he preſently ſet ſail for *Malaca*, where within a while he ſafely arrived, and carrying me to the Fortreſs preſented me to the Captain, relating unto him what agreement we had made together. *Pedro de Faria* was ſo amazed to ſee me in ſuch a lamentable plight, as the tears ſtood in his eyes, whereupon he bade me ſpeak out aloud, that he might know whether it was I that he beheld, for that I did not ſeem to be my ſelf, in regard of the ſtrange deformity of my face Now becauſe that in three months ſpace there had been no news of me, and that every thought me to be dead, there came ſo many folks to ſee me, as the Fortreſs could ſcarce hold

§. 2.

Here being demanded the occaſion of my miſ-fortune, and who had brought me into that miſerable caſe, I recounted the adventures of my Voyage, juſt in the ſame manner as I have already delivered them, whereat the whole company were ſo aſtoniſhed, that I ſaw ſome go away without ſpeaking a word, and others ſhrink up their ſhoulders, and bleſs themſelves in admiration of that which they had heard from me; but in concluſion their compaſſion towards me was ſuch, that with the very alms they beſtowed on me I became far richer then I was before I undertook that unlucky Voyage. As for *Pedro de Faria*, he cauſed threeſcore duckets to be given to the *Mahometan* Merchant that brought me, beſides two pieces of good *China* Damask; moreover he freed him of all the duties he was to pay for the cuſtom of his Merchandiſe, which amounted to very near a like ſum, ſo as he remained exceeding well ſatisfied of the bargain he had made with me. After this, to the end I might be the better uſed and looked unto, the Captain commanded me to be lodged in the Regiſters houſe of the Kings Cuſtoms, where for that he was married there he thought I might be better accommodated then in any other place, as indeed I was very well entreated by him and his wife, ſo that having kept my bed about the ſpace of a month, it pleaſed God to reſtore me unto my perfect health.

§. 3. When I had recovered my health, *Pedro de Faria* ſent for me to the Fortreſs, where he queſtioned me about that which had paſt betwixt me and the King of *Aarn*, as alſo how and in what place I was caſt away, whereupon I made him an ample relation thereof. But before I proceed any further, it is requiſite I ſhould here report what was the ſucceſs of the War between the Kings of *Aarn* and *Achem*, to the end, that the deſolation, which I have ſo often foretold, of our Fortreſs of *Malaca*, may the more evidently appear, it being a matter of too much importance for to be ſo neglected as it is by thoſe, who ought to have more care of it. For this is certain, that either the power of the King of *Achem* is utterly to be ruined, or by it we ſhall be miſerably expelled out of all the Countries we have conquered all along the Southern Coaſt, as *Malaca*, *Banda*, *Maluco*, *Sunda*, *Borneo*, and *Timor*, and Northwards, *China*, *Japan*, and the *Leqnois*; as alſo many other parts and Ports, where the *Portugals* are very much intereſſed by reaſon of the Traffique which they dayly uſe there, and where they reap more profit then in any other place; that is yet diſcovered, beyond the Cape of good hope, the extent thereof being ſo great, that it contains along the Coaſt above three thouſand leagues, as may eaſily be ſeen by the cards and globes of the world, if ſo be their graduation be true. Beſides, if this loſs ſhould happen, which God of his infinite mercy forbid, though we have but too much deſerved it for our careleſſneſs and ſins, we are in danger in like manner to loſe the Cuſtoms of *Manderins* of the City of *Goa*, which is the beſt thing the King of *Portugal* hath in the *Indias*, for they are Ports and Iſlands, mentioned heretofore, whereon depends the greateſt part of his Revenue, not comprehending the Spices, namely, the Nutmegs, Cloves, and Maces, which are brought into this Kingdom from thoſe Countries. Now to return to my diſcourſe, I ſay, that the Tyrant of *Achem* was adviſed by his Councel how there was no way in the world to take *Malaca*, if he would aſſail it by Sea, as he had done divers times before, when as *Don Stephano de Gama* and his Predeceſſors were Captains of the Fortreſs, but firſt to make himſelf Maſter of the Kingdom of *Aarn*, to the end he might afterwards fortifie himſelf on the River of *Panetican*, where his Forces might more commodiouſly and nearly maintain the War he intended to make: For then he might have means with leſs charge to ſhut up the Straights of *Cincapura*, and *Sabam*, and ſo ſtop our Ships from paſſing to the Seas of *China*, *Sunda*, *Banda*, and the *Moluccques*, whereby he might have the profit of all the Drugs which came from that great Archipelague; And verily this counſel was ſo approved by the Tyrant, that he prepared a Navy of an hundred and threeſcore Sails, whereof the moſt part were *Lanchares* with oars, Galiots, *Calabuzes of Jaoa*, and fifteen Ships high built, furniſhed with Munition and Victual. In theſe Veſſels he imbarqued ſeventeen thouſand men, namely twelve thouſand Soldiers, the reſt Sailers and Pioners. Amongſt theſe were four thouſand Strangers, *Turks*, *Abiſſins*, *Malabares*, *Guſurates*, and *Luſons* of the Iſle of *Borneo*. Their General was one, named *Heredin Mahomet*, Brother-in-law to the Tyrant, by marriage with a Siſter of his, and Governor of the Kingdom of *Baarros*. This Fleet arrived ſafely at the River of *Panetican*, where the King of *Aarn* attended them with ſix thouſand of his own natural Subjects, and not a forraigner amongſt them, both in regard he wanted mony for to entertain Soldiers, and that alſo he had a Country unprovided of victual to feed them. At their arrival the Enemies found them fortifying of the Trench, whereof I ſpake heretofore; Whereupon

without

without any further delay they began to play with their Ordnance, and to batter the Town on the Sea ſide with great fury, which laſted ſix whole days together. In the mean time the beſieged defended themſelves very valiantly, ſo as there was much blood ſpilt on either ſide: The General of the *Achems*, perceiving he advanced but little, cauſed his Forces to Land, and mounting twelve great Pieces he renewed the battery three ſeveral times with ſuch impetuoſity, that it demoliſhed one of the two Forts that commanded the River, by means whereof, and under the ſhelter of certain packs of Cotton which the *Achems* carried before them, they one morning aſſaulted the principal Fortreſs: In this aſſault an *Abiſſin* commanded, called *Mamedocan*, who a month, or thereabout, before was come from *Juda*, to confirm the new League made by the Baſſa of *Caire* on the behalf of the grand *Signior* with the Tyrant of *Achem*, whereby he granted him a Cuſtom-houſe in the Port of *Pazem*. This *Abiſſin* rendered himſelf Maſter of the Bulwark, with threeſcore *Turks*, forty *Janizaries*, and ſome *Malabar* Moors, who inſtantly planted five Enſigns on the walls; In the mean time the King of *Aaru*, encouraging his people with promiſes, and ſuch words as the time required, wrought ſo effectually, that with a valorous reſolution they ſet upon the Enemy, and recovered the Bulwark which they had ſo lately loſt, ſo as the *Abiſſin* Captain was ſlain on the place, and all thoſe that were there with him. The King following his good fortune, at the ſame inſtant cauſed the gates of the Trench to be opened, and ſallying out with a good part of his Forces, he combated his Enemies ſo valiantly, as he quite routed them; In like manner he took eight of their twelve Pieces of Ordnance, and ſo retreating in ſafety he fortified himſelf the beſt he could for to ſuſtain his Enemies future aſſaults.

## Chap. XI.

### *The Death of the King of* Aaru, *and the cruel Juſtice that was executed on him by his Enemies; the going of his Queen to* Malaca, *and her reception there.*

THe General of *Achem*, ſeeing the bad ſucceſs which he received in this incounter, was §. 1.
more grieved for the death of the *Abiſſin* Captain, and the loſs of thoſe eight Pieces of Ordnance, then for all them that were ſlain beſides; whereupon he aſſembled his Councel of War, who were all of opinion that the commenced ſiege was to be continued; and the Trench aſſailed on every ſide, which was ſo ſpeedily put in execution, that in ſeventeen days it was aſſaulted nine ſeveral times, in ſo much as by divers ſorts of fire-works, continually invented by a *Turkiſh* Engineer, that was in their Camp, they demoliſhed the greater part of the Trench; Moreover they overthrew two of the principal Forts on the South ſide, together with a great Platform, which in the manner of a falſe-bray defended the entry of the River, notwithſtanding all the reſiſtance the King of *Aaru* could make with his people, though they behaved themſelves ſo valiantly, as the *Achems* loſt above two thouſand and five hundred men, beſides thoſe that were hurt, which were far more then the ſlain, whereof the moſt part dyed ſhortly after for want of looking to. As for the King of *Aaru*, he loſt not above four hundred men, howbeit for that his people were but few, and his Enemies many, as alſo better ordered, and better armed, in the laſt aſſault, that was given on the thirteenth day of the Moon, the buſineſs ended unfortunately by the utter defeat of the King of *Aaru*'s Forces; For it was his ill hap, that having made a ſalley forth by the advice of a *Cacis* of his, whom he greatly truſted, it fell out that this Traytor ſuffering himſelf to be corrupted with a bar of gold, weighing about forty thouſand duckets, which the *Achems* gave him, whereof the King of *Aaru* being ignorant, ſet courageouſly on his Enemies; and fought a bloody battel with them, wherein the advantage remained on his ſide in all mans judgment, but that Dog, the perfidious *Cacis*, whom he had left Commander of the Trench, ſallied forth with five hundred men, under colour of ſeconding the King in his purſuit of ſo proſperous a beginning, and left the Trench without any manner of defence, which perceived by one of the Ehemies Captains, a *Mahometan Malabar*, named *Cutiale Marcua*, he preſently with ſix hundred *Guſarates* and *Malabars*. [illegible] had led thither for that purpoſe, made himſelf Maſter of the Trench, which the t bar of gold he had received had left unguarded, and forthwith put all th he found there to the ſword, amounting to the number of abo would not ſpare ſo much as one. In the mean time the unha of nothing leſs then the treachery of his *Cacis*, ſeeing his Tre it, being a matter that moſt imported him; But finding himſ

to quit the place, ſo that as he was making his retreat to the Town ditch, it was his ill fortune to be killed by a ſhot of an Harquebuſe from a *Turk* his enemy. Upon this death of his enſued the loſs of all the reſt, by reaſon of the great diſorder it brought amongſt them. Whereat the Enemies exceedingly rejoycing, took up the Corps of that wretched King, which they found amongſt the other dead bodies, and having imbowelled and ſalted him they put him up in a Caſe, and ſo ſent him as a Preſent to the Tyrant, who, after many ceremonies of Juſtice, cauſed him to be publiquely ſawed into ſundry pieces, and then boiled in a great Cauldron full of Oyl and Pitch, with a dreadful Publication, the tenor whereof was this:

*See here the Juſtice, which* Sultan Laradin, *King of the Land of the two Seas, hath cauſed to be executed, whoſe will and pleaſure it is, that as the body of this miſerable Mahometan hath been ſawed in ſunder, and boiled here on Earth, ſo his Soul ſhall ſuffer worſe torments in Hell, and that moſt worthily, for his tranſgreſſing of the Law of* Mahomet, *and of the perfect belief of the* Muſſelmans *of the Houſe of* Mecqua: *For this execution is very juſt, and conformable to the holy Doctrine of the Book of Flowers, in regard this Miſcreant hath ſhewed himſelf in all his works to be ſo far without the fear of God, as he hath inceſſantly from time to time betrayed the moſt ſecret and important affairs of this Kingdom to thoſe accurſed Dogs of the other end of the world, who for our ſins, and through our negligence, have with notorious Tyranny made themſelves Lords of Malaca.* This Publication ended, a fearful noiſe aroſe amongſt the people, who cryed out, *This puniſhment is but too little for ſo execrable a crime.* Behold truly the manner of this paſſage, and how the loſs of the Kingdom of *Aaru* was joyned with the death of that poor King, who lived in ſuch good correſpondence with us, and that in my opinion might have been ſuccored by us with very ſmall charge and pains, if at the beginning of the War he had been aſſiſted with that little he demanded by his Embaſſador; Now who was in the fault hereof, I will leave to the judgment of them which moſt it concerns to know it.

§. 2. After that this infortunate King of *Aaru* had miſerably ended his days, as I have before related, and that his whole Army was utterly defeated, both the Town and the reſt of the Kingdom were eaſily and quickly taken in. Thereupon the General of the *Achems* repaired the Trenches, and fortified them in ſuch manner as he thought requiſite for the conſervation and ſecurity of all that he had gained: which done, he left there a Gariſon of eight hundred of the moſt courageous men of his Army, who were commanded by a certain *Luſan Mahometan*, named *Sapetia de Raia*, and incontinently after departed with the reſt of his Forces. The common report was that he went to the Tyrant of *Achem*, who received him with very much honor for the good ſucceſs of this enterprize; For, as I have already delivered, being before but Governor and *Mandara* of the Kingdom of *Baarros*, he gave him the title of King, ſo that ever after he was called *Sultan of Baarros*, which is the proper denomination of ſuch as are Kings amongſt the *Mahometans*. Now whileſt things paſſed in this ſort, the deſolate Queen remained ſome ſeven leagues from *Aaru*, where being adverciſed and aſſured of the death of the King her husband, and of the lamentable iſſue of the War, ſhe preſently reſolved to caſt her ſelf into the fire, for ſo ſhe had promiſed her husband in his life time, confirming it with many and great oaths; But her friends and ſervants, to divert her from putting ſo deſperate a deſign in execution, uſed many reaſons unto her, ſo that at length, overcome by their perſwaſions, *Verily*, ſaid ſhe unto them, *although I yield to your requeſt, yet I would have you know, that neither the conſiderations you have propounded, nor the zeal you ſeem to ſhew of good and faithful Subjects, were of power to turn me from ſo generous a determination, as that is which I promiſed to my King, my Husband, and my Maſter, if God had not inſpired me with this thought, that living I may better revenge his death, as by his dear blood I vow unto you to labor as long as I live to do, and to that end I will undergo any extremity whatſoever, nay if need be turn Chriſtian a thouſand times over, if by that means I may be able to compaſs this my deſire.* Saying ſo, ſhe immediately got up on an Elephant, and accompanied with a matter of ſeven hundred men, ſhe marched towards the Town with a purpoſe to ſet it on fire, where incountring ſome four hundred *Achems*, that were buſie about pillaging of ſuch goods as were yet remaining, ſhe ſo encouraged her people with her words and tears, that they cut them all preſently in pieces; This execution done, knowing her ſelf too weak for to hold the Town, ſhe returned into the Wood, where ſhe ſojourned twenty days, during which time ſhe made War upon the Townſmen, ſurpriſing and pillaging them as often as they iſſued forth to get water, wood, or other neceſſaries, ſo as they durſt not ſtir out of the Town to provide them-

themſelves ſuch things as they needed, in which regard if ſhe could poſſibly have continued this War other twenty days longer, ſhe had ſo famiſhed them, as they would have been conſtrained to render the Town: But becauſe at that time it rained continually by reaſon of the Climate, and that the place was boggy and full of buſhes, as alſo the fruits, wherewithall they nouriſhed themſelves in the Wood, were all rotten, ſo that the moſt part of her people fell ſick, and no means there to relieve them, the Queen was conſtrained to depart to a River, named *Minhacumbaa*, ſome five leagues from thence, where ſhe imbarqued her ſelf in ſixteen Veſſels, ſuch as ſhe could get, which were fiſhermens *Parous*, and in them ſhe went to *Malaca*, with a belief that at her Arrival there ſhe ſhould not be denyed any thing ſhe would ask.

*Pedro de Faria*, being advertiſed of the Queens coming, ſent *Alvaro de Faria*, his ſon, §. 3.
and General of the Sea-forces, to receive her with a Galley, five Foiſts, two Catures, twenty Balons, and three hundred men, beſides divers perſons of the Country. So ſhe was brought to the Fortreſs, where ſhe was ſaluted with an honorable peal of Ordnance, which laſted the ſpace of a good hour. Being landed, and having ſeen certain things, which *Pedro de Faria* deſired to ſhew her, as the Cuſtom-houſe, the River, the Army, the Manufactures, ſtores of Powder, and other particulars, prepared before for that purpoſe, ſhe was lodged in a fair houſe, and her people, to the number of ſix hundred, in a field, called *Ilher*, in Tents and Cabbins, wherein they were accommodated the beſt that might be. During all the time of her abode, which was about a matter of five months, ſhe continued ſoliciting for ſuccor, and means to revenge the death of her husband. But at length perceiving the ſmall aſſiſtance ſhe was likely to have from us, and that all we did was but a meer entertainment of good words, ſhe determined to ſpeak freely unto *Pedro de Faria*, that ſo ſhe might know how far ſhe might truſt to his promiſes; To which end, attending him one Sunday at the gate of the Fortreſs, at ſuch time as the place was full of people, and that he was going forth to hear Maſs, ſhe went to him, and after ſome complements between them, ſhe ſaid unto him; *Noble and valiant Captain, I beſeech you by the generoſity of your race, to give me the hearing in a few things I have to repreſent unto you. Conſider, I pray you, that albeit I am a Mahometan, and that for the greatneſs of my ſins I am altogether ignorant in the knowledg of your holy Law, yet in regard I am a Woman, and have been a Queen, you ought to carry ſome reſpect to me, and to behold my miſery with the eyes of a Chriſtian.* Hereunto at firſt *Pedro de Faria* knew not what to anſwer, in the end putting off his cap, he made her a low reverence, and after they had both continued a good while without ſpeaking, the Queen bowed to the Church gate, that was juſt before them, and then ſpake again to *Pedro de Faria*. *Truly*, ſaid ſhe, *the deſire I have always had to revenge the death of my husband, hath been, and ſtill is, ſo great, that I have reſolved to ſeek out all the means that poſſibly I may to effect it, ſince by reaſon of the Weakneſs of my ſex Fortune will not permit me to bear arms; Being perſwaded then that this here, which is the firſt I have tryed, was the moſt aſſured, and that I more relyed upon then any other, as truſting in the ancient amity which hath always been betwixt us and you Portugals, and the obligation wherein this Fortreſs is ingaged to us, paſſing by many other conſiderations well known to you, I am now to deſire you with tears in mine eyes, that for the honor of the high and mighty King of* Portugal, *my ſoveraign Lord, and unto whom my husband was ever a loyal Subject and Vaſſal, you will aid and ſuccor me in this my great adverſity, which in the preſence of many noble Perſonages you have promiſed me to do; howbeit now I ſee that inſtead of performing the promiſes which you have ſo often made me, you alledg for an excuſe that you have written unto the Vice-roy about it, whereas I have no need of ſuch great Forces as you ſpeak of, for that with an hundred men only, and ſuch of my own people as are flying up and down in hope and expectation of my return, I ſhould be able enough, though I be but a Woman, in a ſhort ſpace to recover my Country, and revenge the death of my husband, through the help of Almighty God, in whoſe Name I beſeech and require you, that for the ſervice of the King of* Portugal, *my Maſter, and the only refuge of my widowhood, you will, ſince you can, aſſiſt me ſpeedily, becauſe expedition is that which in this affair imports the moſt, and ſo doing you ſhall prevent the plot which the wicked enemy hath upon this Fortreſs, as too well you may perceive by the means he hath uſed to effect it. If you will be pleaſed to give me the ſuccor I demand of you, ſay ſo; if not, deal clearly with me, for that you will prejudice me as much in making me loſe time, as if you refuſed me that which ſo earneſtly I deſire, and which as a Chriſtian you are obliged to grant me, as the Almighty Lord of Heaven and Earth doth well whom I take to witneſs of this my requeſt.*

## CHAP. XII.

*The Queen of* Aru's *departure from* Malaca; *her going to the King of* Jantana; *his ſummoning the Tyrant of* Achem *to reſtore the Kingdom of* Aru, *and that which paſt between them thereupon.*

1. *Pedro de Faria*, having heard what this deſolate Queen ſaid openly unto him, convinced by his own conſcience, and even aſhamed of having delayed her in that faſhion, anſwered her, that in truth, and by the faith of a Chriſtian, he had recommended this affair unto the Vice-roy, and that doubtleſs there would ſome ſuccor come for her ere it were long, if ſo be there were no trouble in the *Indias* that might hinder it, wherefore he adviſed and prayed her to ſtay ſtill in *Malaca*, and that ſhortly ſhe ſhould ſee the verity of his ſpeeches. Thereunto this Princeſs having replyed upon the uncertainty of ſuch ſuccor, *Pedro de Faria* grew into choller, becauſe he thought ſhe did not believe him, ſo that in the heat of his paſſion he iſſued out ſome words that were more rude then was fit. Whereupon the deſolate Queen, with tears in her eyes, and beholding the Church gate, which was juſt againſt her, and ſobbing in ſuch manner as ſhe could ſcarcely ſpeak; *The clear Fountain*, ſaid ſhe, *is the God which is adored in that houſe, out of whoſe mouth proceeds all truth, but the men of the Earth are ſinks of troubled water, wherein change and faults are by nature continually remaining; Wherefore accurſed is he that truſts to the opening of their lips; For I aſſure you, Captain, that ever ſince I knew my ſelf to this preſent I have neither heard, nor ſeen ought, but that the more ſuch unhappy Wretches, as my late huſband was, and my ſelf now am, do for you Portugals, the leſs you regard them, and the more you are obliged, the leſs you acknowledg, Whence I may well conclude that the recompence of the* Portugal *Nation conſiſts more in favor, then in the merits of perſons; And would to God, my deceaſed huſband had nine and twenty years ago but known what now for my ſins I perceive too well, for then he had not been ſo deceived by you as he was: But ſince it is ſo, I have this only deſire to comfort me in my miſery, that I ſee many others ſcandalized with your unity as well as my ſelf; For if you had neither the power nor the Will to ſuccor me, Why would you ſo far engage your ſelf to me, a poor deſolate Widow, concerning that which I hoped to obtain from you, and ſo beguile me with your large promiſes?* Having ſpoken thus, ſhe turned her back to the Captain, and without hearkening to what he might ſay ſhe inſtantly returned to her lodging, then cauſed her Veſſels, wherein ſhe came thither, to be made ready, and the next day ſet ſail for *Bintan*, where the King of *Jantana* was at that time, who, according to the report was made of it to us afterward, received her with great honor at her arrival. To him ſhe recounted all that had paſt betwixt her and *Pedro de Faria*, and how ſhe had loſt all hope of our friendſhip; Unto whom, it is ſaid, the King made this anſwer, *That he did not marvel at the little faith ſhe had found in us, for that we had ſhewed it but too much upon ſundry occaſions unto all the World.* Now the better to confirm his ſaying, he recited ſome particular examples of matters, which he ſaid had befallen us, conformable to his purpoſe; and like a *Mahometan*, and our Enemy, he made them appear more enormous then they were: So after he had recounted many things of us very ill done, amongſt the which he interlaced divers Treacheries, Robberies, and Tyrannies, at length he told her, that as a good King, and a good *Mahometan*, he would promiſe her, that ere it were long ſhe ſhould ſee her ſelf by his means reſtored again to every foot of her Kingdom; and to the end ſhe might be the more aſſured of his promiſe, he told her that he was content to take her for his wife, if ſo ſhe pleaſed, for that thereby he ſhould have the greater cauſe to become the King of *Achems* Enemy, upon whom for her ſake he ſhould be conſtrained to make War, if he would not by fair means be perſwaded to abandon that which he had unjuſtly taken from her. Whereunto ſhe made anſwer, that albeit the honor he did her was very great, yet ſhe would never accept of it, unleſs he would firſt promiſe, as in way of a dowry, to revenge the death of her former husband, ſaying, it was a thing ſhe ſo much deſired, as without it ſhe would not accept of the Sovereignty of the whole world. The King condeſcended to her requeſt, and by a ſolemn Oath taken on a Book of their Sect confirmed the promiſe which to that effect he made her.

§. 2. After that the King of *Jantana* had taken that Oath before a great *Cacis* of his, called *Raia Moulana*, upon a feſtival day when as they ſolemnized their *Ramadan*, he went to the Iſle of *Compar*, where immediately upon the celebration of their Nuptials he called a Council for to adviſe

advise of the course he was to hold for the performance of that whereunto he had engaged himself, for he knew it was a matter of great difficulty, and wherein he should be forced to hazard much of his Estate. The resolution that he took hereupon was before he enterprised any thing to send to summon the Tyrant of *Achem* to surrender the Kingdom of *Aaru*, which in the right of his new wife belonged now unto him, and then according to the answer he should receive to govern himself. This Counsel seemed so good to the King, that he presently dispatched an Embassador to the Tyrant, with a rich Present of Jewels, and Silks, together with a Letter containing these words: *Sibri Laya quandaw, praesma de Raia, lawful King by a long succession of* Malaca, *which by strong hand, and the injustice of the faithless Kings of* Jantana *and* Bintan *hath been usurped from me, To thee Sir* Sultan Aaradin, *King of* Achem, *and of all the Land of the two Seas, my true Brother by the ancient Amity of our forefathers. I, thine Ally in flesh and in blood, do give thee to understand by my Embassador, that about the seventh Moon of this present year the noble Widow* Anchesiny, *Queen of* Aaru, *came to me full of grief and tears, and prostrating her self on the ground before me, she told me that thy Captains had taken her Kingdom from her, as also the two Rivers of* Lava *and* Panatican, *and slain* Aliboncar *her husband, together with five thousand* Amborrains *and* Ouroballons, *all men of mark, that were with him, and made three thousand children slaves, which had never offended, tying their hands behind them, and scourging them continually without pity, as if they had been the sons of unbelieving mothers. Wherefore being moved with compassion I have received her under the protection of my faith, to the end that I might with more certainty inform my self of the reason and right thou hadst so to do, and perceiving by her oaths that thou hadst none, I have taken her to my wife, that I might the more freely before God demand that which is hers. I desire thee then, as being thy true Brother, that thou wilt render that thou hast taken from her, and thereof make her a good and full restitution; And touching the proceeding that is to be held in this restitution which I demand of thee, it is to be done according to the manner that* Syribicem *my Embassador will shew thee. And not doing thou conformable to what in justice I require of thee, I declare my self thine Enemy in the behalf of this Lady, unto whom I am obliged by a solemn Oath to defend her in her affliction.* This Embassador being come to *Achem*, the Tyrant received him very honorably, and took his Letter; But after he had opened it, and read the contents, he would presently have put him to death, had he not been diverted by his Counsel, who told him, that in so doing he would incur great infamy: Whereupon he instantly dismissed the Embassador with his Present, which in contempt of him he would not accept of, and in answer of that he brought him he returned him a Letter, wherein it was thus written. *I* Sultan Aaradin, *King of* Achem, Bizarros, Pedir, Pracem, *and of the Signories of* Dayan, *and* Batta, *Prince of all the Land of the two Seas, both Mediterranean and Ocean, and of the Mynes of* Menencabo, *and of the Kingdom of* Aaru *newly conquered upon just cause, To thee King, replenished with joy, and desirous of a doubtful heritage: I have seen thy Letter, written at the table of thy Nuptials, and by the inconsiderate words thereof have discerned the drunkenness of thy Counsellors and Secretaries, Wherewnto I would not have vouchsafed an answer, had it not been for the humble prayers of my servants. As touching the Kingdom of* Aaru, *do not thou dare to speak of it if thou desirest to live, sufficeth it that I have caused it to be taken in, and that it is mine, as thine also shall be ere long, if thou hast married* Anchesiny *with a purpose upon that occasion to make claim to a Kingdom, that now is none of hers; Wherefore live with her as other husbands do with their wives, that tilling the ground are contented with the labor of their hands. Recover first thy* Malaca, *since it was once thine, and then thou mayst think of that which never belonged to thee. I will favour thee as a Vassal, and not as a Brother, as thou qualifiest thy self. From my great and Royal House of rich* Achem, *the very day of this thy Embassadors arrival, whom I have presently sent away without further seeing or hearing of him, as he may tell thee upon his return to thy presence.*

The King of *Jantana's* Embassador, being dismissed with this Answer the very same day that he arrived, which amongst them they hold for a mighty affront, carried back the Present, which the Tyrant would not accept of in the greater contempt both of him that sent, and he that brought it, and arrived at *Compar*, where the King of *Jantana* was at that instant, upon the understanding of all that had past grew by report so sad and vext, that his servants he vowed they have divers times seen him weep for very grief that the Tyrant should make [illegible] reckoning of him; Howbeit he held a Council there upon the second time, where in

S. 31

cluded, that at any hand he should make War upon him, as on his mortal Enemy, and that the first thing he should undertake, should be the recovery of the Kingdom of *Aaru*, and the Fort of *Panetican*, before it was further fortified. The King accordingly set forth a Fleet of two hundred Sails, whereof the most part were *Lanchares*, *Calaluses*, and fifteen tall Juncks, furnished with Munition necessary for the enterprize; And of this Navy he made General the great *Laque Xemena*, his Admiral, of whose valor the History of the *Indiaes* hath spoken in divers places. To him he gave two thousand Soldiers, as also four thousand Mariners and gally slaves, all choyce and trained men. This General departed immediately with his Fleet, and arrived at the River of *Panetican* close by the Enemies Fort, which he assaulted five several times, both with scaling ladders, and divers artificial fires, but perceiving he could not prevail that way, he began to batter it with four hundred great Pieces of Ordnance, which shot continually for the space of seven whole days together, at the end whereof the most part of the Fort was ruined, and overthrown to the ground, whereupon he presently caused his men to give an assault to it, who performed it so valiantly, that they entered it, and slew fourteen hundred *Achems*, the most of which came thither but the day before the Fleet arrived under the conduct of a *Turkish* Captain, Nephew to the *Bassa* of *Caire*, named *Mora de Arruiz*, who was also slain there with four hundred *Turks* he had brought along with him, whereof *Laque Xemena* would not spare so much as one. After this he used such diligence in repairing that which was fallen, wherein most of the Soldiers labored, that in twelve days the Fort was rebuilt, and made as strong as before, with the augmentation of two Bulwarks. The news of this Fleet, which the King of *Jantana* prepared in the Ports of *Bintan* and *Compar*, came to the Tyrants ears, who fearing to lose that which he had gotten, put instantly to Sea another Fleet of fourteen hundred and twenty Sails, Foists, Lanchares, Galiots, and fifteen Galleys of five and twenty banks of oars a piece, wherein he caused fifteen thousand men to be imbarqued, namely, twelve thousand Soldiers, and the rest Mariners, and such as were for the service of the Sea; Of this Army he made the same *Heredin Mahomet* General, who had before (as I have already declared) conquered the Kingdom of *Aaru*, in regard he knew him to be a man of a great spirit, and fortunate in War, who departing with this Army arrived at a place, called *Aapassumbee*, within four leagues of the River of *Panetican*, where he learnt of certain fishermen, whom he took, and put to torture, all that had past concerning the Fort and the Kingdom, and how *Laque Xemena* had made himself Master both of the Land and Sea in expectation of him. At this news, it is said, that *Heredin Mahomet* was much perplexed, because intruth he did not believe the Enemy could do so much in so little time; By reason whereof he assembled his Councel, where it was concluded, that since both the Fort and Kingdom were regained, and all the men he had left there cut in pieces, as likewise for that the Enemy was very strong, both at Sea and Land, and the season very unfit for their design, therefore they were to return back: Nevertheless *Heredin Mahomet* was of a contrary opinion, saying, that he would rather dye like a man of courage, then live in dishonor, and that seeing the King had made choyce of him for that purpose, by the help of God he would not lose one jot of the reputation he had gotten; wherefore he vowed and swore by the bones of *Mahomet*, and all the Lamps that perpetually burn in his Chappel, to put all those to death as Traytors that should go about to oppose this intent of his, and that they should be boiled alive in a Cauldron of Pitch, in such manner as he meant to deal with *Laque Xemena* himself; and with this boiling resolution he parted from the place where he rode at anchor, with great cries, and noise of Drums, and Bells, as they are accustomed to do upon like occasions. In this sort by force of oars and sails they got into the entry of the River, and coming in sight of *Laque Xemena*'s Navy, who was ready waiting for him, and well reinforced with a great number of Soldiers, that were newly come to him from *Pera*, *Bintan*, *Siaca*, and many other places thereabout, he made towards him, and after the discharging of their Ordnance afar off, they joyned together with as much violence as might be. The fight was such, that during the space of an hour and an half there could no advantage be discerned on either part, until such time as *Heredin Mahomet*, General of the *Achems*, was slain with a great shot, that hit him just in the brest, and battered him to pieces. The death of this Chieftain discouraged his people in such manner, as laboring to return unto a Point, named *Baroquirin*, with a purpose there to unite and fortifie themselves until night, and then by the favor thereof to fly away, they could not execute their design, in regard of the great currant of the water, which separated and dispersed them sundry ways, by which means the Tyrants Army fell into the power of *Laque Xemena*, who defeated it, so that but fourteen Sails of them escaped,

eſcaped, and the other hundred threeſcore and ſix were taken, and in them were thirteen thouſand and five hundred men killed, beſides the fourteen hundred that were ſlain in the Trench. Theſe fourteen Sails that ſo eſcaped returned to *Achem*, where they gave the Tyrant to underſtand how all had paſt, at which, it is reported, he took ſuch grief, as he ſhut up himſelf for twenty days without ſeeing any body, at the end whereof he ſtruck off the heads of all the Captains of the fourteen Sails, and commanded all the Soldiers beards that were in them to be ſhaved off, enjoyning them expreſly upon pain of being ſawed aſunder alive, to go ever after attired in womens apparel, playing upon Timbrels in all places where they went, and that whenſoever they made any proteſtation, it ſhould be in ſaying, *So may God bring me back my huſband again, as this is true*; or, *So may I have joy of the children I have brought into the world.* Moſt of theſe men ſeeing themſelves inforced to undergo a chaſtiſement ſo ſcandalous to them, fled their Country, and many made themſelves away, ſome with poyſon, ſome with halters, and ſome with the ſword. A relation altogether true, without any addition of mine. Thus was the Kingdom of *Aaru* recovered from the Tyrant of *Achem*, and remained in the hands of the King of *Jantana* until the year 1574. At which time the ſaid Tyrant with a Fleet of two hundred Sails, feigning as though he would go to take in *Patava*, fell cunningly one night on *Jantana*, where the King was at that time, whom, together with his wife, children, and many others, he took priſoners, and carried into his Country, where he put them all to moſt cruel deaths, and for the King himſelf he cauſed his brains to be beaten out of his head with a great club. After theſe bloody executions he poſſeſt the Kingdom of *Aaru*, whereof he preſently made his eldeſt ſon King, the ſame that was afterward ſlain at *Malaca*, coming to beſiege it in the time of *Don Lionis Pereyra*, ſon to the Earl of *Feyra*, Captain of the Fortreſs, who defended it ſo valiantly, that it ſeemed to be rather a miracle then any natural work, by reaſon the power of that Enemy was ſo great, and ours ſo little in compariſon of theirs, as it may be truly ſpoken how they were two hundred *Mahometans* againſt one *Chriſtian*.

## CHAP. XIII.

*My departure from* Malaca *to go to* Pan; *that which fortuned after my arrival there; with the murther of the King of* Pan, *and the cauſe thereof.*

§. 1. TO return unto the Diſcourſe where I left, I ſay, that when I was recovered of the ſickneſs which I got in my Captivity at *Siaca*, *Pedro de Faria*, deſiring to find out ſome occaſion to advance and benefit me, ſent me in a *Lanchara* to the Kingdom of *Pan* with goods of his, to the value of ten thouſand duckets, for to conſign them into the hands of a Factor of his, that recided there, named *Tome Lobo*, and from thence to go to *Patava*, which is an hundred leagues beyond that. To that purpoſe he gave me a Letter and a Preſent for the King, and an ample Commiſſion to treat with him about the redemption of five *Portugals*, who in the Kingdom of *Siam* were Slaves to *Montco de Bancha* his Brother-in-law. I parted then from *Malaca* upon this employment, and the ſeventh day of our Voyage, juſt as we were oppoſite to the Iſland of *Pulo Timano*, which may be diſtant from *Malaca* ſome ninety leagues, and ten or twelve from the mouth of the River of *Pan*, a little before day we heard at two ſeveral times great lamentations at Sea, and being not able in regard of the darkneſs of the night to know what it was, we were all ſuſpended into divers opinions, for that we could not imagine what it ſhould be, in ſo much that to learn the certainty thereof I cauſed them to hoiſt up ſail, and row towards that part where we heard the lamentation, every one looking down round about cloſe to the water, the better to diſcern and hear that of which we were in ſuch doubt. After we had continued a pretty while in this manner, we perceived far from us a black thing that floated on the Sea, and unable at firſt to diſcover what it was, we adviſed together about it. Now there being but four *Portugals* of us in the *Lanchara*, we were all of different minds, ſo that I was told how I was to go directly to the place whither *Pedro de Faria* had ſent me; that loſing but an hours time I might endanger the Voyage, and hazard the goods, and ſo for want of performing the duty of my charge I might very much wrong him. Whereunto I anſwered, that happen what might, I would not leave off laboring to know what it was, and that if in ſo doing I committed any fault, the *Lanchara* appertained to none but *Pedro de Faria*, unto whom my ſelf was to render an account of the goods in it, and not they, that had nothing elſe in the Veſſel but their perſons, which were in no more danger then mine: During this debate it pleaſed God that the day appeared, by the light whereof we perceived people that

were

were caſt away, who floated pell-mell together upon planks, and other pieces of wood: Whereupon without further fear we turned our prow towards them, and with force of ſails and oars we made to them, hearing them cry ſix or ſeven times, without uſing any other ſpeech, *Lord have mercy upon us.* At the ſight of this ſtrange and pitiful ſpectacle we remained ſo amazed, that we were almoſt beſides our ſelves, and cauſing ſome of the Mariners to get with all ſpeed into the Cock-boat, they fetcht three and twenty perſons of them into the Lanchara, namely fourteen *Portugals*, and nine Slaves, which were all ſo diſ-figured in the face, as they made us afraid to look on them, and ſo weak as they could neither ſpeak nor ſtand. After they had been thus taken up by us, and entreated in the beſt manner we could, we demanded of them the cauſe of their miſ-fortune, whereunto one of the company weeping anſwered, My Maſters, I am named *Fernand Gil Porcalbo*, and the eye, which you behold I want, was ſtrucken out by the *Achems* at the ſiege of *Malaca*, when as the ſecond time they came to ſurprize *Dom Eſtevano de Gama*, who deſiring to do ſomething for me, becauſe he ſaw me poor, as I was at that time, gave me leave to go to the *Molucques*, where would to God I had never been, ſince my Voyage was to have ſo bad a ſucceſs: for after I departed from the Port of *Talagame*, which is the Roade of our Fort at *Ternate*, having ſailed three and twenty days with a favorable gale in a Junck that carried a thouſand bars of Cloves, worth above an hundred thouſand duckets, my ill fortune would, that at the point of *Surabaya* in the Iſle of *Jaoa*, there aroſe ſo impetuous a North-wind, that our Junck brake in the prow, which conſtrained us to lighten the hatches; So we paſſed that night by the ſhoar, without bearing ſo much as a rag of ſail, by reaſon the Sea was exceedingly moved, and the waves moſt inſupportable. The next day we perceived that our Junk ſank, ſo that of an hundred forty and ſeven perſons that were in her there were ſaved but ſix and twenty, and now it is fourtain days that we have been upon theſe planks, having during all that time eaten nothing but a ſlave of mine that dyed, with whom we have ſuſtained our ſelves eight days, and the very laſt night two *Portugals* more dyed, on whom we would not feed, although we were very much preſt to it by our hunger, becauſe we hoped that this or the next day would give an end both to our lives and miſery.

§. 2. The relation, which this man made us, having rendred us all very penſive, and full of amazement to ſee him and his companions reduced to ſo deplorable an eſtate, we greatly wondered at the means, whereby God had ſo miraculouſly delivered them, wherefore we gave him moſt humble thanks for it, and comforted our new gueſts, in repreſenting unto them all thoſe things which the duty of true Chriſtians and our poor captivity obliged us to tell them. After that we beſtowed part of our clothes on them, and layd them in our ordinary beds, then we applyed thoſe remedies to them, which we thought neceſſary for their recovery; for not having ſlept of a long time, they were ſo exceeding dizzy in the head, that they would fall down ſtunned in ſuch ſort, as they continued without any knowledg for an hour together. This done, we went to ſeek out the Port of *Pan*, where we arrived near about midnight, caſting anchor in the Roade, juſt againſt a little inhabited place, called *Campalaru*. The next morning by break of day we rowed up the River about ſome league to the Town, where we found *Tome Lobo*, who, as I have already declared, reſided there, as Factor for the Captain of *Malaca*, into whoſe hands I conſigned all the Merchandiſe that I brought along with me. The ſame day three of the fourteen *Portugals*, which we took up at Sea, dyed, whereof the afore-named *Fernando Gil Porcalbo* was one, as alſo five young men that were Chriſtians, whom we caſt all into the Sea, with great ſtones tyed to their feet and about their necks for to make them ſink to the bottom, in regard we could not be permitted to bury them in the Town, although *Tome Lobo* offered them forty duckets for that purpoſe, the reaſon they alledged was, that if they ſhould ſuffer it, their Country would remain accurſed, and incapable of nouriſhing any thing, becauſe the deceaſed were not purged from the Hogs fleſh they had eaten, it being the moſt deteſtable and enormous ſin of all others; As for thoſe which reſted alive, *Tome Lobo* gave them very good entertainment, and furniſhed them with all things that they wanted, until ſuch time as they recovered and returned to *Malaca*. Not long after, preparing my ſelf for my Voyage to *Patana*, *Tome Lobo* very earneſtly deſired me not to go thither, and told me that he held not himſelf ſafe in that Town, by reaſon he was advertiſed that one *Taan Nerraſa*, a man of reputation, and of the chiefeſt of the Town, had ſworn to burn him in his houſe, with all the goods that were in it, ſaying, that at *Malaca* the Captains Factor had taken from him the value of five thouſand duckets in Benjamin, Silk, and wood of Aloes, at a far lower rate then it was worth, and that he had payd him at his own pleaſure, and therewith not contented had

in

in part of payment given him rotten ſtuffs, which he could make nothing of; moreover, that for all his five thouſand duckets worth of Commodities, that in *Malaca* would have yielded him ten thouſand, and by exchange of vendible wares, he might eaſily have returned, would have made him ten thouſand more, he never could get above ſeven hundred duckets; and therefore to be revenged of this wrong, he had picked quarrels of purpoſe to tole him forth to kill him, in regard whereof he inſtantly deſired me to ſtay, and not abandon him and the Captains ſtock to ſuch apparant danger: Whereupon having uſed all the reaſons I could to facilitate my voyage, he would by no means approve of them, but contradicted me in all my propoſitions. For concluſion, I remonſtrated unto him, that if it were his ill fortune, as he ſaid he feared, to be killed for that which he had, I ſhould be in no better caſe, and therefore I marvelled why he would let thoſe eleven *Portugals* go, with whom rather he ſhould have imbarqued himſelf for *Malaca*. Hereunto after a little pauſe he made anſwer, that he was very ſorry he had not done ſo, but ſince it was now too late, he intreated me not to forſake him in this extremity, and that for the Captains ſake, who he knew would not take it well I ſhould leave him ſo alone with his goods, which were no leſs worth then thirty thouſand duckets, beſides thoſe belonging to himſelf, that amounted to almoſt as much more. This requeſt of his made to me with ſuch inſtance on the one ſide, ſomewhat perplexed me, and on the other conſidering the extream hazard I ran if I ſtay'd, I knew not what to reſolve; At length after I had well thought of the matter, I was conſtrained to come to this accord with him, that in caſe he did not within fifteen days imbarque himſelf with me in my *Lanchara* for *Patana*, with all his Commodities reduced into gold, or ſtones, whereof there was great plenty in the Town, that then I might go where I pleaſed without him; an offer that he was forced to accept of, and ſo we remained agreed.

The fear *Tome Lobo* was in, leſt that wherewithall he was threatened ſhould befall him, made him uſe ſuch diligence in ſelling away of his commodities, that by means of the good peny-worths he afforded them at, in leſs then eight days he cleared his Warehouſe, and the other places wherein they lay; ſo that utterly refuſing Pepper, Cloves, and ſuch other Drugs, which took up too much room, he trucked all away for gold of *Menancabo*, for Diamonds of *Lave* and *Tancampura*, and Pearls of *Borneo*. Now having made a full diſpatch of all, and that we were reſolved to imbarque the next day, by ill fortune a moſt terrible accident happened the night enſuing, which was, that one, named *Coia Geiual*, the King of *Borneo's* Embaſſador, who had been three or four years reſident in the King of *Pan's* Court, and a marvelous rich man, killed the King upon finding him in bed with his wife, which cauſed ſuch a commotion in the Town, that it ſeemed to be a Tumult of Hell rather then any humane buſineſs; Whereupon certain rogues and vagabonds, that wiſhed for nothing more then ſuch like occaſions, to the end they might do what before for fear of the King they durſt not enterprize, made a Troop of five or ſix hundred, which ſeparated into three bands, went directly to the houſe, where *Tome Lobo* dwelt. Having aſſaulted it in ſix or ſeven places, they entred by force, notwithſtanding all the reſiſtance we could make, and that in defending it we loſt eleven men, whereof the *Portugals*, which came with me from *Malaca*, were three. During this violence, all that *Tome Lobo* could do was to eſcape away with ſix great blows of a ſword, one of the which had cut his right cheek almoſt away, ſo as he was like to dye of that hurt. We were both of us then conſtrained to abandon the houſe to them, together with all the goods that were in it, and retire to the *Lanchara*, where we remained with five Boys and eight Mariners, not having ſo much as the worth of a peny left of all our merchandize, which amounted to fifty thouſand crowns in gold and ſtone only. In this *Lanchara* we paſt away all the night very much afflicted, and ſtill harkening what might be the end of this mutiny, which was riſen among the people, as I have before related. At length perceiving the matters grew worſe and worſe, and that there was no hope for us to recover any part of our goods, we thought it a far ſafer courſe to go away to *Patana*, then by ſtaying to run a hazard of being killed, as above four thouſand perſons were. With this reſolution we parted from this place, and in ſix days arrived at *Patana*, where we were very well received by the *Portugals* which were in that Country, unto whom we recounted all that had paſt at *Pan*, and the pitious eſtate wherein we had left that miſerable Town. This accident very much afflicted them, ſo that deſiring to give ſome remedy thereunto, with a true affection of charitable Chriſtians they went all to the Palace of the King, and complained to him of the wrong that had been done to the Captain of *Malaca*, beſeeching him thereupon they might be permitted to recover, if it were poſſible, the loſs they had ſuſtained, and have leave granted to right themſelves upon any merchants goods belonging to the

§. 3.

Kingdom of *Pan*, to the value of the ſum they had been deſpoyled of. The King having heard their complaint, and preſently granting what they demanded; It is reaſonable, ſaid he, that you ſhould do as you have been done unto, and that you ſhould ſpoyl them that firſt have ſpoyled you, eſpecially in a matter that concerns the Captain of *Malaca*, unto whom all of you are ſo much obliged. The *Portugals*, having rendred him very humble thanks for this grace, returned to their houſes, where they concluded to ſeize upon all the goods they could meet with belonging to the Kingdom of *Pan*, until ſuch time as they had fully recovered their loſs. It hapned then about nine days after they being advertiſed, that ſome ten leagues off, in the river of *Calantan*, were three Junks of *China*, very rich, and appertaining to *Mahometan* Marchants, Natives of the Kingdom of *Pan*, that by foul weather at Sea were conſtrained to put in there, our people reſolved to fall upon them: To which effect, out of three hundred *Portugals*, that were then in the Country, we choſe out fourſcore, with whom we imbarqued our ſelves in two Foyſts, and one round ſhip, well provided of all things we thought to be neceſſary for this enterprize. So we departed three days after with all ſpeed, for fear leſt the *Mahometans* of the Country, having diſcovered our deſign, ſhould advertiſe them of it whom we went to ſeek. Of theſe three veſſels one *Joano Fernandez Dabrea*, born in the Iſle of *Madera*, was General, who with forty Soldiers went in the round ſhip, and the other two Foyſts were commanded by *Laurenco de Goes*, and *Vaſco Sermento*, both of them of the City of *Braganza* in *Portugal*, and very well experienced in Sea-ſervice. The next day we arrived at the river of *Calantan*, where as ſoon as we decryed the three Junks riding at anchor, which we had been told of, we ſet very valiantly upon them, and albeit thoſe that were in them did at firſt do their beſt endevor to defend themſelves, yet at length all their reſiſtance was in vain, for in leſs then an hour we reduced them all under our power, ſo as ſeventy and four of theirs were ſlain, and but three of ours, though we had many men hurt. I will not hold you here with any particular diſcourſe of what was done on either ſide, let it ſuffice, that after the three Junks had rendred themſelves, we preſently ſet ſail, and carryed them away with us in all haſte, becauſe the whole Country thereabout was in an uproar, directing our courſe towards *Patana*, where by the favor of a fair wind we arrived the next day in the afternoon: Having then caſt anchor, we ſaluted the Town with a peal of Ordonnce in ſign of joy, which put the *Mahometans* of the Country out of all patience; for though we ſtood in the terms of good friends with them, yet they left not to uſe all poſſible means, both of Preſents which they gave to the Governors and the Kings Favorites, and otherwiſe, for to make our prizes void, and that the King would expell us out of his dominions, whereunto he would at no hand conſent, ſaying, that he would not for any thing in the world break the peace, which his Anceſtors had made with the Chriſtians of *Malaca*, and that all that he could do therein was to become a third betwixt them: Whereupon he deſired us, that the three *Necodas* of the Junks, ſo are the Commanders of them called in that Country, reſtoring unto us what had been taken from the Captain of *Malaca*, we would likewiſe render unto them as well their veſſels free, as the overplus, a matter which *Joano Fernandez Dabrea*, and the reſt of the *Portugals* very willingly agreed unto, to teſtifie the deſire they had to content him; As indeed he was exceedingly well pleaſed with them for it, which he expreſſed both in courteous language, and many promiſes of his future favor. Thus were the fifty thouſand duckets recovered, that *Pedro de Faria* and *Tome Lobo* had loſt, and the *Portugals* were in great eſteem over all that Country, ſo that their valor rendred them very formidable to the *Mahometans*. A little after the Soldiers aſſured us, that in the three Junks we had taken, there was only in lingots of ſilver, beſides the other merchandize wherewithall they were laden, to the value of two hundred *Teicis*, which in our money amounts to an hundred thouſand duckets.

## CHAP. XIV.

*The Misfortune that befell us at the entry into the River of* Lugor; *our hiding our ſelves in a Wood, with that which happened unto us afterwards; and our return unto* Malaca.

§. 1. HAving ſojourned ſix and twenty days at *Patana* for to ſell away ſome few commodities of *China* that I had, there arrived a Foyſt from *Malaca*, commanded by one *Antonio de Faria*, who came thither by the expreſs commandment of *Pedro de Faria* to treat with the King about ſome accord, as alſo to confirm the ancient league anew which he had with *Malaca*,

*Luca*, and withall to give him thanks for the good entertainment he gave in his Kingdom to thoſe of the *Portugal* Nation. This buſineſs was carryed with a fair ſhew of an Embaſſie, accompanyed with a Letter and a Preſent of Jewels, ſent in the name of the King of *Portugal* our Maſter, and taken out of his Coffers, as all the Captains of that place uſed to do. Now for as much as the ſaid *Antonio de Faria* had brought along with him ſome ten or twelve thouſand crowns worth of *Indian* woolen and linnen cloth, which he had taken up on his credit at *Malaca*, and that he ſaw there was ſo little utterance of that commodity, as he could not meet with any Merchant that would deal for it, he was fain to reſolve for to ſpend the winter there until ſuch time as he might meet with ſome opportunity to put it off; Howbeit he was adviſed by ſome of the beſt experienced of the Country to ſend it unto *Lugor*, which is a great Town in the Kingdom of *Siam*, an hundred leagues lower towards the North, for they alledged that this Port was very rich, and of great vent, by reaſon of a world of Junks that arrived there dayly from the Iſle of *Jaoa*, from *Lava*, *Taniampura*, *Japara*, *Demaa*, *Panaruca Sydayo*, *Paſſurvan*, *Solor*, and *Bornio*, whoſe Merchants were uſed to give a good rate for ſuch like commodities, in exchange of gold, or ſtone. This advice was well approved of by *Antonio de Faria*, who inſtantly were about to put it in execution; To which end he took order for the providing of a veſſel, by reaſon the Poyſt wherein he came was altogether unfit for a further voyage: Matters thus diſpoſed of, he deputed one named *Chriſtovano Borhalho*, for his Factor, a man exceeding well verſed in buſineſs of Traffique, with whom there imbarqued ſome fifteen men, as well Soldiers as Merchants, with a hope that one crown would yield them ſix or ſeven, what in the commodities they ſhould carry, as in thoſe they ſhould return. Hereupon, wretched I being one of the fifteen, we parted from the Port on a Saturday, and ſailed with a favorable wind along the coaſt till Thurſday next in the morning, that we arrived at *Lugor* Road, and anchored at the mouth of the River; There it was thought fit to paſs the reſt of the day, to the end we might inform our ſelves of what was behoveful for us to do, as well for the ſale of our commodities, as for the ſafety of our perſons: And to ſay truth, we learnt ſuch good news, that we were confident of gaining above ſix times double, and to be ſure of freedom and liberty during all the month of *September*, according to the Ordinance of the King of *Siam*, becauſe it was the Month of the Kings *Sumbaya*. Now the better to clear this, you muſt know, that all along this coaſt of *Malaya*, and within the Land, a great King commands, who for a more famous and recommendable Title above all other Kings, cauſeth himſelf to be called *Prechau Saluu*, Emperor of all *Sornau*, which is a Country wherein there are thirteen Kingdoms, by us commonly called *Siam*, to the which fourteen petty Kings are ſubject, and yield homage, that were anciently obliged to make their perſonal repair unto *Odiaa*, the Capital City of this Empire, as well to bring their Tribute thither, as to do the *Sumbaya* to their Emperor, which was indeed to kiſs the Courtelis that he ware by his ſide; Now becauſe this City was ſeated fifty leagues within the Land, and the Currents of the Rivers ſo ſtrong, as theſe Kings were oftentimes forced to abide the whole winter there to their great charge, they petitioned the *Prechau*, King of *Siam*, that the place of doing this their homage might be altered, whereupon he was pleaſed to ordain, that for the future there ſhould be a Viceroy reſident in the Town of *Lugor*, which in their language is called *Poybo*, unto whom every three years thoſe fourteen Kings ſhould render that duty and obedience they were accuſtomed to do unto himſelf, and that during that time they ſpent there in performing the ſame, being the whole month of *September*, both their own merchandize, and that of all others, as well natives as ſtrangers, that either came in, or went out of the Country, ſhould be free from all manner of impoſts whatſoever: So that we arriving in the time of this freedom, there was ſuch a multitude of Merchants that flocked thither from all parts, as we were aſſured there was no leſs then fifteen hundred Veſſels in the Port, all laden with an infinity of Commodities of very great value: And this was the good news we learnt at ſuch time as we arrived at the mouth of the River; wherewith we were ſo well pleaſed, that we preſently reſolved to put in as ſoon as the wind would permit us. But alas! we were ſo unfortunate, that we could never come to ſee what we ſo much deſired; for about ten of the clock, juſt as we had dined, and were preparing to ſet ſail, we ſaw a great Junk coming upon us, which perceiving us to be *Portugals*, few in number, and our Veſſel ſmall fell cloſe with our prow on the larboard ſide, and then thoſe that were in her threw into us great Cramp-irons, faſtened unto two long chains, wherewithall they grappled us faſt unto them, which they had no ſooner done, but ſtraightway ſome ſeventy or eighty *Mahometans* came flying out from under their hatches, that till then had lien lurking

there, who with a mighty cry caſt ſo many ſtones, darts, and lances, which fell as thick as hail upon us, that of us ſixteen *Portugals* twelve reſted dead in the place, together with ſix and thirty others, as well Boys as Mariners. Now for us four remaining *Portugals*, after we had eſcaped ſo dreadful an incounter, we leapt all of us into the Sea, where one was drowned, and we three that were left getting to land as well as we could, being dangerouſly hurt, and wading up to the waſt in mud, went and hid our ſelves in the next adjoyning wood. In the mean time the *Mahometans* of the Junk, entring into our Frigon, not contented with the ſlaughter they had made of our men, like mad dogs they killed ſix or ſeven Boys our right, whom they found wounded on the Deck, not ſparing ſo much as one of them: That done, they imbeſqued all the goods of our Veſſel into their Junk, then made a great hole in her, and ſo ſunk her: Immediately whereupon, leaving their anchor in the Sea, and the Cramp-irons wherewithall they had grappled us unto them, they ſet ſail, and made away as faſt as ever they could for fear of being diſcovered.

5.2. After this our eſcape, ſeeing our ſelves all ſore hurt, and without any hope of help, we did nothing but weep and complain, for in this diſaſter we knew not what to reſolve on, ſo much were we amazed with that which had befalln us within the ſpace of half an hour. In this deſolation we ſpent the reſt of that ſad day, but conſidering with our ſelves, that the place was mooriſh, and full of Adders and Lizards, we thought it our ſafeſt courſe to continue there all the night too, as accordingly we did, ſtanding up to the middle in the Owze: The next morning as ſoon as it was day we went along by the Rivers ſide, until we came unto a little channel, which we durſt not paſs, as well for that it was very deep, as for fear of a great number of Lizards that we ſaw in it, ſo that in great pain we ſtayd not only that night there, but five days after, being not able either to go forward, or turn aſide, by reaſon of the bogs round about us, all covered over with ruſhes: In the mean time one of our companions dyed, whoſe name was *Baſtian Anriques*, a rich man, and, that had left eight thouſand crowns in the *Lanchara*, in ſo much that of all the company we were before, there remained none but *Chriſtovano Berralho* and my ſelf, that with tears ſat lamenting over the poor dead mans body, which we had covered with a little earth as well as we could, for we were then ſo weak, that we could hardly ſtir, or almoſt ſpeak, ſo as we had ſet up our reſt to make an end of thoſe few hours we hoped to live in that place. The next day, being the ſeventh of our diſaſter, about Sun-ſet we eſpyed a great Barque coming rowing up the River, whereupon as ſoon as it was near us, we proſtrated our ſelves on the ground, beſeeching thoſe that were aboard her to take us in; They wondering at us, preſently made a ſtand, ſeeming much amazed to ſee us ſo on our knees, and our hands lift up to Heaven, as though we were at our prayers; nevertheleſs without ſpeaking at all to us, they made as if they would go on, which conſtrained us afreſh to cry aloud to them with tears that they would not ſuffer us for want of ſuccor to dye miſerably there. Upon thoſe our cries and lamentations an ancient woman came forth from under the hatches, whoſe grave countenance repreſented her to be ſuch as afterwards we found her to be; ſhe ſeeing us in ſo pitiful a plight, moved with our misfortune, and our wounds that we ſhewed her, ſhe took up a ſtick, and therewith ſtruck three or four of the Mariners becauſe they would not take us in, whereupon approaching to the bank, five or ſix of them leapt on ſhore, and by her commandment took us upon their ſhoulders, and carryed us into the Barque. This honorable woman, much grieved to behold us ſo hurt, and our ſhirts and linnen drawers all bloody and mired, cauſed them ſtraightway to be waſhed, and having given each of us a linnen cloth to cover us withall, ſhe would needs have us to ſit down by her, where commanding meat to be brought us, ſhe her ſelf preſenting it to us with her own hand, *Eat, eat*, ſaid ſhe, *poor ſtrangers, and be not afflicted to ſee your ſelves reduced unto the eſtate you are in; for I, whom now you look upon, and that am but a Woman, not having as yet attained to the age of fifty years, have ſeen my ſelf a ſlave, and deſpoyled of above an hundred thouſand duckets worth of goods: Nor is that all, for to this misfortune was the death of three of my ſons adjoyned, and that of my husband, whom I held far more dearer then theſe eyes of mine, theſe eyes, alaſs! wherewith I beheld both the father and the ſons torn in pieces by the King of* Sinna *Elephants, together with two brothers, and a ſon-in-law I had; Ever ſince I have had a languiſhing life, and to all theſe miſeries have many others far greater ſucceeded, for ſo implacable hath fortune been unto me, that I have ſeen three daughters of mine ready to be married, as alſo my father, mother, and two and thirty of my kinſmen, nephews, and conſins, thrown into burning furnaces, where their cries and lamentations could not chuſe but reach unto Heaven, for God to*

ſuccor

*succor them in the violence of that insupportable torment; but alass! the enormity of my sins no doubt so stopped the ears of the clemency of the Lord of Lords, that he would not hear our request, which seemed very just to me; nevertheless I deceived my self, since nothing is just but what it pleaseth his divine Majesty to ordain.* Hereunto we answered, that the sins which we also had committed against him were the cause of our calamities. Seeing it is so, replyed she, mingling her tears with ours, it is always good in your adversities to acknowledg, that the touches of the hand of God are evermore righteous, for both in that, as also in a confession of the mouth, in a sorrow for having offended, and in a firm resolution to do so no more, consisteth all the remedy of your sufferings and mine. Having entertained us thus with the discourse of her misfortune, she enquired of us the occasion of ours, and by what means we came to be in that miserable estate, whereupon we recounted unto her all that had past, and that we neither knew who it was that had so ill intreated us, nor wherefore he did it; Her people, hearing us, said, that the great Junk, whereof we spake, belonged to a *Mahometan*, a *Guzarat* by Nation, named *Coia Acem*, who the same morning went out of the River laden with Brazil, and was bound for the Isle of *Ainan*: Hereat the good woman smote her brest, and seeming to be much moved, *Let me not live*, said she, *if it be not so, for I have heard that* Mahometan, *of whom you speak, vaunt publiquely before all that would give ear unto him, that he had slain a great number of the race of those of* Malaca, *and that he hated them in such sort, as he had promised to his* Mahomet *to kill more of them in time.* Being amazed hereat, we desired her to declare unto us who that man was, and why he was so much our enemy, whereunto she answered, that she knew no other reason, but for that a great Captain of our Nation, named *Hector de Sylveira*, had killed his father and two of his brothers in a ship, which he took from them in the straight of *Mecque*, that was going from *Judas* to *Dabul*. Thus much did this good Matron tell us, and many other things afterwards concerning the great hatred this *Mahometan* bore us, as also what lyes he devised to render us infamous.

This honorable woman, departing from the place where she found us, went some two leagues up the River, till she came to a little Village, where she lay that night; The next morning parting from thence, she made directly to the Town of *Luger*, which was above five leagues further. Arriving there about noon, she landed, and went to her house, whither she carryed us with her, and kept us there three and twenty days, during which time we were very well looked unto, and plentifully accommodated with all that was necessary for us. This woman was a widow, and of an honorable family, as afterwards we learnt, and that had been marryed to the Captain General, which they call *Xabandar* of *Prevedim*, whom the *Pata* of *Lasapara* King of *Quaiyuan* had put to death in the Isle of *Jaca* the year 1538. At the time she met with us, as I have related, she came from a Junk of hers, that lay at the Road laden with Salt; and because it was great, and could not pass up by reason of the shelves, she caused it to be unladen by little and little with that Barque. By that time the three and twenty days, I spake of, were expired, it pleased God to restore us to our perfect health, so that this virtuous Dame seeing us able to travel, recommended us to a Merchant, her kinsman, that was bound for *Patana*, with whom, after we had taken our leave of that noble Matron, unto whom we were so much obliged, we imbarqued our selves in a *Catalus* with Oars, and sailing on a River, called *Sumbachitano*, we arrived seven days after at *Patana*. Now for as much as *Antonio de Faria* looked every day for our return, with a hope of good success in his business, as soon as he saw us, and understood what had past, he remained so sad and discontented, that he continued above an hour without speaking a word; in the mean time such a number of *Portugals* came in, as the house was scarce able to contain them, by reason the greatest part of them had ventured goods in the *Lanchara*, whose lading in that regard amounted to seventy thousand duckets and better, the most of it being in silver coyn, of purpose with it to return gold. *Antonio de Faria* seeing himself stripped of the twelve thousand duckets he had borrowed at *Malaca*, resolved not to return thither, because he had no means to pay his Creditors, but rather thought it fitter to pursue those that had robbed him of his goods; so that he took a solemn Oath upon the holy Evangelists to part incontinently from that place for to go in quest of those Pyrats, for to revenge upon them the death of those fourteen *Portugals*, and thirty six *Christians*, Boys and Mariners, killed by them as aforesaid; Adding withall, that if such a course were not taken, they should every day be used [illegible] All the Assistants very much commended his valorous resolution, and fo[illegible] were many young Soldiers amongst them that offered to accom[illegible]

likewiſe preſented him with money, and others furniſhed him with divers neceſſaries: Having accepted theſe offers and preſents of his friends, he uſed ſuch diligence, that within eighteen days he made all his preparations, and got together five and fifty Soldiers, amongſt whom poor unfortunate I was fain to be one; for I ſaw my ſelf in that caſe, as I had not ſo much as a ſingle token, nor knew any one that would either give or lend me one, being indebted beſides at *Malaca* above five hundred duckets, that I had borrowed there of ſome of my friends, which, with as much more, that dog had robbed me of amongſt others, as I have related before, having been able to ſave nothing but my miſerable carcaſs, wounded in three places with a Javelin, and my ſkull cracke with a ſtone, whereby I was three or four times at the point of death; But my companion *Chriſtevan Borralho* was yet far worſe entreated then my ſelf, and that with more hurts, which he received in ſatisfaction of five and twenty hundred duckets that he was robbed of as the reſt.

## CHAP. XV.

*Antonio de Faria's ſetting forth for the Iſle of* Ainan, *his arrival at the River of* Tinacoren; *and that which befell us in this Voyage.*

S. 1. AS ſoon as *Antonio de Faria* was ready, he departed from *Patana* on a Saturday the ninth of *May* 1540 and ſteered North North-weſt, towards the Kingdom of *Champaa*, with an intent to diſcover the Ports and Havens thereof, as alſo by the means of ſome good booty to furniſh himſelf with ſuch things as he wanted; for his haſte to part from *Patana* was ſuch, as he had not time to furniſh himſelf with that which was neceſſary for him, no not with victual and warlike ammunition enough. After we had ſailed three days we had ſight of an Iſland, called *Pullo Condor*, at the height of eight degrees and three quarters, on the North Coaſt, and almoſt North-weſt towards the mouth of the River of *Camboia*, ſo that having rounded all the Coaſt, we diſcovered a good Haven Eaſtward, where in the Iſland of *Camboia*, diſtant ſome ſix leagues from the firm Land, we met with a Junk of *Lequios*, that was going to the Kingdom of *Siam* with an Embaſſador from the *Nantaquim* of *Lindau*, who was Prince of the Iſland of *Tofa*, and that had no ſooner diſcovered us but he ſent a meſſage by a *Chineſe* Pilot to *Antonio de Faria*, full of complements, whereunto was added theſe words from them all: *That the time would come when as they ſhould communicate with us in the true love of the Law of God, and of his infinite clemency, who by his death had given life to all men, and a perpetual inheritance in the houſe of the good, and that they believed this ſhould be ſo, after the half of the half time was paſt.* With this complement they ſent him a Courtelas of great value, whoſe handle and ſcabbard was of gold, as alſo ſix and twenty Pearls in a little Box likewiſe of gold, made after the faſhion of a Salt-ſeller, whereat *Antonio de Faria* was very much grieved, by reaſon he was not able to render the like unto this Prince, as he was obliged to do, for when the *Chineſe* arrived with this meſſage they were diſtant above a league at Sea from us. Hereupon we went aſhore, where we ſpent three days in taking in freſh water, and fiſhing. Then we put to Sea again, laboring to get to the firm Land, there to ſeek out a River, named *Pullo Cambim*, which divides the State of *Camboia* from the Kingdom of *Champaa*, in the height of nine degrees, where arriving on a Sunday the laſt of *May*, we went up three leagues in this River, and anchored juſt againſt a great Town, called *Catimpara*, there we remained twelve days in peace, during the which we made our proviſion of all things neceſſary. Now becauſe *Antonio de Faria* was naturally curious, he endevored to underſtand from the people of the Country what Nation inhabited beyond them, and whence that mighty River took its ſource; whereunto he was anſwered, that it was derived from a lake, named *Pinator*, diſtant from them Eaſtward two hundred and ſixty leagues in the Kingdom of *Quitirvan*, and that it was invironed with high mountains, at the foot whereof, upon the brink of the water, were eight and thirty villages, of which thirteen were very great, and the reſt ſmall, and that only in one of the great ones, called *Xnicalen*, there was ſuch a huge myne of gold, as by the report of thoſe that lived thereabout, there was every day a bar and a half drawn out of it, which, according to the value of our mony, makes two and twenty millions in a year, and that four Lords had ſhare in it, who continually were in war together, each one ſtriving to make himſelf maſter of it; and that one of them, named *Raiabitan*, had in an inner yard of his houſe, in pots under ground, that were full to the very brims, above ſix hundred bars of gold in powder, like to that of *Menancabo* of the Iland of *Sumatra*; And that if three hundred

Harquebuſiers

Harquebuſiers of our Nation ſhould go and aſſault it, without doubt they would carry it: Moreover that in another of thoſe Villages, called *Buaquirim*, there was a quarry, where out of an old Rock they digged a great quantity of Diamonds, that were very fine, and of greater value then thoſe of *Lave* and *Taniampura* in the Iſle of *Jaoa*. Whereupon *Antonio de Faria* having queſtioned them about many other particularities, they made him a relation of the fertility of the Country, which was further up this River, no leſs fit to be deſired, then eaſie to be conquered, and that with little charge.

Being departed from this River of *Pulo Cambim*, we ſailed along the Coaſt of the Kingdom of *Champaa*, till we came to an Haven, called *Saleyzacan*, ſeventeen leagues farther on towards the North, whereinto we entred. Now becauſe there was nothing to be gotten there, we went out of this place about ſun-ſetting, and the next morning we came to a River, named *Toobaſay*, without the which *Antonio de Faria* caſt anchor, becauſe the Pilot would not venture to enter into it, for that he had never been there before, and therefore knew not the depth of it. As we were conſulting hereabout, ſome for to enter, and others gainſaying it, we diſcerned a great ſail making towards this Port from the main Sea. Hereupon, without ſtirring from the place where we were, we prepared to receive them in a peaceable manner, ſo that as ſoon as they came near us, we ſaluted them, and hung up the flag of the Country, called *Charachina*, which is a ſign of friendſhip, uſed among them in ſuch like occaſions. They of the ſhip, inſtead of anſwering us in the ſame manner, as in reaſon it ſeemed they ſhould have done, and knowing that we were *Portugals*, to whom they wiſhed not well, gave us very vile and baſe words, and from the top of their poup made a cipher ſlave hold up his arſe bare to us with a mighty noiſe and diſh of Trumpets, Drums, and Bells, by way of ſcorn and deriſion of us. Whereat *Antonio de Faria* was ſo offended, that he gave them a whole broad ſide, to ſee if that would make them more courteous; To this ſhot of ours they returned us an anſwer of five pieces of Ordnance, namely three Falcons, and two little field-pieces; whereupon conſulting together what we ſhould do, we reſolved to abide where we were, for we held it not fit to undertake ſo doubtful an enterprize, until ſuch time as the next days light might diſcover the forces of this Veſſel unto us, that ſo we might afterwards either ſet upon her with the more ſecurity, or let her paſs by: This counſel was approved both by *Antonio de Faria*, and us all, ſo that keeping good watch, and giving order for all that was neceſſary, we continued in that place expecting day; now about two of the clock in the morning we perceived three black things cloſe to the water coming towards us, which we could not well diſcern, whereupon we awakened *Antonio de Faria*, who was then aſleep on the hatches, and ſhewed him what we had diſcovered, being by that time not far from us; He fearing, as we did, leſt they were Enemies, cryed out preſently, *Mira, Arma, Arma*, wherein he was ſtraightway obeyed; for now plainly perceiving that they were Veſſels rowing towards us, we betook us to our Arms, and were beſtowed by our Captain in places moſt neceſſary to defend our ſelves. We conceived by their ſilent approaching to us, that they were the Enemies we had ſeen over night, ſo that *Antonio de Faria* ſaid unto us, *My maſters, this is ſome Pyrat coming to ſet upon us, who thinks we are not above ſix or ſeven at the moſt, as the manner is in ſuch kinde of Veſſels; wherefore let every man poup down, ſo as they may not ſee any of us, and then we ſhall ſoon know their deſign; in the mean time let the pots of powder be made ready, with which, and our ſwords, I hope we ſhall give a good end to this adventure: Let every one alſo hide his match in ſuch ſort, as they may not be diſcovered, whereby they may be perſwaded that we are aſleep:* all which, as he had prudently ordained, was incontinently executed. Theſe three Veſſels, being come within a ſhot of ours, went round about her, and after they had viewed her well, they joyned all cloſe together, as if they had entred into ſome new conſultation, continuing ſo about a quarter of an hour; that done, they ſeparated themſelves into two parts, namely the two leſſer went together to our poup, and the third, that was greater, and better armed, made to the ſtarboard of us; Hereupon they entred our Lorch where moſt conveniently they could, ſo that in leſs then half a quarter of an hour above forty men were gotten in, which ſeen by *Antonio de Faria*, he iſſued out from under the hatches with ſome forty Soldiers, and invoking Saint *James* our Patron, he fell ſo courageouſly upon them, that in a ſhort time he killed them almoſt all; Then with ayd of the pots of powder, that he cauſed to be caſt in amongſt thoſe that were remaining in the three Veſſels which he preſently took, he made an end of defeating them, the moſt of them being conſtrained to leap into the Sea, where they were all drowned but five, whom we took up alive, whereof one was the cipher ſlave that

§. 2.

ſhewed

ſhewed us his tail, and the other four were one *Turk*, two *Achems*, and the Captain of the Junk, named *Similan*, a notorious Pyrat, and our mortal Enemy. *Antonio de Faria* commanded them inſtantly to be put to torture, for to draw out of them who they were, from whence they came, and what they would have had of us, whereunto the two *Achems* anſwered moſt brutiſhly; and when as we were going about to torment the ſlave in like maner, he began with tears to beſeech us to ſpare him, for that he was a Chriſtian as we were, and that without torture he would anſwer truly to all our demands; whereupon *Antonio de Faria* cauſed him to be unbound, and ſetting him by him, gave him a piece of Biſket, and a glaſs of wine, then with fair words he perſwaded him to declare the truth of every thing to him, ſince he was a Chriſtian, as he affirmed; To which he replyed in this ſort, *If I do not ſpeak the truth unto you, then take me not for ſuch as I am; my name is* Sebaſtian, *and I was ſlave to* Gaſpar de Mello, *whom this dog* Similan, *here preſent, ſlew about two years ago in* Liampao, *with five and twenty other* Portugals *that were in his ſhip.* *Antonio de Faria* hearing this, cryed out, like a man amazed, and ſaid, Nay now I care not for knowing any more; is this then that dog *Similan*, that ſlew thy maſter? *Yes*, anſwered he, *it is he, and that meant likewiſe to have done as much to you, thinking that ye were not above ſix or ſeven, for which effect he came away in haſte with a purpoſe, as he ſaid, to take you alive, for to make your brains fly out of your heads with a frontal of cord, as he did to my Maſter, but God I hope will pay him for all the miſchief he hath committed.* *Antonio de Faria* being alſo advertiſed by this ſlave, that this dog *Similan* had brought all his men of war along with him, and left none in his Junk but ſome *Chineſe* Mariners, he reſolved to make uſe of this good fortune, after he had put *Similan* and his companions to death, by making their brains fly out of their heads with a cord, as *Similan* had done to *Gaſpar de Mello*, and the other *Portugals* in *Liampao*: Wherefore he preſently imbarqued himſelf with thirty Soldiers in his Boat, and the three *Machuas*, wherein the Enemies came, and by means of the flood and a favorable wind, he arrived within leſs then an hour, where the Junk rode at anchor within the River about a league from us, whereupon he preſently boarded her, and made himſelf maſter of the poup, from whence, with only four pots of powder, which he caſt in among the Raſcals that were aſleep upon the hatches, he made them all leap into the Sea, where nine or ten of them were drowned, the reſt crying out for help were taken up and ſaved, becauſe we ſtood in need of them for the navigation of the Junk, that was a great tall Veſſel. Thus you ſee how it pleaſed God out of his divine juſtice to make the arrogant confidence of this curſed dog a means to chaſtiſe him for his cruelties, and to give him by the hands of *Portugals* a juſt puniſhment for that which he had done unto them. The next morning, taking an inventory of this prize, we found ſix and thirty thouſand *Taeis* in ſilver of *Japan*, which amounts in our mony to fifty four thouſand duckets, beſides divers other good commodities, that were not then praiſed for want of time, becauſe the Country was all in an uproar, and fires every where kindled, whereby they uſe to give warning one to another upon any alarm or doubt of Enemies, which conſtrained us to make away with all ſpeed.

§. 3. *Antonio de Faria* parted from this River of *Toobaſoy* on a Wedneſday morning, being *Corpus Chriſti* Eve, in the year 1540. and ſailed along by the Coaſt of the Kingdom of *Champaa*, fearing to abandon it, the wind being Eaſterly, which in that place is oftentimes very impetuous, eſpecially in the conjunction of the new and full Moons. The Friday following we found our ſelves juſt againſt a River, called by the inhabitants of the Country *Tinacoren*, and by us *Varella*, whereinto we thought fit to enter, as well to be informed of certain things *Antonio de Faria* deſired to know, as alſo to ſee whether he could learn any news of *Coia Acem* whom he ſought for, in regard that all the Junks of *Siam*, and of all the Coaſt of *Maluya*, that ſail to *China*, uſe to trade in this River, where many times they ſell their commodities well in exchange of gold, *Calembouc* wood, and Ivory, whereof there is abundance in that Kingdom; and having caſt anchor a little within the mouth of the River, over againſt a Village, named *Taquillen*, there came a number of *Pareos*, and many other ſmall Boats with fiſhermen, full of refreſhments, who having never ſeen men made like unto us, ſaid one to another; *Lo, this is a ſtrange novelty wherewithall God doth viſit us, let us beſeech him he will be pleaſed, that theſe bearded men may not be ſuch as for their particular profit do fly Countries like Merchants, and afterwards rob them like Thieves. Let us get to the Woods for fear leſt the ſparks of theſe firebrands do not burn up our houſes, and reduce the fields of our labors into aſhes, as they uſe to do unto the Lands of other men.* Whereunto ſome of them made

made anſwer, God forbid it ſhould be ſo; but if by misfortune they ſhould come amongſt us, let us carry our ſelves in ſuch ſort, as they may not perceive we fear them as Enemies, for ſo they would ſet upon us with the more confidence; wherefore the beſt courſe for us will be, in a fair way, and with gentle words, to endevor to learn of them what they would have of us, that upon knowledg thereof we may certifie it unto *Hoyaa Paquir*, who is now at *Congrat*. *Antonio de Faria*, making as though he did not underſtand them, although all that they ſaid was delivered to him by an Interpreter, received them very courteouſly, and bought the refreſhments, which they brought, of them at their own price, wherewithall they were very well ſatisfied; And they demanding of him from whence he came, and what he would have, he anſwered them, that he was of the Kingdom of *Siam*, and as a Merchant was going to traffique in the Iſle of *Lequios*, being come into that place only to learn ſome news of a friend of his named *Coia Acem*, that was alſo bound thither: whereupon he enquired of them whether he were paſt by, or no; howſoever he intended to depart thence ſuddenly, both for to loſe no time, as for that he knew he could not ſell his commodities there. To which they replyed, You ſay true, for in this village of ours there is nothing but nets and fiſher Boats, wherewith we get our living, and that poorly enough God knows. Howbeit, added they, if thou wilt go up the River to the Town of *Pilancacem*, where the King is, thou wilt ſell not only the commodities which are in thy ſhips, be they never ſo rich, but likewiſe more then ten ſuch ſhips as thine could carry, by reaſon that there are Merchants in that place ſo wealthy, and that drive ſo great a trade, as they go with whole Troops of Elephants, Oxen, and Camels, whom they ſend laden with goods to the Lands of the *Lauhos*, *Paſuaas*, and *Gueos*, which are inhabited by very rich people. *Antonio de Faria* ſeeing a good occaſion offered to inform himſelf of that he deſired to know, queſtioned them at large concerning many things, whereunto ſome of them, that ſeemed to be of more authority then the reſt, anſwered very aptly, how the River, where we rode at anchor, was called *Tinaoreu*, and that it extended to *Moncalor*, a mountain diſtant from thence ſome fourſcore leagues, and that further upwards it was far broader, but not ſo deep, where in many places there was great ſhelves of ſand, and a world of land overflown with water, in the which were ſuch a multitude of fowls, as they covered all the Country thereabout; And how beyond that it was all mountainous and rocky, and ſo full of Elephants, Rhinoceroſes, Lions, wilde Boars, Buffles, and ſuch other wilde beaſts, as men could not poſſibly live there for them; And moreover, how in the midſt of that continent there was a great Lake, which the inhabitants thereof called *Cumbetea*, and others *Chiamnay*; from whence this River took its beginning, as alſo three others, that watered a good part of this Country; And that the ſaid Lake, according to the report of thoſe who have written of it, was threeſcore Jaos about, each Jao containing three Leagues, all along the which there were many Mynes of Silver, Copper, Tin, and Lead, from whence great quantities thereof were continually drawn, which the Merchants carryed away with Troops of Elephants and Rhinoceroſes, for to tranſport it into the Kingdoms of *Sornau*, by us called *Siam*, *Paſſiloco*, *Sarady*, *Tangu*, *Prom*, *Calamnibam*, and other Provinces, that are very far within land, and diſtant from theſe Coaſts two or three months journey. Further, they told us, that theſe Countries were divided into Kingdoms, and Regions inhabited with people, that were white, tawny, and others ſomewhat blacker; and that in exchange of thoſe commodities they returned Gold, Diamonds, and Rubies. Having thereupon demanded of them whether thoſe people had Arms, they anſwered none, but ſlaves hardened in the fire, and daggers with blades two ſpans long; They alſo aſſured us that from hence one could not go thither by the River in leſs then half two months, or two months and an half, by reaſon of the impetuoſity of the waters deſcending with a great and ſtrong current the moſt part of the year, and that one might return in eight or ten days at the moſt. After theſe demands *Antonio de Faria* made them divers others, wherein they alſo gave him good ſatisfaction, and reported many other particulars unto him, whereby it may be gathered, that if the Country could be taken, it would, without ſo much labor and loſs of blood, be of greater profit, and leſs charge, then the *Indies*.

§. 4. The Friday following we left this River of *Tinaoreu*, and by our Pilots advice we went to find out *Pulle Champeiloo*, which is an inhabited Iſland, ſcituate in the entrance to the Bay of *Cauchenchina* in forty degrees and a third to the Northward; Being come to it, we caſt anchor in an Haven, where there was good and ſafe riding, and there we remained three days, accommodating our artillery in the beſt manner we could; That done, we ſet ſail towards the Iſle of *Ainan*, hoping to meet with the Pyrat *Coia Acem* there whom we ſought for, and arriving

riving at *Pulle Capas*, which was the first land that we saw of it, we sailed close to the shoar, the better to discover the Ports and Rivers on that side, and the entries into them. Now because the Lorch, wherein *Antonio de Faria* came from *Pacana*, leaked very much, he commanded all his Soldiers to pass into another better Vessel, which was immediately performed, and arriving at a River, that about evening we found towards the East, he cast anchor a league out at Sea, by reason his Junk was great, and drew much water, so that fearing the sands, which he had often met withall in this Voyage, he sent *Christovano Borralho* with fourteen Soldiers in the Lorch up the River to discover what fires those might be that he saw. Being gone then about a league in the River, he incountred a Fleet of forty very great Junks, whereupon fearing lest it was the *Mandarins* Army, whereof we had heard much tails, he kept aloof off from them, and anchored close by the shoar; now about midnight the tyde began to come in, which *Borralho* no sooner perceived, but he presently without noise weighed anchor, and declining the Junks he went on to that part where he had seen the fires, that by this time were almost all out, there being not above two or three that gave any light, and which served to guide him. So continuing his course very discreetly, he came to a place where he beheld a mighty company of great and small Ships, to the number as he guessed of thousand Sails, passing through the which very stilly he arrived at a Town of above ten thousand housholds, enclosed with a strong wall of Brick, with Towers and Bulwarks after our manner, and with Curtains full of water. Here five of the fourteen Soldiers, that were in the Lorch, went on shoar with two of those *Chinofeses*, that were saved out of *Similaus* Junk, who had left their wives as hostages with us for their return; These having spent three hours in viewing and surveying the Town on the outside, reimbarqued themselves without any notice taken of them at all, and so went back very quietly as they came to the mouth of the River, where they found a Junk riding at anchor, that was come thither since their departure in the evening. Being returned to *Antonio de Faria*, they related unto him what they had seen, particularly the great Army that lay up in the River, as also the Junk, which they had left riding at anchor at the entrance into it, telling him that it might well be the Dog *Coia Acem* whom he sought for. These news so rejoyced him, that instantly he weighed anchor, and set sail, saying, his mind gave him that it was undoubtedly he; and if it proved so, he assured us all that he was contented to lose his life in fighting with him, for to be revenged of such a Rogue as had done him so much wrong. Approaching within sight of the Junk, he commanded the Lorch to pass unto the other side of her, to the end they might board her both together at once, and charged that not a Piece should be shot off, for fear they should be heard of the Army that lay up in the River, who might thereupon come to discover them. As soon as we were come to the Junk, she was presently invested by us, and twenty of our Soldiers leaping in made themselves Masters of her without any resistance, for the most of her men threw themselves into the Sea, the rest that were more couragious valiantly made head against our people; but *Antonio de Faria* presently getting in with twenty Soldiers more made an end of defeating them, killing above thirty of theirs, so as there remained none alive but those which voluntarily cast themselves into the Sea, whom he caused to be drawn up to serve for the Navigation of his Vessels; and for to learn who they were, and from whence they came, to which purpose he commanded four of them to be put to torture, whereof two chose rather to dye so then to confess any thing; and as they were about to do the like to a little boy, an old man, his father, that was layd on the deck, cryed out with tears in his eyes for to give him the hearing before they did any hurt to the child; *Antonio de Faria* made the Executioner stay, and bade the old man say what he would, provided he spake truth, for otherwise he vowed, that both he and the boy should be thrown alive into the Sea, whereas on the contrary, if he dealt truly, he promised to set them both at liberty on shoar, and restore unto him whatsoever he would take his oath did appertain unto him: Whereunto the old *Mahometan* answered, *I accept of the promise which thou makest me, and I very much thank thee for sparing the life of this child, for as for mine, as a thing unprofitable, I make no reckoning of it, and I will rely on thy word, although the course thou holdest may well divert me from it, in regard it is no way conformable to the Christian Law, which thou hast profest in thy Baptism*: An answer, that rendred *Antonio de Faria* so confounded and amazed, as he knew not what to reply; Howbeit he caused him to come nearer to him, and questioned him gently without any further threatening.

§. 5. This old man then sat him down by *Antonio de Faria*, who seeing him white like unto us, asked him whether he were a *Turk*, or a *Persian*? whereunto he answered, that he was neither,

ther, but that he was a Chriſtian, born at Mount *Sinai*. *Antonio de Faria* thereupon replyed, how he wondred much, being a Chriſtian, as he ſaid, that he lived not amongſt Chriſtians. To which the old man anſwered, that he was a Merchant of a good family, named *Tome Moſtanguo*, and that riding one day at anchor in a Ship of his in the Port of *Indaa*, in the year one thouſand five hundred thirty and eight, *Soliman* the Baſſa, Vice-roy of *Cairo*, took his, and ſeven others Ships, to carry Victual and Munition for his Army of threeſcore Galleys, wherewith he went by the Command of the grand *Signior* to reſtore *Sultan Bandur* to his Kingdom of *Cambaya*, which the great *Mogul* had deprived him of; And that at the end of the Voyage going to demand the freight which they had promiſed him, the *Turks*, that were ever cruel and faithleſs, took his wife, and a young daughter he had; and forced them before his face, and becauſe his ſon wept at the ſight of this injury they threw him bound hand and foot into the Sea; as for himſelf, they layd him in Irons, and continually ſcourging him they ſtript him of all his goods, to the value of ſix thouſand duckets and better, ſaying, that it was not lawful for any to enjoy the bleſſings of God, but the holy and juſt *Mouſſelimans*, ſuch as they were: And that his wife and daughter dying not long after, he found means one night to caſt himſelf into the Sea with that little boy, which was his ſon, at the mouth of the River of *Diu*, from whence he went by Land to *Surrat*, and ſo to *Malaca* in a ſhip of *Garcia de Saas*, Captain of *Bacaim*; then how by the commandment of *Eſtevano de Gama*, going to *China* with *Chriſtovano Sardinha*, which had been Factor at the *Molucques*, one night as they rode at anchor in *Cincaapura*, *Quiay Taijano*, Maſter of the Junk, ſurprized them, and killed the ſaid *Sardinha*, together with ſix and twenty *Portugals* more; as for him, becauſe he was a Gunner they ſaved his life. At this report *Antonio de Faria* ſtriking himſelf on the breſt, as a man amazed at this diſcourſe, *Lord, Lord*, ſaid he, *this ſeems to be a dream that I hear*; then turning himſelf to his Soldiers that ſtood about him, he related the life of this *Quiay* unto them, and further affirmed, that he had ſlain at times in ſtrayed Veſſels above an hundred *Portugals*, and deſpoyled them of an hundred thouſand duckets at leaſt; And though his name was ſuch, as this *Armenian* delivered, to wit, *Quiay Taijano*, yet after he had killed *Chriſtovano Sardinha* in *Cincaapura*, in a vain-glory of that which he had done he cauſed himſelf to be called Captain *Sardinha*. Whereupon having demanded of the *Armenian* where he was, he told us, that he was very ſore hurt, and hidden in the hold of the Junk amongſt the Cables with five or ſix others. Hereat *Antonio de Faria* aroſe, and went directly to the place where this Dog was hidden, followed by the greateſt part of his Soldiers, which opened the ſcuttle where the Cables lay to ſee whether the *Armenian* ſpake true or no; in the mean time the Dog, and the ſix others that were with him, got out at another ſcuttle, and moſt deſperately fell upon our men, who were above thirty in number, beſides fourteen boys. Then began there ſo furious and bloody a fight, that in leſs then a quarter of an hour we made a clean diſpatch of them all, but in the mean while two *Portugals*, and ſeven boys were ſlain, beſides I know not how many hurt, whereof *Antonio de Faria* received two downright blows on his head, and one on his arm, which put him to very much pain. After this defeat, and that the wounded men were dreſt, he ſet ſail, for fear of the forty Junks that were in the River: So getting far from Land, about evening we went and anchored on the other ſide of *Cauchenchina*, where *Antonio de Faria* cauſing an Inventory to be taken of all that was in this Pyrats Junk, there was found in her five hundred Bars of Pepper, after fifty quintals to the Bar, forty of Nutmegs and Mace, four-ſcore of Tin, thirty of Ivory, twelve of Wax, and five of Wood of fine Aloes, which might be worth according to the rate of the Country ſeventy thouſand duckets; beſides a little field Piece, four Faulcons, and thirty Baſes of Braſs, the greateſt part of which Artillery had been ours, for this *Mahometan* had taken them in the ſhips of *Sardinha*, *Oliveyra*, and *Bartolomeu de Matos*: There were alſo found three Coffers covered with Leather, full of Silk quilts, and the apparel of *Portugals*, with a great Baſon and Ewer ſilver and guilt, and a Salt-ſeller of the ſame, two and twenty Spoons, three Candleſticks, five guilt Cups, eight and fifty Harquebuzes, twelve hundred twenty and two pieces of *Bengala* Cloth, all which were *Portugals* goods, eighteen quintals of Powder, and nine Children about ſeven or eight years of age, chained together by the hands and the feet, moſt lamentable to behold, for that they were ſo weak and lean, that one might eaſily through their skins have counted all the bones in their bodies.

## Chap. XVI.

Antonio de Faria's *Arrival at the Bay of* Camoy, *where was the fiſhing of Pearls for the King of* China; *the Relation made to him of the Iſle of* Ainan; *With that which happened to him by the means of a renegado Pyrat, and otherwiſe.*

§. 1. THe next day after noon, *Antonio de Faria* parted from the place where he rode at anchor, and returned towards the Coaſt of *Ainan*, by the which he kept all the reſt of that day, and the next night with five and twenty or thirty fathom water. In the morning he came to a Bay, where there were many great Boats fiſhing for Pearls, and being unreſolved what courſe to take, he beſtowed all the forenoon in counſel with his company thereabout, whereof ſome were of the opinion that he ſhould ſeize upon the Boats that were fiſhing for Pearls, and others oppoſed it, ſaying, it was a ſafer way to treat with them as Merchants, for that in exchange of the great ſtore of Pearls, which were in that place, they might eaſily put off the moſt part of their Commodities. This appearing to be the beſt and ſafeſt advice, *Antonio de Faria* cauſed the Flag of Trade to be hung out, according to the Cuſtom of *China*, ſo that inſtantly there came two Lanteas from Land to us, which are Veſſels like to Foiſts, with great abundance of refreſhments, and thoſe that were in them, having ſaluted us after their manner, went aboard the great Junk wherein *Antonio de Faria* was; but when they beheld men, ſuch as we were, having never ſeen the like before, they were much amazed, and demanded what people we were, and wherefore we came into their Country. Whereunto we anſwered by an Interpreter, that we were Merchants born in the Kingdom of *Siam*, and were come thither to ſell or barter our Commodities with them, if ſo be they would permit us. To this, an old man, much reſpected of all the reſt, replyed, that here was no Traffique uſed, but in another place further forward, called *Guamboy*, where all ſtrangers that came from *Cantan*, *Chincheo*, *Laman*, *Comhay*, *Sumbor*, *Liampan*, and other Sea-coaſt Towns, did ordinarily trade: Wherefore he counſelled him to get him ſuddenly from thence, in regard this was a place deſtined only to the fiſhing of Pearls for the Treaſure of the houſe of the ſon of the Sun, to the which, by the Ordinance of the *Tutan* of *Comhay*, who was the ſoveraign Governor of all the Country of *Cauchenchina*, no Veſſel was permitted to come, but only ſuch as were appointed for that ſervice, and that all other ſhips, which were found there, were by the Law to be burnt, and all that were in them; but ſince he, as a ſtranger, and ignorant of the Laws of the Country, had tranſgreſſed the ſame, not out of contempt, but want of knowledg, he thought fit to adverciſe him of it, to the end he might be gone from thence before the arrival of the *Mandarim* of the Army, which we call General, to whom the Government of that fiſhing appertained, and that would be within three or four days at the moſt, being gone not above ſix or ſeven leagues from thence to a Village, named *Buhaquirim*, for to take in Victual. *Antonio de Faria* thanking him for his good advice, aſked him how many Sails, and what Forces the *Mandarim* had with him: Whereunto the old man anſwered, that he was accompanied with forty great Junks, and twenty five *Vancans* with oars, wherein there were ſeven thouſand men, namely, five thouſand Soldiers, and the reſt Slaves and Mariners; and that he was there every year ſix Months, during the which time was the fiſhing for Pearls, that is to ſay, from the firſt of *March* to the laſt of *Auguſt*. Our Captain deſiring to know what duties were payd out of this fiſhing, and what revenue it yielded in thoſe ſix Months, the old man told him, that of Pearls which weighed above five Carats they gave two thirds, of the worſer ſort half leſs, and of ſeed Pearl the third part; and that this Revenue was not always alike, becauſe the fiſhing was ſometimes better in one year, then in another; but that one with another he thought it might yield annually four hundred thouſand *Taels*. *Antonio de Faria* made very much of the old man, and gave him two cakes of Wax, a bag of Pepper, and a tooth of Ivory, wherewith both he and the reſt were exceedingly well pleaſed. He alſo demanded of them, of what bigneſs this Iſle of *Ainan* might be, whereof ſo many wonders were ſpoken. Tell us firſt, replyed they, who you are, and wherefore you are come hither, then will we ſatisfie you in that you deſire of us; for we vow unto you, that in all our lives we never ſaw ſo many young fellows together in any Merchants ſhips, as we now ſee in this of yours, nor ſo ſpruce and neat; and it ſeems that in their Country *China* Silks are ſo cheap as they are of no eſteem, or elſe that they have had them at ſo eaſie a rate, as they have given nothing near the worth for them, for we ſee them play away a piece of Damask at one caſt at Dice, as thoſe that come lightly

lightly by them: A ſpeech that made *Antonio de Faria* ſecretly to ſmile, for that thereby he well perceived how theſe fiſhermen had a ſhrewd gueſs that the ſame were ſtollen, which made him tell them, that they did this like young men, who were the ſons of very rich Merchants, and in that regard valued things far under that they were worth, and had coſt their fathers; diſſembling then what they thought, they anſwered in this manner, It may very well be as you ſay. Whereupon *Antonio de Faria* gave a ſign to the Soldiers to leave off their play, and to hide the pieces of Silk that they were playing for, to the end they might not be ſuſpected for Robbers by theſe folks, which immediately they did, and the better to aſſure theſe *Chineſes* that we were honeſt men, and Merchants, our Captain commanded the ſcuttles of the Junk to be opened, that we had taken the night before from Captain *Sardinha*, which was laden with Pepper, whereby they were ſomewhat reſtored to a better opinion then they had of us before, ſaying one to another, Sines now we find that they are Merchants indeed, let us freely anſwer to their demand, ſo as they may not think, though we be rude, that we know nothing but how to catch fiſh and Oyſters.

The old man deſiring to ſatisfie *Antonio de Faria's* demand, *Sir*, ſaid he, *ſince now I know* §. 2.
*what you are, and that only out of curioſity you fairly require to learn this particular of me, I will clearly tell you all that I know thereof, and what I have heard others deliver concerning it, that have been elder then my ſelf, and which have a long time governed this Archipelague; They ſaid then, that this Iſland was an abſolute State under a very rich and mighty King, who, for an higher and more tranſcendent title then other Monarchs his Contemporaries carried, cauſed himſelf to be ſtiled* Preehau Gamnu; *He dying without heirs, ſo great a diſcord aroſe amongſt the people about the ſucceſſion to the Crown, as encreaſing by little and little it cauſed ſuch effuſion of blood, that the Chronicles of theſe times affirm, how only in four years and an half ſixteen* Lacazaas *of men were ſlain, every* Lacazaa *containing an hundred thouſand, by means whereof the Country remained ſo deſerted of people, that unable to defend it ſelf the King of* Cauchin *conquered it, only with ſeven thouſand* Mogores, *which the King of* Tartarie *ſent him from the City of* Tuymican, *that then was Metropolitan of all his Empires. This Iſland of* Ainan *being conquered, the King of* Cauchin *returned into his Country, and for Governor thereof left behind him a Commander of his, named* Hoyha Paguarol, *who revolted from him for certain juſt cauſes, as he pretended, that invited him thereunto. Now to have the aſſiſtance and ſupport of the King of* China, *he became his Tributary for four hundred thouſand* Taeis *by the year, which amount to ſix hundred thouſand duckets, in conſideration whereof the King of* China *obliged himſelf to defend him againſt all his enemies, whenſoever he ſhould have need: This accord continued between them the ſpace of thirteen years, during the which the King of* Cauchin *was five ſeveral times defeated in open Battel; At length this* Hoyha Paguarol *coming to dye without iſſue, in regard of the good offices that in his life time he had received from the King of* China, *he by his teſtament declared him for his Succeſſor and lawful Heir, ſo that ever ſince, being now two hundred thirty and five years ago, to this preſent, this Iſle of* Ainan *hath remained annexed to the Scepter of the great* Chineſe. *And touching that you have further demanded of me concerning the Treaſures, and Revenue of this Iſland, I am able to ſay no more then what I have learnt of ſome ancient Perſonages, who, as I have related before, have governed it in quality of* Teutons, *and* Chaems, *and I remember they ſaid, that all the Revennes thereof, as well in Mynes of Silver, Cuſtoms, and otherways, amounted unto two Millions and an half* Taeis *yearly*; And perceiving that our Captain was amazed to hear him ſpeak of ſo mighty a riches, continuing his diſcourſe, *Truly, my Maſters*, ſaid he laughing, *if you make ſuch a matter of that little I have ſpoken of, what would you do if you ſaw the great City of* Pequin, *where the ſon of the Sun* (the name they give to their King) *with his Court is always reſident, and where the Revennes of two and thirty Kingdoms, that depend on this Monarchy, are received, of which out of fourſcore and ſix Mynes of Gold and Silver only is annually drawn above fifteen thouſand* Picos, *which according to our weight comes to twenty thouſand quintals?* After *Antonio de Faria* had given him many thanks for ſatisfying him ſo fully in his demands, he deſired him to tell him in what Port he would adviſe him to go and ſell his Commodities, ſeeing the ſeaſon was not proper to ſet ſail for *Liampoo*. Whereunto he anſwered, that we were not to go into any Port of that Country, nor to put truſt in any *Chineſe* whatſoever; for I aſſure you, ſaid he, there is not one of them will ſpeak truth in any thing he ſays to you, and believe me, for I am rich, and will not lye to you like a poor man; beſides, I would wiſh you to go in this Straight always with the plummet in your hand

hand for to ſound your way, becauſe there are very many dangerous ſhelvs all along till you come to a River called *Tanauquir*, and there is a Port where is very good anchoring, and where you may be as ſafe as you can deſire, as alſo you may there, in leſs then two days, put off all your commodities, and much more if you had them. Nevertheleſs I will not counſel you to diſimbarque your goods on land, but to ſell them in your Veſſels, in regard that many times the ſight cauſeth deſire, and deſire diſorder amongſt peaceable perſons, much more with them that are mutinous and of an evil conſcience, whoſe wicked inclination carries them rather to take away another mans goods from him, then give of their own to the needy for Gods ſake. This ſaid, both he that ſpake, and thoſe that accompanyed him, took leave of our Captain, and us, with many complements and promiſes, whereof they are not ordinarily very ſparing in thoſe parts, beſtowing on *Antonio de Faria*, in return of that he had given them, a little Box made of a Tortoiſe ſhell, full of ſeed-pearl, and twelve pearls of a pretty bigneſs, craving his pardon for that they durſt not traffique with him in this place, for fear left if they ſhould do ſo, to be all put to death, conformably to the Law of the rigorous juſtice of the Country; and they again intreated him to make haſte away before the *Mandarims* arrival with his Army, for if he found him there, he would burn both his Veſſel, and him and all his company. *Antonio de Faria* unwilling to neglect the counſel of this man, left that which he told him ſhould prove true, he ſet ſail immediately, and paſſed to the other ſide towards the South, and in two days with a Weſterly wind he arrived at the River of *Tanauquir*, where juſt over againſt a little village, called *Neyton*, he caſt anchor.

§. 3. We remained all that day, and the next night, at the mouth of the River of *Tanauquir*, intending the next morning to ſail up to the Town, which was ſome five leagues from thence in the River, to ſee if by any means we might put off our commodities there, for our Veſſels were ſo heavy laden with them, as there was ſcarce a day wherein we ran not twice or thrice on ſome ſhelve or other, which in divers places were four or five leagues long, wherefore it was concluded that before we did any thing elſe we were to ſell away our commodities, ſo that we labored with all our might to get into the River, whoſe current was ſo ſtrong, that though we had all our ſails up, yet could we prevail but very little againſt it; As we were in this pain we perceived two great Junks in warlike manner come out of the River upon us, which chaining themſelves together for the more ſtrength, attaqued us ſo lively, as we had ſcarce the leaſure to defend our ſelves, ſo that we were conſtrained to throw into the Sea all that ſtood in our way to make room for our artillery, being that we had then moſt need of: The firſt ſalutation we had from them was a peal of ſix and twenty pieces of Ordnance, whereof nine were Falconets, and field-pieces: *Antonio de Faria*, as a man verſt in ſuch affairs, ſeeing them chained one to another, perceived their drift, and therefore made as though he fled, as well to win time to prepare himſelf, as to make them beleeve that they were no Chriſtians; whereupon they, like cunning thieves, deſiring that the prey, which they held to be ſurely their own, ſhould not eſcape out of their hands, looſed themſelves the one from the other the better to ſet upon us, and approaching very near to us, they ſhot ſo many arrows and darts into our Junk, as no man was able to appear upon the deck: *Antonio de Faria*, to avoyd this ſtorm, retired under the half deck, with five and twenty Soldiers, and ſome ten or twelve others, Slaves and Mariners; there he entertained the Enemy with Marquebuſe ſhot the ſpace of half an hour, in which time, having uſed all their munitions of war, ſome forty of them, that ſeemed to be more valiant then the reſt, longing to finiſh their enterprize, leaped into our Junk, with a purpoſe to make themſelves maſter of the prow; but to hinder them from it, our Captain was conſtrained to go and receive them, ſo that there began a moſt bloody fight, wherein it pleaſed God within an hour to give us the upper hand by the ſlaughter of four and twenty of their forty in the place: Thereupon twenty of ours, purſuing this good ſucceſs, boarded the Enemies Junk, where finding but ſmall reſiſtance, by reaſon the principals were already ſlain, all that were in her quickly rendred themſelves unto us. That done, *Antonio de Faria* went with all ſpeed to ſuccor *Chriſtovano Borralho*, who was boarded by the other Junk, and very doubtful of the victory, in regard the greateſt part of his men were hurt, but at our approach the Enemies threw themſelves all into the Sea, where moſt of them were drowned, and ſo both the Junks remained in our power. After this we took a ſurvey of our company, the better to underſtand what this victory had coſt us, and we found there was one *Portugal*, five Boys, and nine Mariners killed, beſides thoſe that were hurt: and on the Enemies part fourſcore were ſlain, and almoſt as many taken. Having given order then for the dreſſing and accommodating of our wounded

wounded men in the beſt manner that could be, *Antonio de Faria* cauſed as many Mariners to be taken up as could be ſaved, and commanding them to be brought into the great Junk where he was, he demanded of them what thoſe Junks were, how the Captain of them was named, and whether he were alive or dead, whereunto not one of them would make any anſwer, but choſe rather to dye in torments like mad dogs, when as *Chriſtovano Borralho* cryed out from the Junk where he was, *Signior, Signior, come hither quickly, for we have more to do then we think of*; whereat *Antonio de Faria*, accompanyed with fifteen or ſixteen of his men, leapt into his Junk, asking what the matter was? *I hear a many talking together*, ſaid he, *towards the prow, which I doubt are hidden there*; hereupon opening the ſcuttle, they heard divers cry out, *Lord Jeſus have mercy upon us*; and that in ſuch a woful manner, as ſtruck us all with pity: *Antonio de Faria* approaching to the ſcuttle, and looking down, could perceive ſome perſons there ſhut up, but not able to diſcern what they might be, he made two of his boys to go down, who a little after brought up ſeventeen Chriſtians, namely two *Portugals*, five ſmall children, two girls, and eight boys, which were in ſuch a lamentable caſe, as would have grieved any heart to have beheld them; The firſt thing he did was to cauſe their Irons to be ſtricken off, and then he enquired of one of the *Portugals* (for the other was like a man dead) unto whom thoſe children appertained, and how they fell into the hands of this Pyrat, as alſo what his name was. Whereunto he anſwered, that the Pyrat had two names, the one Chriſtian, the other Pagan, and that his Pagan name, wherewith he uſed to be called of late, was *Necoda Nicaulem*, and his Chriſtian name *Francisco de Saa*, being Chriſtned at *Malaca*, at ſuch time as *Garcia de Saa* was Captain of the Fortreſs, and for that he was his godfather, and had cauſed him to be baptized, he gave him that name, and marryed him to an orphan maid, a very handſom wench, the daughter of an honorable *Portugal*, to oblige him the more to our Religion and Country; but in the year 1534. ſetting ſail for *China* in a great Junk of his, wherein there accompanyed him twenty of the wealthieſt *Portugals* of *Malaca*, as alſo his wife, and arriving at the Iſland of *Pulo Cotan*, they ſtayd two days to take in freſh water, during which time he and his Company, who were all *Chineſes* like himſelf, and no better Chriſtians, conſpired the death of the poor *Portugals* for to deſpoyl them of their goods, ſo that one night whilſt the *Portugals* were aſleep, and little dream'd of ſuch Treaſon, they killed them all with their little hatchets, and their ſervants likewiſe, not ſparing the life of any one that bore the name of a Chriſtian; after which, he perſwaded, with his wife, to turn Pagan, and adore an Idol, that *Tuean*, Captain of the Junk, had concealed in his cheſt, and that then being free from the Chriſtian Religion he would marry her to *Tuean*, who in exchange would give him a ſiſter of his to wife, that was a *Chineſe*, and there with him. But in regard ſhe would neither adore the Idol, nor conſent to the reſt, the dog ſtruck her over the head with his hatchet till her brains flew out; and their departing from thence went to the Port of *Liampoo*, where the ſame year before he had traded; and not daring to go to *Patana*, for fear of the *Portugals* that reſided there, he wintered at *Siam*, and the year following he returned to the Port of *Chincheo*, where he took a little Junk that came from *Sunda*, with ten *Portugals* in her, all which he ſlew; And becauſe the wickedneſs that he had done us was known over all the Country, doubting to encounter ſome *Portugal* forces, he had retired himſelf into this ſtraight of *Cauchouchina*, where as a Merchant he traded, and as a Pyrat robbed thoſe he met withall that were weaker then himſelf. It being now three years ſince he had taken this River for a refuge of his Robberies, thinking himſelf ſecure here from us *Portugals*, by reaſon we have not uſed to traffique in the Ports of this ſtraight, and Iſland of *Ainan*. *Antonio de Faria* asked of him whether thoſe children belonged to the *Portugals* he had mentioned before; whereunto he anſwered, that they did not, but that both they, and the boys and girls, were the children of *Nuno Preto*, *Gian de Diaz*, and of *Pero Borges*, whom he had killed at *Aiampollacota*, near the mouth of the River of *Siam* in *Joano Olivegra's* Junk, where he alſo put ſixteen *Portugals* more to death; only he ſaved their two lives, becauſe one was a ſhipwright, and the other a Caulker, and had carryed them along with him in this manner, continually whipping, and almoſt ſtarving of them; further he ſaid, that when he ſet upon us, he did not think we had been *Portugals*, but ſome *Chineſe* Merchant, like ſuch as he had accuſtomed to rob when he found them at advantage, as he thought to have found us. *Antonio de Faria* demanded of him, whether he could know the Pyrat amongſt thoſe other dead bodies? Having replyed that he could, the Captain preſently aroſe, and taking him by the hand, went with him into the other Junk, that was faſtned to his, and having made him view all that lay dead upon the hatches, he

ſaid

ſaid that it was none of them. Whereupon he commanded a Manchuas, which is a little boat, to be made ready, wherein he and this man went and ſought for him amongſt the other dead bodies that floated on the water, where they found him with a great cut over his head, and a thruſt quite through the body; ſo cauſing him to be taken up, and layd upon the hatches, he demanded of that man again, if he were ſure that this was he, who anſwered, how without doubt it was he. Whereunto *Antonio de Faria* gave the more credit, by reaſon of a great chain of gold he had about his neck, to which was faſtned an Idol of gold with two heads, made in the form of a Lizard, having the tail and paws enammelled with green and black, and commanding him to be drawn towards the prow, he cauſed his head to be chopt off, and the reſt of the body to be cut in pieces, which were caſt into the Sea.

§.4. Having obtained this victory in the manner I have before declared, cauſed our hurt men to be dreſt, and provided for the guard of our Captains, we took an Inventory of the goods that were in theſe two Junks, and found that our prize was worth forty thouſand *Taels*, which was immediately committed to the charge of *Antonio Borges*, who was Factor for the Prizes. Both the Junks were great and good, yet were we conſtrained to burn one of them for want of Mariners to man it: There was in them beſides ſeventeen pieces of braſs Ordnance, namely four Faulconets, and thirteen ſmall pieces, the moſt part whereof had the Royal Arms of *Portugal* upon them, for the Pyrat had taken them in the three ſhips where he killed the forty *Portugals*. The next day *Antonio de Faria* went about once more to get into the River, but he was adviſed by fiſhermen, which he took a little before, that he ſhould beware of going to the Town, becauſe they were adviſed there of all that had paſſed betwixt him and the renegado Pyrat, for whoſe death the people were in an uproar, in ſo much that if he would let them have his commodities for nothing, yet would they not take them, in regard that *Chilen*, the Governor of that Province, had contracted with him, to give him the third part of all the prizes he took, in lieu whereof he would render him a ſafe retreat in his Country; ſo that his loſs now being great by the death of the Pyrat, he ſhould be but badly welcomed by him, and to that purpoſe had already commanded two great Rafts, covered with dry wood, barrels of pitch, and other combuſtible ſtuff, to be placed at the entering into the Port, that were to be kindled and ſent down upon us, as ſoon as we had caſt anchor, for to fire us, beſides two hundred *Paraos*, full of ſhot, and men of war were alſo in readineſs to aſſault us. Theſe news made *Antonio de Faria* conclude to make away unto another Port, named *Mutipinan*, diſtant from thence above forty leagues towards the Eaſt, for that there were many rich Merchants, as well Natives as Strangers, which came in great Troops from the Countries of *Lanbos*, *Pafuaas*, and *Gueos*, with great ſums of money. So we ſet ſail with the three Junks, and the Lorch, wherein we came from *Patana*, coaſting the Land from one ſide to the other, by reaſon of a contrary wind, until we arrived at a place called *Tilanmera*, where we anchored, for that the current of the water ran very ſtrong againſt us. After we had continued ſo three days together, with a contrary wind, and in great want of victual, our good fortune about Evening brought four *Lanteaas* unto us, that are like unto Foyſts, in one of the which was a Bride, that was going to a Village, named *Pandurea*: Now becauſe they were all in jollity, they had ſo many Drums beating aboard them, as it was almoſt impoſſible to hear one another for the noiſe they made. Whereupon we were in great doubt what this might be, and wherefore there was ſuch triumphing; ſome thought that they were ſpies ſent from the Captain of *Tanunquir's* Army, who inſulting, for that we were already in their power, gave this teſtimony thereof. *Antonio de Faria* left his anchors in the Sea, and preparing himſelf to ſuſtain all that might happen unto him, he diſplayed all his Banners and Flags, and with demonſtration of joy attended the arrival of theſe *Lanteaas*, who when they perceived us to be all together, imagining it was the Bridegroom that ſtay'd to receive them, they came joyfully towards us. So after we had ſaluted one another after the manner of the Country, they went and anchored by the ſhore. And becauſe we could not comprehend the myſtery of this affair, all our Captains concluded that they were ſpies from the Enemies Army, which forbore aſſaulting us in expectation of ſome other Veſſels that were alſo to come; In this ſuſpicion we ſpent the little remainder of that Evening, and almoſt two hours of the night: But then the Bride, ſeeing that her Spouſe ſent not to viſit her, as was his part to do, to ſhew the love ſhe bore him, ſhe ſent her Uncle in one of the *Lanteaas* with a Letter to him, containing theſe words... *If the feeble ſex of a Woman would permit me to go from the place where I am, for to ſee thy face, without reproach to mine honor, aſſure thy ſelf that to kiſs thy tardy feet my body would fly as doth the hungry Faulcon*

after

*after the fearful Heron; But ſince I am parted from my fathers houſe, for to ſeek thee out here, come thy ſelf hither to me, where indeed I am not, for I cannot ſee my ſelf, but in ſeeing thee; Now if thou doſt not come to ſee me in the obſcurity of this night, making it bright for me, I fear that to morrow morning when thou arriveſt here, thou ſhalt not find me living. My Uncle* Licorpinau *will more particularly acquaint thee with what I keep concealed in my heart, for I am not able to ſay any more, ſuch is my grief to be ſo long deprived of thy ſo much deſired ſight; Wherefore I pray thee come unto me, or permit me to come unto thee, as the greatneſs of my love to thee doth deſerve, and as thou art obliged to do unto her, whom now thou art to poſſeſs in marriage until death, from which Almighty God of his infinite goodneſs keep thee as many years, as the Sun and Moon have made turns about the World ſince the beginning of their birth.* This *Lanteau* being arrived with the Brides Uncle and Letter, *Antonio de Faria* cauſed all the *Portugals* to hide themſelves, ſuffering none to appear but our *Chineſe* Mariners, to the end they might not be afraid of us; To our Junk then they approached with confidence, and three of them coming aboard us, asked where the Bridegroom was? All the anſwer we made them was to lay hold of them, and clap them preſently under hatches; now becauſe the moſt part of them were drunk, thoſe that were in the *Lanteau* never heard our buſtling with them, nor if they had, could they have had time to eſcape, for ſuddenly from the top of our poup we faſtned a cable to their maſt, whereby they were ſo arreſted, as it was impoſſible for them to get looſe of us; whereupon caſting in ſome pots of powder amongſt them, the moſt of them leapt into the Sea, by which time ſix or ſeven of our Soldiers, and as many Mariners, got into the *Lanteau*, and ſtraight rendred themſelves maſters of her, where the next thing they did was to take up the poor wretches, who cryed out that they drowned: Having made them ſure, *Antonio de Faria* went towards the other three *Lanteaas*, that anchored ſome quarter of a league from thence, and coming to the firſt, wherein was the Bride, he entred her without any reſiſtance, in regard there were none other in her but a few Mariners, and ſix or ſeven men, that ſeemed to be of good reckoning, all of kin to the Bride, being there only to accompany her, together with two little boys her brothers, that were very white, and certain ancient women, of ſuch as in *China* are hired for mony to dance, ſing, and play of inſtruments upon like feſtival occaſions. The other two *Lanteaas* beholding this ſad ſucceſs, left their anchors in the Sea, and fled in ſuch haſte, as if the Devil had been in them, but for all that we took one of them, ſo that we had three of the four: This done, we returned aboard our Junk, and by reaſon it was now midnight, we did nothing for the preſent but take our priſoners, and ſhut them up under the hatches, where they remained until day, that *Antonio de Faria* came to view them, and ſeeing they were moſt of them aged, full of ſorrow, and fit for nothing, he cauſed them to be ſet a ſhore, retaining only the Bride, and her two brothers, becauſe they were young, white, and well-favored, and ſome twenty Mariners, which afterwards were of great uſe to us for the navigation of our Junks. This Bride, as ſince we learned, was daughter to the *Anchary* of *Colem* (which ſignifies Governor) and betrothed to a youth, the ſon of the *Chiſun*, Captain of *Pandarea*, who had written unto her that he would attend her in this place with three or four Junks of his fathers, who was very rich, but alaſs! we ſhamefully cozened him. After dinner, being departed from thence, the Bridegroom arrived, ſeeking for his Bride with five ſail full of Flags, Streamers, and Banners; Paſſing by us, he ſaluted us with great ſtore of muſick, and ſhews of gladneſs, ignorant of his misfortune, and that we carryed away his wife. In this jollity he doubled the Cape of *Tilamuera*, where the day before we took this prize, and there anchored attending his Bride, according as he had written to her, whilſt we ſailing on arrived three days after at the Port of *Mutigimau*, which was the place we aymed at, in regard of the advice that *Antonio de Faria* had, that there he might ſell off his commodities.

## Chap. XVII.

*Antonio de Faria's Arrival at the Port: The Information that* Antonio de Faria *had of the Country; ſome paſſages between him and the Nautarel of the Town; his going to the River of* Madel; *with his encountring a Pyrat there, and that which paſſed betwixt them.*

BEing arrived at this Port we anchored in a Rode, which the Land makes near to a little Iſland on the South ſide of the mouth of the River, at the entry whereinto we remained without ſaluting the Port, or making any noiſe, intending as ſoon as it was night to ſend for to ſound the River, and to be informed of that we deſired to know. Upon the appearing of the Moon, which was about eleven of the clock, *Antonio de Faria* ſent away one of his *Lanteans*, well furniſhed, and twelve Soldiers in her, beſides the Captain, named *Valentine Martins Dalpoem*, a diſcreet man, and of great courage, that at other times had given good proof of himſelf in like occaſions, who departing went always ſounding the depth of the River, until he arrived where divers Veſſels rode at anchor; There he took two men that were ſleeping in a Barque laden with earthen ware, and returning aboard undiſcovered he rendred *Antonio de Faria* an accompt of what he had found touching the greatneſs of the place, and the fewneſs of the Ships that were in the Port, wherefore his opinion was, that he might boldly enter into it, and if it happened he could not trade there as he deſired, no body could hinder him from iſſuing forth whenſoever he pleaſed, by reaſon the River was very large, clean, and without any ſhelves, ſands, or other things that might endanger him. Having conſulted then with his company, he concluded by their advice, not to put the two *Mahometans*, that were taken, to torture, as was before ordained, becauſe there was no need of it; Day being come, *Antonio de Faria* deſiring, before he ſtirred, to be informed from thoſe two *Mahometans* of ſome particulars he would fain know, and thinking he might ſooner prevail with them by fair means, then by menaces and torments, he made very much of them, and then declared his mind: Whereupon both of them with one accord ſaid, that touching the entrance of the River there was nothing to be feared, in regard it was one of the beſt in all that Bay, and that ordinarily far greater Veſſels then his went in and out there, for that the ſhalloweſt place was fifteen fathom at the leaſt; and as for the people of the Country he was not to ſtand in any doubt of them, by reaſon they were naturally weak, and without arms; And that the ſtrangers, which were at that inſtant there, arrived ſome nine days before from the Kingdom of *Benan* in two Companies of fifty Oxen a piece, laden with ſtore of Silver, Wood of Aloes, Cloth, Silk, Linnen, Ivory, Wax, Lacre, Benjamin, Camphire, and Gold in Powder, like to that of the Iſland of *Samatra*, who were come with this Merchandiſe to buy Pepper, Drugs, and Pearls of the Iſle of *Ainan*. Being demanded whether there was any Army in thoſe parts, they anſwered No, becauſe moſt of the Wars, which the *Prechan*, that is, the Emperor of the *Cauchins*, made, or were made againſt him, were by Land; and that when any was made upon the Rivers it was always with little Veſſels, and not with ſuch great Ships as his, for that they were not deep enough for them: Further being aſked, whether the *Prechan* was near to that place, they replyed, that he was twelve days journey from thence, at the City of *Quangipaam*, where moſt commonly he with his Court reſided, governing his Kingdom in Peace and Juſtice, and that the Mynes, reſerved for his Crown, rendred him in yearly rent fifteen thouſand *Picos* of Silver, every *Pico* weighing five quintals, the moyety whereof by the divine Law, inviolably obſerved in his Countries, was for the poor Laborers, that tilled the ground, to ſuſtain their families withall, that thus all his people by a general conſent had freely relinquiſhed that right unto him, upon condition, that from thence forward he ſhould not conſtrain them to pay tribute, or any other thing that might concern them, and that the ancient *Prechans* had proteſted to accompliſh it as long as the Sun ſhould give light to the Earth. *Antonio de Faria* further demanded of them, what belief they were of, whereunto they anſwered, that they hold the very verity of all verities, and that they believed there was but one God Almighty, who as he had created all, ſo he preſerved all; howbeit if at any time our underſtandings were intangled with the diſorder and diſcord of our deſires, that no way proceeded from the ſoveraign Creator, in whom was no imperfection, but only from the ſinner himſelf, that out of his impatience judged according to the wicked inclination of his heart. Moreover asking of them, whether in their Law they believed, that the great God, which governeth this All, came at any time

into

into the world, clothed with a humane form, they ſaid No, becauſe there could be nothing that might oblige him to ſo great an extremity, in regard he was through the excellency of the divine Nature delivered from our miſeries, and far eſloigned from the Treaſures of the Earth, all things being more then baſe in the preſence of his ſplendor. By theſe anſwers of theirs, we perceived that theſe people had never attained to any knowledg of our truth, more then their eyes made them to ſee in the picture of Heaven, and in the beauty of the day, for continually in their *Coubayes*, which are their prayers, lifting up their hands they ſay, *By thy works, Lord, we confeſs thy greatneſs.* After this *Antonio de Faria* ſet them at liberty, and having given them certain preſents, wherewith they were very well pleaſed, he cauſed them to be conveyed to Land; that done, the wind beginning a little to riſe he ſet ſail, having all his Veſſels adorned with divers coloured Silks, their Banners, Flags and Streamers diſplayed, and a Standart of Trade hung out after the manner of the Country, to the end they might be taken for Merchants, and not for Pyrats, and ſo an hour after he anchored juſt againſt the Key of the Town, which he ſaluted with a little peal of Ordnance, whereupon ten or eleven *Almadiaes* came preſently to us with good ſtore of refreſhments; Howbeit finding us to be ſtrangers, and diſcerning by our habits that we were neither *Siams*, *Jaos*, nor *Malayos*, nor yet of any other Nation that ever they had ſeen, they ſaid one to another, *Pleaſe Heaven, that the dew of the freſh morning may be as profitable to us all, as this evening ſeems fair with the preſence of theſe whom our eyes behold.* Having ſaid thus, one of the *Almadiaes* asked leave to come aboard us, which they were told they might do, becauſe we were all their brothers, ſo that three of nine, which were in that *Almadia*, entred into our Junk, whom *Antonio de Faria* received very kindly, and cauſing them to ſit down upon a Turky Carpet by him, he told them, that he was a Merchant of the Kingdom of *Siam*, and going with his goods towards the Iſle of *Ainan* he had been advertiſed, that he might better and more ſecurely ſell off his Commodities in this Town, then in any other place, becauſe the Merchants thereof were juſter and truer of their word, then the *Chineſes* of the Coaſt of *Ainan*; Whereunto they thus anſwered, *Thou art not deceived in that which thou ſayſt, for if thou be a Merchant, as thou affirmeſt, believe it, that in every thing and every where thou ſhalt be honored in this place, wherefore thou mayſt ſleep without fear.*

*Antonio de Faria* miſtruſting ſome intelligence might come over Land concerning that §. 20.
which he had done to the Pyrat upon the River of *Tanauquir*, and ſo might work him ſome prejudice, would not diſ-imbarque his goods, as the Officers of the Cuſtom-houſe would have had him, which was the cauſe of much diſpleaſure and vexation to him afterward, ſo that his buſineſs was twice interrupted by that means, wherefore perceiving that good words would not ſerve to make them conſent to his Propoſitions, he ſent them word by a Merchant, who dealt between them, that he knew well enough they had a great deal of reaſon to require the landing of his goods, becauſe it was the uſual courſe for every one ſo to do; But he aſſured them, that he could not poſſibly do it, in regard the ſeaſon was almoſt paſt, and therefore he was of neceſſity to haſten his departure as ſoon as might be, the rather too for the accommodating of the Junk wherein he came, for as much as ſhe took in ſo much water, that threeſcore Mariners were always laboring at three pumps to clear her, whereby he ran a great hazard of loſing all his goods; And that touching the Kings Cuſtoms he was contented to pay them, not after thirty in the hundred, as they demanded, but after ten, as they did in other Kingdoms, and ſo much he would pay preſently and willingly. To this offer they rendred no anſwer, but detained him that carried the meſſage priſoner; *Antonio de Faria*, ſeeing that his meſſenger returned not, ſet ſail immediately, hanging forth a number of flags, as one that cared not whether he ſold or no; Whereupon the Merchants ſtrangers, that were come thither to trade, perceiving the Commodities, of which they hoped to make ſome profit, to be going out of the Port, through the perverſneſs and obſtinacy of the *Nautarel* of the Town, they went all to him, and deſired him to recall *Antonio de Faria*, otherwiſe they proteſted to complain to the King of the injuſtice he did them, in being the cauſe of hindring their Traffique. The *Nautarel*, that is the Governor, with all the Officers of the Cuſtom-houſe, fearing leſt they might upon this occaſion be turned out of their places, condeſcended to their requeſt, upon condition, ſince we would pay but ten in the hundred, that they ſhould pay five more, whereunto they agreed, and inſtantly ſent away the Merchant, whom they had detained priſoner, with a Letter full of complements, wherein they declared the agreement they had made. *Antonio de Faria* anſwered them, that ſince he was out of the Port, he would not re-enter it upon any terms,

by reaſon he had not leaſure to make any ſtay, howbeit if they would buy his Commodities in groſs, bringing lingots of ſilver with them for that purpoſe, he would ſell them to them, and in no other manner would deal, for he was much diſtaſted with the little reſpect the *Nautarel* of the Town had carried towards him, by deſpiſing his meſſages; and if they were contented to accept thereof, that then they ſhould let him know ſo much within an hour at the farthеſt, otherwiſe he would ſail away to *Ainan*, where he might put off his Commodities far better then there. They finding him ſo reſolved, and doubting to loſe ſo fair an occaſion, as this was, for them to return into their Country, embarqued themſelves in five great Lighters with forty cheſts full of lingots of ſilver, and a many ſacks to bring away the Pepper, and arriving at *Antonio de Faria's* Junk, they were very well received by him, unto whom they repreſented anew the agreement they had made with the *Nautarel* of the Town, greatly complaining of his ill Government, and of ſome wrongs, which without all reaſon he had done them; but ſince they had pacified him by conſenting to give him fifteen in the hundred, whereof they would pay five, they deſired him to pay the ten, as he had promiſed, for otherways they could not buy his Commodities. Whereunto *Antonio de Faria* anſwered, that he was contented ſo to do, more for the love of them, then for any profit he hoped to reap thereby, for which they gave him many thanks, and ſo being on all ſides agreed they uſed ſuch diligence in diſcharging the goods, as in three days the moſt of it was weighed and conſigned into the hands of the owners thereof; whereupon the accompts were made up, and the lingots of ſilver received, amounting in all to an hundred and thirty thouſand *Taels*, after the rate of ſeven ſhillings and ſix pence the *Tael*, as I have ſaid elſewhere. And though all poſſible ſpeed was uſed herein, yet before all was finiſhed, news came of that which we had done to the Pyrat in the River of *Tanamquir*, in ſo much that not one of the inhabitants would come near us afterward, by reaſon whereof *Antonio de Faria* was conſtrained to ſet ſail in all haſte.

§. 3. After we had quit the River of *Mutepinan*, directing our courſe Northward, *Antonio de Faria* thought good to make to the Coaſt of the Iſland of *Ainan*, for to ſeek out a River, named *Madel*, with a purpoſe there to accommodate the great Junk, wherein he was, becauſe it took in much water, or provide himſelf of a better in exchange upon any terms whatſoever; So having ſailed for the ſpace of twelve days with a contrary wind, at length he arrived at the Cape of *Pulo Hinbor*, which is the Iſland of Cocos; There hearing no news of the Pyrat he ſought for, he returned towards the South Coaſt, where he took certain Prizes, which were of good value, and well gotten as we thought. For it was the main intention of this Captain to deal with the Pyrat, which frequented this Coaſt of *Ainan*, as they before had done with divers Chriſtians in depriving them of their lives and goods; For as God doth ordinarily draw good out of evil, ſo it pleaſed him out of his divine Juſtice to permit, that *Antonio de Faria* in revenge of the Robbery, committed by *Coia Acem* upon us in the Port of *Lugor*, ſhould in the purſuit of him chaſtiſe other Theeves, that deſerved to be puniſhed by the hands of the *Portugals*. Now having for certain days together with much labor continued our Navigation within this Bay of *Cauchenchina*, as we were newly entred into a Port, called *Madel*, upon the day of the nativity of our Lady, being the eight of *September*, for the fear that we were in of the new Moon, during the which there oftentimes happens in this Climate ſuch a terrible ſtorm of wind and rain, as it is not poſſible for ſhips to withſtand it, which by the *Chineſes* is named *Taſan*, and that the Sky charged full with Clouds had four days together threatened that which we feared, it pleaſed God amongſt many other Junks that fled into this Port for ſhelter, there came in one belonging to a notorious *Chineſe* Pyrat, named *Himimilau*, who of a Gentile, that he had been, was not long before become a *Mahometan*, induced thereunto (as it was ſaid) by a *Cacis* of that accurſed Sect, who had made him ſuch an Enemy to the Chriſtian name, as he vaunted publiquely, that God did owe Heaven unto him for the great ſervice he had done him upon Earth, in depopulating it by little and little of the *Portugal* Nation, who from their mothers wombs delighted in their offences, as the very Inhabitants of the ſmoaky Houſe, a name which they give to Hell; And thus did he with ſuch ſayings, and other like blaſphemies, ſpeak as villanouſly and abominably of us as could be imagined. This Pyrat, entring into the River in a very great and tall Junk, came up to us where we rode at anchor, and ſaluted us after the cuſtom of the Country, whereunto we returned the like, as it is the manner there to do at the entry into any of the Ports, they neither knowing us to be *Portugals*, nor we what they were; for we thought they had been *Chineſes*, and that they came into the Port to ſhrewd themſelves from the ſtorm as others did, whereupon, behold,

five

five young men, that were Christians, whom this Robber held as Slaves in his Junk, guessing us to be *Portugals*, fell a crying out three or four times together, *Lord, have mercy upon us.* At these words we all stood up to see who they were, and perceiving them to be Christians, we called aloud to the Mariners for to stay their course, which they would not do, but contrarily beating up a Drum, as it were in contempt of us, they gave three great shouts, and withall brandished their naked Scymiters in the ayr in a way of threatening us, and then cast anchor some quarter of a league beyond us. *Antonio de Faria* desiring to learn the reason hereof, sent a *Balon* to them, which no sooner arrived near them, but the barbarous Rogues peked them with so many stones, that the Vessel was almost overwhelmed, so that they were glad to return, both Mariners and Soldiers being very sore hurt; *Antonio de Faria* seeing them come back all bloody, demanded the cause of it: *Sir*, answered they, *we are not able to tell you; only you behold in what plight we are*; saying so, and shewing him the hurts on their heads, they declared unto him in what manner they had been entertained. At first this accident much troubled *Antonio de Faria*, so that he stood musing a good while upon it, but at length turning himself to them that were present, *Let every one here*, said he, *prepare himself, for I cannot be perswaded but this is that Dog* Coia Acem, *who I hope this day shall pay for all the wrong he hath done us.* Whereupon he commanded presently to weigh anchor, and with all the speed that might be he set sail with the three Junks and Lanteas. Being come within a Musket shot of them, he saluted them with six and thirty Pieces of Ordnance, whereof twelve were Falconets, and other Field-pieces, amongst the which was one of Battery, that carried cast Bullets, wherewith the Enemies were so amated, as all the resolution they could take for the instant was to leave their anchors in the Sea, not having leasure to weigh them, and to make to the shoar, wherein also they failed of their desire; for *Antonio de Faria* perceiving their design got before them, and boarded their Junk with all the Forces of his Vessels; hereupon began a most furious Combat both with Pikes, Darts, and pots full of Powder thrown from either side, so that for half an hour it could not be discerned who had the better: But at length it pleased God to favor us so much, that the Enemies, finding themselves weary, wounded, and hurt, threw themselves into the Sea. *Antonio de Faria*, seeing these wretches ready to sink by reason of the impetuousness and strength of the current, he imbarqued himself with some Soldiers in two Baloes, and with much ado saved sixteen men, whereunto he was induced by the great need he stood in of them for the manning of his *Lanteas*, because he had lost a great many of his people in the former fights.

## Chap. XVIII.

*What* Antonio de Faria *did with the Captain of the Pyrats Junk; that which past between him and the people of the Country; with our casting away upon the Island of Theeves.*

§. 1. *Antonio de Faria* having obtained this Victory in the manner I have related, the first thing he did was to see his hurt men dresst, as that which chiefly imported him; then being given to understand that the Pyrat *Himimilau*, the Captain of the Junk he had taken, was one of the sixteen he had saved, he commanded him to be brought before him, and after he had caused him to be dresst of two wounds that he had received, he demanded of him what was become of the young *Portugals* which he held as Slaves? Whereunto the Pyrat, being mad with rage, having answered that he could not tell, upon the second demand that was made him with menaces, he said, that if first they would give him a little water, in regard he was so dry as he was not able to speak, that then he would consider what answer to make. Thereupon having water brought him, which he drank so greedily as he spilt the most part of it without quenching his thirst, he desired to have some more given him, protesting, that if they would let him drink his fill, he would oblige himself by the Law of *Mahomets Alcoran* voluntarily to confess all that they desired to know of him. *Antonio de Faria*, having given him as much as he would drink, questioned him again about the young Christians, whereto he replyed, that he should find them in the chamber of the prow; thereupon he commanded three Soldiers to go thither and fetch them, who had no sooner opened the scuttle to bid them come up, but they saw them lie dead in the place with their throats cut, which made them cry out, *Jesus, Jesus, come hither we beseech you, Sir, and behold a most lamentable spectacle*; hereat *Antonio de Faria*, and those that were with him, ran thither and beholding those youths lying so one upon

upon another, he could not forbear ſhedding of teares; having cauſed them then to be brought upon the deck, together with a woman and two pretty children, about ſeven or eight years old, that had their throats alſo cut, he demanded of the Pyrat why he had uſed ſuch cruelty to thoſe poor innocents: Whereunto he anſwered, that it was becauſe they were Traytors, in diſcovering themſelves to thoſe, which were ſuch great Enemies to him as the *Portugals* were, and alſo for that having heard them call upon their Chriſt for help, he deſired to ſee whether he would deliver them; as for the two infants, there was cauſe enough to kill them, for that they were the children of *Portugals*, whom he ever hated: with the like extravagancy he anſwered to many other queſtions, which were propounded to him, and that with ſo much obſtinacy as if he had been a very Devil. Afterwards being asked whether he were a Chriſtian, he anſwered, no, but that he had been one at ſuch time as *Don Paulo de Gama* was Captain of *Malaca*. Whereupon *Antonio de Faria* demanded of him, what moved him, ſince he had been a Chriſtian, to forſake the Law of *Jeſus Chriſt*, wherein he was aſſured of his ſalvation, for to embrace that of the falſe Prophet *Mahomet*, from whence he could hope for nothing but the loſs of his Soul. Thereunto he anſwered, that he was induced ſo to do, for that ſo long as he was a Chriſtian, the *Portugals* had always contemned him, whereas before when he was a *Gentile* they called him *Quiay Necoda*, that is to ſay, *Signior* Captain, but that reſpect immediately upon his Baptiſm forſook him, which he verily believed did arrive to him by *Mahomets* expreſs permiſſion, to the end it ſhould open his eyes to turn *Mahometan*, as after he did at *Bintan*, where the King of *Jantana* was in perſon preſent at the ceremony, and that ever ſince he had much honored him, and that all the *Mandarins* called him brother, in regard of the vow he had made upon the holy Book of Flowers, that as long as he lived he would be a ſworn Enemy to the *Portugals*, and of all others that profeſt the Name of Chriſt, for which both the King and the *Cacis Moulana* had exceedingly cõmended him, promiſing that his Soul ſhould be moſt bleſſed if he performed that vow. Being likewiſe demanded how long ago it was ſince he revolted, what *Portugal* Veſſels he had taken, how many men he had put to death, and what Merchandize he had deſpoyled them of? He anſwered, that it was ſeven years ſince he became a *Mahometan*; that the firſt Veſſel he took was *Luiſo de Pavia's* Junk, which he ſurprized in the River of *Liampoo* with four hundred Bars of Pepper only, and no other ſpice, whereof having made himſelf maſter, that he had put to death eighteen *Portugals*, beſides their ſlaves, of whom he made no reckoning, becauſe they were not ſuch as could ſatisfie the Oath he had made; That after this prize he had taken four ſhips, and in them put to death above an hundred perſons, amongſt whom there was ſome threeſcore and ten *Portugals*, and that he thought the Merchandize in them amounted to fifteen or ſixteen hundred Bars of Pepper, whereof the King of *Pan* had the better moity for to give him a ſafe retrait in his Ports, and to ſecure him from the *Portugals*, giving him to that purpoſe an hundred men, with commandment to obey him as their King. Being further demanded, whether he had not killed any *Portugals*, or lent an hand for the doing thereof, he ſaid no, but that ſome two years before, being in the River of *Choaboquee* on the Coaſt of *China*, a great Junk arrived there with a great many *Portugals* in her, whereof an intimate friend of his, named *Ruy Lobo*, was Captain, whom *Don Eſtevan de Gama*, then Governor of the Fortreſs of *Malaca*, had ſent thither in the way of commerce, and that upon the ſale of his commodities going out of the Port, his Junk about five days after took ſo great a leak, as not being able to clear her, he was conſtrained to return towards the ſame Port from whence he parted, but that by ill fortune clapping on all his ſails to get the ſooner to Land, ſhe was overſet by the violence of the wind, ſo as all were caſt away ſaving *Ruy Lobo*, ſeventeen *Portugals*, and ſome ſlaves, who in their skiff made for the Iſland of *Lamau*, without ſail, without water, or any manner of victual; That in this extremity *Ruy Lobo*, relying on the ancient friendſhip that was between them, came with tears in his eyes, and pray'd him on his knees to receive him and his into his Junk, which was then ready to ſet ſail for *Patana*, whereunto he agreed upon condition that therefore he ſhould give him two thouſand duckets, for the performance whereof he bound himſelf by his Oath of a Chriſtian. But that after he had taken them in, he was counſelled by the *Mahometans* not to truſt unto the friendſhip of Chriſtians, leſt he might endanger his own life, for when they had recovered ſtrength, they would without doubt ſeize upon his Junk, and all the goods that were in her, it being their uſual cuſtom ſo to do in all places where they found themſelves the ſtrongeſt: wherefore fearing leſt that which the *Mahometans* ſuggeſted ſhould befall him, he ſlew them all on a night as they ſlept, for the which notwith-

withſtanding he was ſorry afterwards. This declaration ſo much incenſed *Antonio de Faria*, and all that were about him, as indeed the enormity of ſo wicked a fact did require, that preſently, without queſtioning or hearing of him further, he commanded him to be put to death with four more of his company, and ſo they were all thrown into the Sea.

This juſtice being executed on the Pyrat and his four companions, *Antonio de Faria* cauſed §. 2.
an Inventory to be taken of all that was in the Junk, which was adjudged to amount unto forty thouſand *Taels* in raw and twiſted Silk, pieces of Sattin, Damask, Muſk, fine Poutcelains, and other leſs valuable commodities, which with the Junk we were conſtrained to burn, becauſe we wanted Mariners for our navigation. With theſe valorous exploits the *Chineſes* were ſo amazed, as they ſtood in dread of the very mention of the name of the *Portugals*, in ſo much that the *Necodaes*, or Maſters, of the Junks, that were in the Port, fearing the like might be done to them, aſſembled all together in councel; and there making Election of two of the principal amongſt them, whom they held moſt capable of performing their charge, they ſent them as Embaſſadors unto *Antonio de Faria*, deſiring him, that as King of the Sea he would protect them upon the aſſurance of his word, ſo as they might paſs ſafely out of the place where they were, for to make their voyage whilſt the ſeaſon ſerved; in conſideration whereof, as his Tributaries, ſubjects, and ſlaves, they would give him twenty thouſand *Taels* in Ingots of Silver, whereof payment ſhould be made out of hand by way of acknowledging him to be their Lord. *Antonio de Faria* received them very courteouſly, and granting their requeſt, proteſted and ſware to perform the ſame, and upon his word to protect them for the future from having any of their goods taken from them by any Pyrat. Whereupon one of the Embaſſadors remained as ſurety for the twenty thouſand *Taels*, and the other went to fetch the Ingots, which he brought an hour after, together with a rich preſent of many ſeveral things ſent him over and above by the *Necodaes*. This done, *Antonio de Faria* deſiring to advance a ſervant of his, named *Coſta*, made him Clark of the Patents that were to be granted to the *Necodaes*, whereof he preſently ſet a rate, namely five *Taels* for a Junk, and two *Taels* for a *Vanto*, *Lanitas*, and ſmall Barques, which proved ſo beneficial to him, that in the ſpace of thirteen days, wherein theſe Patents were diſpatched, he got (according the report of thoſe that envyed him) above four thouſand *Taels* in ſilver, beſides many good gratuities that were given him for expedition: The form of theſe Patents was thus. *I give aſſurance upon my word to* Necoda *ſuch a one, that he ſhall ſail ſafely all about the Coaſt of* China *without any diſturbance of any that belong to me, upon condition that wheſoever he meets with any* Portugals *he ſhall entreat them as brethren*; and underneath he ſigned, *Antonio de Faria*: All which Patents were moſt cruelly obſerved, and by that means he was ſo redoubted all along this Coaſt, as the *Chaem* himſelf of the Iſland of *Aiuan*, who is the Viceroy thereof, upon the report which he heard of him, ſent to viſit him by his Embaſſador, with a rich preſent of Pearls and Jewels, as alſo a Letter, whereby he deſired him to take entertainment from the ſon of the Sun, a name which they give to the Emperor of this Monarchy, for to ſerve him as Commander General of all the Coaſt from *Lamau* to *Liampoo*, with ten thouſand *Taels* Penſion yearly, and that if he carryed himſelf well, according the renoyn went of him, he aſſured him that upon the expiration of his three years charge he ſhould be advanced into the rank of the *Chaems* of the ſtate, and that ſuch men as he, if they were faithful, might attain to be one of the twelve *Futons* of the Empire, whom the ſoveraign ſon of the Sun, being the Lion crowned on the Throne of the World, admitted to his bed and board, as members united to his perſon by means of the honor, power, and command that he gave them, with an annual Penſion of an hundred thouſand *Taels*. *Antonio de Faria* gave him many thanks for this offer, and excuſed himſelf with complements after their manner; ſaying, that he was not capable of ſo great favor as he would honor him withall, but that without any regard at all of money he would be ready to ſerve him as often as the *Tutaem* of *Pegnin* would be pleaſed to command him. After this going out of the Port of *Machi*, where he had been fourteen days, he ran all along the Coaſt of that Country for to find out *Gaia Acem*, it being the main deſign of all his voyage, as I have declared before: Imagining then that he might meet with him in ſome of theſe places, he ſtayd there above ſix months, with much pain and hazard of his perſon; At length he arrived at a very fair Town, named *Quangipara*, wherein were goodly buildings and Temples: In this Port he abode all that day and the night following, under color of being a Merchant, peaceably buying that which was brought him aboard; And becauſe it was a Town of fifteen hundred fires, as we gueſſed, the next morning be-break

of day we ſet ſail without any great notice taken of us. So returning to Sea, although it were with a contrary wind, in twelve days with a troubleſom navigation he viſited the ſhores both of the South and North Coaſts, without incountring any thing worthy the obſervation, although they were repleniſhed with a many of little Villages, whereof divers were incloſed with walls of brick, but not ſtrong enough to withſtand the force of thirty good Soldiers, the people of themſelves being very weak, and having no other Arms but ſtaves hardned in the fire; howſoever the ſcituation of this Country was under one of the beſt and fertileſt Climates on the Earth, abounding with great ſtore of cattel, and many goodly large fields, ſowed with Wheat, Rice, Barly, Millet, and ſundry other kinds of grain; as alſo repleniſhed with many great groves of Pine, and *Angeline* trees, as in the *Indiaes*, able to furniſh a world of ſhipping: Moreover, by the relation of certain Merchants, *Antonio de Faria* was informed, that in this Land there were many Mynes of Copper, Silver, Tin, Saltpeter, Sulphur, and an infinite deal of untilled, but excellently good ground, altogether neglected by this weak Nation, which were it in our power, we might in all probability be more advanced in the *Indiaes*, then now we are through the unhappineſs of our ſins.

§.3. After we had been ſeven months and an half in this Country, ſometimes on the one ſide, ſometimes on the other, from River to River, and on both Coaſts, North and South, as alſo in the Iſle of *Ainan*, without hearing any news of *Ceia Acem*, the Soldiers, weary of ſo long and tedious travel, aſſembled all together, and deſired *Antonio de Faria* to make a partition of that which had been gotten, according to a promiſe before made to them by a note under his hand, ſaying that thereupon they would return unto the *Indiaes*, or where elſe they thought good, whereby a great deal of ſtir aroſe amongſt us; At length it was agreed, that we ſhould go and winter in *Siam*, where all the goods which were in the Junk ſhould be ſold, and being reduced into gold, diviſion ſhould be made of it, as was deſired. With this accord, ſworn and ſigned by all, we went and anchored in an Iſland, called the Iſland of Thieves; in regard it was the outermoſt Iſland of all that Bay, to the end that from thence we might make our voyage with the firſt fair wind that ſhould blow. So having continued there twelve days with an earneſt deſire to effect the agreement we had made together, it fortuned, that by the conjunction of the new Moon in *October*, which we had always feared, there aroſe ſuch a tempeſt of rain and wind, as ſeemed to be no natural thing, in ſo much that lying open to the South wind, as we traverſt the Coaſt, the waves went ſo high, that though we uſed all means poſſible to ſave our ſelves, cutting down our Maſts, and all the dead works from poop to prow, as alſo caſting into the Sea even the moſt part of our merchandize, redneing our great Ordnance into their places again, out of which they had been roſ'd, and ſtrengthening our Cables, that were half rotten, with ropes; But all this was not able to preſerve us, for the night was ſo dark, the weather ſo cold, the ſea ſo rough, the wind ſo high, and the ſtorm ſo horrible, that in theſe extremities nothing could deliver us but the meer mercy of God, whom with continual cries and tears we called upon for help: But for as much as in regard of our ſins we did not deſerve to receive this grace at his hands, his divine juſtice ordained, that about two hours after midnight there came ſuch a fearful guſt of wind, as drove our four veſſels foul one of another upon the ſhore, where they were all broken to pieces, ſo that four hundred and fourſcore men were drowned, amongſt which were eight *Portugals*, and it pleaſed God that the remainder, being fifty three perſons, were ſaved, whereof three and twenty were *Portugals*, the reſt ſlaves and Mariners. After this lamentable ſhipwrack we got half naked, and moſt of us ſtart, into a Mariſh hard by, where we ſtay'd till the next morning, and as ſoon as it was day we returned to the Sea ſide, which we found all ſtrewed with dead bodies, a ſpectacle of that dread and horror as ſcarce any one of us could forbear ſwooning to behold it; over them we ſtood lamenting a great while, till ſuch time an *Antonio de Faria*, who by the mercy of God was one of thoſe that remained alive, whereof we were all very glad, concealing the grief which we could not diſſemble, came where we were, having on a ſcarlet coat, that he had taken from one of the dead, and with a joyful countenance, his eyes dry and voyd of teats, he made a ſhort ſpeech unto us, wherein he remonſtrated how variable and uncertain the things of this world were, and therefore he deſired us as Brethren, that we would endevor to forget them, ſeeing the remembrance of them was but a means to grieve us; for conſidering the time and miſerable eſtate whereunto we were reduced, we ſaw how neceſſary his counſel was: And how he hoped that God would in this deſolate place preſent us with ſome good opportunity to ſave our ſelves, and how we might be aſſured that he never permitted any evil but for a greater

good;

good; moreover how he firmly believed, that though we had now loſt five hundred thouſand crowns, we ſhould ere it were long get above ſix hundred thouſand for them. This brief exhortation was heard by us all with tears and diſcomfort enough, ſo we ſpent two days and an half there in burying the dead, during which time we recovered ſome wet victuals and proviſions to ſuſtain us withall, but they laſted not above five days of fifteen that we ſtayed there, for by reaſon of their wetneſs they corrupted preſently, and did us little good. After theſe fifteen days it pleaſed God, who never forſakes them that truly put their truſt in him, miraculouſly to ſend us a remedy, whereby we eſcaped out of that miſery we were in, as I will declare hereafter.

## Chap. XIX.

*In what ſort we eſcaped miraculouſly out of this Iſland; our paſſage from thence to the River of* Xingran; *our incountring with a* Chineſe *Pyrat, and the agreements we made with him.*

§. 1. BEing eſcaped from this miſerable ſhipwrack, it was a lamentable thing to ſee how we walked up and down almoſt naked, enduring ſuch cruel cold and hunger, that many of us talking one to another fell down ſuddenly dead with very weakneſs, which proceeded not ſo much from want of victuals, as from the eating of ſuch things as were hurtful to us, by reaſon they were all rotten, and ſtunk ſo vilely, that no man could endure the taſte of them in his mouth; But as our God is an infinite good, there is no place ſo remote, or deſert, where the miſery of ſinners can be hid from the aſſiſtance of his infinite mercy, which I ſpeak, in regard that on the day when as the feaſt of S. *Michael* is celebrated, as we were drowned in tears, and without hope of any humane help, according as it ſeemed to the weakneſs of our little faith, a Kite came unexpectedly flying over our heads from behind a point, which the Iſland made towards the South, and by chance let fall a fiſh, called a Mullet, about a foot long. This fiſh falling cloſe by *Antonio de Faria*, it ſomewhat amazed him till he perceived what it was, ſo that having conſidered a little he fell on his knees, and with tears pronounced theſe words from the bottom of his heart. *O Lord Jeſus Chriſt, the eternal Son of God, I humbly beſeech thee by the ſorrows of thy ſacred Paſſion, that thou wilt not ſuffer us to be overwhelmed with the unbelief, wherein to the miſery of our weakneſs hath caſt us; for I hope, and am almoſt aſſured, that the ſame ſuccor which thou didſt ſend unto* Daniel *in the Lions den by the hand of thy Prophet* Abacuc, *thou wilt grant us at this preſent out of thy infinite goodneſs, and not only here, but in every other place, where a ſinner ſhall invoke thy ayd with a firm and true faith; Wherefore, my Lord, and my God, I pray thee, not for mine, but thine own ſake, that thou wilt not caſt thine eyes on that we have merited from thee, but on that thou haſt merited for us, to the end it may pleaſe thee to accord us the ſuccor which we hope to receive from thee, and out of thy bleſſed mercy to ſend us the means whereby we may get from hence into ſome Chriſtian Country, where ſtill perſevering in the holy Worſhip of thee, we may for ever continue thy faithful ſervants.* This ſaid, he took the Mullet and cauſed it to be broiled upon coals, and given to ſuch of the ſick as had moſt need of it; Then looking towards the point of the Iſland from whence the Kite came, we perceived divers others, that in their flying made many ſtoopings, whence we concluded that there was ſome kind of prey there whereon theſe fowls fed; now all of us being moſt deſirous of relief, we went thither in all haſte, and coming to the top of the higher ground we diſcovered a low valley full of divers fruit trees, and in the middle a river of freſh water, whereupon by good fortune before we went down we ſaw a Stag newly killed, and a Tyger beginning to eat him, therewith we made a great cry, which frighted him away into the Wood, leaving us the Stag as he was; Then deſcended we to the River, and by the bank of it ſtayd all that night, making a feaſt, as well with the Stag, as with divers Mullets that we took there, for there were a great number of Kites, that from the water catched a many of thoſe fiſhes, and oftentimes let them fall being ſcared with our cries: Thus continued we by this River till Saturday following, when about the break of day we diſcerned a Sail making as we thought towards the Iſland where we were, the better to be aſſured whereof we returned to the ſhoar where we were wracked, and there ſtaying about half an hour, we found it to be ſo indeed, in which regard we got us preſently into the Wood to decline diſcovery from thoſe in the Veſſel, which arriving in the Port we perceived it to be a *Lantea*, and that thoſe that were in her faſtened her [illegible] beak and the ſtern, the

the better to accommodate a plank for to paſs in and out of her. Being all diſimbarqued out of her to about the number of thirty perſons, more or leſs, they went preſently ſome to making proviſion of water and wood, ſome to waſhing of their linnen, and dreſſing of meat, and others to wraſtling, and ſuch like paſtimes, little thinking to find any body in that place which could any way annoy them. *Antonio de Faria* ſeeing them altogether without fear and order, and that there was none remaining in the Veſſel able to reſiſt us; *My Maſters*, ſaid he unto us, *you behold the wretched eſtate whereinto our miſ-fortune hath reduced us, whereof I confeſs my ſins are the cauſe, but the mercy of God is ſo infinite, as I am verily perſwaded he will not ſuffer us to periſh thus miſerably here, and therefore hath as it were miraculouſly ſent this Veſſel hither, by ſeizing whereupon we may eſcape from hence, which before to humane reaſon ſeemed almoſt impoſſible; wherefore I exhort you all to joyn with me in making our ſelves Maſters ſuddenly of her ere ever we be heard or ſeen, and having ſo done, let our only care be to poſſeſs our ſelves of the Arms we ſhall find in her, that therewith we may defend our ſelves, and make good our poſſeſſion, upon which, next under God, our ſafety depends; and as ſoon as you ſhall hear me ſay three times,* Jeſus, *do as you ſhall ſee me do:* Whereunto we anſwered, that we would diligently perform what he had enjoyned us; ſo that we ſtanding all prepared to execute his deſign, *Antonio de Faria* gave the ſignal which he had ſpoken of, and withall ran as faſt as ever he could, and we along with him, till he arrived at the *Lanſea*, whereinto we ſuddenly entred without any contradiction; then unlooſing the two cables with which ſhe was faſtened, we put out to Sea about a Croſsbow ſhot from Land. The *Chineſes* ſurprized in this manner, ran all to the Sea ſide upon the noiſe that they heard, and ſeeing their Veſſel taken, were much amazed, but knew not how to help it, for we ſhot at them with an Iron Baſe that was in the *Lanſea*, which made them fly into the Wood, where no doubt they paſſed the reſt of that day in lamenting the ſad ſucceſs of their ill fortune, as we had done once before.

§. 2. After we were gotten into the *Lanſea*, and that we were ſure the deceived *Chineſes* could no way hurt us, we ſat us down to eat that at leiſure which they had cauſed to be made ready for their dinner by an old man, that we found there, and it was a great Skillet full of Rice with baſhed Lard, whereunto we fell with good ſtomacks, as being not a little hungry: Dinner done, and thanks rendred to God for his gracious mercy to us, an Inventory was taken of the goods that were in the *Lanſea*, which was raw Silks, Damaſks, Sattins, together with three great pots of Muſk, amounting in all to the value of four thouſand Crowns, beſides good ſtore of Rice, Sugar, Gammons of Bacon, and two Coops full of Poultry, whereof we had more need then of all the reſt for the recovery of our ſick men, which were not a few amongſt us. Hereupon we all began without fear to cut out pieces of Silk, therewith to accommodate every one with clother. *Antonio de Faria*, having found a pretty boy in the *Lanſea*, about ſome twelve or thirteen years old, demanded of him from whence ſhe came, and what ſhe did in this place, as alſo to whom ſhe belonged, and whither ſhe was bound. *Alas!* anſwered the boy, *ſhe was long ſince belonged to my unfortunate Father, whoſe ill hap it is to have that taken from him by you in leſs then an hour, which he hath been above thirty years in getting: He came from a place, called* Quoaman, *where in exchange of lingots of Silver he bought all theſe Commodities, that you have, with a purpoſe to have gone and ſold them to the Junks of* Siam, *which are in the Port of* Comhay; *And wanting freſh water, it was his ill hap to come hither for to take in ſome, where you have robbed him of all that he hath without any fear at all of the divine Juſtice.* Whereupon *Antonio de Faria* bade him leave weeping, and making much of him promiſed to uſe him as his own ſon, and that he would always account him ſo; Herewith ſmiling as it were in diſdain, he anſwered, *Think not though I am but a child, that I am ſo fooliſh to believe, that having robbed my Father, thou canſt ever uſe me like thy ſon: But if thou wilt do as thou ſayſt, I beſeech thee for the love of thy God ſuffer me to ſwim unto that ſad Land where he remains that begat me, who indeed is my true father, with whom I had rather dye where I ſee him lamenting, then live with ſuch wicked people as you are.* Then ſome of them that were preſent reprehending and telling him that it was not well ſpoken; *Would you know,* replyed he, *why I ſaid ſo? it was becauſe I ſaw you after you had filled your bellies, praiſe God with lifted up hands, and yet for all that like hypocrites never care for making reſtitution of that you have ſtollen; but be aſſured, that after death you ſhall feel the rigorous chaſtiſement of the Lord Almighty for ſo unjuſtly taking mens goods from them.* *Antonio de Faria* admiring the childs ſpeech, aſked him whether he would become a Chriſtian?

Where-

Whereunto, earnestly beholding him, he answered, *I understand not what you say, nor that you propound; declare it first unto me, and then you shall know my mind further.* Then *Antonio de Faria* began to instruct him therein after the best manner he could; but the boy would not answer him a word, only lifting up his hands and eyes to Heaven he said weeping, *Blessed be thy Power, O Lord, that permits such people to live on the Earth; that speak so well of thee, and yet so ill observe thy Law, as these blinded Miscreants do; who think that robbing and preaching are things that can be acceptable to thee.* Having said so, he got him into a corner, and there remained weeping for three days together without eating any thing that was presented unto him. Hereupon falling to consult whether were the best course for us to hold from this place, either Northward, or Southward, much dispute arose thereabout, at length it was concluded that we should go to *Liampoo*, a Port distant from thence Northwards two hundred and threescore leagues, for we hoped that along this Coast we might happen to incounter, and seize on some other greater and more commodious Vessel then that we had, which was too little for so long a Voyage, in regard of the dangerous storms that are ordinarily caused by the new Moons on the Coast of *China*, where dayly many Ships are cast away. With this design we put to Sea about Sun-set, and so went on this night with a South-west wind, and before day we discovered a little Island, named *Quintoo*, where we surprized a fisher-boat full of fresh fish, of which we took as much as we had need of, as also eight of twelve men that were in her for the service of our *Lantea*, by reason our own were so feeble as they were not able to hold out any longer. These eight fishermen, being demanded what Ports there were on this Coast to *Chincheo*, where we thought we might meet with some Ship of *Malaca*, answered, that about eighteen leagues from thence there was a good River and a good Rode, called *Xingrau*, much frequented with Junks, where we might be easily and throughly accommodated with all that we stood in need of; that at the entring into it, there was a little Village, named *Xamoy*, inhabited with poor fishermen, and three leagues beyond that the Town, where there was great store of Silks, Musk, Pourcelains, and many other sorts of Commodities, which were transported into divers parts. Upon this advice we steered our course towards that River, where we arrived the next day immediately after dinner, and cast anchor just against it about a league in the Sea, for fear lest our ill fortune should run us into the same mischief we were in before. The night following we took a *Paroo* of fishermen, of whom we demanded what Junks there were in this River, and how they were man'd, with divers other questions proper for our design. Whereunto they answered, that at the Town up the River there was not above two hundred Junks, by reason the greatest part were already gone to *Ainan*, *Sumber*, *Lailoo*, and other Ports of *Cancheuchina*; moreover, that we might ride in safety at *Xamoy*, and that there we might buy any thing we wanted; Whereupon we entred into the River, and anchored close to the Village, where we continued the space of half an hour, being much about midnight. But *Antonio de Faria* seeing that the *Lantea* wherein we sailed could not carry us to *Liampoo*, where we purposed to lie all the Winter, he concluded by the advice of his company to furnish himself with a better Vessel, and although we were not then in case to enterprise any thing, yet necessity constrained us to undertake more then our Forces would permit; Now there being at that instant a little Junk riding at anchor fast by us alone, and no other near her, having but few men in her, and those asleep, *Antonio de Faria* thought he had a good opportunity to effect his purpose, wherefore leaving his anchor in the Sea, he got up close to this Junk, and with seven and twenty Soldiers and eight Boys boarded her on a sudden unespyed, where finding seven or eight *Chinese* Mariners fast asleep, he caused them to be taken, and bound hand and foot, threatening if they cryed out never so little to kill them all, which put them in such a fear as they durst not so much as quetch. Then cutting her cables, he got him straight out of the River, and sailing away with all the speed he could; The next day we arrived at an Island, named *Pullo Quirim*, distant from *Xamoy* not above nine leagues, there meeting with a little favorable gale within three days we went and anchored at another Island, called *Luxitay*, where, in regard the ayr was wholesom, and the water good, we thought fit to stay some fifteen days for the recovery of our sick men: In this place we visited the Junk, but found no other commodity in her then Rice, the greatest part whereof we cast into the Sea, to make her the lighter and securer for our Voyage; Then we unladed all her furniture into the *Lantea*, and set her on ground for to caulk her, so that in doing thereof, and making our provision of water, we spent (as I said before) fifteen days in this Island, by which time our sick men fully recovered their health; whereupon we departed fo

given to underſtand, that many *Portugals* were come thither from *Malaca*, *Sunda*, *Siam*, and *Patana*, as they uſed ordinarily to do about that time for to winter there.

§. 3. We had ſailed two days together along the Coaſt of *Laman* with a favorable wind, when it pleaſed God to make us incounter with a Junk of *Patana*, that came from *Leqnio*, which was commanded by a *Chineſe* Pyrat, named *Quiay Panian*, a great friend of the *Portugal* Nation, and much addicted to our fashions and manner of life, with him there were thirty *Portugals*, choyce and proper men, whom he kept in pay, and advantaged more then the reſt with gifts and preſents, ſo that they were all very rich. This Pyrat had no ſooner diſcovered us but he reſolved to attaque us, thinking nothing leſs then that we were *Portugals*, ſo that endeavoring to inveſt us, like an old Soldier as he was, and verſt in the trade of Pyrat, he got the wind of us; that done, falling down within a Musket ſhot of us, he ſaluted us with fifteen Pieces of Ordnance, wherewith we were much affrighted, becauſe the moſt of them were Faulconets; but *Antonio de Faria* encouraging his men, like a valiant Captain, and a good Chriſtian, diſpoſed them on the hatches in places moſt convenient, as well in the prow as the poop, reſerving ſome to be afterwards fitted as need ſhould require. Being thus reſolved to ſee the end of that which Fortune ſhould preſent us, it pleaſed God that we deſcryed a Croſs in our Enemies Flag, and on the foredeck a number of red Caps, which our men were wont to wear at Sea in thoſe times, whereby we were perſwaded that they might be *Portugals*, that were going from *Liampoo* to *Malaca*; Whereupon we made them a ſign for to make our ſelves known to them, who no ſooner perceived that we were *Portugals*, but in token of joy they gave a great ſhout, and withall vailing their two top ſails in ſhew of obedience, they ſent their long boat, called a Balon, with two *Portugals* in her, for to learn what we were, and from whence we came: At length having well obſerved and conſidered us, they approached with ſome more confidence to our Junk, and having ſaluted us, and we them, they came aboard her, where *Antonio de Faria* received them very courteouſly; And for that they were known to ſome of our Soldiers, they continued there a good while, during the which they recounted divers particulars unto us neceſſary for our deſign. That done, *Antonio de Faria* ſent *Chriſtovano Borralho* to accompany them back, and to viſit *Quiay Panian* from him, as alſo to deliver him a Letter, full of complements, and many other offers of friendſhip, wherewith this Pyrat *Panian* was ſo contented and proud, that he ſeemed not to be himſelf, ſuch was his vanity, and paſſing cloſe by our Junk he took in all his ſails; then accompanied with twenty *Portugals*, he came and viſited *Antonio de Faria* with a goodly rich Preſent, worth above two thouſand duckets, as well in Ambergreece and Pearls, as Jewels of Gold and Silver. *Antonio de Faria*, and the reſt of us, received him with great demonſtrations of love and honor: After that he and all his company were ſet, *Antonio de Faria* fell to diſcourſe with them of divers things according to the time and occaſion, and then recited unto them his unhappy Voyage, and the loſs he had ſuſtained, acquainting them with his determination to go unto *Liampoo*, for to reinforce himſelf with men, and make proviſion of Veſſels with oars, to the end he might return again, to paſs once more into the Streight of *Cauchenchina*, and ſo get to the Mynes of *Quamiparu*, where he had been told there were ſix large houſes full of Ingots of Silver, beſides a far greater quantity that was continually melted all along the River, and that without any peril one might be wonderfully enriched. Whereunto the Pyrat *Panian* made this anſwer, *For mine own part, Signior Captain, I am not ſo rich as many think, though it is true I have been ſo heretofore, but having been beaten with the ſame misfortune, which thou ſayſt hath befallen thee, my riches have been taken from me; Now to return to* Patana, *where I have a Wife and children, I dare not, by reaſon I am aſſured that the King will deſpoil me of all that I ſhould bring thither, becauſe I departed from thence without his permiſſion, which he would make a moſt haynous crime, to the end he might ſeize upon my eſtate, as he hath done to others for far leſſer occaſions then that wherewith he may charge me. Wherefore if thou canſt be contented that I ſhall accompany thee in the Voyage thou meaneſt to undertake, with an hundred men that I have in my Junk, fifteen Pieces of Ordnance, thirty Muskets, and forty Harquebuſes, which theſe Signiors, the* Portugals *that are with me, do carry, I ſhall moſt willingly do it, upon condition that thou wilt impart unto me a third part of that which ſhall be gotten, and to that effect I deſire thee to give me an aſſurance under thy hand, as alſo to ſwear unto me by thy Law to perform it accordingly. Antonio de Faria* accepted of this offer very gladly, and after he had rendred him many thanks for it, he ſwore unto him upon the holy Evangeliſts fully and without all fail to accompliſh what he required, and thereof likewiſe made him a promiſe under

his

his hand, to which divers of their company ſubſcribed their names as witneſſes. This accord paſt between them, they went both together into a River, called *Anay*, ſome five leagues from thence, where they furniſhed themſelves with all that they ſtood in need of, by means of a Preſent of an hundred duckets, which they gave to the *Mandarin*, Captain of the Town.

## CHAP. XX.

*Our Encounter at Sea with a little Fiſher-boat, wherein were eight* Portugals *very ſore hurt; and* Antonio de Faria's *meeting and fighting with* Coia Acem *the Pyrat.*

§. 1. BEing parted from this River of *Anay*, and well provided of all things neceſſary for the Voyage we had undertaken, *Antonio de Faria* reſolved by the advice and counſel of *Quiay Panian*, whom he much reſpected, to go and anchor in the Port of *Chincheo*, there to be informed by ſuch *Portugals* as were come from *Sunda*, *Malaca*, *Timor*, and *Patana*, of certain matters requiſite for his deſign, and whether they had any news from *Liampoo*, in regard the report went in the Country, that the King of *China* had ſent thither a Fleet of four hundred Junks, wherein there were an hundred thouſand men, for to take the *Portugals* that reſided there, and to burn their houſes, for that he would not endure them to be any longer in his dominions, becauſe he had been lately advertiſed, that they were not a people ſo faithful and peaceable as he had been formerly given to underſtand. Arriving then in the Port of *Chincheo*, we found five *Portugal* ſhips that were come thither about a month before from the places above mentioned. Theſe ſhips received us with great joy, and after they had given us intelligence of the Country, Traffique, and Tranquillity of the Ports, they told us they had no other news from *Liampoo*, but that it was ſaid a great number of *Portugals* were come thither from many parts to winter there; and how that great Army, which we ſo much feared, was not thereabout; but that it was ſuſpected to be gone for the Iſlands of *Goto*, to the ſuccor of *Sucan de Pontir*, from whom the brute went a Brother-in-law of his had taken his Kingdom, and that in regard *Sucan* had lately made himſelf ſubject to the King of *China*, and his Tributary for an hundred thouſand *Taeis* by the year, he had in contemplation thereof given him this great Army of four hundred Junks, with the forces aforeſaid, for to reſtore him to his Crown and Signiories, whereof he had been deſpoyled. Being very glad of this news, after we had remained in this Port of *Chincheo* the ſpace of nine days, we departed from thence for *Liampoo*, taking along with us five and thirty Soldiers more out of the five ſhips we found there, to whom *Antonio de Faria* gave very good pay; and after we had ſailed five days with a contrary wind, coaſting from one ſide to another, without advancing any whit at all, it happened that one night about the firſt watch we met with a little Fiſher-boat, or *Paroo*, wherein there were eight *Portugals*, very ſore hurt, two of the which were named *Mem Taborda*, and *Antonio Anriques*, men of honor, and very much renowned in thoſe quarters, the cauſe why in particular I name them; Theſe and the other ſix were in ſuch a pitiful eſtate, and ſo hideous to ſee to, as they moved every one to compaſſion. This *Paroo* coming cloſe to *Antonio de Faria*, he cauſed them to be taken up into his Junk, where they preſently caſt themſelves at his feet, from whence he raiſed them up, weeping for pity to behold them ſo naked, and all bathed in their own blood with the wounds they had received, and then demanded of them the occaſion of their misfortune: Whereunto one of the two made anſwer, that about ſeventeen days before they ſet ſail from *Liampoo* for *Malaca*, and that being advanced as far as the Iſle of *Sumbor* they had been ſet upon by a Pyrat, a *Guzarat* by Nation, called *Coia Acem*, who had three Junks, and four *Lanteaas*, wherein were fifteen hundred men, namely an hundred and fifty *Mahometans*, the reſt *Luzzons*, *Jaoas*, and *Champaas*, people of the other ſide of *Malaya*, and that after they had fought with them from one to four in the afternoon, they had been taken with the death of fourſcore and two men, whereof eighteen were *Portugals*, and as many made ſlaves; And that in their Junk, what of his and of others, there was loſt in merchandize above an hundred thouſand *Taeis*. *Antonio de Faria* remaining a good while penſive at that which theſe men related unto him, at length ſaid unto them, I pray tell me how was it poſſible for you to eſcape more then the reſt, the fight paſſing as you deliver? *After we had been fought withall about an hour and an half, the three great Junks boarded us five times, and with the force of their ſhot they ſo tore the Prow of our Veſſel, that we were ready to ſink; Wherefore to keep out the water, and lighten*

our

*our ſhip, We were conſtrained to caſt the moſt part of our goods into the Sea, and whil'ſt our men were laboring to do ſo, our Enemies layd ſo cloſe at us, as every one was fain to leave that he was about for to defend himſelf on the hatches: But whil'ſt We were thus troubled, moſt of our company being hurt, and many ſlain, it pleaſed God that one of the Enemies Junks came to be ſo furiouſly fired, as it caught hold likewiſe of another that was faſtned unto it, which made the Pyrats Soldiers leave the fight for to go and ſave their Veſſels, yet that they could not do ſo ſpeedily, but that one of them was burnt down even to the very water, ſo that they of the Junk were compelled to leap into the Sea to ſave themſelves from burning, where moſt of them were drowned: In the mean time We made ſhift to get our Junk cloſe to a ſtock of Piles, which Fiſhermen had plantid there againſt a rock, hard by the mouth of the river, where at this preſent is the Temple of the* Siams, *but the dog* Coja Acem *was inſtantly with us, and having faſt grappled us, he lept into our Veſſel, being followed by a great number of* Mahometans, *all armed with Coats of Mail, and Buff Jerkins, who ſtraightway killed above an hundred and fifty of ours, whereof eighteen were* Portugals; *which We no ſooner perceived, but all wounded as We were, and ſpoyled with the fire, as you ſee, We ſought for ſome way to ſave our ſelves, and to that end we ſped us into a* Manchua, *that was faſtened to the ſtern of our Junk, wherein is pleaſed God that fifteen of us eſcaped, whereof two dyed yeſterday, and of the thirteen, that remain yet miraculouſly alive, there are eight* Portugals, *and five ſervants. In this ſort we got us with all ſpeed between this Paliſade and the land amongſt the rocks, the better to preſerve us from being boarded by their Junk, but they were otherwiſe employed in ſeeking to ſave the men of their burnt Veſſel; and afterwards they entred all into our Junk, where they were ſo carryed away with coveteouſneſs of the booty, as they never thought of purſuing us; ſo that the Sun being almoſt ſet, and they wonderful glad of their victory over us, they retired into the River with great acclamations.* Antonio de Faria, very joyful at this news, though he was as ſad again on the other ſide for the bad ſucceſs of thoſe that had made him this relation, rendred thanks unto God for that he had found his Enemy, it being a matter ſo much deſired of him and his: Certainly, ſaid he unto them then, by your report they muſt needs be now in great diſorder, and much ſpoiled in the River where they are, for I am perſwaded, that neither your Junk, nor that of theirs, which was faſtned to the burnt one, can do them any longer ſervice, and that in the great Junk, which aſſaulted you, it is not poſſible but that you have hurt and killed a good many. Whereunto they anſwered, that without doubt they had killed and hurt a great number. Then *Antonio de Faria*, putting off his cap, fell down on his knees, and with his hands and eyes lifted up to Heaven he ſaid weeping, *O Lord Jeſus Chriſt, my God and Saviour, even as thou art the true hope of thoſe that put their truſt in thee, I, that am the greateſt ſinner of all men, do moſt humbly beſeech thee in the name of thy ſervants, that are here preſent, whoſe Souls thou haſt bought with thy precious blood, that thou wilt give us ſtrength and victory againſt this cruel Enemy, the murtherer of ſo many* Portugals, *whom with thy favor and ayd, and for the honor of thy holy Name I have reſolved to ſeek out, as hitherto I have done, to the end he may pay to thy Soldiers and faithful ſervants what he hath ſo long owed them.* Whereunto all that were by anſwered with one cry, *To them, to them, in the Name of Jeſus Chriſt, that this dog may now render us that, which for ſo long together he hath taken, as well from us, as from our poor miſerable companions.* Hereupon with marvelous ardor and great acclamations we ſet ſail for the Port of *Lailoo*, which we had left eight leagues behind us, whither by the advice of ſome of his company *Antonio de Faria* went to furniſh himſelf with all that was neceſſary for the fight he hoped to make with the Pyrat, in the queſt of whom (as I have already delivered) he had ſpent ſo much time, and yet could never till then hear any news of him in all the Ports and places where he had been.

§. 2. The next morning we arrived at the Port of *Lailoo*, where *Quiay Panian* had much kinred, and many friends, ſo that he wanted no credit in that place; wherefore he intreated the *Mandarin* (who is the Captain of the Town) to permit us to buy for our mony ſuch things as we ſtood in need of, which he inſtantly granted, as well for fear leſt ſome diſpleaſure might be done him, as for the ſum of a thouſand duckets, preſented unto him by *Antonio de Faria*, wherewith he reſted very well ſatisfied. Hereupon ſome of our Company went aſhore, who with all diligence bought whatſoever we wanted, as Saltpeter and Sulphur to make powder, Lead, Bullets, Victual, Cordage, Oyl, Pitch, Roſin, Ockam, Timber, Planks, Arms, Darts, Staves hardened in the fire, Maſts, Sails, Sail-yards, Targets, Flints, Pullies, and Anchors; that done, we

took

took in fresh water, and furnished our Vessels with Mariners. Now although that this place contained not above three or four hundred houses, yet was there both there, and in the villages adjoyning, such a quantity of the aforesaid things, that in truth it were hard to express it; for *China* is excellent in this, that it may vaunt to be the Country in the world most abounding in all things that may be desired. Besides for that *Antonio de Faria* was exceeding liberal, in regard he spent out of the general booty, before the partitions were made, he payd for all that he bought at the price the sellers would set, by means whereof he had more brought him by far then he had use for, so that within thirteen days he went out of this Port wonderfully well accommodated, with two other new great Junks, which he had exchanged for two little ones that he had, and two *Lanchaas* with Oars, as also an hundred and sixty Mariners, both for rowing, and for governing the sails. After all these preparations were made, and we ready to weigh anchor, a general muster was taken of all that were in our Army, which in number was found to be five hundred persons, as well for fight, as for the service and navigation of our Vessels, amongst whom were fourscore and fifteen *Portugals*, young and resolute, the rest were Boys, and Mariners, and men of the other Coast, which *Quiay Panian* kept in pay, and were well practised in Sea-fight, as they that had been five years Pyrats. Moreover we had an hundred and sixty Harquebuses, forty pieces of brass Ordnance, whereof twenty were field-pieces, that carryed stone-bullets, threescore quintals of powder, namely fifty four for the great Ordnance, and six for the Harquebuses, besides what the Harquebusiers had already delivered to them, nine hundred pots of artificial fire, whereof four hundred were of powder, and five hundred of unslaked Lime after the *Chinese* manner, a great number of stones, Arrows, Half-pikes, four thousand small Javelings, store of Hatchets to serve at boarding, six Boats full of Flints, wherewith the Sailers fought, twelve Cramp-irons with their hooks fastned to great Iron chains for to grapple Vessels together, and many sorts of fire-works, which an Engineer of the *Levant* made for us. With all this equipage we departed from this Port of *Lailoo*, and within three days after it pleased God that we arrived at the fishing place, where *Coia Acem* took the *Portugal* Junk: There as soon as it was night *Antonio de Faria* sent spies into the River, for to learn wherebout he was, who took a *Paroa*, with six Fishermen in her, that gave us to understand how this Pyrat was some two leagues from thence in a River, called *Tinlau*, and that he was accommodating the Junk he had taken from the *Portugals*, for to go in her, with two others that he had, unto *Siam*, where he was born, and that he was to depart within two days. Upon this news *Antonio de Faria* called some of his company to counsel, where it was concluded, that first of all the places and forces of our Enemy was to be visited and seen, because in a matter of so much hazard, it was not safe to run as it were blindfold unto it, but to advise on it well beforehand, and that upon the certainty of that which should be known, such resolution might after wards be taken, as should seem good to all; Then dismissing the fishermen out of the *Paroa*, he put some of *Quiay Panians* Mariners into her, and sending her away only with two of those fishermen, keeping the rest as hostages, he committed the charge of her to a valiant Soldier, named *Vincentio Moreſa*, attired after the *Chinese* fashion, for fear of discovery; who arriving at the place where the Enemy rode, made shew of fishing as others did, and by that means espyed all that he came for, whereupon returning, he gave an account of what he had seen, and assured us that the Enemies were so weak, as upon boarding of them they might easily be taken. *Antonio de Faria* called the most experienced men of his company to be assembled, to advise thereon, and that in *Quiay Panians* Junk, to honor him the more, as also to maintain his friendship, which he much esteemed: At this meeting it was resolved, that as soon as it was night they should go and anchor at the mouth of the River, where the Enemy lay, for to set upon him the next morning before day. This agreed unto by all, *Antonio de Faria* set down what order and course should be held at the entring into the River, and how the Enemy should be assaulted: Then dividing his men, he placed thirty *Portugals* in *Quiay Panians* Junk, such as he pleased to choose, because he would be sure to give him no distaste; Likewise he disposed six *Portugals* into each of the *Lanchaas*, and into *Christovano Borralho's* Junk twenty; the rest of the *Portugals*, being eleven and thirty, he retained with himself, besides slaves and divers Christians, all valiant and resolute men. Thus accommodated and ordered for the execution of his enterprise, he set sail towards the River of *Tinlau*, where he arrived about Sun-set, and there keeping good watch he past the night till three of the clock in the morning, at which time he made to the [illegible] who rode some half a league up in the River.

§.3. It pleased God that the Sea was calm, and the wind so favorable, as our Fleet, sailing up the River, arrived in less then an hour close to the Enemy, unperceived of any; But because they were Thieves, and feared the people of the Country, in regard of the great mischiefs and robberies which they dayly committed, they stood so upon their guard, and kept so good watch, that as soon as they discerned us, in all haste they rung an alarum with a Bell, the sound whereof caused such a rumor and disorder, as well amongst them that were ashore, as those aboard, that one could hardly hear one another, by reason of the great noise they made. Whereupon *Antonio de Faria*, seeing we were discovered, cryed out to his company, *To them, my Masters, to them in the name of God before they be succored by their Lorches*, wherewith discharging all his Ordnance, it pleased Heaven, that the shot lighted to such purpose, as it overthrew and tore in pieces the most part of the valiantest, that then were mounted and appeared on the deck, even right as we could have wished: In the neck hereof our Harquebusiers, which might be some hundred and threescore, failed not to shoot upon the signal, that had formerly been ordained for it, so that the hatches of the Junk were cleared of all those that were upon them, and that with such a slaughter as not an Enemy durst appear there afterwards; At which very instant our two Junks boarded their two in the case they were in, where the fight grew so hot on either side, as I confess I am not able to relate in particular what passed therein, though I was present at it, for when it began it was scarce day. Now that which rendred the conflict betwixt us and our Enemies most dreadful was the noise of Drums, Basins, and Bells, accompanyed with the report of the great Ordnance, wherewith the valleys and rocks thereabouts resounded again. This fight continuing in this manner some quarter of an hour, their *Lorches* and *Lanteaas* came from the shore to assist them with fresh men, which one, named *Diego Meyrelez*, in *Quiay Panians* Junk, perceiving, and that a Gunner employed not his shot to any purpose, in regard he was so beside himself with fear, that he knew not what he did, as he was ready to give fire to a Piece, he thrust him away so rudely, as he threw him down into the scuttle, saying to him, *Away villain, thou canst do nothing, this business belongs to men, such as I am, not to thee*: whereupon pointing the Gun with its wedges of level, as he knew very well how to do, he gave fire to the Piece, which was charged with bullets and stones, and hitting the Lorch that came foremost, carryed away all the upper part of her from Poup to Prow, so that she presently sank, and all that were in her, not a man saved: The shot then having past so through the first *Lorch*, fell on the hatches of another *Lorch*, that came a little behind, and killed the Captain of her, with six or seven more that were by him, wherewith the two other *Lorches* were so terrified, that going about to fly back to Land, they fell foul one of another, so as they could not clear themselves, but remained entangled together, and not able to go forward or backward, which perceived by the Captains of our two *Lorches*, called *Gasparo d' Oliveyra*, and *Vincentio Morosa*, they presently set upon them, casting a great many artificial pots into them, wherewith they were so fired, that they burnt down to the very water, which made the most of those that were in them to leap into the Sea, where our men killed them all with their Pikes, so that in those three *Lorches* alone there dyed above two hundred persons; and in the other, whereof the Captain was slain, there was not one escaped, for *Quiay Panian* pursued them in a *Champana*, which was the Boat of his Junk, and dispatched most of them as they were getting to Land, the rest were all battered against the rocks that were by the shore: which the Enemies in the Junks perceiving, being some hundred and fifty *Mahometans*, *Luzzons*, *Borneos*, and *Jaos*, they began to be so discouraged, that many of them threw themselves into the Sea; whereupon the dog *Coia Acem*, who yet was not known, ran to this disorder, for to animate his men. He had on a Coat of Mail lined with Crimson Sattin, edged with gold fringe, that had formerly belonged to some *Portugal*, and crying out with a loud voyce, that every one might hear him, he said three times, *Lah hilah, hilah la Mahumed, rocol halah, Massulmens, and true Believers in the holy Law of* Mahomet, *will you suffer your selves to be vanquished by such feeble slaves, as these Christian Dogs, who have no more heart then white Pullets, or bearded women? To them, to them, for we are assured by the Book of Flowers, wherein the Prophet* Noby *doth promise eternal delights to the* Daroezes *of the House of* Mecqua, *that he will keep his word both with you and me, provided that we bathe our selves in the blood of these dogs without Law*: With these cursed words the Devil so encouraged them, that rallying all into one body, they re-inforced the fight, and so valiantly made head against us, as it was a dreadful thing to see how desperately they ran amongst our weapons. In the mean time *Antonio de Faria* thus exhorted

exhorted his men. *Courage valiant Christians, and whilst these wicked Miscreants fortifie themselves in their devilish Sect, let us trust in our Lord Jesus Christ, nailed on the Cross for us, who will never forsake us, how great soever we be, for after all we are his, which these Dogs here scorn not.* With this fervor and zeal of faith flying upon *Coia Acem*, to whom he had most spleen; he discharged so great a blow on his head with a two-handed sword, that cutting through a Cap of Mail he wore, he layd him at his feet, then redoubling with another reverse stroke he lamed him of both his legs, so as he could not rise, which his followers beholding they gave a mighty cry, and assaulted *Antonio de Faria* with such fury and hardiness, as they made no reckoning of a many of *Portugals*, by whom they were invironned, but gave him divers blows that had almost overthrown him to the ground. Our men seeing this ran presently to his aid, and behaved themselves so well, that in half a quarter of an hour forty eight of our enemies lay slaughter'd on the dead body of *Coia Acem*, and but fourteen of ours, whereof there were not above five *Portugals*, the rest were servants and slaves, good and faithful Christians. The remainder of them, beginning to faint, retired in disorder towards the foredeck, with an intent to fortifie themselves there, for prevention whereof twenty Soldiers, of thirty that were in *Quiay Pavani* Junk, ran instantly and got before them, so that ere they could render themselves Masters of what they pretended unto, they were inforced to leap into the Sea, where they fell one upon another, and were by our men quite made an end of, so that of all their number there remained but only five, whom they took alive, and cast into the Hold bound hand and foot, to the end they might afterwards be forced by torments to confess certain matters that should be demanded of them, but they fairly tore out one anothers throats with their teeth, for fear of the death they expected, which yet could not keep them from being dismembered by our servants, and after thrown into the Sea, in the company of the Dog *Coia Acem* their Captain, great *Cacis* of the King of *Bintan*, the Shedder and Drinker of the blood of *Portugals*, Titles which he ordinarily gave himself in his Letters, and which he published openly to all *Mahometans*, by reason whereof, and for the superstition of his cursed Sect, he was greatly honored by them.

## Chap. XXI.

*What* Antonio de Faria *did after his Victory; his departure from the River of* Tinlau, *With his ill success thereupon, and the succor we met withall.*

§. 1. THis bloody Battel finished with the honor of the Victory, before-mentioned, in the description whereof I have not used many words; for if I should undertake to recount the particularities of it, and set forth all that was performed by ours, as also the valor wherewith the Enemies defended themselves, besides that I am unable to do it, I should then be forced to make a far larger discourse, and more ample History then this is: but it being my intention to declare things *en passant*, I have labored to speak succinctly in divers places, where possibly better wits then mine would amplifie matters in a more accomplished manner, and this is the reason that I have now delivered nothing but what was needful to be written. Returning then to my former discourse, I say, that the first thing *Antonio de Faria* did after this Victory was to see his hurt men looked unto, whereof there were about fourscore and twelve, the most part *Portugals*, our servants being included; As for the number of the dead, there were on our side forty two, amongst which eight were *Portugals*, the loss of whom afflicted *Antonio de Faria* more then all the rest, and of the Enemies three hundred and eighty, whereof an hundred and fifty fell by fire and sword, the remainder were drowned. Now albeit this Victory brought a great deal of content to us all, yet were there many tears shed both in general and particular for the slaughter of our companions, the most part of whose heads were cleft asunder with the Enemies hatchets. After this *Antonio de Faria*, notwithstanding he was hurt in two or three places, went presently ashoar with those that were in case to accompany him, where the first thing he did was to give order for the burial of the dead; thereupon he surrounded the Island for to see what he could discover: Compassing of it then in this sort he lighted upon a very pleasant Valley, wherein were many gardens, replenished with sundry kinds of fruits; there also was a Village of about forty or fifty very low houses, which the infamous *Coia Acem* had sacked, and in them slain many of the inhabitants, that had not the means to escape his hands. Further, in the said Valley, and by a delicate River of fresh water, wherein were a number of Mullets and Trouts, he met with a very fair house, which seemed

to be the *Paged* of the Village, that was full of ſick and hurt perſons, whom *Coia Acem* had put there to be cured; amongſt theſe were divers *Mahometans* of his kinred, and others of his beſt Soldiers, to the number of ninety ſix, who as ſoon as they perceived *Antonio de Faria* afar off cryed out to him for mercy and forgiveneſs, but he would by no means hearken unto them, alledging that he could not ſpare thoſe that had killed ſo many Chriſtians; ſaying ſo, he cauſed the houſe to be fired in ſix or ſeven places, which in regard it was of wood, bepitched, and covered with dry Palm tree leaves, burned in ſuch ſort, as it was dreadful to behold; In the mean time it would have moved any man to pity to hear the lamentable cries made by thoſe wretches within, and to ſee them caſt themſelves headlong out of the windowes, where our men, provoked with a deſire of revenge, received them upon their Pikes and Halberds. This cruelty performed, *Antonio de Faria* returned to the Sea ſide, where the Junk lay, that *Coia Acem* had taken a month before from the *Portugals* of *Liampoo*, and cauſed it to be launched into the Sea, having been formerly repaired and caulked, which being done, and he aboard again, he reſtored it to *Mem Taborda*, and *Antonio Anriques*, to whom it belonged, as I have already declared; But firſt, cauſing them to lay their hands on the Book of Prayers, *Worthy Friends*, ſaid he unto them, *for all thoſe my companions ſakes, as well living as dead, Who for your Junk here have loſt ſo much blood, and ſo many lives, I preſent you with her, and all the goods that were in her, as a free gift, to the end that thereby our Lord may receive us into his everlaſting Kingdom; and beſides, be pleaſed to grant us an abolition of all our ſins in this World, and in the other everlaſting life. In truſt he hath given to our brethren, that this day dyed like good Chriſtians for the holy Catholique Faith; Howbeit, I pray and expreſly enjoyn you, may I conjure you by the oath you are now to make, that you take no other goods but ſuch only as appertain unto you, and that you brought from* Liampoo, *both for your ſelves, and thoſe other Merchants that were Fellowes with you: For more I do not give you, nor were it reaſonable I ſhould, in regard it would be much againſt the duty of either of our conſciences, for me to give, and you to receive it.* Having ſpoken in this manner, *Mem Taborda* and *Antonio Anriques*, who little looked for any ſuch favor, fell down at his feet, and with tears of joy rendred him a world of thanks, and then preſently went aſhoar for to ſeek out their goods, taking with them about fifty or threeſcore ſervants, whom their Maſters had lent them for to help gather up the Silks that were wet, and hanged up by the Enemies on Trees a drying, beſides two great rooms full of ſuch as had never been wet, all which amounted, as it was ſaid, to an hundred thouſand *Taels*, wherein above an hundred Merchants had a ſhare, as well of them that dwelt at *Liampoo*, as at *Malaca*, to whom they were conſigned; The reſt of their Commodities, being a third part thereof, were loſt, and could never be heard of. The next morning, as ſoon as it was light, he went to the great Junk that he had taken, which was full of the bodies of them that were ſlain in her the day before, whom without further ado he cauſed to be thrown into the Sea; howbeit for *Coia Acem*, in regard he was of a more eminent condition then the reſt, and conſequently deſerving a greater honor in his funerals, he commanded him clothed and armed as he was to be cut into four quarters, and ſo caſt alſo into the Sea, where for the merit of his works his body was intombed in the bellies of the hungry Lizards, whereof there was a great company all about our Junk, that ſhewed themſelves above water, allured by the appaſt of thoſe formerly thrown over-board; and in precipitating him ſo diſmembered into the Sea, *Antonio de Faria* inſtead of a prayer, *Go wicked wretch*, ſaid he, *to the bottom of Hell, where thy damned Soul doth now enjoy the promiſed delights of thy Mahumet, as thou didſt yeſterday publiſh to thoſe other Dogs ſuch as thy ſelf.* Thereupon he commanded all the Slaves and Captives of his company, together with their Maſters, before him, unto whom he made a ſpeech like a true Chriſtian, as indeed he was, whereby he prayed them in the Name of God to manumit theſe Slaves, according to the promiſe he had made them before the fight, engaging himſelf to ſatisfie them for it out of his own Eſtate: Whereunto they anſwered all with one conſent, that ſince it was his deſire they were well contented, and that they did even then ſet them at full liberty, whereof he cauſed a writing to be preſently made with all their hands unto it, being as much as could be done for the inſtant, but afterwards each of them had in particular Letters of manumiſſion granted unto them. This done, an Inventory was taken of ſuch Commodities as were found to be good and merchantable, over and above thoſe which were given to the *Portugals*, and all was prized at an hundred and thirty thouſand *Taels* in Silver Lingots of *Japan*, conſiſting of Sattin, Damask, raw Silk, Taffety, Muſk, and very fine Porcelain, for as touching the reſt they were not put in writing; And all theſe Robberies

the

the Pyrats had committed on the Coaſts between *Sumbor* and *Fachee*, where for above a year together they had courſed up and down.

After that *Antonio de Faria* had remained four-and twenty days in this River of *Tinlan*, during which time all his hurt men were cured, he ſet ſail directly for *Liampoo*, where he purpoſed to paſs the Winter, to the end that with the beginning of the Spring he might ſet forth on his Voyage to the Mynes of *Lucaniaparu*, as he had reſolved with *Quiay Panian*, the *Chineſe* Pyrat that was in his company, but being advanced even to the point of *Micuy*, which is at the height of ſix and twenty degrees, ſo great a Tempeſt aroſe towards the North-weſt, that we were fain to ſtrike our top-ſails, for fear we ſhould be forced back again from our courſe; but after dinner it increaſed with ſuch a terrible ſtorm of rain, and the Sea went ſo high, that the two *Lanteas* were not able to brook it, ſo that about evening they made to Land, with an intent to recover the River of *Xilendan*, which was about a league and an half from thence, whereupon *Antonio de Faria* doubting ſome misfortune, carried as little ſail as poſſibly he could, as well for that he would not outgo the *Lanteas*, as in regard of the violence of the wind, which was ſuch, as they durſt not carry more: Now by reaſon the night was ſo dark, and the billowes ſo great, they could not diſcern a ſhelf of ſand, that lay betwixt an Iſland and the point of a Rock, ſo that paſſing over it our Junk ſtruck her ſelf ſo rudely on it, as her upper keel cleft in two or three places, and her under keel a little, whereupon the Gunner would have given fire to a Falconet; for to have warned the other Junks to come in to ſuccor us in this extremity, but *Antonio de Faria* would by no means permit him, ſaying, that ſince it pleaſed God he ſhould be caſt away in that place, there was no reaſon that others ſhould be loſt there alſo for his cauſe; But he deſired every one to aſſiſt him, both with manual labor, and ſecret prayers unto God to pardon their ſins: Having ſaid ſo, he cauſed the main Maſt to be cut down, whereby the Junk came to be in ſomewhat a better caſe then ſhe was before; but alas! the fall of it coſt three Mariners and one of our ſervants their lives, who chancing to be under it when it fell were battered all to pieces; In like manner he made all the other Maſts from poop to prow to be hewed down, together with all the dead works, as the cabins and galleries without, ſo that all was taken away cloſe to the hatches. And though all this was done with incredible diligence, yet it ſtood us in little ſtead, for that the weather was ſo foul, the ſea ſo ſwoln, the night ſo dark, the waves ſo furious, the rain ſo great, and the violence of the ſtorm ſo intolerable, that no man was able to withſtand it: In the mean time the other four Junks made a ſign to us, as if they alſo were caſt away; Whereupon *Antonio de Faria* lifting up his eyes and hands to Heaven, *Lord*, ſaid he before them all, *as through thy infinite mercy thou waſt faſtened upon the Croſs for the Redemption of ſinners, ſo I beſeech thee, who art all mercy, that for the ſatisfaction of thy Juſtice I alone may ſuffer for the offences which theſe men have committed, ſince I am the principal cauſe of their treſpaſſing againſt thy divine goodneſs; permit not them, O Lord, that in this woful night they may fall into that danger wherein I ſee my ſelf at this preſent by reaſon of my ſins; but with a repentant Soul I moſt humbly beſeech thee, and that in the name of all the reſt, though I am moſt unworthy to be heard, that inſtead of having regard to our ſins, thou wilt behold us with the eyes of that pity and infinite clemency wherewith thou art repleniſhed.* Upon theſe words we all fell a crying out ſo lamentably, *Lord have mercy upon us*; that it would have grieved any heart in the world to have heard us; And as all men, that find themſelves in the like extremity, are naturally carried to the preſervation of their lives, without any regard at all of ought elſe, there was not one amongſt us that ſought not the means to ſave his, ſo that all of us together employed our ſelves in diſcharging our Veſſel, by caſting our goods into the Sea; To which effect about an hundred men of us, as well *Portugals*, as Slaves and Mariners, leapt down into the Ship, and in leſs then an hour heav'd all over-board, without any reſpect in ſo eminent a danger of that which we did, for amongſt the reſt we threw twelve great cheſts full of lingots of Silver into the Sea, which in the laſt incounter we had taken from *Coia Acem*; beſides many other things of great value, whereby our Junk was ſomewhat lightned. §. 2.

Having paſt the night in that miſerable ſtate we were in, at length, as the day began to break, it pleaſed God that the wind alſo began to ſlack, whereby our Junk remained a little more at reſt, though ſhe was ſtill in great peril, by reaſon of the water ſhe had taken in, it being almoſt four yards deep in her, ſo that, to avoyd the [illegible] were threatened with, we all of us got forth, and catching hold by the [illegible] out-ſide of the Junk, becauſe the waves beat with ſuch vio[illegible]ed, §. 3.

or caſt againſt the Rocks, which had already happened to eleven or twelve of our company for want of taking heed: Now when the day began perfectly to appear, it pleaſed God that *Mem Taborda's* and *Antonio Anriquez* Junks diſcovered us, and preſently coming up cloſe to us, they that were in her threw us a great many ſtaves tyed to cords, to the end we might faſten our ſelves to them, as we preſently did, and therein an hour was ſpent with much ado, by reaſon of the extream diſorder amongſt us, every man deſiring and ſtriving to be firſt ſaved, by which occaſion twenty men were drowned, whereof five were *Portugals*, for whom *Antonio de Faria* was more grieved, then for the loſs of the Junk, and all the goods that were in her, although the value thereof was not ſo ſmall, but that it amounted to above an hundred thouſand *Taels*, and that in Silver alone; for the greateſt part of the booty, taken from *Coia Acem*, had been put into *Antonio de Faria's* Junk, as that which was held to be freer from danger then all the reſt: Thus after we had with much peril and pain gotten into *Taborda's* Junk, we paſt all that day in continual lamentation for our ill ſucceſs without hearing any news of our conſorts; Nevertheleſs it pleaſed God, that about evening we diſcovered two Sails, which made ſo many ſhort turnings from one ſide to another, as one might well gueſs they did it of purpoſe to ſpend time, whereby we were perſwaded that they were of our company. Now becauſe it was almoſt night, we thought it not fit to go to them for ſome reaſons given thereupon, but having made them a ſign they anſwered us preſently with the like according to our deſire, and about the end of the laſt watch they approached ſo near unto us, that after they had ſadly ſaluted us they demanded how the Captain General and the reſt did; whereunto we replyed, that as ſoon as it was day we would tell them, and that in the mean time they ſhould retire from thence till the next morning that it was light, for that the waves then went ſo high, as ſome diſaſter might otherwiſe enſue thereupon. The next day as ſoon as the Sun began to appeared two *Portugals* came to us from *Quiay Paniam* Junk, who ſeeing *Antonio de Faria* in the caſe he was in aboard *Mem Taborda's* Junk, and underſtanding the bad ſucceſs of his fortune, they recounted theirs unto us, which ſeemed to be little better then ours; for they declared that a guſt of wind had caught up and thrown three of their men a ſtones caſt from the Veſſel into the Sea, a thing never ſeen nor heard of before: Withall they delivered, how the little Junk was caſt away, with fifty men in her, almoſt all Chriſtians, amongſt the which were ſeven *Portugals*, and the Captain, named *Nuno Preto*, an honorable man, and of great courage and wiſdom, whereof he had given good proof in the former adverſities: At this relation *Antonio de Faria* was very much grieved, but much more when a little after one of the two *Lanteas*, of whom no news had been heard of till then, arriving, told us what dangers they had run, and that the other having broken their cables, and left their anchors in the Sea, was in their ſight battered all to pieces on the Sea ſhoar, all that were in her being drowned, ſaving thirteen perſons, whereof there were five *Portugals*, and three ſervants Chriſtians, whom thoſe of the Country had made Slaves, and carried to a place, called *Nonday*; ſo that by this unlucky Tempeſt two Junks, and one *Lantea*, or *Lorch*, were caſt away, wherein above an hundred men were loſt, beſides Slaves, Apparel, Commodities, Silver, Jewels, Ordnance, Arms, Victual, and Munition, worth in all above two hundred thouſand Duckets, in ſo much that both our General, and every one of us Soldiers, found our ſelves deſtitute of all manner of relief, having nothing left us but what was upon our backs. We learnt afterwards, that ſuch like fortunes at Sea do ordinarily happen on this Coaſt of *China*, more then in any other part, ſo that it is impoſſible to ſail there a whole year together without ſhipwrack, unleſs upon the Conjunction of the new Moons one fly into the Ports for ſhelter, which are there ſo many, and ſo good, that without fear of any thing one may enter them eaſily, becauſe they are all very clear, except thoſe of *Lamau* and *Sumbor*, which have certain Rocks lying ſome half a league Southward from the mouth of the River.

## CHAP. XXII.

### Antonio de Faria *hath news of the five Portugals that were made Captives; his Letter to the Mandarin of* Nonday *about them; and his aſſaulting the ſaid Town.*

§. 1. AFter this furious Tempeſt was wholly aſſwaged, *Antonio de Faria* incontinently imbarqued himſelf in the other great Junk, that he had taken from *Coia Acem*, whereof *Pedro de Silva* was Captain, and ſetting ſail he departed with the reſt of his Compa-

conſiſted of three Junks, and one *Lorch*, or *Lantea*, as the *Chineſes* term them. The firſt thing he did then was to go and anchor in the Haven of *Nonday*, to the end he might learn ſome news of the thirteen Captives, that were carried thither; being arrived there about night he ſent two ſmall Barques, called *Baloes*, well man'd, to ſpy the Port, and ſound the depth of the River, as alſo to obſerve the ſituation of the Country, and to learn by ſome means what Ships were riding there, together with divers other matters anſwerable to his deſign; For which effect he commanded the Mariners to endeavor all they could for to ſurprize ſome of the Inhabitants of the Town, that by them he might be truly informed what was become of the *Portugals*, by reaſon he was afraid they were already carried further up into the Country. Theſe *Baloes* went away about two hours after midnight, and arrived at a little Village ſeated at the mouth of the River on a little ſtream of water, called *Nipaphan*; There it pleaſed God that they behaved themſelves ſo well, as they returned before day aboard our Junk, bringing along with them a Barque laden with earthen veſſel, and Sugar canes, which they had found lying at anchor in the midſt of the River: In this Barque there were eight men, and two women, together with a little child ſome ſix or ſeven years old, who ſeeing themſelves thus in our power, became ſo tranſported with the feat of death, that they were in a manner beſides themſelves, which *Antonio de Faria* perceiving labored all he could to comfort them, and began to ſpeak them very fair, but to all his queſtions, he could draw no other anſwer from them then theſe words following, *Do not kill us without cauſe, for God will require an account of our blood from you, becauſe we are poor folks*; and ſaying thus, they wept and trembled in ſuch ſort, as they could ſcarce pronounce a word; Whereupon *Antonio de Faria*, pitying their miſery and ſimplicity, would importune them no further: Howbeit, the better to compaſs his intent, he intreated a *Chineſe* woman, that was a Chriſtian, and came along with the Pilot, to make much of them, and to aſſure them they ſhould have no hurt, to the end, that being more confirmed by this means, they might anſwer to that ſhould be demanded of them; Wherein the *Chineſe* ſo well acquitted her ſelf, and made them ſo tractable, as about an hour after they told her, that if the Captain would let them freely return in their boat to the place from whence they were taken, they would willingly confeſs all that either they had heard or ſeen. *Antonio de Faria* having promiſed them to do ſo, and that with many words and proteſtations one amongſt them, that was ancienter, and that ſeemed to be of more authority then the reſt, addreſſing himſelf to him: *Truly*, ſaid he, *I do not rely much on thy words, becauſe that by amplifying of them in ſuch manner thou makeſt me afeard, that the effect will not be conformable to thy ſpeech; Wherefore I beſeech thee to ſwear unto me by this Element that bears thee, that thou wilt not fail to perform that which thou haſt promiſed unto me: for otherwiſe perjuring thy ſelf, be aſſured that the Lord, whoſe hand is Almighty, will be incenſed againſt thee with ſuch indignation, as the Winds from above, and the Seas from below, will never ceaſe to oppoſe thy deſires during thy Voyages; for I vow unto thee by the beauty of theſe Stars, that lying is no leſs odious and abominable in the ſight of that Soveraign Lord, then the pride of thoſe Judges on Earth, that with ſcorn and contempt do anſwer thoſe which demand Juſtice of them.* *Antonio de Faria* obliging himſelf by oath, as the old man required, to perform his word, the *Chineſe* ſaid he was ſatisfied, and then he continued in this ſort: *About two days ſince I ſaw thoſe men, whom thou enquireſt after, layd in priſon at* Nouday *with great irons on their legs, becauſe it was believed they were notorious Theeves, that made a trade of robbing ſuch as they met upon the Sea.* This relation very much enraged and diſquieted *Antonio de Faria*, who was perſwaded that it might well be as the old man delivered, ſo that deſiring to take ſome courſe for their deliverance as ſoon as might be, he ſent them a Letter by one of the *Chineſes*, retaining all the reſt in hoſtage for him, who departed the next morning by break of day, and becauſe it much imported the *Chineſes* to be delivered out of captivity, he that carried the Letter, and that was husband to one of the two women, which had been taken in the boat of earthen veſſel, and were now aboard in our Junk, made ſuch ſpeed, that he returned about noon with an anſwer, endorſed on the Letter we ſent, and ſigned by all the five *Portugals*. Therein they gave *Antonio de Faria* to underſtand, that they were cruelly detained in [illegible] which they did not think they ſhould ever get, unleſs it were to go to execute [illegible] paſſion of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that he would [illegible] cor, according as he had promiſed them [illegible] egard it was only for his ſake that they [illegible] dded many other very pitiful

piciful entreaties, as might well come from ſuch poor wretches, that were Captives under the Tyranny of ſuch fell and cruel people, as the *Chineſes* were. *Antonio de Faria*, having receiv'd this Letter, read it in the preſence of all his Company, of whom he asked counſel thereupon; but as they were many, ſo were their opinions many and different, which was the occaſion of much contention amongſt them; whereby perceiving that nothing would be concluded concerning this affair, he ſaid to them as it were in choller; *My Maſters and Friends, I promiſed to God by a ſolemn oath that I have taken, never to part from hence, till by ſome means or other I have recovered theſe poor Soldiers, my companions, though I ſhould therefore venture my life a thouſand times, yea and all my eſtate, which I make little reckoning of in regard of them; wherefore, my Maſters, I earneſtly deſire you, that no man go about to oppoſe this reſolution of mine, upon the execution whereof mine honor wholly depends, for whoſoever ſhall contrary me therein I muſt take him for mine enemy, as one that would ſeek the prejudice of my Soul.* To this ſpeech all made anſwer, that he was in the right, and that for the diſcharge of his conſcience nothing ſhould ſtay him from performing the ſame; adding moreover, that all of them would ſtand to him in that behalf to the death. The Captain hereupon giving them many thanks, and with tears in his eyes and his hat in his hand embracing them, proteſted that he would when time ſhould ſerve acknowledg this good-will of theirs in ſuch real manner as it deſerved, wherewith they all remained very well ſatisfied.

§. 2. This reſolution being taken, they fell to councel concerning the carriage of this affair, whereupon they concluded to treat with the *Mandarin* in a gentle manner, and for that end to ſend unto him to demand theſe Priſoners, with promiſe to give him for their ranſom whatſoever ſhould be thought reaſonable, and that according to his anſwer ſuch further courſe ſhould be taken therein as ſhould ſeem requiſite: A Petition then was preſently drawn anſwerable to the form, that was uſually preſented to the Judges, which *Antonio de Faria* ſent to the *Mandarin* by two of the chiefeſt of the *Chineſes* he had taken, who alſo carried him a preſent worth two hundred duckets, whereby he hoped to induce him to reſtore the poor priſoners; but it fell out far otherwiſe then he expected: For as ſoon as the *Chineſes* had delivered the Petition and the Preſent, they returned the next day with an anſwer written on the back of the Petition, the tenor whereof was this: *Let thy mouth come and preſent it ſelf at my feet, and after I have heard thee I will do thee juſtice.* *Antonio de Faria* ſeeing what high words the *Mandarin* gave was exceedingly troubled, becauſe he well perceived by this beginning, that he ſhould have much ado to deliver his companions, wherefore having communicated this affair in particular to ſome few, whom for that end he had called unto him, they were of ſeveral opinions; nevertheleſs after good deliberation it was at length concluded to ſend another Meſſenger, that ſhould more effectually demand the Priſoners of him, and for their ranſom offer the ſum of two thouſand *Taels* in lingots of Silver and Commodities, declaring unto him, that he would not part from that place till he had returned them; for he made account that it might be this reſolution would oblige him to do that which he had refuſed him another way, or that he would be carried to it by the conſideration of his own gain and intereſt. So the two *Chineſes* went again the ſecond time with a Letter ſealed up, as from one perſon to another, without any kind of ceremony or complement, which theſe Gentiles ſo much uſe amongſt themſelves; And this *Antonio de Faria* did of purpoſe, to the end that by the ſharpneſs of this Letter the *Mandarin* might know he was diſpleaſed, and reſolved to execute what he had written. But before I proceed any further I will only relate the two main points of the contents of the Letter, which were the cauſe of the utter ruine of this buſineſs. The firſt was, where *Antonio de Faria* ſaid, that he was a Merchant ſtranger, a *Portugal* by Nation, that was going by way of Traffique towards the Port of *Liampoo*, where there were alſo many other Merchants ſtrangers like himſelf, who duly payd the uſual Cuſtoms, without committing any manner of ill or injuſtice. The ſecond point was, where he ſaid, that the King of *Portugal* his Maſter was allyed in a brotherly amity with the King of *China*, by reaſon whereof they traded in his Country, as the *Chineſes* uſed to do at *Malaca*, where they were entertained with all favor and juſtice duly miniſtred unto them. Now though both theſe points were diſtaſtful to the *Mandarin*, yet the laſt, wherein he mentioned the King of *Portugal* to be brother to the King of *China*, was that which put him ſo out of patience, that without any regard at all he commanded them that brought the Letter, not only to be cruelly ſcourged, but to have their noſes cut off, and in that pickle he ſent them back to *Antonio de Faria* with an anſwer written on a ſcurvy piece of torn paper, where theſe words were written: *Stinking carrion, begotten of vile flies in the filthieſt*

*ſink*

*ſink that ever was in any dungeon of wickedneſs priſon, what hath made thy baſeneſs ſo bold, as that thou durſt undertake to meddle with Heavenly things? Having cauſed thy Petition to be read, whereby like a Lord, as I am, thou prayeſt me to have pity on thee, which art but a poor wretch, my greatneſs, out of its generoſity, will even deigning to accept of that little thou preſenteſt me withall, and was alſo inclining to grant thy requeſt, when as my ears were touched with the horrible blaſphemy of thy arrogance, which made thee terme thy King Brother to the ſon of the Sun, the Lion crowned by an hereditable Power in the Throne of the World, under whoſe feet all the Diadems of thoſe that govern the Univerſe are ſubjected, nay all Scepters do ſerve but as latchets to his moſt rich ſandals, as the Writers of the golden Temple do certifie under the Law of their Verities, and that through the whole habitable Earth: Know then, that for the great Hereſie thou haſt uttered, I have cauſed thy Paper to be burnt, thereby repreſenting the vile effigies of thy perſon, which I deſire to uſe in like manner for the enormous crime thou haſt committed; Wherefore I command thee to be ſpeedily packing, that the River which beats thee may not be accurſed.* So ſoon as the Interpreter had read the Letter, and expounded the contents thereof, all that heard it were much vexed therewith, but no man was ſo ſenſible of it as *Antonio de Faria*, who was exceedingly grieved to ſee himſelf thus wholly deprived of all hope of recovering his Priſoners, wherefore after they had well conſidered the inſolent words of the *Mandarins* Letter, and his great diſcourteſie, they in the end concluded to go aſhour, and attaque the Town, in hope that God would aſſiſt them, ſeeing their intentions were good; For this effect they inſtantly prepared Veſſels to land with, which were the four fiſhermens great Barques they had taken the night before: Whereupon taking a muſter of the Forces he could make for this enterprize, he found the number to be three hundred, whereof forty were *Portugals*, the reſt were Slaves and Mariners, beſides *Quiay Paniins* men, amongſt whom were an hundred and threeſcore Harquebuſiers, the others were armed with Pikes and Lances; he had alſo ſome Pieces of Ordnance, and other things neceſſary for his deſign.

The next morning a little before day *Antonio de Faria* ſailed up the River with three Junks, the *Lorchos*, and the four Barques he had taken, and ſo went and anchored at ſix fathom and an half of water cloſe by the walls of the Town; Then cauſing the ſails to be taken down without any noiſe, or diſcharge of Ordnance, he diſplayed the Banner of Trade according to the faſhion of *China*, to the end that by this demonſtration of peace no complement ſhould reſt unperformed, although he was perſwaded that nothing would prevail with the *Mandarin*: Hereupon he ſent another Meſſenger unto him, never making ſhew that he had received any ill uſage from him, by whom with a great deal of complement he demanded the Priſoners, and offered him a round ſum of mony for their ranſom, with a promiſe of perpetual correſpondence and amity; But ſo far was this Dog the *Mandarin* from harkening thereunto, that contrariwiſe he made the poor *Chineſe*, that carried the Letter, to be hewed in pieces, and ſo ſhewed him from the top of the wall to the whole Fleet, the more to deſpight us. This tragical act wholly deprived *Antonio de Faria* of that little hope, which ſome had given him for the deliverance of the Priſoners; hereupon the Soldiers, being more incenſed then before, ſaid unto him, that ſince he had reſolved to land, he ſhould no longer defer it, becauſe further delay would but give his Enemies leiſure to gather more ſtrength: This counſel ſeeming good to him, he preſently imbarqued with them he had choſen for the action, having firſt given order to his Junks to ſhoot continually at the Town, and the Enemy, whereſoever they perceived any ſtore of people aſſembled, howbeit with this caution, to forbear till they ſaw them together by the ears with them. Having landed then about a Faulcon ſhot below the Rode, he marched without any let along the ſhoars ſide directly to the Town: In the mean time a number of people appeared upon the walls, with divers enſigns of different colours, where theſe Barbarous made a mighty noiſe Fifes, Drums, and Bells, and withall hooting at us, made us ſigns with their caps to approach, thereby intimating the little reckoning they made of us: Now by that time we were come within a Muſket ſhot of the walls, we diſcerned ſome thouſand, or twelve hundred men, as we gueſſed, ſally out at two ſeveral gates, of which ſome ſixſcore were mounted on horſes, or to ſay better, on lean carrion Tits that were nothing but ſkin and bone, wherewith they began to courſe up and down the field in a skirmiſhing manner, wherein they ſhewed themſelves ſo untoward, as they often ran one upon another, and tumbled down together; which when *Antonio de Faria* ſaw, he was exceeding glad, and encouraging his men to the fight he ſtood firm attending the Enemy, who continued ſtill wheeling about us, being perſwaded, it ſeems, §3.

that that would ſuffice to skare us, and make us retire to our veſſels; But when they perceived us remain unmoved, without turning our backs, as they believed, and as it may be, they deſired we would doe, they cloſed themſelves into one body, and ſo in very ill order they made a ſtand without advancing on. But then our Captain, ſeeing them in this poſture, cauſed all his Musketiers to diſcharge at one inſtant, who till that time had not ſtirred, which ſucceeded with ſuch effect, as it pleaſed God that he moſt part of this goodly Cavalry fell to the ground with feare; we taking this for a good preſage ran and luſtily purſued them, invoking to our aid the name of Jeſus, whoſe good pleaſure it was though his divine mercy, to make our enemies flye before us ſo amazed, and in ſuch diſorder, as they tumbled pell mell one upon another, in which manner arriving at a bridge that croſt the town ditch, they were ſo peſtered together, as they could neither go forward nor backward; in the mean time our forces coming up to them diſcharged their ſhot to ſuch purpoſe amongſt them, that we laid three hundred of them on the earth, which in truth was a pitifull ſight to behold, becauſe there was not one of them that had the heart ſo much as to draw a ſword: whereupon holly purſuing the firſt point of this victory, we ran to the gate, where we found the *Mandarin* in the front of ſix hundred men, mounted upon a good Horſe, having on a quiraſſe lined with purple Velvet, which had belonged, as we knew afterwards, to a Portugal, named *Tome Perez*, whom King *Don Emanuel* of glorious memory had ſent as Ambaſſador to *China*, in *Fernando Perez* his ſhip, at ſuch time as *Lopa Suarez d'Albergaria* governed the *Indies*. At the entrance into the gate the *Mandarin* and his people made head againſt us, ſo that there was a ſhrewd bickering between us, this enemy ſhewing another manner of courage then we had met with on the bridge; but by good hap it fortuned that one of our ſervant hit the *Mandarin* juſt in the breaſt with an Harquebuſſe ſhot, and overthrew him dead from his Horſe, wherewith all the *Chineſes* were ſo terrified, as they preſently turned their backs, and in great diſorder retired within the gate, not one of them having the wit to ſhut it after them, ſo that we chaſed them before us with our Lances, as if they had been a drove of cattell: In this ſort they fled pell mell together quite through a great ſtreet, and iſſued out at another gate, which was on the lands from whence they got all away, not ſo much as one remaining behind. Thereupon *Antonio de Faria*, aſſembling his men into one body, for fear of ſome diſorder, marched with them directly to the priſon, where our companions lay, who ſeeing us coming, gave a great cry, ſaying, *Lord have mercy upon us*, ſtraightway the doors and iron grates were broken up, and our poor fellows irons knocked off their legs, which being done, and they ſet at liberty, all our company had leave to make what purchaſe they could, to the end that without ſpeaking afterwards of partition, every one might be Maſter of what he had gotten. Howbeit *Antonio de Faria* deſired them to perform it ſuddenly, and therefore he gave them but half an houres time for it, whereunto they all condeſcended very willingly, and ſo fell to ranſacking the houſes. In the mean ſpace *Antonio de Faria* went to that of the *Mandarin*, which he took for his part, where he met with eight thouſand *Taeis* in ſilver, together with eight great veſſels full of Muske, and that he cauſed to be reſerved for himſelf; the reſt he left to the ſervants that were with him, who moreover found there a great deal of raw Silke, Sattin, Damask, and fine Pourcellain, whereof every one took as much as he could carry, ſo as the four Barques, and the three Champanaes, that brought our men on ſhore, were four ſeveral times laden and unladen aboard the Juncks, inſomuch that the meaneſt Marriner amongſt us ſpake not of this booty but by whole caſes, beſides what each one concealed in his particular.

But when *Antonio de Faria* perceived that an hour and half had been ſpent in pillaging, he commanded a ſurceaſe thereof, but his company were ſo hot upon the ſpoil, that by no means they would be drawn from it, wherein the perſons of qualitie were moſt faulty, in which regard our Captain fearing leaſt ſome diſaſter might happen by reaſon the night approached, he cauſed the Town to be ſet on fire in eleven or twelve places; Now for that moſt of it was built of Firr, and other wood, it was in ſuch a flame within a quarter of an hour, as to ſee it burn ſo, one would have taken it for a pourtraicure of Hell. This done, and all our company retired, *Antonio de Faria* embarqued without any impediment, every man being well ſatisfied and contented, onely it was great pitie to behold a number of handſome maids lead away, tied four and four and five and five together

with

with the matches of their Muskets, weeping and lamenting, whilſt our people did nothing but laugh and ſing.

## CHAP. XXIII.

### Antonio de Faria's *Navigation till he came to the Port of* Liampoo; *his arrival and gallant reception there by the Portugals.*

AFter that *Antonio de Faria* had embarqued his men, the firſt thing he did was to give order for the dreſſing of thoſe that were hurt, which were in number fiftie, whereof eight of them were *Portugals*, and the reſt ſlaves and Mariners: He alſo took care for the burial of the dead, that were not above nine, of which onely one was a *Portugal*. All that night we kept good watch, and placed Sentinels in ſundry parts, for fear of the Junks that were upon the River; The next morning as ſoon as it was day, our Captain went to a little Town that was on the other ſide of the water, where he met not with any Inhabitant, they being all fled, howbeit he found a great deal of Merchandiſe in their houſes, together with good ſtore of Victuals, wherewith he had laded the Junks, fearing leaſt that which he had done in this place, ſhould be the occaſion of barring him from being furniſhed with any in the Ports where he ſhould happen to arrive. Furthermore, by the advice of his company, he reſolved to go and winter, during the three moneths he had yet to make his voyage in, at a certain deſart Iſland, diſtant ſome fifteen leagues from the Sea of *Liampoo*, called *Pullo Hinbor*, where there was a good road, and good water; whereunto he was chiefly induced, becauſe he thought that going directly to *Liampoo*, his voyage thither might bring ſome prejudice to the traffique of the *Portugals*, who wintered there peaceably with their goods: And indeed this advice was ſo approved of every one, as it was generally applauded. Being departed then from *Nonday*, after we had ſailed five dayes between the Iſles of *Comolem*, and the continent, we were ſet upon on *Saturday* about noon by a Pirate, named *Premata Gundel*, a ſworn enemy to the *Portugals*, unto whom he had oftentimes done much damage, as well at *Pasana*, as at *Sunda*, *Siam*, and many other places, when he found himſelf the ſtronger. This Rover beleeving that we were *Chineſes* came and aſſailed us with two great Juncks, wherein there were two hundred fighting men, beſides Mariners; One of them being grappled to *Mem Taborda's* Junk had almoſt made her ſelf Maſter of it, which *Quiay Panian* perceiving, who was a little before, he turned upon her, and with full ſails running her on the Starboard ſide gave her ſo terrible a ſhock, that they ſank both together, whereby *Mem Taborda* was delivered from the danger he was in, howbeit *Quia Panian* was inſtantly, and ſo opportunely ſuccoured by three Lorches, which *Antonio de Faria* had taken a little before at *Nonday*, that all his men in a manner were ſaved, but every one of the enemies were drowned: In the mean time the Pyrate *Premata Gundel*, ſetting upon the great Junk, wherein *Antonio de Faria* was, the firſt thing he did was to grapple her poop to prow with two great cramp-irons, faſtened to long chains, whereupon began ſuch a fight betwixt them, as deſerved to be ſeen, which for half an hour was ſo courageouſly maintained by the Enemie, that *Antonio de Faria* and moſt of his men were hurt, and himſelf beſides in danger twice to have been taken; nevertheleſſe it was his good hap to be relieved in time by three Lorches, and a ſmall Junck, commanded by *Pedro de Sylva*, by which means it pleaſed God that ours not onely recovered what they had loſt, but preſſed the Enemie in ſuch ſort, as the fight ended with the death of fourſcore and ſix *Mahometans*, which were in *Antonio de Faria's* Junk, and had held him up ſo ſtrait, that our men had nothing left them but the fore-deck in her: After this we entred into the Pirates Junck, and put all thoſe to the edge of the Sword that we found there, not ſparing ſo much as one, all the Mariners having caſt themſelves before into the Sea. Howbeit we got not this victorie ſo cheap, but that it coſt ſeventeen mens lives, whereof five were *Portugals*, and of the beſt Souldiers we had, beſides three and fourty were hurt, *Antonio de Faria* being one of them, who had one wound with a dart, and two with a ſword. The fight being ended in this ſort, an Inventorie was taken of all that was in the enemies Junck, and this prize was eſtimated at fourſcore thouſand *Taels*, the better part whereof conſiſted in *Lingots* of ſilver of *Japan*, which the Pirate had taken in three Merchants Ships, that from *Firando* were bound for *Chincheo*, ſo that the Pirate had f

§. 1.

this onely veſſel to the value of ſixſcore thouſand crowns, and it was thought that the other Junck which was ſunk was worth as much, to the extream grief of all our company. With this prize *Antonio de Faria* retired to a little Iſland, called *Buncalon*, which was three or four Leagues Weſtward from thence, and much commended for good water, and ſafe riding: Having landed in this place, we ſpent eighteen dayes there, lodging in Cabbins, that were made for the accommodation of our hurt men. From this Iſland we ſailed towards that part, whither we had reſolved before to go, namely, *Antonio de Faria* in the great Junk, *Mem Taborda*, and *Antonio Anriquez* in theirs, *Pedro de Sylva* in the little Junk, that was taken at *Nonday*, and *Quiay Panian* with all his followers in the Pyrats, laſt taken, which was given him in recompence of his that he had loſt, together with twenty thouſand *Taels* out of the general booty, wherewith he reſted very well contented, being done with the conſent of the whole company at the requeſt of *Antonio de Faria*. Sailing in this manner we arrived ſix dayes after at the Ports of *Liampoo*, which are two Iſlands, one juſt againſt another, diſtant three Leagues from the place, where at that time the *Portugals* uſed their commerce; There they had built above a thouſand houſes, that were governed by Sheriffs, Auditors, Conſuls, Judges, and ſix or ſeven other kinde of Officers, where the Notaries underneath the publique Acts, which they made, wrote thus, *I, ſuch a one, publique Notarie of this Town of Liampoo for the King our Soveraign Lord.* And this they did with as much confidence and aſſurance, as if this place had been ſituated between *Santarem* and *Lisbon*; ſo that there were houſes there which coſt three or four thouſand Duckats the building, but both they and all the reſt were afterwards demoliſhed for our ſins by the *Chineſes*, as I hope to relate more amply hereafter: Whereby one may ſee how uncertain our affairs are in *China*, whereof the *Portugals* diſcourſe with ſo much curioſity, and abuſed by apparances make ſuch account, never conſidering what hazard they hourly run, and how they are expoſed to infinite diſaſters.

§. 2. Between theſe two Iſlands, which the Inhabitants of the Country, and they that ſail in thoſe Seas, call the Ports of *Liampoo*, there is a chaanel, ſome two Harquebuſe ſhot over, and five and twenty fathom deep, where in certain places is very good anchoring, as alſo a pleaſant River of freſh water, which takes his beginning from the top of a mountain, and paſſeth by thick woods of Cedar, Oak, and Firr trees, whereof many Ships make their proviſion for Sail-yards, Maſts and Planks, never coſting them a penny. At theſe Iſlands *Antonio de Faria* caſt anchor on Wedneſday morning, and there *Mem Taborda*, and *Antonio Anriquez* deſired him to give them leave to go and advertiſe the Town of his Arrival, as likewiſe to underſtand the news of the Country, and whether there was any ſpeech of that which he had done at *Nonday*; For in caſe his coming ſhould prove never ſo little prejudiciall to them, he was reſolved (as I have formerly related) to winter in the Iſle of *Pulo Hinhor*, concerning the which they promiſed with all diligence to advertize him ſo much as they could learn: To this requeſt of theirs, *Antonio de Faria* condeſcended very willingly, and withall ſent certain Letters by them, directed to the Principal Governours of the Town, whereby he made them a brief Recitall of the ſucceſſe of his Voyage, and inſtantly deſired them to adviſe him what they would have him to do, being ready to obey them accordingly, with many other complements of kindneſſe, from whence oftentimes much profit ariſes, without any charge at all. *Antonio Anriquez* and *Mem Taborda* departed about evening, and within two hours of night, they arrived at the Town, where as ſoon as the Inhabitants heard the effect of their Meſſage, they preſently aſſembled upon the ringing of a Bell, at the Church of the conception of our Lady, being the Cathedral of ſix or ſeven others in the Town, there they deliberated upon the Letters which *Antonio Anriquez* and *Mem Taborda* had delivered, and in the end having conſidered the great liberalities that *Antonio de Faria* had uſed, as well to them as to all the reſt that had part in the Junk, they concluded to acknowledge it unto him by all demonſtrations of affection, For which purpoſe they returned him a Letter, ſigned by them all, as the Reſolution of a General Aſſembly, and ſent it him together with two *Lanteans* full of divers refreſhments, and that by an ancient Gentleman, named *Jeronimo de Rego*, a Perſonage of great wiſdome and authoritie amongſt them: In this Letter they gave him thanks in very courteous termes, both for the exceeding favour he had done them by reſcuing their goods out of the enemies hands, and for the noble Teſtimonie he had given them of his affection by his extraordinary liberality towards them, for

which

which they hoped that God would throughly requite him: As for the fear he was in touching his wintering there, by reaſon of what had paſt at *Nonday*, he might be confident that way, becauſe the Country was ſo full of trouble, by occaſion of a mighty uprore that was then amongſt the people thereof, as if he had razed the very Citie of *Canton* it ſelf, they would not much regard it, wherefore he might well thinke they would care much leſſe for that which he had done at *Nonday*, which in *China*, compared with many others, was no greater then *Oeyras* in *Portugal* is, being equally with *Lisbon*: And concerning the good news he had ſent them of his arrivall in their Port, they earneſtly deſired him to continue ſtill at anchor there ſix dayes longer, that they might in the mean while make ſome fit preparation for his entertaiment, ſeeing that thereby onely they ſhould be able to teſtifie their good will unto him, having not the power other wayes to acquit ſo many obligations, wherein they ſtood ingaged unto him. Theſe words of kindneſs were accompanied with many other complements, whereunto *Antonio de Faria* returned them a moſt curteous Anſwer, and condeſcending to their deſire, he ſent all his ſick men on ſhore in the two *Lanteaas*, which brought the refreſhments, whom thoſe of *Liampoo* received with great ſhew of affection and charity, for preſently they were lodged in the richeſt houſes of the Town, and plentifully accommodated with all things neceſſary for them, wanting nothing. Now during the ſix dayes *Antonio de Faria* remained in that place, there was not a man of any qualitie in all the Town, but came and viſited him with many preſents, and divers ſorts of proviſions, refreſhments, and fruits, and that in ſuch abundance, that we were amazed to behold them, the more too for the good order and magnificence wherewith every thing was accompanied.

During the ſix dayes, that *Antonio de Faria* continued in the Port according to his promiſe to them of *Liampoo*, he never budgd from his Ships. At length on Sunday morning before day, which was the time limited for our going to the Town, an excellent conſort of Muſick was heard, both of Inſtruments and Voyces, the harmony whereof was wonderfully pleaſing, and after that a Triumph of Drums and Trumpets together, according to the manner of our own country: Then ſome two houres before Sun-riſing, the night being very quiet, and the Moon exceeding bright, *Antonio de Faria* ſet ſail with his whole Fleet, having all his Ships decked with Silken Flaggs, and ſtreamers of ſundry Colours, and every *ſcuttle* both of the greater and leſſer maſts hung round about with cloth of Silver, and many brave Standards of the ſame: After theſe Veſſels followed a number of row-Barges, wherein were a great many of Trumpets, Hoboyes, Flutes, Fifes, Drums, and other ſuch Inſtruments, each one of a ſeveral Invention. §. 3.

When it was broad day the winde began to calm, as we were within half a League of the Town, whereupon there came preſently to us ſome twenty *Lanteaas*, very well ſet forth, and full of Muſicians, that played on divers Inſtruments; So in leſſe then an hour we arrived at the Road, but firſt there came aboard *Antonio de Faria* about threeſcore Boats and *Manchaas*, adorned with Pavilions and Banners of Silke, as alſo with Turkie Carpets of great value; In theſe Boats were about three hundred men, all richly apparrelled, with chains of Gold, and guilt Swords, hanging in Belts after the faſhion of *Affrick*, every thing ſo well accommodated, that we which beheld this Equipage, were no leſſe contented then aſtoniſhed therewith. With this train *Antonio de Faria* came to the Town, where there ſtood ranged in excellent order twenty ſix ſhips, and fourſcore Junks, beſides a great ſort of *Vancons* and *Barcaſſes*, all in File one after another, ſo making as it were a fair long ſtreet, every where beautified with Pines, Laurels, and green Canes, with many Triumphal Arches, beſet with Cherries, Pears, Lemons, Oranges, and ſundry odoriferous green Herbs, wherewith the Maſts and Cordage were covered all over. As ſoon as *Antonio de Faria* came neer the place, which was prepared for his landing, he ſaluted the Town with a great peal of Ordnance, which was inſtantly anſwered with the like by all the Ships, Junks and Barques before mentioned, in order, a matter very pleaſing, and wherewith the *Chineſe* Merchants were ſo taken, as they demanded of us, Whether this man, unto whom we did ſo much honour, was either the brother or kinſman of our King? whereunto certain chief men of the Town anſwered, *That his Father ſhod the Horſes, whereon the King of* Portugal *rode, and that in that regard all this honour was done him*; adding withall, *That they thought themſelves ſcarce worthy to be his ſlaves, much leſſe his ſervants*; The *Chineſes* beleeving all this to be true, ſaid one to another, as it were in admiration; *Verily great Kings*

*in the World, whereof our ancient Hiſtorians for want of knowledge of them have made no mention in their Writings, and it ſeems that above them all, the King of theſe* Portugals *is to be moſt eſteemed, for by that which is delivered to us of his greatneſſe, he muſt needs be richer, more mighty, and greater then either the Tartar, or the Cauchin, as is moſt apparent, ſince he that ſhooes his horſes, which is but an ordinary and contemptible trade in every Country, is ſo reſpected by thoſe of his Nation*; Whereupon another that heard his Companion ſay thus, *Certainly*, ſaid he, *this Prince is ſo great, that if it were not a blaſphemy, one might almoſt compare him to the Son of the Sun*; The reſt that were about him added, *It well appears to be ſo by the great riches which this bearded Nation get in every place where they come by the power of their armes, wherewith they affront all the People of the world.* This ſalutation being ended on either part, a *Lanteaa* came aboard *Antonio de Faria's* Junk, gallantly equipped, and covered all over with boughs of Cheſnut trees, full of their briſtled fruit juſt as they grew, and intermingled with delicate ſmall green trees, which thoſe of the Country call *Lechias*, ſtuck every where with moſt fragrant Roſes and Violets, all plaſhed ſo cloſe together, that we could not ſee the Rowers; now upon the upper end of the Deck of this Veſſel, there was a kinde of State ſet up, made of Tynſell, under the which ſtood a ſilver chair, and about it ſix girles of about ſome ten or eleven yeares of age a piece, wonderful beautiful, and that very harmoniouſly accorded their voyces, to certain Inſtruments of Muſick whereon they playd: In this *Lanteaa* then *Antonio de Faria* embarqued himſelf, and ſo arrived at the Key with a great noyſe of Hoyboys, Trumpets, Drums, Fifes, and other ſuch like, after the manner of the *Chineſes*, *Malayes*, *Champaas*, *Siamites*, *Borneos*, *Lequios*, and other people, that were then in the Haven under the protection of the *Portugals*, for fear of the Pirates, which in great numbers over-ran all that Sea. Being landed he found a chair of State provided for him, like unto one of thoſe wherein the principall *Chaems* of the Empire are uſually carried; In this, but with much refuſall firſt on his ſide, was he placed, and it being ſupported by eight ſilver pillars, it was taken up by eight of the chiefeſt perſons amongſt them, apparrelled in gowns of cloth of Gold richly imbroidered, and ſo was he carried on their ſhoulders into the Town, environed with threeſcore Halberdeers, bravely ſet forth, and their Halberds Damasked with Gold and Silver; before him alſo marched eight Sergeants at Armes, carrying great guilt Maces, clothed in Hongarlines of Crimſon Velvet embroidered with Gold; In the head of them rode eight Knights mounted on gallant white Steeds, and attired in Sattin of the ſame colour, with white Damask Enſigns, and brave plumes of white Feathers, and foremoſt of all were eight other men likewiſe on Horſeback, wearing Crimſon, and green Velvet Caps, which ever and anon cryed out after the manner of *China* for people to make way. In this ſort was *Antonio de Faria* carried along till alighting out of his chair he went to viſit the Governours of the Town, who in way of complement proſtrated themſelves at his feet, wherein ſome ſmall time being ſpent, two ancient Gentlemen, who had lived long in that place, the one named *Triſtan de Gaa*, and the other *Jeronimo de Rego*, made an eloquent Oration in the commendation of him: That done, he was led from thence to the Church through a long ſtreet, adorned on both ſides with Laurel and Firr Trees, below ſtrewed with Ruſhes, and above hung with Sattin and Damask, amongſt the which divers court-cupboards were placed, whereon ſtood very curious perfuming pans of Silver, from whence moſt pleaſing and delicious odours breathed forth: Neer to the end of this ſtreet was a Tower of Deal Boards erected, painted all over, as if it had been ſtone, on the top whereof, under a Banner of white Damask, the Royal Arms of *Portugal* were limned in Gold; and in a window of the ſame Tower, certain little Boyes were drawn, attired after the *Portugal* faſhion, as alſo an old Woman, that ſeemed to weep, and hold a man lying diſ-membred at her feet, whom ſome eleven or twelve armed *Caſtilians* were a killing, having their Halberds and Partizans dyed with his blood; All which Figures were done ſo to the life, that one would have thought them to have been the very perſons they repreſented. Now this was to ſignifie how *Nuno Gonçalles de Faria*, chief of that Noble Family, gave for his armes his own body, at ſuch time as he was ſlain in the Wars, that had been anciently between *Caſtile* and *Portugal*. Preſently hereupon as ſoon as a clock, that was on the top of the ſaid Tower, had ſtruck three, and that the people upon this ſignal were all ſilent, there came a venerable old man out of the principall gate, apparrelled in a robe of Crimſon Damask, accompanied with four Beadles, which

carried

carried ſilver Maces before him: Having made a low reverence to *Antonio de Faria*, he told him in termes full of reſpect, how much all the Inhabitants were obliged unto him, as well for the great liberality he had uſed towards them, as for the favour he had done them, by having been the onely cauſe of the recovery of their goods, in acknowledgement whereof they all offered themſelves to be his Vaſſals for the time to come, and to do him the Homage of Tributaries as long as he lived: And further, if he pleaſed to caſt his eye upon that Table before him, he ſhould behold there as in a clear Mirror, with how much fidelity his Anceſtors had gained the honourable name of his Family, as it was manifeſt to all the people of *Spain*, whereby he might well perceive how much it was for his honour that he had performed ſuch generous actions, in regard whereof he moſt earneſtly beſought him, and that in the Name of them all, that for a beginning of the Tribute, which they offered to give him by way of Vaſſallage, he would be pleaſed to accept of a ſmall Preſent, they now had brought him, onely for to defray the charge of Match for his Souldiers, and that for the reſt wherein they ſtood ſo far ingaged to him, they promiſed to diſ-oblige themſelves in time and place convenient; whereupon they preſented him with five Caſes full of Lingots of Silver, to the value of ten thouſand Taels. *Antonio de Faria* having very courteouſly thanked the good old man for this many Honours had hitherto been done him, as alſo for the preſent they now offered unto him, excuſed himſelf from receiving of it, though he were very much importuned thereunto.

*Antonio de Faria* ſetting forward then to go to the Church, whither he was to have been conducted under a rich Canopie, which ſix of the chiefeſt and honourableſt Inhabitants of *Liampoo* were there ready with for him, he would by no means accept of it, telling them that he was not born to have ſo much honour as they would do him, and ſo he proceeded on without other pompe then ordinary, being accompanied with a world of people, as well *Portugals* as others of divers Nations, who for commerce ſake were come to that Port, as the beſt and richeſt that was then in that Country. In the mean ſpace whereſoever he caſt his eye he ſaw nothing but publique rejoycings, which conſiſted in dances, Masks, and Playes of ſeveral kindes, invented by thoſe of the Country that lived amongſt us; all which became more ſplendidious by the Trumpets, Cornets, Hoboys, Flutes, Harpe, Viols, Fifes, and Drums, that were heard in every corner, and confounded together in a Labyrinth of Voyces after the manner of *China*, which ſo amazed the ſenſe, that one knew not whether it were a dream or no, ſo extraordinary it ſeemed: Being arrived at the Church door, eight Prieſts came forth to receive him covered with Copes all embroidered with Gold and Silver, who going in Proceſſion began to ſing *Te Deum*, whereunto many excellent voyces tuned to the Organs anſwered, which made up as harmonious Muſick as could be heard in the Chappel of any great Prince: In this ſort he was carried up to the High Altar, where there was a State of White Damask, and under it a Chair of Carnation Velvet, and at the foot of it a Cuſhion of the ſame; In this Chair he ſate him down and heard Maſſe, which was celebrated with a great deal of Ceremonie, and a marvellous conſort both of Voyces and Inſtruments. Maſſe being ended, the Sermon followed, that was made by *Eſtevano Noguyra*, an ancient man, and Curate of the place, who, to ſpeak the truth through diſcontinuance of preaching, was but little verſt in Pulpit matters, and illiterate withall, howbeit deſiring to ſhew himſelf that day a learned man in ſo remarkable a ſolemnity, he laboured to make demonſtration of his beſt Rhetorick; To which effect he grounded all his Sermon on the Prayſes of *Antonio de Faria*, and that in words ſo ill placed, and ſo far from his Text, as our Captain was much aſhamed at it, wherefore ſome of his friends pluckt him three or four times by the Surplis for to make him give over, wherewith being nettled, he turned him about to thoſe that would have had him leave off, *I will not*, ſaid he unto them, *but will rather ſay more, for I ſpeake nothing but that which is as true as Goſpel, in regard whereof, let me alone I pray you, for I have made a vow to God never to deſiſt from commending this noble Captain, as he more then deſerves at my hands, for ſaving me ſeven thouſand Duckats venture, that* Mem Taborda *had of mine in his Junk, and was taken from him by that dog* Coia Acem, *for which let the ſoul of ſo curſed a rogue and wicked Devil be tormented in Hell for ever and ever, whereunto ſay all with me, Amen.* This Concluſion provoked all the Aſſembly ſo to laugh, that we could not hear one another in the Church for the noiſe that was made there. This tumult over, there came out of the Veſtry ſix little Boyes, attired like Angels, with Inſtruments of

§. 4.

ſick in their hands guilt all over, and then the ſame Prieſt falling on his knees before the Altar of our Lady, and lifting up his hands, began to ſing aloud theſe words, *Virgin, you are a Roſe*, whereunto the little Boyes anſwered very melodiouſly with their Inſtruments, all being performed with ſuch harmony and devotion, as it drew tears from moſt of the Aſſiſtants.

§ 5. Maſſe being finiſhed, the four principal Governours of the Town, namely, *Mateus de Brito*, *Lançarote Pereyra*, *Jeronimo de Rego*, and *Triſtan de Gaa*, came unto *Antonio de Faria*, and being accompanied with all the *Portugals*, which were above a thouſand in number, they conducted him into a great place before the Town Hall, that was compaſſed about with a ſmall thick wood of Cheſnut Trees, all full of Fruit juſt as they grew, adorned above with Standards and Banners of Silk, and ſtrewed below with *Flower de luces*, and Red and White Roſes, whereof there is great abundance in *China*. In this Wood were three long Tables ſet, under a goodly ſpacious Arbor, that was covered over with Myrtle, and round about were divers Conduits of Water, which ran from one to the other by certain Invencions of the *Chineſes*, that were ſo ſubtile, as one could not poſſibly diſcern the ſecret; For by the means of a kinde of Bellows like unto that of an Organ, that was joyned to the principall Conduit, the water rebounded up ſo high, that when it came to deſcend again it fell as ſmall as dew, ſo that with one onely pot full of water, they could gently moiſten that great place; before theſe three Tables were three Court-cup-boards placed, upon the which was a great deal of very fine Pourcelain, and ſix huge Veſſels of Gold, that the *Chineſe* Merchants had borrowed of the *Mandarins* of the Town of *Liampoo*.; For in that Country Perſons of quality are ſerved all in Gold, Silver being for thoſe of meaner condition: They brought likewiſe divers other pieces all of Gold, as great Baſons, Saltſellers and Cups. After they were diſmiſſed which were not for the Banquet, there onely remained thoſe that were invited, being fourſcore in number, beſides fiftie of *Antonio de Faria's* Souldiers. Theſe being ſet at Table were ſerved by young Wenches, very beautiful, and finely apparrelled, according to the manner of the *Mandarins*; At every courſe that was ſerved up they ſung very melodiouſly to the tune of certain Inſtruments whereon ſome of their companions played: As for *Antonio de Faria* he was ſerved by eight Maidens, the Daughters of worthy Merchants, exceeding fair and comely, whom their Fathers had brought thither for that purpoſe at the requeſt of *Mateus de Brito*, and *Triſtan de Gaa*; They were attired like Mermaids, and carried the meat to the Table, dancing to the ſound of divers Inſtruments, a marvellous thing to behold, and wherewithal the *Portugals* were ſo mightily taken, as they could not ſufficiently commend the excellent Order and Gentileneſſe of theſe Magnificencies, by which their eyes and eares were ſo charmed; Remarkable it was alſo, that at every health, the Trumpets, Hoboys, and Drums plaid their parts. In this ſort the Banquet continued two hours, during which there was alwayes one device or other after the *Portugal* or *Chineſe* faſhion. I will not ſtand here to recount the delicacy or abundance of the meats, that were ſerved up in it, for it would be a matter not onely ſuperfluous, but even infinite to recite every thing in particular. After they were riſen from Table, they went all to another great place, that was invironed with Scaffolds, all hung with Silk, and full of People, where ten Bulls and five wild Horſes were baited, being accompanied with the ſound of Trumpets, Fifes, and Drums; in ſequel whereof, divers Mummeries of ſeveral Inventions were repreſented. Now becauſe it was late *Antonio de Faria* would have imbarqued himſelf again for to have returned unto his Ships, but they of the Town would by no means ſuffer him, for they had prepared the Houſes of *Triſtan de Gaa*, and *Mateus de Brito* for his lodging, having cauſed a Gallerie to be built from the one to the other for that purpoſe; There was he lodged very commodiouſly during the ſpace of five Months that he abode in that place, alwaies entertained with new ſports and delights of Fiſhing, Hunting, Hawking, Comedies, and Maſques, as alſo with ſumptuous Feaſts, as well on Sundayes and Holydayes, as other Dayes of the Week, ſo that we paſſed theſe five Months in ſuch pleaſure, as at our departure we did not thinke we had been there five dayes. This term expired *Antonio de Faria* made preparation of Veſſels and Men, for his Voyage to the Mines of *Quoaniaparu*, for in regard the ſeaſon was then proper for it, he reſolved to be gone as ſoon as poſſibly he could, but in the mean time it happened that *Quiay Panian* fell into a dangerous ſickneſs, whereof not long after he died, to the extream grief of *Antonio de Faria*, who exceedingly affected him

for

for many good qualities that were in him, worthy of his friendſhip, and therefore he cauſed him to be honourably buried, as the laſt dutie that he could do to his Friend. After the the death of *Quiay Panian* he was counſelled not to hazard himſelf in that Voyage, becauſe it was reported for a certainty, how all that Country was up in arms by reaſon of the Wars which the *Prechau Muan* had with the Kings of *Chamay*, and *Champaa*; And withall he had Information given him of a famous Pirate, named *Similau*, whom he went preſently to ſeek out, and having found him, the ſaid *Similau* related ſtrange wonders unto him of an Iſland, called *Calempluy*, where he aſſured him there were ſeventeen Kings of *China* interred in Tombes of Gold, as alſo a great number of Idols of the ſame Metal, and ſuch other immenſe treaſures, as I dare not deliver, for fear of not being credited. Now *Antonio de Faria*, being naturally curious, and carried with that ambition, whereunto Souldiers are for the moſt part inclined, lent ſo good ear to this *Chineſes* report, as looking for no other aſſurance of it then what he gave him, he preſently reſolved to undertake this Voyage, and expoſe himſelf to danger, without taking further counſel of any man, whereat many of his friends were with reaſon offended.

## CHAP. XXIV.

Antonio de Faria *departs from* Liampoo *for to ſeek out the Iſland of* Calempluy, *the ſtrange things that we ſaw, and the hazard we ran in our voyage thither.*

THe ſeaſon being now fit for Navigation, and *Antonio de Faria* furniſhed with all that was neceſſary for this new Voyage, which he had undertaken to make on *Munday* the fourteenth of *May*, in the year one thouſand five hundred forty and two, he departed from this Port to go to the Iſland of *Calempluy*; For which purpoſe he imbarqued in two *Paraores*, reſembling ſmall Gallies, but that they were a little higher, by reaſon he was counſelled not to uſe Junks, as well to avoid diſcovery, as in regard of the great currants of water that deſcended from the Bay of *Nanquin*, which great Veſſels with all their ſails were not able to ſtem, eſpecially at the time wherein he ſet forth, for then the ſhows of *Tartaria* and *Nixibumſlao* diſſolving run all the Months of *May*, *June*, and *July*, into theſe Seas with a moſt violent impetuoſity. In theſe two Veſſels were fiftie *Portugals*, one Prieſt to ſay Maſſe, and fortie eight Marriners, all Natives of *Patana*, as alſo two and fortie ſlaves, ſo that the whole number of our company amounted to an hundred forty and one perſons, for the Pirate *Similau*, who was our Pilot, would have no more men, nor Veſſels, for fear of being known, becauſe he was to traverſe the ſtreight of *Nanquin*, and to enter into Rivers that were much frequented, whereby we might probably be ſubject to great hazard. That day and all the night following we imployed in getting out from amongſt the Iſlands of *Angitur*, and purſued our courſe through Seas, which the *Portugals* had neither ſeen nor ſailed on till then. The firſt five dayes we had the wind favourable enough, being ſtill within ſight of land till we came to the mouth of the River of the Fiſhings of *Nanquin*; There we croſt over a Gulf of forty leagues, and diſcovered a very high Mountain, called *Nangaſo*, towards the which bending Northerly, we ſailed fiftie dayes; at length the wind abated ſomewhat, and becauſe in that place the Tides were very great, *Similau* put into a little River, where was good anchoring and riding, inhabited by men that were white and handſome, having very little eyes, like to the *Chineſes*, but much different from them, both in language and attire. Now during the ſpace of three dayes, that we continued there, the Inhabitants would have no manner of communication with us, but contrariwiſe they came in troopes to the ſhore, by which we anchored, and running up and down like mad-men they howled in a moſt hideous faſhion, and ſhot at us with ſlings and croſs-bows. As ſoon as the weather and the ſea would permit us, *Similau*, by whom all was then governed, began to ſet ſail, directing his courſe Eaſt Northeaſt, and ſo proceeded ſeven dayes in ſight of land; then traverſing another Gulfe, and turning more directly to the Eaſt, he paſt through a ſtraight, ten leagues over, called *Silenpaquin*; There he ſailed five dayes more, ſtill in view of many goodly Cities and Towns, this River being frequented with an infinite company of Veſſels; whereupon *Antonio de Faria*, knowing that if he happened to be diſcovered he ſhould never eſcape with life, reſolved to get from thence; [illegible] his courſe no longer, which *Similau* perceiving, and oppoſing the advice t' [illegible] him; *Signior*, ſaid unto him, *I do not think that any of your company can performing my duty*

§. 1.

*duty hitherto, you know how at* Liampoo *I told you publiquely in the General Councel that was held in the Church before an hundred* Portugals *at the leaſt, that We were to expoſe our ſelves to great dangers, and chiefly my ſelf, becauſe I was a* Chineſe *and a Pilot, for all you could be made to endure but one death, whereas I ſhould be made to endure two thouſand if it were poſſible, whereby you may well conclude, that ſetting apart all treaſon, I muſt of neceſſity be faithful unto you, as I am, and ever will be, not only this Voyage, but in all other enterprizes, in deſpight of thoſe that murmur, and make falſe reports unto you of me; howbeit if you fear this danger ſo much as you ſay, and are therefore pleaſed that we ſhall take ſome other way leſſe frequented with men and veſſels, and where we may ſail without dread of any thing, then you muſt be contented to beſtow a far longer time in this voyage, wherefore reſolve with your company upon it without any further delay, or let us return back, for lo I am ready to do whatſoever you will.* *Antonio de Faria*, embracing, and giving him many thanks, fell to diſcourſe with him about that other ſafer way of which he ſpake: Whereupon *Similau* told him, that ſome hundred and forty leagues further forwards to the North, there was a River ſomewhat larger by half a league, called *Sumbapadano*, where he ſhould meet with no Obſtacle, for that it was not peopled like the ſtreight of *Nanquin*, wherein they now were, but that then they ſhould be retarded a month longer, by the exceeding much winding of this River. *Antonio de Faria* thinking it far better to expoſe himſelf to a length of time, then to hazard his life for abridgement of way, followed the counſel that *Similau* gave him; ſo that going out of the ſtreight of *Nanquin*, he coaſted the land five dayes, at the end whereof we diſcovered a very high Mountain towards the Eaſt, which *Similau* told us was called *Fanius*; approaching ſomewhat neer unto it we entred into a very fair Port, forty fathom deep, that extending it ſelf in the form of a Creſcent was ſheltred from all ſorts of winds, ſo ſpacious withall, as two thouſand Veſſels how great ſoever might ride there at eaſe. *Antonio de Faria* went aſhore with ſome ten or eleven Souldiers, and rounded this haven, but could not meet with any one body, that could inſtruct him in the way he pretended to make, whereat he was very much vext, and greatly repented him for that without any kinde of conſideration, or taking advice of any one, he had raſhly, and out of a capacious humour, undertaken this Voyage: Howbeit he diſſembled this diſpleaſure of his the beſt he could for fear leſt his company ſhould tax him with want of courage. In this Haven he diſcourſed again with *Similau* before every one concerning this our Navigation, which he told him was made but by gueſſe; whereunto the *Chineſe* anſwered, *Signior Captain, If I had any thing I could engage to you of more value then my head, I proteſt unto you I would moſt willingly do it, for I am ſo ſure of the courſe I hold, that I would not fear to give you my very children in Hoſtage of the promiſe I made you at* Liampoo: *Nevertheleſſe I adverti ſe you again, that if repenting the undertaking of this enterpriſe you fear to proceed any further, in regard of the tales your people are ever tatling in your ear, as I have often obſerved, do but command, and you ſhall finde how ready I am to obey your pleaſure: And whereas they would make you believe that I ſpin out this Voyage longer then I promiſed you at* Liampoo, *the reaſon thereof you know well enough, which ſeemed not amiſſe when I propounded it unto you, ſeeing then you once allowed of it, let me intreat you to ſet your heart at reſt for that matter, and not to break off this deſign by returning back, whereby at length you ſhall finde how profitable this patience of yours will prove.* This ſpeech ſomewhat quieted *Antonio de Faria*'s minde, ſo that he bid him go on as he thought beſt, and never trouble himſelf with the murmuring of the Souldiers, whereof he complained, ſaying, that it was ever the manner of ſuch as were idle, to finde fault with other mens actions, but if they did not mend their error the ſooner, he would take a courſe with them to make them to do it; wherewith *Similau* reſted very well ſatisfied and contented.

§. 2. After we were gone from this Haven, we ſailed along the coaſt above thirteen dayes together, alwaies in ſight of land, and at length arrived at a Port, called *Buxipalem*, in the height of fortie nine degrees. We found this Climate ſomewhat colder then the reſt, here we ſaw an infinite company of Fiſhes and Serpents, of ſuch ſtrange forms, as I cannot ſpeak of them without fear; *Similau* told *Antonio de Faria* incredible things concerning them, as well of what he had ſeen himſelf, having been there before, as of that had been reported unto him, eſpecially in the full Moons of the moneths of *November*, *December*, and *January*, when the ſtorms raign there moſt, as indeed this *Chineſe* made it appear to our own eyes, whereby he juſtified unto us the moſt of that which he had affirmed.

firmed. For in this place we ſaw Fiſhes in the ſhape of Thornbacks that were four fathoms about, and had a Muzzle like an Oxe; likewiſe we ſaw others reſembling great Lizards, ſpotted all over with green and black, having three rows of prickles on their backs, that were very ſharp, and of the bigneſſe of an arrow; their bodies alſo were full of the like, but they were neither ſo long, nor ſo great as the others: Theſe Fiſhes would ever and anon briſtle up themſelves like Porcupines, which made them very dreadful to behold, they had Snouts that were very ſharp and black, with two crooked teeth out of each jawbone, two ſpans long, like the tuſks of a wild Boar. We alſo ſaw Fiſhes whoſe bodies were exceeding black, ſo prodigious and great, that their heads onely were above ſix ſpans broad. I will paſſe over in ſilence many other Fiſhes of ſundry ſorts, which we beheld in this place, becauſe I hold it not fit to ſtand upon things that are out of my diſcourſe, let it ſuffice me to ſay, that during two nights we ſtayed here we did not thinke our ſelves ſafe, by reaſon of the Lizards, Whales, Fiſhes and Serpents, which in great numbers ſhewed themſelves to us. Having left this Haven of *Buxipalem*, by us called the River of Serpents, which in great numbers ſhewed themſelves to us, *Similau* ſailed fifteen leagues further to another Bay named *Calindano*, which was in form of a Creſcent, ſix leagues in circuit, and invironed with high Mountains, and very thick woods, amidſt whereof divers Brooks of freſh waters deſcended, which made up four great Rivers that fell all into this Bay. There *Similau* told us, that all thoſe prodigious creatures we had both ſeen and heard of, as well in this Bay, as in that where we were before, came thither to feed upon ſuch Ordure and Carrion, as the overflowing of theſe Rivers brought to this place. *Antonio de Faria* demanding of him thereupon, whence thoſe Rivers ſhould proceed, he anſwered that he knew not, but it was ſaid that the Annals of *China* affirmed, how two of thoſe Rivers took their beginnings from a great Lake, called *Moſcombia*, and the other two from a Province, named *Alimania*, where there are high Mountains, that all the year long are covered with Snow, ſo that the Snow coming to diſſolve, theſe Rivers ſwelled in that manner as we then beheld them, for now they were bigger, then at any other time of the year. Hereunto he added, that entring into the mouth of the River, before the which we rode at anchor, we ſhould continue our courſe, ſteering Eaſtward, for to finde out the Port of *Nanquin* again, which we had left two hundred and threeſcore leagues behinde us, by reaſon that in all this diſtance we had multiplied a greater height then that of the Iſland was, which we were in queſt of. Now although this was exceeding grievous unto us, yet *Similau* deſired *Antonio de Faria* to think the time we had paſt well ſpent, becauſe it was done for the beſt, and for the better ſecuring of our lives; being asked then by *Antonio de Faria* how long we ſhould be in paſſing through this River, he anſwered that we ſhould be out of it in fourteen or fifteen dayes, and that in five dayes after he would promiſe to land him and his Souldiers in the Iſland of *Calemplay*, where he hoped fully to content his deſire, and to make him think his pains well beſtowed, whereof he now ſo complained. *Antonio de Faria*, having embraced him very lovingly thereupon; vowed to be his friend for ever, and reconciled him to his Souldiers, who were very much out with him before. Being thus reconfirmed by *Similau* ſpeeches, and certified of this new courſe we were to take, he incouraged his company, and put all things in order convenient for his deſign, to that end preparing his Ordnance which till then had never been charged; he cauſed alſo his Arms to be made ready, ordained Captains, and Sentinels to keep good watch, together with all beſides that he thought neceſſary for our defence, in caſe of any attempt upon us. That done, he ſpake unto *Diego Lobato*, who was the Prieſt that we carried along with us, and one that we much reſpected as a man of the Church, to make a Sermon unto his company for to animate them againſt all dangers that might happen, which he worthily performed, and by the efficacy of his words, full of ſweetneſſe, and excellent examples, he ſo revived our ſpirits, that before were much dejected through the apprehenſion of the dangers that menaced us, as there was not one amongſt us, but preſently took freſh heart, boldly to execute the enterpriſe we had undertaken: Whereupon with great devotion and zeal we ſung a *Salve*, before an Image of our Lady, every man promiſing without any future fear to finiſh the Voyage we had begun. That done, we joyfully hoyſed ſail, and entring into the mouth of the River, ſteering directly Eaſt, and with tears in our eyes invoked from the bottome of our hearts, the aſſiſtance of that Soveraign Lord which ſits at the right hand of the Father everlaſting, to preſerve us by his Almighty power.

§.3. Continuing on our course with the force of Oares and Sails, and steering divers wayes, by reason of the many turnings of the River, the next day we arrived at a very high mountain called *Botinafan*, whence sundry Rivers of fresh water ran down. In this mountain were a number Tygers, Rhinocerots, Lyons, Ounces, and such other creatures of severall kinds, which running and roaring in their wilde manner, made cruell war upon other weaker Beasts, as Stags, Boars, Apes, Monkeys, Baboons, Wolves, and Foxes, wherein we took much delight, spending a great deal of time in beholding them; and ever and anon we cryed out from our Ships to fright them, but they were little moved with it, in regard they were not used to be hunted: We were about six dayes in passing this Mountain, it being some forty or fifty leagues long. Within a pretty while after we had left this Mountain we came to another, named *Gangitanon*, no lesse wilde then the former, beyond the which all the Countrie was very stonie, and almost inaccessible; moreover it was full of high thick Woods, as the Sun could not possibly pierce them with his beams: *Similau* told us, that in this mountain there were ninety leagues of desert land, altogether unfit for Tillage, and the bottome thereof onely was inhabited by certain most deformed men, called *Giaubos*, who lived after a most brutish fashion, and fed on nothing but what they got in hunting, or some Rice, that the Merchants of *China* brought them to *Catan* in exchange of Furres; which the said Merchants carried from thence to *Pocasser* and *Lantan*, amounting yearly as by the Books of the Customes thereof appeared, to the number of twenty thousand Cates, each Cate, or pack, containing threescore skins, wherewith the people used in winter to line their Gowns, hang their Houses, and make coverings for their Beds, to withstand the cold of the Climate, which is great there. *Antonio de Faria* wondring at the Relation this *Chinese* made of the deformity of these *Giaubos*, desired him if it were possible to let him see one of them, whereby he said he should more content him then if he should give him the treasures of *China*; whereunto *Similau* made him this Answer, *Signior Captain, since it is so much imports me, as well to maintain my credit with you, as to stop their mouthes that murmur against me, and that jogging one another scoffe at me, when I recount these things unto you, which they accounte as so many Fables, and to the end that by the triall of the one, they may be ascertained of the other, I will promise before Sun-setting yet to shew you a couple of these people, and that you shall also speak with them, upon condition you do not go ashore, as you have still used to do hitherto, for fear some mischance should happen to you, as many times it doth to Merchants in like cases: For I assure you, that the Giaubos are of so savage and brutish a nature, as they feed on nothing commonly but raw flesh and blood, like the wilde Beasts that live in this Forrest.* So continuing our course all along the side of this Mountain, at length behinde a little point of land, we discovered a young youth, without ere an haire on his face, driving six or seven Cows before him, that pastured there by. *Similau* making a sign to him with a napkin, he presently stayed, whereupon coming a little neerer to him, *Similau* shewed him a piece of green Taffata, which he told us was a stuffe very acceptable to these brutish men, and withall by signs demanded of him whether he would buy it; this drew him to the brinke of the River, were he answered with an hoarse voice, some words that we could not comprehend, because there was not one in all our Vessels that understood this barbarous language, so that of necessity this commerce was to be made by signs: *Antonio de Faria* commanded three or four yards of the said piece of Taffeta to be given him, as also six Pourcelains, wherewith this Salvage seemed to be very well pleased, for taking both the one and the other, transported with joy he said somethiug to us, which we could understand no better then the former, then making a sign with his hand towards the place of his abode, he left his Cows, and ran away to the wood, clothed as he was with a Tigers skin, his arms and legs naked, bare-headed, and a staffe hardned at one end with the fire in his hand. For his person, he was well proportioned of his limbs, his haire red and curled hanging down on his shoulders, his stature by conjecture was above ten foot high, but we were amazed to see him return about a quarter of an hour to the very same place again, carrying a live Stag on his back, and having thirteen persons in his company, namely eight men and five women, leading three Cows tyed together, and dancing as they went at the sound of a kinde of Tabor, upon the which they beat five strokes at a time, and as often clapped their hands together singing to it, with a very hoarse voice in their language. Hereupon *Antonio de Faria* caused five or six pieces of silk stuffe, and a great many of Pourcelains to be shewed them, for to make them beleeve that we were Merchants,

chants, at the ſight whereof they very much rejoyced. Theſe perſons, both men and women, were apparrelled all after one and the ſame faſhion, without any kinde of difference, ſaving that the women wore great tinnen Bracelets about the middle of their armes, and their hair a great deal longer then the mens, ſtuck all about with flowers, reſembling our Flower de luces; they had chains alſo of red Cockles about their necks, almoſt as big as Oyſter-ſhels; as for the men they carried great ſtaves in their hands, covered to the middeſt with the ſame skins wherewith they were clothed; moreover they had all of them fierce looks, great lips, flat noſes, wide noſthrils, and were of ſtature very tall, but yet not ſo high as we thought they had been; for *Antonio de Faria* having cauſed them to be meaſured, he found that the talleſt of them exceeded not ten ſpans and an half, except one old man that reached to eleven. The womens ſtature was not fully ten ſpans: Their very countenances ſhewed them to be very rude and blockiſh, and leſſe rational, then all the other people which we had ſeen in our Conqueſts. Now *Antonio de Faria* being glad that we had not altogether loſt our labour, beſtowed on them threeſcore Pourcelains, a piece of green Taffety, and a pannier full of Peppet, wherewith they ſeemed to be ſo contented, that proſtrating themſelves on the ground, and lifting up their hands to heaven, they fell to ſaying certain words which we took for a thanksgiving after their manner, becauſe they fell down three ſeveral times on the earth, and gave us the three Cows and the Stag, as alſo a great many of Herbs: Having been talking about two houres with them by ſigns, and no leſſe wondring at us, then we at them, they returned into the wood from whence they came, and we purſued our courſe up the River by the ſpace of five dayes, during the which we ſaw more of them along by the water ſide; after we had paſt all this diſtance of land, which might be ſome forty leagues, or thereabouts, we navigated ſixteen dayes more with the force of Oars and Sails, without ſeeing any perſon in that deſert place, onely for two nights together we diſcerned certain fires a good way off at land: In the end it pleaſed God that we arrived at the Gulf of *Nanquin*, as *Similau* had told us, with a hope in five or ſix dayes to ſee our deſires accompliſhed.

Being come into the gulf of *Nanquin*, *Similau* counſelled *Antonio de Faria*, that at any hand he ſhould not ſuffer any *Portugal* to be ſeen, becauſe if ſuch a thing ſhould happen he feared ſome uproar would follow amongſt the *Chineſes*, in regard no ſtrangers had ever been ſeen in thoſe quarters; adding withall, that it would be ſafer for them to keep ſtill in the middle of the gulf, then by the ſhore, by reaſon of the great number of *Lorches* and *Lanteas*, that inceſſantly ſailed up and down; this advice was approved of every one, ſo that having continued our courſe ſome ſix dayes Eaſt and Eaſt Northeaſt, we diſcovered a great Town, called *Sidenpamor*, whither we directly went, and entred the Haven about two houres within night, where we found an infinite company of Veſſels riding at anchor, to the number, according to our thinking, of three thouſand at the leaſt, which gave us ſuch an alarum, as not daring ſcarce to wag we got out again with all the ſecrecy that might be; croſſing over the whole breadth of the River then, which was ſome ſix or ſeven leagues, we proſecuted our courſe all the reſt of that day, and coaſted along by a great plain, with a reſolution to accommodate our ſelves with Victuals whereſoever we could firſt meet with any, for we were in ſuch ſcarcity, as for thirteen dayes together, no man had more then three mouthfuls of boyled Rice allowance. Being in this extremity we arrived cloſe to certain old buildings, there went aſhore one morning before day, and fell upon a houſe, that ſtood a little way off from the reſt, where we found a great quantity of Ryce, ſome Beans, divers pots ful of Honey, poudred Beefe, Onions, Garlick, and Sugar Canes, wherewith we throughly furniſhed our ſelves: Certain *Chineſes* told us afterwards, that this was the ſtorehouſe of an Hoſpital, which was ſome two leagues off, where ſuch were entertained, as paſt that way in Pilgrimage to the Sepulchers of the Kings of *China*; Being re-imbarqued, and well provided of Victuals, we continued on our voyage ſeven daies more, which made up two months and an half, ſince we put out of *Liampoo*; Then *Antonio de Faria* began to miſtruſt the truth of what *Similau* had ſaid, ſo that he repented the undertaking of this voyage, as he confeſſed publiquely before us all, nevertheleſſe in regard there was no other remedy for it but to recommend himſelfe to God, and wiſely to prepare for all that might happen, he courageouſly perſormed it. Hereupon it fell out that *Antonio de Faria* having one morning demanded of *Similau* in what part he thought they were, he

§. 4.

answered him so far from the purpose, and like a man that had lost his judgement, or that knew not which way he had gone, as put *Antonio de Faria* into such choller, that he was going to stab him with a Ponyard that he wore, which without doubt he had done, had he not been diverted from it by some, that counselled him to forbear, lest it should be the cause of his utter ruine, whereupon moderating his anger he yeelded to the advice of his friends, nevertheless he was not for all that so contained, but that taking him by the Beard he swore, that if within three dayes at the farthest, he did not let him see, either the truth or the falshood of what he had told him, he would Ponyard him infallibly, wherewith *Similau* was so exceedingly terrified, that the night following as we were abiding by the shore he slid down from the Vessel into the River, and that so closely, as he was never discovered by the Sentinels or any other untill the end of the first Watch, when as *Antonio de Faria* was thereof advertised: This news put him so far besides himself, as he lost all patience, the rather for that he feared some revolt upon it from his Souldiers, who he saw were too much disposed thereunto. But he presently went ashore with a great many of his company, and spent the most part of the night in seeking of *Similau*, without meeting him, or any other living soul that was able to tell any news of him, but the worst of it yet was, that upon his return into his Junk, of forty six *Chinese* Mariners, that he had aboard him, he found six and thirty fled away to prevent the danger they were afraid of, whereat *Antonio de Faria* and all his company were so amazed, that lifting up their hands and eyes to heaven, they stood a long time mute, their tears supplying the defect of their speech, thereby testifying the secret sorrow of their hearts, for considering well what had hapned unto them, and the great peril they were in, the least that they could do in this confusion was to lose their courage and judgement, much more their speech, Howbeit falling at length to consult what we should do for the future, after much diversitie of opinion, it was in the end concluded, that we should pursue our design, and labour to take some body that might inform us how far it was from thence to the Island of *Calempluy*, and this to be done as secretly as possible might be for fear the Country should rise; likewise that if upon the report should be made us we found it would be easily taken, as *Similau* had assured us, we should then proceed on, otherwise, that we should return with the current of the water, which would bring us directly to the Sea with its ordinary course. This resolution taken and approved of every one, we went on with no less confusion then fear, for in so manifest a danger we could not chuse but be very much perplexed; the night following about break of day we discovered a little Barque a head of us riding at anchor in the midst of the River; her we boarded with as little noise as might be, and took five men asleep in her, whom *Antonio de Faria* questioned each one apart by himself, to see how they would agree in that they said: To his demands they answered all of them, that the Country wherein we were, was called *Tenaquilem*, from whence the Island of *Calempluy* was distant but ten leagues, and to many other questions propounded to them for our common securitie, they answered likewise separately one from the other to very good purpose, wherewith *Antonio de Faria* and his whole company, were exceedingly well satisfied, but yet it grieved us not a little, to think what an inconvenience the lack of *Similau* would prove to us in this attempt; however *Antonio de Faria* causing the five *Chinesses* to be arrested, and chained to oares, continued his course two dayes and an half more, at the end whereof it pleased God that doubling a cape of land, called *Guimai Tarao*, we discovered this Island of *Calempluy*, which we had been fourscore and three dayes seeking for with extream confusion of pains and labour, as I have before related.

## Chap. XXV.

*Our Arrival at Calempluy, and the description thereof; what hapned to* Antonio de Faria *in one of the Hermitages thereof, and how we were discovered.*

§. 1. HAving doubled the Cape of *Guimai Tarao*, two leagues beyond it, we discovered a goodly levell of ground, scituated in the midst of a River, which to our seeming was not above a league in circuit, whereunto *Antonio de Faria* approached with exceeding great joy, which yet was intermingled with much fear, because he knew not to what danger he and his were exposed; about twelve of the clock at night he anchored within Canon shot of this Island, and the next morning as soon as it was day he sate in Coun-

cel

ſell with ſuch of his company as he had called to it, there it was concluded that it was not poſſible ſo great and magnificent a thing ſhould be without ſome kind of guard, and therefore it was reſolved that with the greateſt ſilence that might be, it ſhould be rounded all about, for to ſee what advenues it had, or what Obſtacles we might meet with when there was queſtion of landing, to the end that accordingly we might deliberate more amply on that we had to do: With this Reſolution, which was approved by every one, *Antonio de Faria* weighed anchor, and without any noyſe got cloſe to the Iſland, and compaſſing it about exactly obſerved every particular that preſented it ſelf to his ſight. This Iſland was all incloſed with a platform of Jaſper, ſix and twenty ſpans high, the ſtones whereof were ſo neatly wrought, and joyned together, that the wall ſeemed to be all of one piece, at which every one greatly marvelled, as having never ſeen any thing till then, either in the *Indies*, or elſewhere, that merited compariſon with it; this Wall was ſix and twenty ſpans deep from the bottome of the River to the Superficies of the water, ſo that the full height of it was two and fifty ſpans. Furthermore the top of the Platform was bordered with the ſame ſtone, cut into great Tower-work; Upon this wall, which invironed the whole Iſland, was a Gallerie of Baluſtres of turn'd Copper, that from ſix to ſix fathom joyned to certain Pillars of the ſame Metal, upon each of the which was the figure of a Woman holding a bowl in her hand; within this gallery were divers Monſters caſt in metal, ſtanding all in a row, which holding one another by the hand in manner of a dance incompaſſed the whole Iſland, being as I have ſaid, a league about: Amidſt theſe monſtrous Idols there was likewiſe another row of very rich Arches, made of ſundry coloured pieces; a ſumptuous work, and wherewith the eye might well be entertained and contented; Within was a little wood of Orange Trees, without any mixture of other plants, and in the midſt an hundred and threeſcore Hermitages dedicated to the gods of the year, of whom theſe Gentiles recount many pleaſant Fables in their Chronicles for the defence of their blindneſs in their falſe belief: A quarter of a league beyond theſe Hermitages, towards the Eaſt, divers goodly great Edifices were ſeen, ſeparated the one from the other with fayre fore-fronts of Houſes, built after the manner of our Churches; from the top to the bottome as far as could be diſcerned, theſe buildings were guilt all over, and annexed to very high Towers, which in all likelihood were Steeples; their Edifices were invironed with two great Rreets arched all along, like unto the Frontiſpieces of the Houſes; theſe Arches were ſupported by very huge Pillars, on the top whereof, and between every arch was a diſmy Proſpective; now in regard theſe buildings, towers, pillars and their chapters, were ſo exceedingly guilt all over, as one could diſcern nothing but Gold, it perſwaded us that this Temple muſt needs be wonderfull ſumptuous and rich, ſince ſuch coſt had been beſtowed on the very Walls. After we had ſurrounded this whole Iſland, and obſerved the advenues and entries thereof, notwithſtanding it was ſomewhat late, yet would *Antonio de Faria* needs go aſhore to ſee if he could get any Intelligence in one of thoſe Hermitages, to the end he might thereupon reſolve, either to proſecute his deſign, or return back: So having left a guard ſufficient for his two Veſſels, and *Diego Lobato*, his Chaplain, Captain of them, he landed with fourty Souldiers, and twenty ſlaves, as well Pikes, as Harquebuſes; He alſo carried with him four of the *Chineſes*, which we took a while before, both for that they knew the place well, as having been there at other times, and likewiſe that they might ſerve us for truchmen and guides: Being got to the ſhore uneſpied of any one, and without noiſe, we entred the Iſland by one of the eight Advenues that it had, and marching through the middeſt of the little wood of Orange-trees we arrived at the gate of the firſt Hermitage, which might be ſome two Muſket-ſhot from the place we diſ-imbarqued, where that hapned unto us which I will deliver hereafter.

*Antonio de Faria* went directly to the next Hermitage he ſaw before him with the greateſt ſilence that might be, and with no little fear, for that he knew not into what danger he was going to ingag himſelf; which he found ſhut on the inſide, he commanded one of the *Chineſes* to knock at it, as he did two or three times, when at laſt he heard one ſpeak in this manner, *Prayſed be the Creator, who hath enameled the beauty of the skies, let him that knocks at the gate go about, and he ſhall finde it open on the other ſide, where let me know what he deſires.* The *Chineſe* went preſently about, and entring into the Hermitage by a back door, he opened the foregate to *Antonio de Faria*, and let him in with all his followers; §. 2.

There

There he found an old man, that ſeemed to be an hundred years old; he was apparelled in a long violet coloured damask gown, and by his countenance appeared to be a man of quality, as we underſtood afterwards: Being amazed to ſee ſo many men, he fell to the ground, where he lay a good while without ſpeaking a word, howbeit at length he began to be better confirmed, and beholding us with a ſerious look, he gravely demanded of us what we were, and what we would have; whereunto the Interpreter anſwered by the expreſs commandment of *Antonio de Faria*, that he was a Captain ſtranger, a native of the Kingdom of *Siam*, and that ſayling in a Junk of his, laden with merchandiſe, and bound for *Liampoo*, he had ſuffered ſhipwrack, whence he had miraculouſly eſcaped with all his company, and for that he had vowed to make a pilgrimage to this holy place, to praiſe God for preſerving him from ſo great a peril, he was now come to perform his vow; alſo to crave ſomwhat of him by way of alms, whereby his poverty might be relieved, proteſting within three years to render him twice as much as he ſhould then take from him: whereupon the Hermit, named *Hisicon*, having muſed a little on the matter, and fixing his eye on *Antonio de Faria*: *Whoever thou art*, ſaid he unto him, *know that I throughly underſtand what thou ſayeſt, and that I perceive but too well thy damnable intention, wherewith out of the obſcurity of thy blindneſs, like an infernal pilot, thou carrieſt both thy ſelf, and theſe others, into the profound abiſm of the lake of night: for inſtead of rendring thanks to God for ſo great a favour, as thou confeſſeſt he hath ſhewed thee, thou comeſt hither to rob this holy houſe: But let me ask thee, if thou executeſt thy miſchievous deſigne, what will the divine Juſtice, thinkeſt thou, do with thee at the laſt gaſp of thy life? Change then thy perverſe inclination, and never ſuffer the imagination of ſo great a ſin to enter thy thoughts; give credit unto me that tels thee nothing but the very truth, even as I hope to thrive by it all the reſt of my life.* *Antonio de Faria* ſeeming to approve of the counſel, which the old Hermit gave him, earneſtly deſired him not to be diſpleaſed, aſſuring him that he had no other means or way left to relieve him and his, but what he could find in that place: To which the Hermit wringing his hands, and lifting up his eyes, ſaid weeping, *Praiſed be thou, O Lord, that permitteſt men to live on the earth, who offend thee under pretext of ſeeking means to live, and that vouchſafe not to ſerve thee one hour, although they know how aſſured thy glory is.* After he had uttered theſe words, he remained very penſive and much troubled to ſee the great diſorder we uſed in breaking up the coffins, and flinging them out of their places; at length looking upon *Antonio de Faria*, who ſtood leaning upon his ſword, he intreated him to ſit down by him, which he did with a great deal of compliment, not deſiſting for all that from making ſignes to his ſouldiers to perſiſt as they had begun, that was to take the ſilver which was mingled amongſt the bones of the dead in the tombs, that they brake up; whereat the Hermit was ſo grieved as he fell down twice in a ſwoon from his ſeat, but being come to himſelf, he ſpake thus to *Antonio de Faria*, *I will declare unto thee as to a man that ſeems diſcreet, the means whereby thou mayſt obtain pardon for the ſin, which thou and thy people now commit, to the end that thy ſoul may not periſh eternally, when as the laſt breath of thy mouth ſhal go out of thy body: Seeing then, as thou ſayeſt, that it is neceſſity conſtrains thee to offend in this grievous manner, and that thou haſt a purpoſe to make reſtitution before thou dyeſt, of that thou takeſt away from hence; if, thou haſt time and power, thou mayſt do theſe three things: Firſt, thou muſt render again what thou now carrieſt away, that the Sovereign Lord may not turn his mercy from thee: Secondly, thou muſt with tears ask him forgiveneſs for thy fault, which is ſo odious unto him, never ceaſing to chaſtiſe thy fleſh both day and night: And thirdly, thou muſt diſtribute thy goods to the poor, as liberally as to thy ſelf, giving them alms with prudence and diſcretion, to the end the ſervant of the night may have nothing to accuſe thee of at the laſt day. Now, for recompence of this counſel, I deſire thee to command thy followers to gather together the bones of the Saints, that they may not be deſpiſed on the earth.* *Antonio de Faria* promiſed him very courteouſly to perform his requeſt, wherewith the Hermit was a little better at quiet then before, but yet not fully ſatisfied, howbeit he ſpake him very fair, and aſſured him that after he had once ſeen him, he very much repented the undertaking of this enterpriſe, but his ſouldiers had threatned to kill him, if he returned without executing of it, and this he told him as a very great ſecret, *God grant it be ſo*, replyed the Hermit, *for that thou ſhalt not be ſo blame-worthy as theſe other monſters of the night, which are ſo greedy, like to famiſhed dogs, that it ſeems all the ſilver in the world is not able to ſatiate them.*

§ 3. After we had gathered all the ſilver together, that was in the graves amongſt the dead mens bones,

bones, and carryed it aboard our ships, we were all of opinion not to go any further to the reſt of the Hermitages, as well becauſe we knew not the Countrey, as for that it was almoſt night, upon hope that the next day we might continue our enterpriſe more at leiſure. Now before he re-imbarqued himſelfe, *Antonio de Faria*, took leave of the Hermit, and giving him very good words, he deſired him for Gods ſake not to be offended with that his followers had done, being conſtrained thereunto by meer neceſſity: for as his for particular he exceedingly abhorred ſuch like actions, adding withall, that at the firſt ſight of him, he would have returned back, out of the remorſe of conſcience, and true repentance; but that his company had hindered him, ſaying, that if he did ſo, they would ſurely kill him; ſo that for to have his life he was compelled to yeild and conſent thereunto, though he plainly ſaw that it was a very great ſin, in regard whereof he was reſolved, as ſoon as he could rid his hands of them, to go up and down the world to perform ſuch penance as was requiſite for the purging of him from ſo enormous a crime. Hereunto the Hermit anſwered, *Pleaſeth the Lord, who living, reigneth above the beauty of the Starr, that the knowledge, which by this diſcourſe, thou ſhewſt to have, be not prejudiciall unto thee; For I be aſſured, that he who knows theſe things, and doth them not, runs a far greater danger, than he that ſins through ignorance.* Then one of ours, named *Nuno Coelho*, who would needs have an oar in our talk, told him, that he was not to be angry for a matter of ſo ſmall importance; whereunto the Hermit beholding him with ſo ſtern a countenance, anſwered, *Certainly, the fear which thou haſt of death is yet leſſe, ſince thou imployeſt thy ſelfe in actions as infamous and black as the ſoul that is in thy body; and for my part, I cannot but be perſwaded, that all thy ambition is wholly placed upon money, as but too well appears by the unthirſt of thy inſatiable avarice, whereby thou will make an end of heaping up the meaſure of thine informal appetite: Continue then thy theeveries, for ſeeing thou muſt go to hell for that which thou haſt already taken out of this holy houſe, thou ſhalt alſo go thither for thoſe things which thou ſhalt ſtoal otherwiſe, ſo the heavier the burden ſhall be that thou beareſt, the ſooner ſhalt thou be precipitated into the bottome of hell, where already thy wicked works have prepared thee an everlaſting abode.* Hereupon *Nuno de Coelho* prayed him to take all things patiently, affirming that the Law of God commanded him ſo to do. Then the Hermit lift up his hand by way of admiration, and as it were ſmiling at what the ſouldier had ſaid, *Truly*, anſwered he, *I am come to ſee, that I never thought to ſee or hear, namely, evil actions diſguiſed with a ſpacious pretext of vertue, which makes me believe that thy blindneſſe is exceeding great, ſince truſting to good words, thou ſpendeſt thy life ſo wickedly, wherefore is it not poſſible that thou ſhouldeſt ever come to Heaven, or give any account to God at the laſt day, as of neceſſity they muſt do.* Saying ſo, he turned him to *Antonio de Faria*, without attending further anſwer from him, and earneſtly deſired him not to ſuffer his company to ſpit upon and prophane the altar, which he vowed was more grievous to him, than the enduring of a thouſand deaths; whereupon to ſatisfie him, he preſently commanded the forbearance of it; wherewith the Hermit was ſomewhat comforted; Now becauſe it grew late, *Antonio de Faria* reſolved to leave the place, but before he departed he held it neceſſary to inform himſelf of certain other particulars, whereof he ſtood in ſome doubt, ſo, that he deſerved of the Hermit how many perſons there might be in all thoſe Hermitages: whereunto *Hiſicon* anſwered, that there were about three hundred and threeſcore *Talagrepos*, beſides forty *Manigrepos*, appointed to furniſh them with things requiſite for their maintenance, and to attend them when they were ſick: moreover he asked him, whether the King of *China* came not ſometimes thither; he told him, No, for, ſaid he, the King cannot be condemned by any body, he is the ſon of the Sun, but contrarily he had power to abſolve every one. Then he enquired of him if there were any arms in their Hermitages? O no, anſwered the Hermit, *for all ſuch as pretend to go to heaven have more need of patience to indure injuries, than of arms to revenge themſelves:* Being alſo deſirous to know of him the cauſe why ſo much ſilver was mingled with the bones of the dead. *This ſilver*, replied the Hermit, *comes of the alms that the deceaſed carry with them out of this into the other life, for to ſerve them as their need in the heaven of the Moon, where they live eternally: In concluſion*, having demanded of him whither they had any women, he ſaid, *That they which would maintain the life of their ſouls, ought not to taſte the pleaſures of the fleſh, ſeeing experience made it apparent, that the Bee which nouriſheth her ſelf in an hony-comb, doth often ſting ſuch as offer to meddle with that ſweetneſs.* After *Antonio de Faria* had propounded all theſe queſtions, he took his leave of him, and ſo went directly to his ſhips, with an intenti-

on to return again the next day, for to ſet upon the other Hermitages, where, as he had been told, was great abundance of ſilver, and certain Idols of gold, but our ſins would not permit us to ſee the effect of a buſineſs, which we had been two months and an halfe a purchaſing with ſo much labor and danger of our lives, as I will deliver hereafter.

§.4. At the clearing up of the day, *Antonio de Faria*, and all of us, being embarqued, we went and anchored on the other ſide of the Iſland, about a faulcon ſhot from it, with an intent, as I have before declared, to go a ſhore again the next morning, and ſet upon the Chappels where the Kings of *China* were interred, that ſo we might the more commodiouſly lade our two veſſels with ſuch treaſures, which peradventure might have ſucceeded according to our deſires, if the buſineſs had been well carried, and that *Antonio de Faria* had followed the counſel was given him, which was, that ſince we had not been as yet diſcovered, that he ſhould have carried the Hermit away with him, to the end he might not acquaint the Houſe of the *Bonzes* with what we had done; howbeit he would never hearken to it, ſaying, that we were to fear nothing that way, by reaſon the Hermit was ſo old, and his legs ſo ſwoln with the gout, as he was not able to ſtand, much leſs to go: But it fell out clean contrary to his expectation, for the Hermit no ſooner ſaw us imbarqued, as we underſtood afterwards, but he preſently crawled as well as he could to the next Hermitage, which was not above a flight ſhoot from his, and giving intelligence of all that had paſt, he bad his companion, becauſe himſelf was not able, to go away with all ſpeed to the *Bonzes* houſe to acquaint them with it, which the other inſtantly performed; ſo that about midnight we ſaw a great many of fires lighted on the top of the wall of the Temple, where the Kings were buried, being kindled to ſerve for a ſignal to the Countrey about, of ſome extraordinary danger towards: This made us ask of our *Chineſes*, what they might mean, who anſwered, that aſſuredly, we were diſcovered, in regard whereof they adviſed us without any longer ſtay to ſet ſail immediatly; Herewith they acquainted *Antonio de Faria*, who was faſt aſleep, but he ſtraightway aroſe, and leaving his anchor in the ſea, rowed directly, afraid as he was, to the Iſland, for to learn what was done there: Being arrived near to the Key, he heard many bels ringing in each Hermitage, together with a noiſe of men talking, whereupon the *Chineſes* that accompanied him, ſaid, Sir, never ſtand to hear or ſee more, but retire, we beſeech you, as faſt as you may, and cauſe us not to be all miſerably ſlain with your further ſtay; Howbeit little regarding, or afraid of their words, he went aſhore only with ſix ſouldiers, having no other arms but ſwords and targets, and going up the ſtairs of the Key, whither it were that he was vext for having loſt ſo fair an occaſion, or carried thereunto by his courage, he entered into the gallery, that inviroued the Iſland, and ran up and down in it like a mad man, without meeting any body; That done, and being returned abord his veſſel, much grieved and aſhamed, he conſulted with his company about what they ſhould do, who were of opinion that the beſt courſe we could take, was to depart, and therefore they required him to put it accordingly in execution; Seeing them all ſo reſolved, and fearing ſome tumults among the ſouldiers, he was fain to anſwer, that he was alſo of their mind, but firſt he thought it fit to know for what cauſe they ſhould fly away in that manner, and therefore he deſired them to ſtay for him a little in that place, becauſe he would trie whether he could learn by ſome means or other the truth of the matter, whereof they had but a bare ſuſpition; for which, he told them, he would ask but half an hour at the moſt, ſo that there would be time enough to take order for any thing before day; ſome would have alledged reaſons againſt this, but he would not hear them, wherefore having cauſed them all to take their oaths, upon the holy Evangeliſts, that they would ſtay for him, he returned to land with the ſame ſouldiers, that had accompanied him before, and entering into the little wood, he heard the ſound of a bell, which addreſſed him to another Hermitage, far richer then that wherein we were the day before: There he met with two men, apparaled like Monks, with large hoods, which made him think they were Hermits, of whom he preſently laid hold, wherewith one of them was ſo terrified, as he was not able to ſpeak a good while after: Hereupon four of the ſix ſouldiers paſt into the Hermitage, and took an Idol of ſilver from the altar, having a crown of gold on its head, and a wheel in its hand; they alſo brought away three candleſticks of ſilver, with long chains of the ſame belonging to them: This performed, *Antonio de Faria* carrying the two Hermits along with him, went abord again, and ſailing away, he propounded divers queſtions to him, of the two, that was leaſt affraid, threatning to uſe him in a ſtrange faſhion if he did not tell the truth. This Hermit ſeeing himſelf ſo menaced, anſwered, That an holy man, named *Pilau Angireo* came about midnight to the houſe of the Kings Sepulcures,

wher

where knocking in haſte at the gate, he cryed out, ſaying; *O miſerable men, buried in the drunkenneſs of carnal ſleep, who by a ſolemn vow, have profeſt your ſelves to the honour of the Goddeſs* Amida, *the rich reward of our labours, hear, hear, hear, O the moſt wretched men that ever were born; There are ſtrangers come into our Iſland, from the further end of the World, which have long beards, and bodies of Iron, theſe wicked creatures have entred into the Holy Houſe of the ſeven and twenty Pillars, of whoſe ſacred Temple an holy man is keeper, that hath told it me, where after they had ranſacked the rich treaſures of the Saints, they contemptedly threw their bones to the ground, which they prophaned with their ſtinking and infectious ſpitting, and made a mockerie of them like Devils, obſtinate and hardned in their wretched ſins, wherefore I adviſe you to look well to your ſelves, for it is ſaid, that they have ſworn to kill us all as ſoon as it is day: Fly away then, or call ſome people to your ſuccour, ſince being Religious men you are not permitted to meddle with any thing that may ſhed the blood of man.* Herewith they preſently aroſe and ran to the gate, where they found the Hermite laid on the ground, and half dead with grief and wearineſſe through the imbecillity of his age; whereupon the *Grepes* and *Meingrepes* made thoſe fires that you ſaw, and withall ſent in all haſte to the Towns of *Corpilem*, and *Fonbana*, for to ſuccour them ſpeedily with the Forces of the Country, ſo that you may be aſſured it will not be long before they fall upon this place with all the fury that may be. *Now this is all that I am able to ſay concerning the truth of this affair, wherefore I deſire you to return us both unto our Hermitage with our lives ſaved, for if you do not ſo you will commit a greater ſin, then you did yeſterday: Remember alſo that God, in regard of the continuall penance we perform, hath taken us ſo far into his protection, as he doth viſit us almoſt every hour of the day, wherefore labour to ſave your ſelves as much as you will, yet ſhall you hardly do it; For be ſure, that the earth, the air, the winds, the waters, the beaſts, the fiſhes, the fowls, the trees, the plants, and all things created will purſue and torment you ſo cruelly, as none but he that lives in heaven will be able to help you.* *Antonio de Faria* being hereby certainly informed of the truth of the buſineſſe ſailed inſtantly away, tearing his hair and beard for very rage, to ſee that through his negligence and indiſcretion he had loſt the faireſt occaſion, that ever he ſhould be able to meet withall.

## CHAP. XXVI.

*Our caſting away in the Gulf of* Nanquin, *with all that befell us after this lamentable Shipwrack.*

WE had already ſailed ſeven dayes in the Gulf of *Nanquin*, to the end that the force of the Current might carry us the more ſwiftly away, as men whoſe ſafety conſiſted wholly in flight, for we were ſo deſolate and ſad, that we ſcarce ſpake one to another; In the mean time we arrived at a Village, called *Suſequerim*, where no news being come either of us, or what we had done, we furniſhed our ſelves with ſome Victual, and getting Information very covertly of the courſe we were to hold, we departed within two hours after, and then with the greateſt ſpeed we could make we entred into a ſtraight, named *Xalingan*, much leſſe frequented then the gulf, that we had paſt; here we navigated nine dayes more, in which time we ran an hundred and fourty leagues, then entring again into the ſaid Gulf of *Nanquin*, which in that place was not above ten or eleven leagues broad, we ſailed for the ſpace of thirteen dayes from one ſide to another with a Weſterly winde, exceedingly afflicted, both with the great labour we were fain to indure, and the cruel fear we were in, beſides the want we began to feel of Victuals: In this caſe being come within ſight of the mountains of *Conxinacan*, which are in the height of forty and one degrees, there aroſe ſo terrible a Southwind, called by the *Chineſes Tufaon*, as it could not poſſibly be thought a natural thing, ſo that our Veſſels being low built, weak, and without Mariners, we were reduced to ſuch extremity, that out of all hope to eſcape we ſuffered our ſelves to be driven along the coaſt, as the current of the water would carry us, for we held it more ſafe to venture our ſelves amongſt the Rocks, then to let us be ſwallowed up in the midſt of the Sea, and though we had choſen this deſign, as the better and leſſe painful, yet did it not ſucceed, for after dinner the winde turned to the North-weſt, whereby the Waves became ſo high, that it was moſt dreadful to behold; Our fear then was ſo extream, as we began to caſt all that we had into the Sea, even to the Cheſts full of

§. 1.

Silver: That done, we cut down our two Maſts, and ſo without Maſts and Sails we floated along all the reſt of the day; at length about midnight we heard them in *Antonio de Faria*'s Veſſel cry, *Lord have mercy upon us*, which perſwaded us that they were caſt away, the apprehenſion whereof put us in ſuch a fright, as for an hour together no man ſpake a word. Having paſt all this ſad night in ſo miſerable a plight, about an hour before day our Veſſel opened about the Keel, ſo that it was inſtantly full of water eight ſpans high, whereupon perceiving our ſelves to ſinke, we verily beleeved, it was the good pleaſure of God that in this place we ſhould finiſh both our lives and labours: As ſoon then as it was day we looked out to Sea, as far as poſſibly we could diſcern, but could no way diſcover *Antonio de Faria*, which put us quite out of heart, and ſo continuing in this great affliction till about ten of the clock, with ſo much terror and amazement, as words are not able to expreſſe, at laſt we ran againſt the coaſt, and even drowned as we were, the Waves rouled us towards a point of Rocks, that ſtood out into the Sea, where we were no ſooner arrived but that all went to pieces, inſomuch that of five and twenty *Portugals*, which we were, there were but fourteen ſaved, the other eleven being drowned, together with eighteen Chriſtian Servants, and ſeven *Chineſe* Mariners. This miſerable diſaſter hapned on a Munday, the fifth of *Auguſt*, in the year one thouſand five hundredforty and two, for which the Lord be prayſed everlaſtingly.

§. 2. We fourteen *Portugals*, having eſcaped out of this ſhipwrack by the meer mercy of God, ſpent all that day, and the night following, in bewailing our miſ-fortune, and the wretched eſtate whereunto we were reduced, but in the end conſulting together, what courſe to take for to give ſome remedy thereunto, we concluded to enter into the Country, hoping that far or neer we ſhould not fail to meet with ſome body, that taking us for ſlaves, would relieve us with meat, till ſuch time as it ſhould pleaſe Heaven to terminate our travels with the end of our lives. With this Reſolution we went ſome ſix or ſeven leagues over rocks and hills, and on the other ſide diſcovered a great Marſh, ſo large and void, as it paſt the reach of our ſight, there being no appearance of any land beyond it, which made us turn back again, towards the ſame place where we were caſt away; being arrived there the day after about Sun-ſet, we found upon the ſhore the bodies of our men, which the Sea had caſt up, over whom we recomenced our ſorrow and lamentations, and the next day we buried them in the ſand, to keep them from being devoured by the Tygers, whereof that Country is full, which we performed with much labour and pain, in regard we had no other tools for that purpoſe but our hands and nails; After theſe poor bodies were interred we got us into a Marſh, where we ſpent all the night, as the ſafeſt place we could chuſe to preſerve us from the Tygers: From thence we continued our journey towards the North, and that by ſuch Precipes and thick woods, as we had much adoe to paſs through them. Having travelled in this manner three dayes, at length we arrived at a little ſtraight, without meeting any body, over the which reſolving to ſwim, by ill fortune the four firſt that entred into it, being three *Portugals* and a young youth, were miſerably drowned, for being very feeble, and the ſtraight ſomewhat broad, and the current of the water very ſtrong, they were not able to hold out any longer when they came to the midſt; ſo we eleven with three ſervants that remained, ſeeing the infortunate ſucceſſe of our companions, could do nothing but weep and lament, as men that hourly expected ſuch or a worſe end. Having ſpent all that dark night, expoſed to the winde, cold, and raine, it pleaſed our Lord that the next morning before day we diſcovered a great fire towards the Eaſt, whereupon as ſoon as the day broke, we marched fair and ſoftly that way, recomending our ſelves to that Almighty God from whom alone we could hope for a remedy to our miſeries, and ſo continuing our journey all along the River, the moſt part of that day, at laſt we came to a little wood, where we found five men making of coals, whom on our knees we beſought for Gods ſake to direct us to ſome place where we might get ſome relief; *I would*, ſaid one of them, beholding us with an eye of pitie, *it lay in our power to help you, but alas! all the comfort we can give you is to beſtow ſome part of our Supper on you, which is a little rice, wherewith you may paſſe this night here with us if you will, though I hold it better for you to proceed on your way, and recover the place you ſee a little below, where you ſhall finde an Hoſpital that ſerves to lodge ſuch Pilgrims, as chance to come into theſe quarters.* Having thanked him for his good addreſſe, we fell to the Rice they gave us, which came but to two mouthfuls a piece, and ſo took our leaves of them, going directly to the place they had ſhewed us, as well as our weakneſs would permit.

About

About an hour within night, we arrived at the Hoſpital, where we met with four men, that §. 3.
had the charge of it, who received us very charitably: The next morning as ſoon as it was day they demanded of us, what we were, and from whence we came? Thereunto we anſwered, that we were ſtrangers, natives of the Kingdom of *Siam*, and that coming from the Port of *Liampoo* to go to the fiſhing of *Nanquin*, we were caſt away at ſea by the violence of a ſtorm, having ſaved nothing out of this ſhipwrack, but thoſe our miſerable and naked bodies. Whereupon demanding of us again, what we intended to do, and whither we would go; we replyed, that we purpoſed to go to the City of *Nanquin*, there to imbarque our ſelves as rowers in the firſt *Lanteaa*, that ſhould put to ſea, for to paſs unto *Cantan*, where our countreymen by the permiſſion of the *Aito* of *Panquin*, exerciſed their traffique under the protection of the ſon of the Sun, and *Lyón* crowned in the throne of the world, wherefore we deſired them for Gods cauſe to let us ſtay in that Hoſpital, until we had recovered our healths, and to beſtow any poor clothes of us to cover our nakednedneſs. After they had given good ear unto us; It was reaſon, anſwered they, to grant you that which you require with ſo much earneſtneſs, and tears; but in regard the Houſe is now very poor, we cannot ſo eaſily diſcharge our duties unto you as we ſhould, howbeit we will do what we may with a very good will; Then quite naked, as we were, they lead us all about the Village, containing ſome forty or fifty fires, more or leſs; the inhabitants whereof were exceeding poor, having no other living but what they got by the labour of their hands, from whom they drew by way of alms ſome two *Taeis* in mony, half a Sack of rice, a little meal, aricot beans, onions, and a few old rags, wherewith we made the beſt ſhift we could; over and above this they beſtowed two *Taeis* more on us out of the Stock of the Hoſpital: But whereas we deſired that we might be permitted to ſtay there, they excuſed themſelves, ſaying, that no poor might remain there above three days, or five at the moſt, unleſs it were ſick people, or women with child, of whom ſpecial care was to be had, becauſe in their extremities they could not travel without endangering their lives, wherefore they could for no other perſons whatſoever tranſgreſs that Ordinance, which had of ancient time been inſtituted by the advice of very learned and religious men; nevertheleſs, that three leagues from thence, we ſhould in a great Town, called *Sileyiacan*, find a very rich hoſpital, where all ſorts of poor people were entertained, and that there we ſhould be far better looked unto then in their houſe, which was poor, and agreeable to the place of its ſcituation, to which end they would give us a letter of recommendation, by means whereof we ſhould incontinently be received. For theſe good offices we rendred them infinite thanks, and told them that God would reward them for it ſince they did it for his ſake, whereupon an old man, one of thoſe four, taking the Speech upon him, *It is for that conſideration alone we do it*, anſwered he, *and not in regard of the world; for God and the World are greatly different in matters of Works, and of the intention which one may have in the doing of them: For the World being poor and miſerable as it is, can give nothing that is good, whereas God is infinitely rich, and a friend to the poor, that in the height of their afflictions praiſe him with patience and humility; The World is revengeful, but God is ſuffering; the World is wicked, God is all goodneſs; the world is gluttonous, God is a lover of abſtinence; the World is mutinous and turbulent, God is quiet and peaceable; the World is a lyar and full of diſſimulation to them that belong to it, God is always true, free, and merciful to them that invoke him by prayer; the World is ſenſual and covetous, God is liberal, and purer then the light of the Sun, or ſtars, or then thoſe other lamps which are far more excellent then they that appear to our eyes, and are always preſent before his moſt reſplendent face; the World is full of irreſolution and falſhood, wherewith it entertains it ſelf in the ſmoak of its vain glory, whereas God is conſtant in his truth, to the end that thereby the humble may poſſeſs glory in all ſincerity of heart; In a word, the World is full of folly and ignorance, contrarily God is the fountain of wiſdom; wherefore my friends, although you be reduced to ſo pitiful an eſtate, do you not for all that diſtruſt his promiſes; for be aſſured he will not fail you, if you do not render your ſelves unworthy of his favours, in regard it was never found that he was at any time wanting to his; albeit they, that are blinded by the World, are of another opinion, when as they ſee themſelves oppreſſed with poverty, and deſpiſed of every body.* Having uſed this Speech to us, he gave us a letter of recommendation to the Brotherhood of the other Hoſpital, whither we were to go, and ſo we departed about noon, and arrived at the town an hour or two before ſun-ſet. The firſt thing we did, was to go to the houſe of the repoſe of the poor, for ſo the *Chineſes* call the Hoſpitals; There we delivered our letters to the Maſters of that Society, which they term *Tanigories*, whom

we found altogether in a chamber, where they were aſſembled about the affairs of the poor; After they had received the letter with a kind of compliment, that ſeemed very ſtrange to us, they commanded the Regiſter to read it, whereupon he ſtood up and read thus to them that were ſitting at the Table: *We the pooreſt of the poor, unworthy to ſerve that Sovereign Lord, whoſe works are ſo admirable, as the Sun, and the ſtars that twinckle in the skie, during the darkneſs of the night do teſtifie: Having been elected to the ſucceſſion of this his houſe of* Buatendoo, *ſcituated in this Village of* Catihoran, *with all manner of reſpect and honour, do beſeech your humble perſons, admitted to the ſervice of the Lord, that out of a zeal of charity, you will lodg and favour theſe fourteen ſtrangers, whereof three are tawny, the other eleven ſomewhat whiter, whoſe poverty will manifeſtly appear to your eyes, whereby you may judg how much reaſon we have to preſent this requeſt unto you, for that they have been caſt away with all their merchandiſe in the impetuous waters of the ſea, that with their accuſtomed fury have laid the execution of the Almighty hand upon them, which for a juſt puniſhment doth often permit ſuch like things to happen; for to ſhew us how dreadful his judgments are, from which may it pleaſe him to deliver us all at the day of death, to the end we may not ſee the indignation of his face.* This letter being read, they cauſed us preſently to be lodged in a very neat chamber, accommodated with a Table, and divers Chairs, where after we had been ſerved with good meat, we reſted our ſelves that night: The next morning the Regiſter came along with the reſt of the officers, and demanded of us who we were, of what Nation, and whereabout we had ſuffered ſhipwrack, whereunto we anſwered as we had done before to thoſe of the Village from whence we came, that we might not be found in two tales, and convinced of lying; whereupon having further enquired of us what we meant to do, we told them that our intention was to get our ſelves cured in that houſe, if it pleaſed them to permit us, in regard we were ſo weak and ſickly as we could ſcarce ſtand upon our legs: To which they replyed, that they would very willingly ſee that performed for us, as a thing that was ordinarily done there for the ſervice of God; for the which we thanked them weeping, with ſo much acknowledgment of their goodneſs and charity, as the tears ſtood in their eyes, ſo that preſently ſending for a Phyſician, they bid him look carefully to us, for that we were poor flocks, and had no other means but what we had from the houſe; That done he took our names in writing, and ſet them down in a great book, whereunto we all of us ſet out hands, ſaying, it was neceſſary it ſhould be ſo, that an accompt might be rendred of the expence was to be made for us.

§. 4. Having ſpent eighteen days in this Hoſpital, where we were ſufficiently provided for with all things neceſſary, it pleaſed God that we throughly recovered our healths, ſo that feeling our ſelves ſtrong enough to travel, we departed from thence for to go to a place, called *Zuzoangances*, ſome five leagues from that Hoſpital, where we arrived about ſun-ſet; Now in regard we were very weary, we ſat us down upon the ſide of a fountain, that ſtood at the entrance of that Village, being much perplexed and unreſolved what way to take: In the mean time, they which came to fetch water, ſeeing us ſet there in ſo ſad an equipage, returned with their pitchers empty, and advertiſing the inhabitants of it, the moſt of them came preſently forth to us; Then wondering much, becauſe they had never ſeen men like unto us, they gathered altogether, as if they would conſult thereupon, and after they had a good while debated one with another, they ſent an old woman to demand of us what people we were, and why we ſat ſo about that fountain, from whence they drew all the water they uſed: Hereunto we anſwered, that we were poor ſtrangers, natives of the Kingdom of *Siam*, who by a ſtorm at ſea were caſt upon their Countrey, in that miſerable plight wherein they beheld us. Tell me, replyed ſhe, what courſe would you have us to take for you, and what reſolve you to do, for here is no houſe for the repoſe of the poor whereinto you may be received? To theſe words one of our company anſwered with tears in his eyes, and a geſture conformable to our deſigne, that God, being that which he was, would never abandon us with his Almighty hand, but would touch their hearts to take compaſſion of us, and our poverty; and further, that we were reſolved to travel in that miſerable caſe we were in till we had the good fortune to arrive at the City of *Nanquin*, where we deſired to put our ſelves into the *Lanteaas*, there to ſerve for rowers to the Merchants that ordinarily went from thence to *Cantano*, and ſo to get to *Combay*, where great ſtore of our Country Junks uſually lay, in which we would imbarque our ſelves. Thereupon having ſomewhat a better opinion of us then before; Seeing you are, ſaid ſhe, ſuch as you deliver, have a little patience till I come again, and tell you what theſe folks reſolve to do with you;

you; wherewith ſhe returned to thoſe country people, which were about ſome hundred perſons, with whom ſhe entred into a great conteſtation, but at length ſhe came back with one of their Prieſts, attired in a long gown of red damask; which is an ornament of chiefeſt dignity among them, in this equipage he came to us with an handful of ears of corn in his hand; Then having commanded us to approach unto him, we preſently obeyed him with all kind of reſpect, but he little regarded it, ſeeing us ſo poor; whereupon after he had thrown the ears of corn into the fountain, he willed us to put our hands upon them, which we accordingly having done: *You are to confeſs*, ſaid he unto us, *by this holy and ſolemn oath, that now you take in my preſence upon theſe two ſubſtances of bread and water, which the high Creator of all things hath made by his holy will to ſuſtain and nouriſh all that is born into the world, during the pilgrimage of this life, whether that which you told this woman but now be true, for upon that condition we will give you lodging in this village conformably to the charities we are bound to exerciſe towards Gods poor people; whereas contrarily, if it be not ſo, I command you in his Name that you preſently get you gone, upon pain of being bitten and deſtroyed by the teeth of the gluttenous Serpent, that makes his abode in the bottom of the houſe of ſmoak.* Hereunto we anſwered, that we had ſaid nothing but what was moſt true, wherewith the Prieſt remaining ſatisfied; ſince you are, ſaid he, ſuch as you ſay, come you along boldly with me, and rely on my word: Then returning with us to the inhabitants of the place, he told them that they might beſtow their alms upon us without offence, and that he gave them permiſſion ſo to do, whereupon we were preſently conducted into the Village, and lodged in the porch of their *Pagode*, or Temple, where we were furniſhed with all that was needful for us, and had two mats given us to lie upon: The next morning as ſoon as it was day, we went up and down the ſtreet, begging from door to door, and got four *Taeis* in ſilver, wherewith we ſupplied our moſt preſſing neceſſities. After this we went away to another place, called *Xiangunlea*, that was not above two leagues from that, with a reſolution to travel in that ſort, as it were in pilgrimage, to the City of *Nanquin*, to which it was then ſome hundred and forty leagues; for we thought that from thence we might go to *Cantano*, where our ſhips traded at that time, and it may be our deſigne had ſucceeded, had it not been for ill fortune. About even-ſong we arrived at that village, where we ſat us down under the ſhadow of a great tree that ſtood by it ſelf, but it was our ill hap to meet with three boyes that kept certain cattel there, who no ſooner perceived us, but betaking them to their heels, they cried out, Thieves, thieves, whereat the inhabitants came inſtantly running out, armed with lances and croſ-bowes, crying out, ſtop the thieves, ſtop the thieves; and ſo perceiving us, that fled from them, they mauld us cruelly with ſtones and ſtaves, in ſuch manner as we were all of us grievouſly hurt, eſpecially one of our boyes that died upon it; Then ſeizing on us, they tied our arms behind us, and leading us like priſoners into the village, they ſo beat and buffeted us with their fiſts, as they had almoſt killed us, then they plunged us into a ciſtern of ſtanding water, that reached up to our waſts, wherein were a great number of horſe-leeches; In this miſerable place we remained two days, which ſeemed two hundred years to us, having neither reſt, nor any thing to eat all that time: At laſt, it was our good fortune, that a man of *Zuzoangance*, from whence we came, paſſing by, chanced to underſtand how we had been uſed by thoſe of the Village, and thereupon went and told them, that they did us great wrong to take us for thieves, for that we were poor ſtrangers, which had been caſt away by a ſtorm at ſea, wherefore they had committed a great ſin to impriſon, and handle us in that ſort; The report of this man wrought ſo effectually with them, that we were preſently taken out of the ciſtern, being all gore blood with the ſucking of the horſe-leeches, and I verily believe that if we had ſtayed there but one day longer, we had all of us been dead: So we departed from this place about evening, and bewayling our bad fortune, continuing on our voyage.

§. 5. After our departure from *Xiangunlea* we arrived at a Village, inhabited by very poor people, where we met with three men that were pilling Flax, who as ſoon as they ſaw us forſook their work, and fled haſtily away into a wood of Firr trees, there they cryed out to thoſe that paſſed by to take heed of us for that we were thieves, wherenpon fearing to incur the ſame danger whence we ſo lately eſcaped, we got us away preſently from that place, although it was almoſt night, and continued our journie, in the rain and the dark, without knowing whither we went, till we came to a gate where Cattel were kept, and there we lay the reſt of the night upon a little heap of ſtraw. The next morning as ſoon as it

it was day we got again into the way which we had left, and not long after we diſcovered from the top of a little hill a great plain full of trees, and in the midſt thereof a very fair Houſe hard by a River, whither forthwith we went, and ſate us down by a fountain that was before the outer gate, where we remained two or three hours without ſeeing any body, at length a young Gentleman about ſixteen or ſeventeen years of age came riding upon a very good Horſe, accompanied with four men on foot, whereof one carried two Hares, and another five *Nivatores*, which are Fowls reſembling our Pheſants, with a Goſ-Hawk on his fiſt, and three or four couple of Spaniels at their heels; when this Gentleman came at us he ſtaid his Horſe, to ask us who we were, and whether we would have any thing with him. Hereunto we anſwered as well as we could, and made him an ample Relation of the whole event of our ſhipwrack, whereat he ſeemed to be very ſorry, as we could gather by his countenance, ſo that ere he went, Stay there, ſaid he unto us, for by and by I will ſend you what you have need of, and that for his ſake that with a glory of great riches lives raigning in the higheſt of all the Heavens. A little after he ſent an old woman for us, which was apparelled in a long garment, with a Chaplet hanging down on her neck, the good Dame coming to us, The ſon of him ſaid ſhe, whom we hold for Maſter in this houſe, and whoſe Rice we eat, hath ſent for you, follow me then with all humlity, to the end you may not ſeem idle fellows to thoſe that ſhall ſee you, and ſuch as beg onely to be exempted from getting your living by the labour of your hands; This ſaid, we entred with her into an outward court, all about invironed with Galleries, as if it had been ſome Cloiſter of Religious perſons, on the walls whereof were painted divers women on Horſeback going on hunting with Hawks on their fiſts; over the gate of this Court was a great arch very richly engraven, in the midſt whereof hung a Scutcheon of Arms, in the faſhion of a ſhield, faſtned to a ſilver chain, within it was a man painted almoſt in the form of a *Tortois*, with the feet up, and the head downwards, and round about it theſe words were read for a device, *Ingualec finguan, potim aquarau*, that is to ſay, *So is it with all that appertains to me*; We learnt afterwards, that by this Monſter the Figure of the world was repreſented, which the *Chineſes* depaint in this manner to demonſtrate that there is nothing in it but falſhood, and ſo to diſ-abuſe all them that make ſuch account of it by making them to ſee how all things in it are turned upſide down. Out of this Court we went up a broad pair of ſtairs, made of fair hewed ſtone, and entred into a great Hall, where a woman of about fiftie years of age, was ſet upon a Tapeſtry Carpet, having two young Gentlewomen by her ſide, that were exceeding fair, and richly apparelled, with chains of Pearl about their necks, and hard by them was a reverend old man laid upon a little bed, whom one of the two Gentlewomen fanned with a Vintiloe; at his Beds head ſtood the young Gentleman that had ſent for us, and a little further off upon another Carpet nine young maids, clothed in Crimſon and white Damask, ſate ſowing; as ſoon as we came before the old man we fell on our knees, and asked an almes of him, beginning our ſpeech with tears, and in the beſt terms that the time and our neceſſities could inſpire us with, whereupon the old Lady beckning to us with her hand, *Come, weep no more*, ſaid ſhe, *for it grieves me much to ſee you ſhed ſo many tears, it is ſufficient that I know you deſire an almes of us*; then the old man that lay in the bed ſpake unto us, and demanded whether any of us knew what was good for a Fever? Whereat the young Gentlewoman that fanned him, not able to forbear ſmiling: *Sir*, ſaid ſhe, *they have more need that you would be pleaſed to give order for the ſatisfying of their hunger, then to be queſtioned about a matter which it is likely they are ignorant of, wherefore me thinks it were better firſt to give them what they want, and afterwards to talk with them about that which concerns them leſſe*; For theſe words the Mother reprehending her, *Go to*, ſaid ſhe, *you will ever be prating when you ſhould not, but ſurely I ſhall make you leave this cuſtome*; whereunto the daughter ſmiling, replied, *That you ſhall when you pleaſe, but in the mean time I beſeech you, let theſe poor ſtrangers have ſomething to eat*: For all this the old man would not give over queſtioning us, for he demanded of us who we were, of what country, and whither we were going, beſides many other ſuch like things? To which we anſwered as occaſion required, and reconnted unto him, how, when, and in what place we had ſuffered ſhipwrack, as alſo how many of our company were drowned, and that thus wandring we travelled up and down not knowing whither to addreſſe our ſelves. This anſwer rendred the old man penſive for a while, until at length turning him to his ſon, Well now, ſaid he unto him, what

thinkeſt

thinkeſt thou of that which thou haſt heard theſe ſtrangers deliver? It were good for thee to imprint it well in thy memory, to the end it may teach thee to know God better, and give him thanks for that he hath given thee a Father, who to exempt thee from the labours and neceſſities of this life hath parted with three of the goodlieſt things in this Country, whereof the leaſt is worth above a hundred thouſand *Taeis*, and beſtowed them on thee, but thou art of a humour more inclined to hunt a Hare, then to retain this which I now tell thee; The young Gentleman made no reply, but ſmiling looked upon his Siſters. Then the old man cauſed meat to be brought unto us before him, and commanded us to fall to it, as we moſt willingly did, whereat he took great pleaſure, in regard his ſtomack was quite gone with his ſickneſs, but his young daughters much more, who with their brother did nothing but laugh to ſee us feed our ſelves with our hands, for that is contrary to the cuſtome which is obſerved throughout the whole Empire of *China*, where the Inhabitants at their meat carry it to their mouthes with two little ſticks made like a pair of Cizers; After we had given God thanks, the old man that had well obſerved us, lifting up his hands to heaven, with tears in his eyes, *Lord*, ſaid he, *that liveſt raigning in the tranquility of thy high Wiſdome, I laud thee in all humility for that thou permitteſt men that are ſtrangers, come from the fartheſt end of the world, and without the knowledge of thy doctrine, to render thee thanks, and give thee praiſe according to their weak capacity, which makes me beleeve that thou wilt accept of them with as good a will, as if it were ſome great offering of melodious muſick, agreeable to thine eares.* Then he cauſed three pieces of linnen cloth, and four *Taeis* of Silver to be given us, willing us withall to paſſe that night in his houſe, becauſe it was ſomewhat too late for us to proceed on our journey; This offer we moſt gladly accepted, and with complements, after the manner of the Country we teſtified our thankfulneſs to him, wherewith himſelf, his wife, and his ſon reſted very well ſatisfied.

## Chap. XXVII.

### *Our arrival at the Town of* Taypor, *where we were made Priſoners, and ſo ſent to the Citie of* Nanquin.

THe next morning by break of day parting from that place, we went to a Village called *Einginilau*, which was ſome four leagues from the old Gentlemans houſe, where we remained three dayes, and then continuing travelling from one place to another, and from Village to Village, ever declining the great Towns, for fear leſt the Juſtice of the country ſhould call us in queſtion in regard we were ſtrangers; in this manner we ſpent almoſt two months without receiving the leaſt damage from any body. Now there is no doubt but we might eaſily have got to the Citie of *Nanquin* in that time if we had had a guide, but for want of knowing the way we wandred we knew not whither, ſuffering much, and running many hazards; At length we arrived at a Village, named *Chaucer*, at ſuch a time as they were ſolemnizing a ſumptuous Funeral of a very rich woman, that had diſinherited her kinſfred, and left her eſtate to the Pagod of this Village, where ſhe was buried, as we underſtood by the Inhabitants; We were invited then to this Funeral, as other poor people were, and according to the cuſtome of the Country we did eat on the grave of the deceaſed: At the end of three dayes that we ſtayed there, which was the time the funeral laſted, we had ſix *Taeis* given us for an Alms, conditionally that in all our Oraiſons we ſhould pray unto God for the ſoul of the departed. Being gone from this place we continued on our journey to another Village, called *Guinapalir*, from whence we were almoſt two months travelling from country to country, untill at laſt our ill fortune brought us to a Town, named *Taypor*, where by chance there was at that time a *Chumbrin*, that is to ſay, one of thoſe Super-Intendents of Juſtice, that every three years are ſent throughout the Provinces for to make report unto the King of all that paſſeth there: This naughty man ſeeing us go begging from door to door called to us from a window where he was, and would know of us who we were, and of what Nation, as alſo what obliged us to run up and down the World in that manner? Having asked us theſe queſtions in the preſence of three Regiſters, and of many other perſons, that were gathered together to behold us, we anſwered him, that we were ſtrangers, Natives of the Kingdom of *Siam*, who being caſt away by a ſtorm at Sea went thus travelling and begging our living, to the end we might ſuſtain our ſelves with the charity of good people, until ſuch time as we could arrive at *Nan-* §. 1

*quin*,

*quin*, whither we were going with an intent to imbarque our ſelves there in ſome of the Merchants *Lanteaas* for *Canton*, where the ſhipping of our Nation lay. This anſwer we made unto the *Chumbim*, who queſtionleſs had been well enough contented with it, and would have let us go, had it been for one of his Clarks, for he told them that we were idle vagabonds, that ſpent our time in begging from door to door, and abuſing the alms that were given us, and therefore he was at no hand to let us go free, for fear of incurring the puniſhment, ordained for ſuch as offend in that ſort, as is ſet forth in the ſeventh of the twelve books of the Statutes of the Realm; wherefore as his faithful ſervant he counſelled him to lay us in good and ſure hold, that we might be forth-coming to anſwer the Law: The *Chumbim* preſently followed his Clarks advice, and carried himſelf toward us with as much barbarous cruelty, as could be expected from a Pagan, ſuch as he was, that lived without God or religion; To which effect after he had heard a number of falſe witneſſes, who charged us with many foul crimes, whereof we never ſo much as dreamt, he cauſed us to be put into a deep dungeon, with irons on our hands and feet, and great iron collars about our necks; In this miſerable place we endured ſuch hunger, and were ſo fearfully whipped, that we were in perpetual pain for ſix and twenty days together, at the end whereof we were by the ſentence of the ſame *Chumbim* ſent to the Parliament of the *Cheam* of *Nanquin*, becauſe the Juriſdiction of this extended not to the condemnation of any priſoner to death.

§. 2 We remained ſix and twenty days in that cruel priſon, whereof I ſpake before, and I vow we thought we had been ſix and twenty thouſand years there, in regard of the great miſery we ſuffered in it, which was ſuch, as one of our companions called *Joano Roderiguez Bravo*, died in our arms, being eaten up with lice, we being no way able to help him, and it was almoſt a miracle that the reſt of us eſcaped alive from that filthy vermine; At length, one morning, when we thought of nothing leſs, loden with irons as we were, and ſo weak that we could hardly ſpeak, we were drawn out of that priſon, and then being chained one to another, we were imbarqued with many others, to the number of thirty or forty, that having been convicted for ſundry hainous crimes, were alſo ſent to the Parliament of *Nanquin*, where, as I have already declared, is always reſiding a *Chaem* of Juſtice, which is like to the Sovereign Title of the Vice-roy of *China*: There is likewiſe a Parliament of ſome five and twenty *Gerozemos* and *Feruenas*, which are as thoſe we call Judges with us, and that determine all cauſes, as well civil as criminal: So as there is no appeal from their ſentence, unleſs it be unto another Court, which hath power even over the King himſelf, whereunto if one appeals, it is as if he appealed to heaven: To underſtand this the better, you muſt know that although this Parliament, and others ſuch like, which are in the principal Cities of the Realm, have an abſolute power from the King, both over all criminal & civil cauſes, without any oppoſition or appeal whatſoever, yet there is another Court of Juſtice, which is called the Court of the Creator of all things, whereunto it is permitted to appeal in weighty and important matters: In this Court are ordinarily aſſiſting four & twenty *Menigrepos*, which are certain religious men, very auſtere in their manner of living, ſuch as the *Capuchins* are amongſt the Papiſts, & verily if they were Chriſtians, one might hope for great matters from them in regard of their marvellous abſtinence, & ſincerity: There are none admitted into this rank of Judges under ſeventy years of age, & are elected thereunto by the ſuffrages of their chiefeſt Prelates, moſt incorruptible men, & ſo juſt in all the cauſes, whereof there are appeals before them, as it is not poſſible to meet with more upright, for were it againſt the King himſelf, and againſt all the powers that may be imagined in the world, no conſideration, how great ſoever, is able to make them ſwerve never ſo little from that they think to be juſtice. Having been imbarqued in the manner I ſpake of, the ſame day at night we went & lay at a great tower, called *Potinlen*, in one of the priſons, whereof were mained nine days, by reaſon of the much rain that fell then upon the conjunction of the New-moon: There we happened to meet with a *Ruſſian* priſoner, that received us very charitably, of whom demanding in the *Chineſe* tongue, which he underſtood as well as we, what countrey-man he was, and what fortune had brought him thither; he told us, that he was of *Moſcovy*, born in a town, named *Hiquegens*, and that ſome five years paſt, being accuſed for the death of a man, he had been condemned to a perpetual priſon, but as a ſtranger he appealed from that ſentence to the tribunal of the *Aytan* of *Batampina*, in the City of *Pequin*, who was the higheſt of the two and thirty Admirals, eſtabliſhed in this Empire, that is, for every Kingdom one: He added further, that this Admiral by a particular Juriſdiction, had abſolute power over all ſtrangers, whereupon he hoped to find ſome relief from him, intending to go and die a Chriſtian among the Chriſtians, if he might have the

good

good hap to be ſet at liberty. After we had paſſed thoſe nine days in this priſon, being reinbarqued, we ſayled up a great river ſeven days together, at the end whereof we arrived at *Nanquin*. As this City is the ſecond of all the Empire, ſo is it alſo the Capital of the three Kingdoms of *Liampoo*, *Fanius*, and *Samber*: Here we lay ſix weeks in priſon, and ſuffered ſo much pain and miſery, as reduced to the laſt extreamities, we died incenſibly for want of ſuccour, not able to do any thing, but look up to heaven with a pitiful eye; for it was our ill fortune to have all that we had ſtoln from us the firſt night we came thither: This priſon was ſo great, that there were four thouſand priſoners in it at that time, as we were credibly informed, ſo that one ſhould hardly ſit down in any place without being robbed, and filled full of lice: having layn there a month and an half, as I ſaid, the Anchacy, who was one of the Judges before whom our cauſe was to be pleaded, pronounced our ſentence at the Suit of the Attorny General, the tenor whereof was, That having ſeen and conſidered our proceſs, which the *Chumbin* of *Tayper* had ſent him, it appeared by the accuſations laid to our charge, that we were very hainous malefactors, & though we denied many things, yet in juſtice no credit was to be given unto us, & therefore that we were to be publickly whipped, for to teach us to live better in time to come, and that withall our two thumbs ſhould be cut off, wherewith it was evident by manifeſt ſuſpicions, that we uſed to commit robberies, and other vile crimes; & furthermore, that for the remainder of the puniſhment we deſerved, he referred us to the *Ajtan* of *Batanpina*, unto whom it appertained to take cogniſance of ſuch cauſes, in regard of the Juriſdiction that he had of life and death. This Sentence was pronounced in the priſon, where it had been better for us to have ſuffered death, then the ſtripes that we received, for all the ground round about us ran with blood upon our whiping, ſo that it was almoſt a miracle, that of the eleven which we were, nine eſcaped alive, for two of our company died three days after, beſides one of our ſervants.

After we had been whipped in that manner, I have declared, we were carried into a great Chamber, that was in the priſon, where were a number of ſick, and diſeaſed perſons, lying upon beds, and other ways; There we had preſently our ſtripes waſhed, and things applyed unto them, whereby we were ſomewhat eaſed of our pain, and that by men, much like unto the fraternity of mercy among the Papiſts, which only out of charity, and for the honour of God, do tend thoſe that are ſick, and liberally furniſh them with all things neceſſary. Hereafter ſome eleven or twelve days, we began to be pretily recovered, and as we were lamenting our ill fortune, for being ſo rigorouſly condemned to loſe our thumbs, it pleaſed God one morning, when as we little dreamt of it, that we eſpied two men come into the chamber, of a good aſpect, clothed in long gowns of violet coloured ſatin, & carrying white rods in their hands; As ſoon as they arrived, all the ſick perſons in the Chamber cried out, *Bleſſed be the Miniſters of the Works of God*: whereunto they anſwered, holding up their rods, *May it pleaſe God to give you patience in your adverſity*: whereupon having diſtributed clothes and money to thoſe that were next to them, they came unto us, and after they had ſaluted us very courteouſly, with demonſtration of being moved at our tears, they asked us who we were, and of what countrey, as alſo why we were impriſoned there: whereunto we anſwered weeping, that we were ſtrangers, natives of the Kingdom of *Siam*, and of a country called *Malaca*, that being Merchants and well to live, we had imbarqued our ſelves with our goods, and being bound for *Liampoo*, we had been caſt away juſt againſt the Iſles of *Laman*, having loſt all that we had, and nothing left us but our miſerable bodies in the caſe they now ſaw us; moreover we added, that being thus evil intreated by fortune, arriving at the City of *Tayper*, the *Chumbin* of Juſtice had cauſed us to be apprehended without any cauſe, laying to our charge, that we were thieves and vagabonds, who to avoid pains-taking went begging from door to door, entertaining our idle lazineſs with the alms that were given us unjuſtly, whereof the *Chumbin* having made informations at his pleaſure, as being both Judg and party, he had laid us in irons in the priſon, where for two and forty days ſpace, we had indured incredible pain and hunger, and no man would hear us in our juſtifications, as well becauſe we had not wherewithall to give preſents for to maintain our right, as for that we wanted the language of the Country. In concluſion, we told them, how in the mean time, without any cogniſance of the cauſe, we had been condemned to be whipped, as alſo to have our thumbs cut off, like thieves, ſo that we had already ſuffered the firſt puniſhment, with ſo much rigour and cruelty, that the marks thereof remained but two viſibly upon our wretched bodies, and therefore we conjured them by the charge they had to ſerve God in aſſiſting the afflicted, that they would not abandon us in this need, the rather for that our extream poverty rendred us odious to all the world, and ex- §. 3.

poſed us to the induring of all affronts. Theſe two men having heard us attentively, remained very penſive and amazed at our ſpeech; at length lifting up their eyes, all bathed with tears, to heaven, and kneeling down on the ground, *O almighty Lord*, ſaid they, *that governeſt in the higheſt places, and whoſe patience is incomprehenſible, be thou evermore bleſſed, for that thou art pleaſed to harken unto the complaints of neceſſitous and miſerable men, to the end that the great offences committed againſt thy divine goodneſs by the Miniſters of Juſtice may not reſt unpuniſhed, as we hope that by thy holy Law they will be chaſtiſed at one time or other.* Whereupon they informed themſelves more amply by thoſe who were about us, of what we had told them, and preſently ſending for the Regiſter, in whoſe hands our ſentence was, they ſtraitly commanded him, that upon pain of grievous puniſhment he ſhould forthwith bring them all the proceedings which had been uſed againſt us, as inſtantly he did; now the two Officers, ſeeing there was no remedy for the whipping that we had ſuffered, preſented a Petition in our behalf unto the *Chaem*, whereunto this Anſwer was returned by the Court; *Mercy hath no place, where Juſtice looſeth her name, in regard whereof your requeſt cannot be granted.* This Anſwer was ſubſcribed by the *Chaem*, and eight *Conchacis*, that are like criminal Judges. This hard proceeding much aſtoniſhed theſe two Proctors for the poor, ſo named from their office, wherefore carried with an extream deſire to draw us out of this miſery, they preſently preferred another Petition to the Soveraign Court of Juſtice, of which I ſpake in the precedent Chapter, where the *Menigrepos* and *Talegrepos* were Judges, an Aſſembly which in their language is called, *The breath of the Creator of all things.* In this Petition, as ſinners, confeſſing all that we were accuſed of, we had recourſe to mercy, which ſorted well for us; for as ſoon as the Petition was preſented unto them, they read the Proceſſe quite through, and finding that our right was overborn for want of ſuccour, they inſtantly diſpatched away two of their Court, who with an expreſſe Mandate under their hands and Seals, went and prohibited the *Chaems* Court from intermedling with this cauſe, which they commanded away before them. In obedience to this Prohibition the *Chaems* Court made this Decree, *We, that are aſſembled in this Court of Juſtice of the Lyon crowned in the throne of the World, having peruſed the Petition preſented to the four and twenty Judges of the auſtere life, do conſent, that thoſe nine ſtrangers be ſent by way of appeal to the Court of the* Aytau *of* Aytaus *in the Citie of* Pequin, *to the end that in mercy the ſentence pronounced againſt them may be favourably moderated: Given the ſeventh day of the fourth Moon, in the three and twentieth year of the raign of the Son of the Sun.* This Decree, being ſigned by the *Chaem*, and the eight *Conchacis*, was preſently brought us by the two Proctors for the poor, upon the Receit whereof we told them, that we could but pray unto God to reward them for the good they had done us for his ſake; whereunto beholding us with an eye of pitie, they anſwered, *May his Celeſtial goodneſs direct you in the knowledge of his Works, that thereby you may with patience gather the fruit of your labours, as they which fear to offend his holy Name.*

§. 4. After we had paſt all the adverſities and miſeries, whereof I have ſpoken before, we were imbarqued in the company of ſome other thirty or forty Priſoners, that were ſent, as we were, from this Court of Juſtice to that other Soveraign one by way of appeal, there to be either acquitted or condemned, according to the crimes they had committed, and the puniſhment they had deſerved. Now a day before our departure, being imbarqued in a *Lanteaa*, and chained three and three together, the two Proctors for the poor came to us, and firſt of all furniſhing us with all things needful, as clothes, and Victuals, they asked us whether we wanted any thing elſe for our Voyage? Whereunto we anſwered, that all we could deſire of them was, that they would be pleaſed to convert that further good they intended to us into a Letter of Recommendation unto the Officers of that holy Fraternity of the Citie of *Pequin*, thereby to oblige them to maintain the right of our cauſe, in regard (as they very well knew) they ſhould otherwiſe be ſure to be utterly abandoned of every one, by reaſon they were ſtrangers and altogether unknown. The Proctors hearing us ſpeak in this manner: *Say not ſo*, replyed they, *for though your ignorance diſcharges you before God, yet have you committed a great ſin, becauſe the more you are abaſed in the world through poverty, the more ſhall you be exalted before the eyes of his divine Majeſty, if you patiently bear your croſſes, whereunto the fleſh indeed doth always oppoſe it ſelf, being evermore rebellious againſt the Spirit, but as a Bird cannot fly without her wings, no more can the ſoul meditate without Works: As for the Letter you require of us, we will give it you moſt willingly, knowing it will*

be

*be very neceſſary for you, to the end that the favour of good people be not wanting to you in your need.* This ſaid they gave us a ſack ful of Rice, together with four *Taeis* in ſilver, and a Coverlet to lay upon us; Then having very much recommended us unto the *Chiſun*, who was the Officer of juſtice that conducted us, they took their leaves of us in moſt courteous manner; The next morning as ſoon as it was day they ſent us the Letter, ſealed with three Seals in green Wax, the Contents whereof were theſe; *Ye ſervants of that high Lord, the reſplendent mirrour of an uncreated light, before whom our merits are nothing in compariſon of his, we the leaſt ſervants of that holy houſe of* Tauhinatel, *that was founded in favour of the fifth priſon of* Nanquin, *with true words of reſpect, which we owe unto you, we give your moſt humble perſons to underſtand, that theſe nine ſtrangers, the bearers of this Letter, are men of a far country, whoſe bodies and goods have been ſo cruelly intreated by the furie of the ſea, that according to their report, of ninety and five that they were, they only have eſcaped ſhipwrack, being caſt by the tempeſt on the ſhore of the Iſles of* Tautaa, *upon the coaſt of the Bay of* Sumbor: *In which pitious and lamentable caſe, as we have ſeen them with our own eyes, begging their living from place to place of ſuch, as charitie obliged to give them ſomething after the manner of good folkes, it was their ill fortune without all reaſon or juſtice to be apprehended by the Chumbin of* Taypor, *and ſent to this fifth priſon of* Fanim, *where they were condemned to be whipped, which was immediatly executed upon them by the Miniſters of the diſpleaſed arm, as by their Proceſs better appeareth: But afterwards, when as through too much cruelcie their thumbs were to be cut off, they with tears beſought us, for that Soveraign Lords ſake, in whoſe ſervice we are imployed, to be aſſiſting unto them, which preſently undertaken by us we preferred a Petition in their behalf, whereunto this Anſwer was made by the Court of the crowned Lyon, That mercy had no place where juſtice loſt her name; whereupon provoked by a true zeal to Gods honour, we addreſſed our ſelves to the Court of thoſe four and twenty of the auſtere life, who carried by a bleſſed devotion inſtantly aſſembled in the Holy Houſe of the remedy for the poor, and of an extream deſire they had to ſuccour theſe miſerable creatures, they interdicted that great Court from proceeding any further againſt them, and accordingly the ſucceſs was agreeable to the mercy of ſo great a God, for theſe laſt Judges revoking the others firſt Sentence, ſent the cauſe by way of Appeal to your Citie of* Pequin *with amendment of the ſecond puniſhment, as you may ſee more at large by the proceedings; In regard whereof, moſt reverend and humble Brethren, We beſeech you all in the Name of God to be favourable unto them, and to aſſiſt them with whatſoever you ſhall thinke neceſſary for them, that they may not be oppreſſed in thier right which is a very great ſin, and an eternal infamy to us, who again intreat you to ſupply them with your Alms, and beſtow on them means to cover their nakedneſs, to the end they may not periſh for want of help, which if you do there is no doubt but that ſo pious a work will be moſt acceptable to that Lord above, to whom the poor of the earth do continually pray, and are heard in the Higheſt of Heavens, as we hold for an Article of Faith; On which earth may it pleaſe that divine Majeſtie, for whoſe ſake we do this, to preſerve us till death, and to render us worthy of his preſence in the houſe of the Sun, where he is ſeated with all his.* Written in the Chamber of the zeal of Gods honour, the ninth day of the ſeventh Moon, and the three and twentieth year of the Raign of the Lyon crowned in the Throne of the World.

## Chap. XXVIII.

*The Marvels of the Citie of* Nanquin, *our departure from thence towards* Pequin, *and that which hapned unto us, till we arrived at the Town of* Sempitay.

THis Letter being brought to us very early the next morning, we departed in the manner before declared, and continued our voyoge till Sun-ſet, when as we anchored at a little Village, named *Minhaantou*, where the *Chiſun*, that conducted us, was born, and where his Wife and Children were at that time, which was the occaſion that he remained there three dayes, at the end whereof he imbarqued himſelf with his family, and ſo we paſſed on in the company of divers other Veſſels, that went upon this River unto divers parts of this Empire: Now though we were all tyed together to the bank of the *Lanteau*, where we rowed, yet did we not for all that loſe the view of many Towns and Villages that were ſituated along this River, whereof I hold it not amiſſe to make ſome deſcriptions; To which effect, I will begin with the Citie of *Nanquin* from whence we laſt paſſed; This

City is under the North in nine and thirty degrees, and three quarters, ſeituated upon the river of *Batampina*, which ſignifies, *The flower of fiſh*. This river, as we were told then, and as I have ſeen ſince, comes from *Tartaria*, out of a lake, called *Faniſtor*, nine leagues from the City of *Lancama*, where *Tamberlan*, King of the *Tartarians* uſually kept his Court; Out of the ſame lake, which is eight and twenty leagues long, twelve broad, and of a mighty depth, the greateſt rivers, that ever I ſaw, take their ſource; The firſt is the ſame *Batampina*, that paſſing through the midſt of this Empire of *China* three hundred and threeſcore leagues in length, diſimboques into the ſea at the bay of *Nanquin* in thirty ſix degrees; The ſecond, named *Lechuna*, runs with great ſwiftneſs all along by the mountains of *Pancruum*, which ſeparate the Country of *Cauchim*, and the State of *Catebenan*, in the height of ſixteen degrees; The third is called *Tanquida*, ſignifying the *Mother of waters*, that going North-weſt, traverſeth the Kingdom of *Nacataas*, a Country where *China* was anciently ſeated, as I will declare hereafter, and enters into the ſea in the Empire of *Sornau*, vulgarly ſtiled *Siam*, by the mouth of *Cuy*, one hundred and thirty leagues below *Patana*; The fourth, named *Batobaſoy*, deſcends out of the Province of *Sanſim*, which is the very ſame that was quite overwhelmed by the ſea in the year 1556. as I purpoſe to ſhew elſe-where, and renders it ſelf into the ſea at the mouth of *Coſmim*, in the Kingdom of *Pegu*; The fifth and laſt, called *Leyſacotay*, croſſeth the Country by *Eaſt* as far as to the *Archipelago* of *Xinxipon*, that borders upon *Moscovye*, and fals, as is thought, into a ſea that is not navigable, by reaſon the clymate there is in the height of ſeventy degrees. Now to return to my diſcourſe, the City of *Nanquin*, as I ſaid before, is ſeated by this river of *Batampina*, upon a reaſonable high hill, ſo as it commands all the plains about it; The climate thereof is ſomewhat cold, but very healthy, and it is eight leagues about, which way ſoever it is conſidered, three leagues broad, and one long; The houſes in it are not above two ſtories high, and all built of wood, only thoſe of the *Mandarins* are made of hewed ſtone, and alſo inviroued with walls and ditches, over which are ſtone bridges, whereon they paſſe to the gates, that have rich and coſtly arches, with divers ſorts of inventions upon the towers, all which put together, make a pleaſing object to the eye, and repreſent a certain kind of I know not what Majeſty. The houſes of the *Chaems*, *Anchacys*, *Aytaus*, *Tutous*, and *Chunibims*, which are all Governours of Provinces or Kingdoms, have ſtately towers, ſix or ſeven ſtories high, and guilt all over, wherein they have their magazines for arms, their Wardrobes, their treaſuries, and a world of rich houſhold-ſtuff, as alſo many other things of great value, together with an infinite of delicate and moſt fine porcelain, which amongſt them is priſed and eſteemed as much as precious ſtone, for this ſort of porcelain never goes out of the Kingdom, it being expreſly forbidden by the laws of the Country, to be ſold, upon pain of death to any ſtranger, unleſſe to the *Xatamaas*, that is, the *Sophyes* of the *Perſians*, who by a particular permiſſion buy of it at a very dear rate. The *Chineſes* aſſured us, that in this City there are eight hundred thouſand fires, fourſcore thouſand *Mandarins* houſes, threeſcore and two great market places, an hundred and thirty butchers ſhambles, each of them containing fourſcore ſhops, and eight thouſand ſtreets, whereof ſix hundred that are fairer and larger then the reſt, are compaſſed about with balliſters of copper; we were further aſſured, that there are likewiſe two thouſand and three hundred *Pagodes*, a thouſand of which were *Moneſtaries* of religious perſons, profeſſed in their accurſed Sect, whoſe buildings were exceeding rich and ſumptuous, with very high ſteeples, wherein there were between ſixty and ſeventy ſuch mighty huge bels, that it was a dreadful thing to here them rung; There are moreover in this City thirty great ſtrong priſons, each whereof hath three or four thouſand priſoners; and a charitable Hoſpital, expreſly eſtabliſhed to ſupply the neceſſities of the poor, with Proctors ordained for their defence, both in civil and criminal cauſes, as is before related; At the entrance into every principal ſtreet, there are arches and great gates, which for each mans ſecurity, are ſhut every night, and in moſt of the ſtreets are goodly fountains whoſe water is excellent to drink; Beſides, at every full and new moon, open fayrs are kept in ſeveral places, whither Merchants reſort from all parts, and where there is ſuch abundance of all kind of victual, as cannot well be expreſt, eſpecially of fiſh and fruit; It is not poſſible to deliver the great ſtore of fiſh that is taken in this river, chiefly Soles and Mullets, which are all ſold alive, beſides a world of ſea-fiſh, both freſh, ſalted, and dried; we were told by certain *Chineſes*, that in this City there are ten thouſand trades for the working of ſilks, which from thence are ſent all over the Kingdom; The City it ſelf is invironed with a very ſtrong wall, made of fair hewed ſtone; The gates of it are an hundred and thirty, at each of which there is a Porter, and

two

two Halberdiers, who are bound to give an account every day of all that paſſes in and out; There are alſo twelve Forts or Cittadels, like unto ours, with bulwarks and very high towers, but without any ordinance at all. The ſame *Chineſes* alſo affirmed unto us, that the City yielded the King daily two thouſand *Taeis* of ſilver, which amount to three thouſand duckats, as I have delivered heretofore; I will not ſpeak of the Pallace royal, becauſe I ſaw it but on the outſide, howbeit the *Chineſes* tell ſuch wonders of it, as would amaze a man, for it is my intent to relate nothing ſave what we beheld here with our own eyes, and that was ſo much as I am afraid to write it, not that it would ſeem ſtrange to thoſe that have ſeen and read the marvels of the Kingdom of *China*, but becauſe I doubt, that they, which would compare thoſe wondrous things that are in the countrys, they have not ſeen with that little they have ſeen in their own will make ſome queſtion of it, or it may be give no credit at all to theſe truth, becauſe they are not conſonable to their underſtanding, and ſmall experience.

Continuing our courſe up this river, the firſt two days we ſaw not any remarkable town or place, but only a great number of Villages, and little hamlets of two or three hundred fires a piece, which by their buildings ſeemed to be houſes of fiſher men, and poor people, that live by the labour of their hands; For the reſt, all that was within view in the countrey, was great woods of Firr, Groves, Forreſts, and Orange trees, as alſo plains full of wheat, rice, beans, peaſe, millet, panick, barley, rye, flax, cotton wool, with great incloſures of gardens, and goodly houſes of pleaſure, belonging to the *Mandarins*, and Lords of the Kingdom: There was likewiſe all along the river ſuch an infinite number of cattel of all ſorts, as I can aſſure you there is not more in *Æthiopia*, nor in all the dominions of *Preſter John*; upon the top of the mountains many houſes of their Sects of *Gentiles* were to be ſeen, adorned with high Steeples guilt all over, the gliſtering whereof was ſuch, and ſo great, that to behold them a far off was an admirable ſight: The fourth day of our voyage we arrived at a town, called *Pocaſſer*, twice as big as *Cantano*, compaſſed about with ſtrong wals of hewed ſtone, and towers and bulwarks almoſt like ours, together with a key on the river ſide, twice as long as the ſhot of a faleonet, and incloſed with two rows of iron grates, with very ſtrong gates, where the Junks and veſſels that arrived there were unladen; This place abounds with all kinds of merchandiſe, which from thence is tranſported over all the Kingdom, eſpecially with copper, ſugar, and allum, whereof there is very great ſtore; Here alſo in the middeſt of a carrefour, that is almoſt at the end of the town, ſtands a mighty ſtrong caſtle, having three bulwarks and five towers, in the higheſt of which the preſent Kings Father, as the *Chineſes* told us, kept a King of *Tartaria* nine years priſoner, at the end whereof he killed himſelf with poyſon, that his ſubjects ſent him, becauſe they would not be conſtrained to pay that ranſome, which the King of *China* demanded for his deliverance: In this town the *Chiſun* gave three of us leave to go up and down for to crave the alms of good people, accompanied with four *Hupos*, that are as Sergeants, or Bailiffs amongſt us, who led us, chained together, as we were, through ſix or ſeven ſtreets, where we got in alms to the value of above twenty duckats, as well in clothes, as mony, beſides fleſh, rice, meal, fruit, and other victuals, which was beſtowed on us, whereof we gave the one half to the *Hupos* that conducted us, it being the cuſtom ſo to do. Afterwards we were brought to a *Pagode*, whither the people flocked from all parts that day, in regard of a very ſolemn feaſt that was then celebrated there: This Temple, or *Pagode*, as we were told, had ſometime been a Pallace royal, where the King then reigning was born, now becauſe the Queen his Mother died there in child-birth, ſhe commanded her ſelf to be buried in the very ſame chamber where ſhe was brought to bed, wherefore to honour her death the better, this Temple was dedicated to the invocation of *Taubinarei*, which is one of the principal Sects of the *Pagans* in the Kingdom of *China*, as I will more amply declare, when as I ſhall ſpeak of the *Labyrinth* of the two and thirty laws that are in it; All the buildings of this Temple, together with all the gardens, and walks, that belong to it, are ſuſpended in the ayr upon three hundred and threeſcore pillars, every one of the which is of one intire ſtone of a very great bigneſs; Theſe three hundred and threeſcore pillars, are called by the names of three hundred and threeſcore days of the year, and in each of them is a particular feaſt kept there with many alms, gifts, and bloody ſacrifices, accompanied with muſick, dancing, and other ſports; Under this *Pagode*, namely between thoſe pillars, are eight very fair ſtreets, incloſed on every ſide with grates of copper, and gates for the paſſage of pilgrims, and others, that run continually to this feaſt, as it were to a Jubilee; The Chamber above, where the Queen lay, was made in the form of a Chappel, but round, and from the top to the bottom all garniſhed

§. 2.

niſhed with ſilver, the workmanſhip whereof was of greater coſt then the matter it ſelf; In the midſt of it ſtood a kind of Tribunal, framed round, like the Chamber, ſome fifteen ſteps high, compaſſed about with ſix graves of ſilver, on the top whereof was a great bowl, and upon that a Lion of ſilver, that with his head ſupported a ſhrine of gold, three hand-bredths ſquare, wherein they ſaid, the bones of the Queen were, which theſe blinded ignorants reverenced as a great relique; Below this Tribunal in equal proportion were four bars of ſilver, that traverſed the Chamber, whereon hung three and forty lamps of the ſame mettal, in memory of the three and forty years that this Queen lived, and ſeven lamps of gold in commemoration of ſeven ſons that ſhe had; moreover at the entry into the Chappel, juſt againſt the door, were eight other bars of iron, whereon alſo hung a very great number of ſilver lamps, which the *Chineſes* told us were offered by ſome of the Wives of the *Chaems*, *Aytaos*, *Tutoens*, and *Anchacys*, who were aſſiſtant at the death of the Queen, ſo that in aknowledgment of that honour they ſent thoſe lamps thither afterwards; without the gates of the Temple, and round about ſix balliſters of copper that invironed it, were a great many Statues of Giants, fifteen foot high, caſt in braſs, all well proportioned with halberts or clubs in their hands, and ſome of them with battle-axes on their ſhoulders, which made ſo brave and majeſticial a ſhew, as one could never be ſatisfied enough with looking on them; Amongſt theſe Statues, which were in number twelve hundred, as the *Chineſes* affirmed, there were four and twenty very great Serpents alſo of braſs, and under every one of them a woman ſeated, with a ſword in her hand, and a ſilver crown on her head; It was ſaid, that thoſe four and twenty women carried the Titles of Queens, becauſe they ſacrificed themſelves to the death of this Queen, to the end their ſouls might ſerve hers in the other life, as in this their bodies had ſerved her body, a matter which the *Chineſes*, that draw their extraction from theſe women, hold for a very great honour, inſomuch as they inrich the creſts of their coats of arms with it; round about this row of Giants was another of triumphant arches, guilt all over, whereon a number of ſilver bels hung by chains of the ſame mettal, which moved with the air kept ſuch a continual ringing, as one could hardly hear one another for the noiſe they made; Without theſe arches there were likewiſe at the ſame diſtance two rows of copper grates, that incloſed all this huge work, and among them certain pillars of the ſame mettal, which ſupported Lions rampant, mounted upon bowls, being the arms of the Kings of *China*, as I have related elſewhere. At each corner of the Carrefour was a monſter of braſs, of ſo ſtrange and unmeaſurable an heighth, and ſo deformed to behold, as it is not poſſible almoſt for a man to imagine, ſo that I think it beſt not to ſpeak of them, the rather for that I confeſs I am not able in words to expreſs the form wherein I ſaw their prodigies; Howbeit as it is reaſonable to conceal theſe things without giving ſome knowledg of them, I will ſay, as much as my weak underſtanding is able to deliver. One of theſe Monſters which is on the right hand, as one comes into the Carrefour, whom the *Chineſes* call, the Serjeant *Gluttons* of the hollow or profound houſe of ſmoak, and that by their hiſtories is held to be *Lucifer*, is repreſented under the figure of a Serpent of an exceſſive heighth, with moſt hideous and deformed adders coming out of his ſtomack, covered all over with green and black ſcales, and a number of prickles on their backs above a ſpan long, like unto Porcupins quils; each of theſe Adders had a woman between his jaws, with her hair all diſhevelled, and ſtanding an end, as one affrighted; The monſter carried alſo in his mouth, which was unmeaſurable great, a Vizard that was above thirty foot long, and as big as a tun, with his noſtrils & chaps ſo full of blood, that all the reſt of his body was beſmeared with it, this Vizard held a great Eliphant between his paws, and ſeemed to gripe him ſo hard, as his very guts came out of his throat, and all this was done ſo proportionably, and to the life, that it made a man tremble to behold ſuch a deformed figure, and which was ſcarce poſſible for one to imagine: His tail might be ſome twenty fathom long, was entortilled about ſuch another Monſter, that was the ſecond of the four, whereof I ſpake, in the figure of a man, being an hundred foot high, and by the *Chineſes* called *Turcamparoo*, who they ſay was the ſon of that Serpent; beſides that he was very ugly, he ſtood with both his hands in his mouth, that was as big as a great gate, with a row of horrible teeth, and a foul black tongue, hanging out two fathom long, moſt dreadfull to behold: As for the other two Monſters, one was in the form of a woman, named by the *Chineſes*, *Magdelgan*, ſeventeen fathom high, and ſix thick; This ſame about the girdleſteed before had a face made proportionable to her body, above two fathom broad, and ſhe breathed out of her mouth and noſtrils great flakes, not of artificial, but true fire, which proceeded, as they told us, from

her

her head, where fire was continually kept, that in like manner came out of the ſaid face below. By this Figure theſe Idolaters would demonſtrate that ſhe was the Queen of the fiery ſphear, which according to their belief is to burn the earth at the end of the World. The fourth Monſter was a man, ſet ſtooping, which with great ſwoln cheeks, as big as the main ſail of a Ship, ſeemed to blow extreamly; this Monſter was alſo of an unmeaſurable height, and of ſuch an hideous and gaſtly aſpect, that a man could hardly endure the ſight of it; the *Chineſes* called it *Uzenguenaboo*, and ſaid, that it was he which raiſed Tempeſts upon the Sea, and demoliſhed Buildings, in regard whereof the people offred many things unto him, to the end he ſhould do them no harm, and many preſented him with a piece of money yearly, that he might not drown their Junks, nor do any of theirs hurt that went by Sea; I will omit many other abuſes which their blindneſs makes them beleeve, and which they hold to be ſo true, as there is not one of them but would endure a thouſand deaths for the maintenance thereof.

The next day being gone from the Town of *Pocaſſer* we arrived at another fair and great Town, called *Xinligau*; there we ſaw many Buildings incloſed with walls of Brick, and deep ditches about them, and at one end of the Town two Caſtles, very well fortified with Towers and Bulwarks after our faſhion; at the gates were draw Bridges, ſuſpended in the air with great Iron chains, and in the midſt of them a Tower five Stories high, very curiouſly painted with ſeveral Pictures; the *Chineſes* aſſured us, that in thoſe two Caſtles there was as much Treaſure, as amounted to fifteen thouſand pieces of ſilver, which was the revenue of all this *Archipelage*, and laid up in this place by the Kings Grandfather now raigning, in Memorial of a Son of his that was born here, and named *Lenquinau*, that is to ſay, *The joy of all*; thoſe of the Country repute him for a Saint, becauſe he ended his dayes in Religion, where alſo he was buried in a Temple, dedicated to *Quiay Varatel*, the God of all the Fiſhes of the Sea, of whom theſe miſerable Ignorants recount a world of Fooleries, as alſo the Laws he invented, and the precepts which he left them, being able to aſtoniſh a man, as I will more amply declare when time ſhall ſerve. In this Town and in another five leagues higher the moſt part of the Silks of this Kingdome are dyed, becauſe they hold that the waters of theſe places make the colours far more lively then thoſe of any other part, and theſe Dyers, which are ſaid to be thirteen thouſand, pay unto the King yearly three hundred thouſand *Taeis*. Continuing our courſe up the River the day after about evening we arrived at certain great plains, where were great ſtore of Cattle, as Horſes, Mares, Colts, and Cows, guarded by men on Horſback, that make ſale of them to Butchers, who afterwards retail them indifferently as any other fleſh: Having paſt theſe plains containing ſome ten or eleven Leagues, we came to a Town called *Junquilen*, walled with Brick, but without Battlements, Bulwarks, or Towers, as others had, whereof I have ſpoken before; at the end of the Suburbs of this Town we ſaw divers houſes built in the water upon great Piles, in the form of Magazines; Before the gate of a little ſtreet ſtood a Tombe made of ſtone, invironed with an Iron grate, painted red and green, and over it a ſteeple framed of pieces of very fine Pourcelain, ſuſtained by four pillars of curious ſtone; upon the top of the Tombe were five Globes, and two others that ſeemed to be of caſt iron, and on the one ſide thereof were graven in Letters of gold, and in the *Chineſe* language, words of this ſubſtance. *Here lyes* Trannocem Mudeliar, *Uncle to the King of* Malaca, *whom death took out of the World before he could be revenged of Captain* Alphonſo Albuquerque, *the Lyon of the robberies of the Sea.* We were much amazed to behold this Inſcription there, wherefore enquiring what it might mean, a *Chineſe*, that ſeemed more honourable then the reſt, told us; that about ſome fortie years before, this man which lay buried there, came thither as Embaſſador from a Prince, that ſtiled himſelf King of *Malaca*, to demand ſuccour from the ſon of the Sun againſt men of a Country, that hath no name, which came by Sea from the end of the World, and had taken *Malaca* from him; this man recounted many other incredible things concerning this matter, whereof mention is made in a printed Book thereof, as alſo that this Embaſſador having continued three years at the Kings Court ſuing for this ſuccour, juſt as it was granted him, and that preparations for it were a making, it was his ill fortune to be ſurpriſed one night at Supper with an Apoplexie, whereof he dyed at the end of nine dayes, ſo that extreamly afflicted to ſee himſelf carried away by a ſuddain death before he had accompliſhed his buſineſs, he expreſſed his earneſt deſire of revenge by the Inſcription which he cauſed to be graven on his Tombe, §. 3.

tombe, that poſterity might know wherefore he was come thither. Afterwards we departed from this place, and continued our voyage up the river, which thereabouts is not ſo large as towards the City of *Nanquin*, but the Country is here better peopled with Villages, Boroughs, and Gardens, then any other place, for every ſtones caſt we met ſtill with ſome *Pagode*, Manſion of pleaſure, or Counrrey houſe; Paſſing on about ſome two leagues further, we arrived at a place encompaſſed with great iron g ates, in the midſt whereof ſtood two mighty Statues of braſs upright, ſuſtained by pillars of caſt mettal of the bigneſs of a buſhel, and ſeven fathom high, the one of a man, and the other of a woman, both of them ſeventy four ſpans in heighth, having their hands in their mouths, their cheeks horribly blown out, and their eyes ſo ſtaring, as they affrighted all that looked on them. That which repreſented a man, was called *Quiay Xingatalor*, and the other in the form of a woman, was named *Apancapatur*; Having demanded of the *Chineſes* the explication of theſe figures, they told us that the male was he, which with thoſe mighty ſwoln cheeks blew the fire of hell for to torment all thoſe miſerable wretches, that would not liberally beſtow alms in this life; and for the other monſter, that ſhe was Porter of hell gate, where ſhe would take notice of thoſe that did her good in this world, and letting them fly away into a river of very cold water, called *Ochilenday*, would keep them hid there from being tormented by the Divels, as other damned were: Upon this Speech one of our company could not forbear langhing at ſuch a ridiculous and diabolical foolery, which three of their Prieſts, or *Banzoes*, then preſent obſerving, they were ſo exceedingly offended therewith, as they perſwaded the *Chiſun*, which conducted us, that if he did not chaſtiſe us in ſuch manner, as thoſe gods might be well contented with the puniſhment inflicted on us for our mockery of them, both the one and the other would aſſuredly torment his ſoul, and never ſuffer it to go out of hell; which threatning ſo mightily terrified this dog, the *Chiſun*, that without further delay, or hearing us ſpeak, he cauſed us all to be bound hand and foot, and commanded each of us to have an hundred laſhes given him with a double cord, which was immediately executed with ſo much rigour, as we were all in a gore bloud, whereby we were taught not to jeer afterwards at any thing we ſaw, or heard. At ſuch time as we arrived here we found twelve *Bonzoes* upon the place, who with ſilver cenſors full of perfumes of aloes and beniamin, cenſed thoſe two diveliſh Monſters, and chanted out aloud, *Help us, even as we ſerve thee*; whereunto divers other Prieſts anſwered in the name of the Idol with a great noiſe, *So I promiſe to do like a good Lord:* In this ſort they went as it were in proceſſion round about the place, ſinging with an ill tuned voice, to the ſound of a great many bels, that were in Steeples thereabouts; In the mean time there were others, that with Drums and Baſins made ſuch a dinne, as I may truly ſay, put them all together, was moſt horrible to hear.

## Chap. XXIX.

*Our Arrival at* Sempitay, *our encounter there with a Chriſtian woman, together with the Original and Foundation of the Empire of China; and who they were that firſt peopled it.*

From this place we continued our voyage eleven days more up the river, which in thoſe parts is ſo peopled with Cities, Towns, Villages, Boroughs, Forts and Caſtles, that commonly they are not a flight ſhot diſtant one from another, beſides a world of houſes of pleaſure, and temples, where Steeples were all guilt, which made ſuch a glorious ſhew, as we were much amazed at it; In this manner we arrived at a Town, named *Sempitay*, where we abode five days, by reaſon the *Chiſuns* wife, that conducted us, was not well: Here by his permiſſion we landed, and chained together, as we were, we went up and down the ſtreets craving of alms, which was very liberally given us by the Inhabitants, who wondering to ſee ſuch men as we, demanded of us what kind of people we were, of what Kingdom, and how our countrey was called? Hereunto we anſwered conformably to that we had often ſaid before, namely that we were natives of the Kingdom of of *Siam*, that going from *Liampoo* to *Nanquin*, we had loſt all our goods by ſhipwrack, and that although they beheld us then in ſo poor a caſe, yet we had been forme ly very rich; whereupon a woman who was come thither amongſt the reſt to ſee us; It is very likely, ſaid ſhe, ſpeaking to them about her, that what theſe poor ſtrangers have related is moſt true, for daily experience doth ſhew how thoſe that trade by ſea, do oftentimes make it their grave, wherefore it is beſt and ſureſt to travel upon the earth, and

to eſteem of it, as of that, whereof it hath pleaſed God to frame us; ſaying, ſo ſhe gave us two mizes, which amounts to about ſixteen pence of our mony, adviſing us to make no more ſuch long voyages, ſince our lives were ſo ſhort: Hereupon ſhe unbottoned one of the ſleeves of a red Satin Gown ſhe had on, and baring her left arm, ſhe ſhewed us a croſſe imprinted on it, like to the mark of a ſlave, ſaying, Do any of you know this ſigne, which amongſt thoſe, that follow the way of truth, is called a croſſe? or have any of you ever heard it named? To this falling down on our knees, we anſwered, with tears in our eyes, that we know exceeding well; Then lifting up her hands, ſhe cried out, *Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy Name*, ſpeaking theſe words in the *Portugal* tongue, and becauſe ſhe could ſpeak no more of our language, ſhe very earneſtly deſired us in *Chineſe* to tell her whether we were Chriſtians; we replyed that we were, and for proof thereof, after we had kiſſed that arm, whereon the croſs was, we repeated all the reſt of the Lords prayer, which ſhe had left unſaid, wherewith being aſſured that we were Chriſtians indeed, ſhe drew aſide from the reſt there preſent, and weeping ſaid to us; Come along Chriſtians of the other end of the world, with her that is your true Siſter in the faith of Jeſus Chriſt, or peradventure a kinſwoman to one of you, by his ſide that begot me in this miſerable exile, and ſo going to carry us to her houſe, the *Hupes* which guarded us, would not ſuffer her, ſaying, that if we would not continue our craving of alms, as the *Chiſun* had permitted us, they would return us back to the ſhip; but this they ſpake in regard of their own intereſt, for that they were to have the moitie of what was given us, as I have before declared, and accordingly they made as though they would have lead us thither again, which the woman perceiving, I underſtand your meaning, ſaid ſhe, and indeed it is but reaſon you make the beſt of your places, for thereby you live, ſo opening her purſe, ſhe gave them two *Taeis* in ſilver, wherewith they were very well ſatisfied; whereupon with the leave of the *Chiſun*, ſhe carried us home to her houſe, and there kept us all the while we remained in that place, making exceeding much of us, and uſing us very charitably; Here ſhe ſhewed us an Oratory, wherein ſhe had a croſs of wood guilt, as alſo candleſticks, and a lamp of ſilver: Furthermore ſhe told us, that ſhe was named, *Inez de Leyria*, and her Father *Tome Pirez*, who had been great Ambaſſadour from *Portugal* to the King of *China*, and that in regard of an inſurrection with a *Portugal* Captain, made at *Canton*, the *Chineſes* taking him for a Spye, & not for an Ambaſſodor, as he termed himſelf, clapped him and all his followers up in priſon, where by order of Juſtice five of them were put to torture, receiving ſo many, and ſuch cruel ſtripes on their bodies, as they died inſtantly, and that the reſt were all baniſhed into ſeveral parts, together with her father into this place, where he married with her mother, that had ſome means, and how he made her a Chriſtian, living ſo ſeven and twenty years together, and converting many *Gentiles* to the faith of Chriſt, whereof there were above three hundred then abiding in that Town; which every *Sunday* aſſembled in her houſe to ſay the Catechiſme: whereupon demanding of her what were their accuſtomed prayers, ſhe anſwered, that ſhe uſed no other but theſe, which on their knees, with their eyes and hands lift up to heaven, they pronounced in this manner, *O Lord Jeſus Chriſt, as it is moſt true that thou art the very Son of God, conceived by the Holy Ghoſt in the Womb of the Virgine Mary for the ſalvation of ſinners, ſo thou wilt be pleaſed to forgive us our offences, that thereby we may become worthy to behold thy face in the glory of thy Kingdom, where thou art ſitting at the right hand of the Almighty. Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy Name. In the Name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghoſt, Amen.* And ſo all of them kiſſing the Croſs, imbraced one another, and thereupon returned every one to his own home. Moreover ſhe told us, that her Father had left her many other prayers, which the *Chineſes* had ſtollen from her, ſo that ſhe had none left but thoſe before recited; whereunto we replyed, that thoſe we had heard from her were very good, but before we went away we would leave her divers other good and wholſome prayers; do ſo then, anſwered ſhe, for the reſpect you owe to ſo good a God, as yours is, and that hath done ſuch things for you, for me, and for all in general: Then cauſing the cloth to be laid, ſhe gave us a very good and plentiful dinner, and treated us in like ſort every meal, during the five days we continued in her houſe, which as I ſaid before, was permitted by the *Chiſun* in regard of a preſent that this good woman ſent his wife, whom ſhe earneſtly intreated ſo to deal with her husband, as we might be well intreated, for that we were men of whom God had a particular care, as the *Chiſuns* wife promiſed her to do with many thanks to her for the preſent ſhe had received; In the mean ſpace, during the five days we remained

in her Houſe, we read the Catechiſm ſeven times to the Chriſtians, wherewithall they were very much edifyed, beſide, *Chriſtophoro Borhalho* made them a little Book in the *Chineſe* tongue, containing the *Pater Noſter*, the Creed, the Ten Commandments, and many other good Prayers. After theſe things we took our leaves of *Inez de Leyria*, and the Chriſtians who gave us fifty *Taeis* in Silver, which ſtood us ſince in good ſtead, as I ſhall declare hereafter, and withall *Inez de Leyria* gave us ſecretly fifty *Taeis* more, humbly deſiring us to remember her in our Prayers to God.

§. 2. After our departure from the Town of *Sempitay* we continued our courſe upon the River of *Batanpina*, unto a place, named *Lequinpau*, containing about eleven or twelve thouſand fires, and very well built, at leaſt we judged ſo by that we could diſcern, as alſo incloſed with good Walls, and Curtains round about it: Not far from it was an exceeding long Houſe; having within it thirty Furnaces on each ſide, where a great quantity of Silver was melted, which was brought in carts from a Mountain, ſome five leagues off, called *Tuxenguim*: The *Chineſes* aſſured us, that above a thouſand men wrought continually in that Mine to draw out the Silver, and that the King of *China* had in yearly Revenue out of it about five thouſand *Picos*; This place we left about Sun-ſet, and the next day in the evening we arrived juſt between two little Towns, that ſtood oppoſite one to another, the River onely between, the one named *Pacan*, and the other *Nacan*, which although they were little, yet were they fairly built, and well walled with great hewed ſtone, having a number of Temples, which they call Pagods, all guilt over, and enriched with Steeples and Fanes of great price, very pleaſing and agreeable to the eye. Now in regard of that they recounted unto us here of theſe two Towns, I hold it not amiſſe to diſcourſe it in this place, the rather for that I have heard it confirmed ſince, and that thereby one may come to know the Original and Foundation of this Empire of *China*, whereof ancient Writers have ſpoken little till this preſent. It is written in the firſt Chronicle, of fourſcore which have been made of the Kings of *China*, the thirteenth Chapter, as I have heard it many times delivered, That ſix hundred thirty and nine years, after the Deluge there was a Country called then *Giantipocan*, which as may be judged by the height of the Climate where it is ſituated, being in ſixty two degrees to the Northward, abutts on the backſide of our *Germany*; In this Country lived at that time a Prince, named *Turbano*, whoſe ſtate was not very great: It is ſaid of him, that being a youth he had three children by a Woman, called *Nancaa* whom he extreamly affected, although the Queen his Mother then a Widow, was exceedingly diſpleaſed at it. This King being much importuned by the principal Perſons of his Kingdom to marry, always excuſed himſelf alledging ſome Reaſons for it, which they did not well allow of, but incited by his Mother, they preſſed him ſo far, that at length they perceived he had no intent to condeſcend unto them, for indeed his minde was to legitimate the eldeſt Son he had by *Nancaa*, and to reſign his Kingdome unto him; to which effect he not long after put himſelf into Religion in a Temple named *Giſon*, which ſeems to have been the Idol of a certain Sect that the *Romans* had in their time, and that is ſtill at this preſent in the Kingdomes of *China*, *Jappon*, *Cauchenchina*, *Cambaya*, and *Siam*, whereof I have ſeen many Pagods in thoſe Countries: But firſt having declared his ſaid ſon King, the Queen his Mother would by no means approve of it, ſaying, *That ſince the King her Son would needs profeſs himſelf into that Religion, and leave the Kingdom without a lawful Heir, ſhe would labour to remedy ſo great a diſorder*, as indeed ſhe did by inſtantly marrying her ſelf, being fifty years of age, to a Prieſt of hers, called *Silau*, that was but ſix and twenty, whom ſhe proclaimed King, notwithſtanding all oppoſition made to the contrary; whereof *Turbano* being preſently advertiſed, and knowing that his Mother had done it of purpoſe to defeat his Son of the Crown, he got him forthwith out of his Religion for to repoſſeſs himſelf of it, and to that end uſed all the means and diligence he could, whereupon the Queen Mother, and *Silau*, fearing that which might follow thereof to both their deſtructions, if he were not in time, and that ſpeedily prevented, they ſecretly aſſembled ſome of their partakers, to the number of thirty Horſe, and fourſcore Foot, who going one night where *Turbano* was, ſlew him, and all his Company; Howbeit *Nancaa* ſaved her ſelf, with her three Sons, and accompanied with certain of her Domeſtical Servants, ſhe imbarqued her ſelf in a ſmall *Lanteaa*, and fled away down the River to a place ſome ſeventy leagues from thence, where ſhe landed with thoſe few followers ſhe had: There aſſiſted with ſome others that reſorted unto her, ſhe fortified her ſelf in a little Iſland, that was in the middeſt of the River,

and

and which ſhe named *Pilauuere*, that ſignifies, *The retreat of the poor*, with an intent there to end the reſt of her days; now having lived five years in that poor and miſerable eſtate, the Tyrant *Silan*, whom the People hated, doubting leſt the three young Princes coming to age might expell him out of what he had injuſtly uſurped upon them, or at leaſtwiſe diſturb him with Wars, by reaſon of the right they pretended to the Kingdom, he ſent a Fleet of thirty *Jenga's*, wherein, as it is ſaid, were ſixteen hundred men, for to ſeek them out, and deſtroy them, whereof *Nancaa* receiving intelligence fell to conſult what ſhe ſhould do, and at length reſolved by no means to attend theſe Forces, in regard her Sons were but Infants, her ſelf a weak Woman, her Men few in number, and unprovided of all that was neceſſary to make any defence againſt ſo great a number of Enemies, and ſo well furniſhed; whereupon taking a view of her People ſhe found that they were but thirteen hundred in all, and of them onely five hundred Men, the reſt being Women and Children, for all which company there were but three little *Lanteaa's*, and one *Jangaa*, in the whole River, and they not able to carry an hundred perſons; ſo that *Nancaa* ſeeing no means to tranſport them away, the Hiſtory ſaith, *She aſſembled all her People, and declaring the fear ſhe was in, deſired them to adviſe her what ſhe ſhould do; but excuſing themſelves, they ingenuouſly confeſſed, they knew not what counſel to give her in that extremity:* Whereupon, according to their ancient cuſtome, they reſolved to caſt Lots, to the end that on whom the Lot did fall to ſpeak, he ſhould freely deliver what God would be pleaſed to inſpire him with; For which purpoſe they took three days time, wherein with faſting, cries, and tears, they would all with one voice crave the favour and aſſiſtance of the Lord Almighty, in whoſe hands was all the hope of their deliverance; This advice being approved of all in general, *Nancaa* made it to be proclaimed, that upon pain of Death no perſon whatever ſhould eat above once during thoſe three days, to the end that by this abſtinence of the Body, the Spirit might be carried with the greater attention towards God.

The three days abſtinence being expired, Lots were caſt five times one after another, and all thoſe five times the Lot fell ſtill on a little Boy of ſeven years of age, named, as the Tyrant was, *Silan*, whereat they were all exceedingly amazed, in regard that in the whole Troop there was not another of this ſame name: After that they had made their Sacrifices with all the accuſtomed Ceremonies of Muſick, Perfumes, and ſweet Odours, to render thanks unto God, they commanded the little Boy to lift up his hands unto Heaven, and then to ſay what he thought was neceſſary for the remedying of ſo great an Affliction, as that wherein they were; Whereupon the little Boy, *Silan*, beholding *Nancaa*, the Hiſtory affirms he ſaid theſe words; *O feeble and wretched Woman, now that ſorrow and affliction makes thee more troubled and perplexed then ever thou wert, in regard of the ſmall relief that humane underſtanding doth repreſent unto thee, ſubmit thy ſelf with humble ſighs to the omnipotent hand of the Lord, Eſloign then, or at leaſtwiſe labour to eſloign, thy minde from the vanities of the Earth, lifting up thine eyes with Faith and Hope, and thou ſhalt ſee what the Prayers of an Innocent, afflicted and purſued before the Juſtice of him that hath created thee, can do; For aſſoon as in all humility thou haſt declared the weakneſs of thy power unto the Almighty, Victory will incontinently be given thee from above over the Tyrant* Silau; *Wherefore I command thee in his Name to imbarque thy ſelf, thy Children, and all thy Followers in thine Enemies Veſſels, wherein amidſt the confuſed murmur of the Waters thou ſhalt wander ſo long, till thou arriveſt at a place wee here thou art to lay the Foundation of a Houſe of that Reputation, as the Mercy of the moſt High ſhall be publiſhed there from Generation to Generation by the Voice of a ſtrange People, whoſe Cries ſhall be as pleaſing to him, as thoſe of ſucking Children that lie in the Cradle.* This ſaid, the little Boy, according to the Hiſtory, fell down ſtark dead to the ground, which much aſtoniſhed *Nancaa*, and all hers; The ſaid Hiſtory further delivers, and as I have often heard it read, that five days after the ſucceſs the thirty *Jangaas* were one morning ſeen coming down the River in very good equipage, but not ſo much as one man in them; the reaſon hereof, by the report of the Hiſtory, which the *Chineſes* hold to be moſt true, was, that all theſe Ships of War being joyned together for to execute unmerciſully upon *Nancaa* and her Children the cruel and damnable intentions of the Tyrant *Silan*, one night as this Fleet rode at Anchor in a place, called *Catebaſoy*, a huge dark Cloud came over them, whereout iſſued ſuch horrible Thunder and Lightning, accompanied with mighty Rain, the Drops whereof [illegible] that falling upon them which were aſleep in the Veſſels, it made them leap ir [illegible] within leſs then an hour they periſhed all;

Sect. 3.

all; And it is said that one drop of this Rain coming to fall upon a body it burnt in such sort, as it penetrated to the very marrow of the bone with most insupportable pain, no cloths, nor arms, being able to resist it. *Nancaa* receiving this favour from the hand of the Lord, with abundance of tears and humble thanks, embarqued her self, her children, and all her company, in the said thirty *Jangats*; and sailing down the River was carried by the strength of the current, which for her sake, the History saith, redoubled then, in seven and forty days to the very place where now the City of *Pequin* is built; There she, and all hers landed, and doubting left the Tyrant *Silan*, whose cruelty she feared, might still pursue her, she fortified her self in this place the best she could.

## CHAP. XXX.

*The Foundation of the four chief Cities of* China; *together with which of the Kings of* China *it was that built the Wall between* China *and* Tartaria; *and many things that we saw as we past along.*

Sect. 1. THe said History delivers, that few days after the poor *Nancaa*, and her followers, were setled on shore, she caused them to swear fealty unto her eldest Son, and to acknowledge him for their lawful Prince; Now the very same day that he received the Oath of Allegeance from these few Subjects of his, he made election of the place where the Fortress should be erected, together with the inclosure of the Wall; Afterwards, assoon as the first Foundations were laid, which was speedily done, he went out of his Tent, accompanied with his Mother, who governed all, together with his Brothers, and the chiefest of his company, attired in festival Robes, with a great stone carried before him by the noblest Personages, which he had caused to be wrought aforehand; and arriving at the said Foundations he laid his hand upon the Stone, and on his knees, with his eyes lifted up to Heaven, he said to all that were present, *Brethren, and worthy Friends, know that I give mine own Name, that is,* Pequin, *to this Stone, upon which this new place is to be built, for I desire, that hereafter it should be so called; wherefore I pray you all, as Friends, and command you as your King, not to call it otherwise, to the end the memory thereof may remain immortal to those that shall come after us to the end of the World; By which means it shall be manifested to all men, that the thirteenth day of the eighth Moon, in the year one thousand six hundred thirty and nine, after the Lord of all things created had made those that lived upon the Earth, see how much he abhorred the sins of Men, for the which he drowned the whole World with Water, that he sent down from Heaven, in satisfaction of his divine Justice, it shall, I say, be manifested to them, that the new Prince* Pequin *built this Fortress, wherunto he gave his Name; And so conformable to the Propheſie, which the dead childe hath delivered, it shall be published over all, by the voice of strange People, in what manner the Lord is to be feared, and what Sacrifices are to be made, that they may be just and acceptable unto him.* Now this was that which King *Pequin* said unto his Vassals, and which is at this day to be seen engraven on a silver Scutcheon, fastened to an Arch of one of the principal Gates of the City, called *Ponmicotay*, where in memory of this Prophecy, there is ordinarily a Guard of forty Halberdiers, with their Captain, whereas there are but onely four in all the rest, who are bound to render an account of all that pass in and out there daily; And because the Histories relate, that this new King laid the first foundation of this City on the 3*d* of the moneth of *August*, the Kings of *China* do on that day usually shew themselves to the People, and that with such Pomp and Majesty, that I profess I am not able to declare the least part of it, much less to describe the whole. Now in regard of this first Kings words, which the *Chinoſes* hold for an infallible Prophecy, his Descendants do so fear the accomplishment thereof, that by a Law expresly made by them, the admittance of any Strangers into this Kingdom, saving Ambassadours and Slaves, is forbidden upon most grievous pains; So that when any do chance to arrive there, they banish them presently from one place to another, not permitting them to setle any where, as they practised it towards me, and my eight companions. And thus, as I have succinctly delivered, was this Empire of *China* founded, and peopled by the means of this Prince, named *Pequin*, the eldest of *Nancaa*'s three Sons; As for the other two, called *Pacan* and *Nacua*, they afterwards founded the other two Towns aforesaid, and withall gave them their own Names. It is also the general opinion, that their Mother *Nancaa* founded the City of *Nanquin*, which took its denomination from her, continuing so to this day, and is the second City of this great Monarchy.

narchy. The Histories further affirm, that from the time of this first Founder, the Empire of *China* augmented always from one King to another, by a just Succession till a certain Age, which according to our Computation, was in the Year of Lord, one thousand one hundred and thirty; After which a King that then reigned, named *Xixipan*, inclosed the City of *Pequin*, within the space of three and twenty years, in such manner as it is seen at this day, and that fourscore and two years after another King, his Grand-childe, called *Jumbilaytay*, made the like, so that both together were sixty leagues in circuit, namely, each of them thirty, ten in length, and five in breadth: Now it is certain, and I have often times read it, that each of these Inclosures, or Walls, hath a thousand and threescore round Bulwarks, as also two hundred and forty Towers, very fair, strong, large, and high, with gilt Lions upon Globes, being the Arms of the Kings of *China*, which are very pleasing to the eye. Without the last Inclosure is an exceeding great Ditch round about it, ten fathom deep, and forty broad, continually replenished with many Barques and Boats, covered over head as if they were Houses, where both Provisions, and all sorts of Merchandise are sold. This City, according to the *Chinoses* report, hath above three hundred and threescore Gates, in each of which, as I have before recited, there are always four Halberdiers, who are obliged to render an account of all that go in and out daily: There are also certain Chambers in it, whither it is the custome to bring such Children as wander and go astray in the Town; to the end their Parents that lose them may be sure to hear of them there. I will refer my speaking more largely of the Magnificences of this goodly City to another place, for that which I have now delivered in haste, and as it were *en passant*, was but to make a brief Relation of the original of this Empire, and of the first Founder of the City of *Pequin*, (which may be truly said to be the chiefest of all the World for greatness, policy, riches, and abundance of all things that can be desired of man) as also of the Foundation of the second City of this mighty Kingdom, that is *Nanquin*, and of the other two, *Pachin* and *Nacan*, whereof I have heretofore spoken, and in which the Founders of them are buried in very stately and rich Temples, within Tombs of white and green Alabaster, all garnished with Gold, and erected upon Lions of Silver, with a world of Lamps, and perfuming Pans full of divers sorts of sweet Odours round about them.

Sect. 2.

Now that I have spoken of the Original and Foundation of this Empire, together with the circuit of the great City of *Pequin*, I hold it not amiss to intreat as succinctly as I may of another particular, which is no less admirable than those whereof I have made mention before: It is written in the fifth Book of the Scituation of all the remarkable places of this Empire, or rather Monarchy, (for to speak truly, there is no appellation so great but may be well attributed unto it) that a King, named *Crisnagel Divotay*, who according to the computation of that Book, reigned in the year of our Lord five hundred and eighteen, happened to make war with the *Tartar*, about some difference between them concerning the State of *Xenxinapan*, that borders on the Kingdom of *Laubas*, and so valiantly demeaned himself in a Battel against him, that he defeated his Army, and remained Master of the Field; whereupon the *Tartar* confederating himself with other Kings, his Friends, did by their assistance assemble together greater Forces than the former, and therewith invaded the Kingdom of *China*, where (it is said) he took three and thirty very important Towns, of which the principal was *Panquilor*, insomuch that the *Chinese* fearing he should not be well able to defend himself, concluded a Peace with him upon condition to relinquish his right, which he pretended so that in question betwixt them, and to pay him two thousand *Picos* of Silver for to defray the Charges of those strangers the *Tartar* had entertained in this War; by this means *China* continued for a good while quiet, but the King doubting lest the *Tartar* might in time to come return to annoy him again, resolved to build a Wall, that might serve for a Bulwark to his Empire, and to that end calling all his Estates together, he declared his determination unto them, which was presently not onely well approved of, but held most necessary; so that to enable him for the performance of a business so much concerning his state, they gave him ten thousand *Picos* of Silver, which amount, according to our account, unto fifteen Millions of Gold, after the rate of fifteen hundred Ducates each *Pico*; and moreover they entertained him two hundred and fifty thousand men to labour in the work, whereof thirty thousand were appointed for Officers, and all the rest for manual services; Order being taken then for whatsoever was thought fit for so prodigious an enterprise, they fell to it in such sort, as by the report of the History all that huge Wall was in seven and twenty years quite finished from one end to the other; which if credit may be given to the said Chronicle is seventy *Jaos* in length, that is six hundred and fifteen

fifteen miles after nine miles every *Pao*; wherein that which ſeemed moſt wonderfull and moſt exceeding the belief of man, was that ſeven hundred and fifty thouſand men laboured inceſſantly for ſo long a time in that great work, whereof the Commonalty, as I delivered before, furniſhed one third part; the Prieſts, and Iſles of *Aynen*, another third; and the King aſſiſted by the Princes, Lords, *Chaems*, and *Anchacys* of the Kingdom, the reſt of the building; which I have both ſeen and meaſured, being thirty foot in height, and ten foot in breadth, where it is thickeſt: It is made of Lime and Sand, and plaiſtered on the outſide with a kind of *Bitumen*, which renders it ſo ſtrong, that no Cannon can demoliſh it: Inſtead of Bulwarks it hath Sentries, or Watch-towers, two ſtages high, flanked with Buttreſſes of Carpentry made of a certain black wood, which they call *Caubeſy*, that is to ſay, Wood of Iron, becauſe it is exceeding ſtrong and hard, every Buttreſs being as thick as an Hogſhead, and very high; ſo that theſe Sentries are far ſtronger then if they were made of Lime and Stone. Now this Wall, by them termed *Chanfacan*, which ſignifies, *Strong reſiſtance*, extends in height equal to the Mountains, whereunto it is joyned, and that thoſe Mountains alſo may ſerve for a Wall they are cut down very ſmooth and ſteep, which renders them far ſtronger then the Wall it ſelf; but you muſt know that in all this extent of land there is no Wall but in the void ſpaces from Hill to Hill, ſo that the Hills themſelves make up the reſt of the Wall and Fence: Further it is to be noted, that in this whole length of an hundred and fifteen leagues, which this Fortification contains, there are but onely 9 Entries whereby the Rivers of *Tartaria* do paſs, which are derived from the impetuous Torrents that deſcend from theſe Mountains, and running above five hundred leagues in the Country, render themſelves into the Seas of *China* and *Cauchenchina*; howbeit one of theſe Rivers, being greater then the reſt, diſemboques by the Bay of *Cuy* in the Kingdom of *Sourman*, commonly called *Siam*. Now in all theſe five Paſſages both the King of *China*, and the King of *Tartaria*, keep Garriſons; the *Chineſe* in each of them entertains ſeven thouſand men giving them great pay, whereof ſix thouſand are Horſe, the reſt Foot, being for the moſt part ſtrangers, as *Mogores*, *Pancrus*, *Champaas*, *Coroſones*, *Gizares* of *Perſia*, and other different Nations, bordering upon this Empire, and which in conſideration of the extraordinary pay they receive, ſerve the *Chineſes*; who (to ſpeak truth) are nothing courageous, as being but little uſed to the Wars, and ill provided of Arms and Artillery. In all this length of Wall there are three hundred and twenty Companies, each of them containining five hundred Souldiers; ſo that there are in all one hundred and threeſcore thouſand men, beſides Officers of Juſtice, *Anchacis*, *Chaems*, and other ſuch like perſons neceſſary for the Government, and entertainment of theſe Forces; ſo that all joyned together make up the number of two hundred thouſand, which are all maintained at the Kings onely charge, by reaſon the moſt of them are Malefactours condemned to the reparations and labour of the Wall, as I ſhall more amply declare when I come to ſpeak of the Priſon deſtined to this purpoſe, in the City of *Pequin*, which is alſo another Edifice, very remarkable, wherein there are continually above thirty thouſand Priſoners, the moſt of them from eighteen to forty five years of age, appointed to work in this Wall.

Sect. 2. Being departed from thoſe two Towns *Pacan* and *Nacan*, we continued our courſe up the River, and arrived at another Town, called *Mindoo*, ſomewhat bigger then thoſe from whence we parted, where about half a mile off was a great Lake of Salt-water, and a number of Salt-houſes round about it; The *Chineſes* aſſured us, that this Lake did ebb and flow like the Sea, and that it extended above two hundred leagues into the Country, rendring the King of *China* in yearly Revenue one hundred thouſand *Taeis*, onely for the third of the Salt that was drawn out of it; as alſo that the Town yielded him other one hundred thouſand *Taeis* for the Silk alone that was made there, not ſpeaking at all of the Camphire, Sugar, Pourcelain, Vermilion, and Quick-ſilver, whereof there was very great plenty; moreover, that ſome two leagues from this Town were twelve exceeding long Houſes, like unto Magazines, where a world of people laboured in caſting and purifying of Copper, and the horrible din which the Hammers made there was ſuch, and ſo ſtrange, as if there were any thing on earth that could repreſent Hell this was it; wherefore being deſirous to underſtand the cauſe of this extraordinary noiſe, we would needs go to ſee from whence it proceeded; and we found that there were in each of theſe Houſes forty Fornaces, that is twenty of either ſide, with forty huge Anvils, upon every of which eight men beat in order, and ſo ſwiftly, as a mans eye could hardly diſcern the blows, ſo as three hundred and

twenty men wrought in each of theſe twelve Houſes, which in all the twelve Houſes made up three thouſand eight hundred and forty workmen, beſide a great number of other perſons that laboured in other particular things; whereupon we demanded how much Copper might be wrought every year in each of theſe Houſes, and they told us, one hundred and ten, or ſixſcore thouſand *Picos*, whereof the King had two thirds, becauſe the Mines were his, and that the Mountain from whence it was drawn was called *Corotum baga*, which ſignifies a River of Copper, for that from the time ſince it was diſcovered, being above two hundred years, it never failed, but rather more and more was found. Having paſt about a league beyond thoſe twelve Houſes up the River, we came to a place incloſed with three ranks of Iron grates, where we beheld thirty Houſes, divided into five rows, ſix in each row, which were very long and compleat, with great Towers full of Bells of caſt mettle, and much carved work, as alſo guilt Pillars, and the Frontiſpieces of fair hewed ſtone, whereupon many Inventions were engraved: At this place we went aſhore by the *Chiſeus* permiſſion, that carried us, for that he had made a Vow to this Pagod, which was called *Bigay potim*, that is to ſay, *God of an hundred and ten thouſand Gods, Corcheo fungané ginaco ginaca*, which according to their report ſignifies, *ſtrong and great above all others*, for one of the Errors wherewith theſe wretched people are blinded is, *that they beleeve every particular thing hath its God, who hath created it, and preſerves its natural being, but that this* Bigay potim *brought them all forth from under his arm-pits, and that from him as a father, they derive their being, by a filial union, which they term* Bira Porentalay; *And in the Kingdom of* Pegu, *where I have often been, I have ſeen one like unto this, named by thoſe of the country* Ginocoginans, *the God of all greatneſs, which Temple was in times paſt built by the* Chineſes, *when as they commanded in the* Indies, *being according to their ſupputation from the year of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt* 1013. *to the year* 1072. *by which account it appears that the* Indies *were under the Empire of* China *but onely fifty and nine years, for the ſucceſſor of him that conquered it, called* Exiragano, *voluntarily abandoned it in regard of the great expence of mony and bloud that the unprofitable keeping of it coſt him*: In thoſe thirty Houſes, whereof I formerly ſpake, were a great number of Idols of guilt Wood, and a like number of Tin, Latten, and Pourcelain, being indeed ſo many, as I ſhould hardly be believed to declare them. Now we had not paſt above five or ſix leagues from this place, but we came to a great Town, about a league in circuit, quite deſtroyed and ruinated, ſo that asking the *Chineſes* what might be the cauſe thereof, they told us, that this Town was anciently called *Cobilonza*, that is, *The flower of the field*, and had in former times been in very great proſperity, and that about one hundred forty and two years before, a certain ſtranger, in the company of ſome Merchants of the Port of *Tanaçarim* in the Kingdom of *Siam*, chanced to come thither, being as it ſeems an holy man, although the *Bonzes* ſaid he was a Sorcerer, by reaſon of the wonders he did, having raiſed up five dead men, and wrought many other Miracles, whereat all men were exceedingly aſtoniſhed; and that having divers times diſputed with the Prieſts he had ſo ſhamed and confounded them, as fearing to deal any more with him, they incenſed the Inhabitants againſt him, and perſwaded them to put him to death, affirming that otherwiſe God would conſume them with fire from Heaven, whereupon all the Townſmen went unto the Houſe of a poor Weaver, where he lodged, and killing the Weaver, with his ſon and two ſons in Law of his, that would have defended him, the Holy man came forth to them, and reprehending them for this uproar, he told them amongſt other things, *That the God of the Law, whereby they were to be ſaved was called Jeſus Chriſt, Who came down from heaven to the earth for to become a man, and that it was needful he ſhould dye for men, and that with the price of his precious bloud, which he ſhed for ſinners upn the Croſſe, God was ſatisfied in his juſtice, and that giving him the charge of Heaven and Earth, he had promiſed him, that whoſoever profeſſed his Law with Faith and good Works ſhould be ſaved, and have everlaſting life; and withall, that the gods whom the Bonzes ſerved and adored with ſacrifices of bloud, were falſe, and Idols, wherewith the Devil deceived them*; Here at the Churchmen entred into ſo great furie, that they called unto the people ſaying, *Curſed be he that brings not Wood and fire for to burn him*, which was preſently put in execution by them, and the fire beginning exceedingly to rage the Holy man ſaid certain Prayers, by vertue whereof the fire incontinently went out, wherewith the people being amazed cryed out, ſaying, *Doubtleſſe the God of this man is moſt mighty, and worthy to be adored through the Whole World*, which one of the *Bonzes* hearing, who was ringleader

ring-leader of this mutiny, and ſeeing the Town-men retire away in conſideration of that they had beheld; he threw a ſtone at the holy man, ſaying, *They which do not as I do, may the Serpent of the night ingulf them into hell fire.* At theſe words all the other *Bonzes* did the like, ſo that he was preſently knock'd down dead with the ſtones they flung at him, whereupon they caſt him into the river, which moſt prodigiouſly ſtaid its courſe from running down, and ſo continued for the ſpace of five days together that the body lay in it; By means of this wonder many imbraced the law of that holy man, whereof there are a great number yet remaining in that country: Whilſt the *Chineſes* were relating this hiſtory unto us, we arrived at a point of land, where going to double Cape, we deſcryed a little place environed with trees, in the midſt whereof was a great croſs of ſtone very well made, which we no ſooner eſpied, but tranſported with exceeding joy, we fell on our knees before our Conductor, humbly deſiring him to give us leave to go on ſhoar, but this Heathen dog refuſed us, ſaying, that they had a great way yet to the place where they were to lodge, whereat we were mightily grieved; Howbeit God of his mercy, even miraculouſly ſo ordered it, that being gone about a league further, his wife fell in labour, ſo as he was conſtrained to return to that place again, it being a Village of thirty or forty houſes, hard by where the Croſs ſtood: Here we went on land, and placed his wife in an houſe, where ſome nine days after ſhe died in Child-bed, during which time we went to the Croſs, and proſtrating our ſelves before it with tears in our eyes; The people of the Village beholding us in this poſture, came to us, and kneeling down alſo, with their hands lift up to heaven, they ſaid, *Chriſto Jeſu, Jeſu Chriſto, Maria micanvidau late impone model*, which in our tongue ſignifies, *Jeſus Chriſt, Jeſus Chriſt, Mary always a Virgine conceived him, a Virgine brought him forth, and a Virgine ſtill remained*; whereunto we weeping anſwered, that they ſpake the very truth; Then they asked us if we were Chriſtians, we told them we were, which as ſoon as they underſtood they carried us home to their houſes, where they entertained us with great affection; Now all theſe were Chriſtians, and deſcended of the Weaver, in whoſe houſe the holy man was lodged, of whom demanding whether that which the *Chineſes* had told us was true; they ſhewed us a book that contained the whole hiſtory thereof at large, with many other wonders wrought by that holy man, who they ſaid was named *Matthew Eſcandel*, and that he was an Hermit of Mount *Sinai*, being an *Hungarian* by nation, and born in a place called *Buda*: The ſame book alſo related that nine days after this Saint was buried, the ſaid Town of *Cohilonzaa*, where he was murthered, began to tremble in ſuch ſort, as all the people thereof in a mighty fright, ran out into the fields, and there continued in their tents, not daring to return unto their houſes, for they cried out all with one common conſent, *The blood of this ſtranger craves vengeance for the unjuſt death the Bonzes hath given him, becauſe he preached the truth unto us*; But the *Bonzes* rebuked and told them, that they committed a great ſin in ſaying ſo, Nevertheleſs, they willed them to be of good cheer, for they would go all to *Quiay Tiguarem*, God of the night, and requeſt him to command the earth to be quier, otherwiſe we would offer him no more ſacrifices: Immediately whereupon all the *Bonzes* went accordingly in proceſſion to the ſaid Idol, which was the chiefeſt in the Town, but none of the people durſt follow them, for fear of ſome earthquake, which the very next night, about eleven of the clock, as thoſe diveliſh monſters were making their ſacrifices, with odoriferous perfumes, and other ceremonies, accuſtomed amongſt them, increaſed ſo terribly, that by the Lords permiſſion, and for a juſt puniſhment of their wickedneſs, it quite overthrew all the Temples, houſes, and other edifices of the Town to the ground, wherewith all the *Bonzes* were killed, not ſo much as one eſcaped alive, being in number above four thouſand, as the book delivereth, wherein it is further ſaid, that afterwards the earth opening ſuch abundance of water came forth, as it clean overwhelmed and drowned the whole Town, ſo that it became a great lake, and above an hundred fathom deep; moreover they recounted many other very ſtrange particulars unto us, and alſo however ſince that time the place was named *Fiunganorſee*, that is, *the chaſtiſement of heaven*, whereas before it was called *Cohilonzaa*, which ſignifies, *the flower of the field*, as I have declared heretofore.

§. 4. After our Departure from the ruines of *Fiunganorſee*, we arrived at a great Town, called *Junquinilau*, which is very rich, abounding with all kind of things, fortified with a ſtrong Garriſon of Horſe and Foot, and having a number of Junks and Veſſels riding before it: Here we remained five days to celebrate the Funeral of our *Chiſuus* wife; for whoſe ſoul he gave us by way of alms both meat and clothes, and withall freeing us from the oar, permitted us to go aſhore without irons, which was a very great eaſe unto us. Having left this place, we con-

continued our courſe up the river, beholding ſtill on either ſide a world of goodly great Towns, invironed with ſtrong walls, as alſo many Fortreſſes and Caſtles all along the waters ſide; we ſaw likewiſe a great number of Temples, whoſe Steeples were all guilt, and in the fields ſuch abundance of cattel that the ground was even covered over with them, ſo far as we could well diſcern: Moreover there were ſo many veſſels upon this river, eſpecially in ſome parts, where Fairs were kept, that at firſt ſight one would have thought them to be populous Towns, beſides other leſſer companies of three hundred, five hundred, ſix hundred, and a thouſand boats, which continually we met with all on both ſides of the river, wherein all things that one could imagine were ſold; Moreover the *Chineſes* aſſured us, that in this Empire of *China*, the number of thoſe which levied upon the rivers, was not leſs, then thoſe that dwelled in the Towns, and that without the good order which is obſerved to make the common people work, and to conſtrain the meaner ſort to ſupply themſelves unto trades, for to get their living, they would eat up one another. Now it is to be noted, that every kind of traffique and commerce is divided among them into three or four forms, as followeth: They which trade in Ducks, whereof there are great quantities in this Countrey, proceed therein diverſly; ſome cauſe their egs to be hatched for to ſell the Ducklings, others fat them when they are great for to ſell them dead after they are ſalted; Theſe traffique only with the egs, others with the feathers, and ſome with the heads, feet, gizards, and intrails, no man being permitted to trench upon his companions ſale, under the penalty of thirty laſhes, which no privileg can exempt them from: In the ſame manner, concerning hogs, ſome ſell them alive, and by whole ſale, others dead, and by retail, ſome make bacon of them, others ſell their pigs, and ſome again ſell nothing but the chitterlings, the ſweet-breads, the blood, and the haſlets; which is alſo obſerved for fiſh, for ſuch a one ſels it freſh, that cannot ſell it either ſalted or dried, and ſo of other Proviſions, as fleſh, fruit, fowls, veniſon, pulſe, and other things, wherein ſuch rigour is uſed, as there are chambers expreſly eſtabliſhed, whoſe officers have commiſſion and power to ſee, that they which trade in one particular may not do it in another, if it be not for juſt and lawful cauſes, and that on pain of thirty laſhes. There be others likewiſe that get their living by ſelling fiſh alive, which to that purpoſe they keep in great well-boats, and ſo carry them into divers countrys, where they know there is no other but ſalt fiſh. There are likewiſe all along this river of *Batampina*, whereon we went from *Nanquin* to *Pequin*, which is diſtant one from the other one hundred and fourſcore leagues, ſuch a number of engines for ſugar, and preſſes for wine and oyl, made of divers ſorts of pulſe and fruit, as one could hardly ſee any other thing on either ſide of the water. In many other places alſo there were an infinite company of Houſes, and Magazines full of all kinds of proviſion, that one could imagine, where all ſorts of fleſh are ſalted, dried, ſmoaked, and piled up in great high heaps, as gammons of Bacon, Pork, Lard, Geeſe, Ducks, Cranes, Buſtards, Oſtriches, Stags, Cows, Buffles, wild Goats, Rhinoceroſes, Horſes, Tygers, Dogs, Foxes, and almoſt all other creatures that one can name, ſo that we ſaid many times amongſt our ſelves, that it was not poſſible for all the people of the world to eat up all thoſe proviſions. We ſaw likewiſe upon the ſame river, a number of *Veſſels*, which they call *Panouras*, covered from the poop to the prow with nets, in manner of a cage, three inches high, full of ducks and geeſe, that were carried from place to place to be ſold; when the Owners of thoſe boats would have theſe fowl to feed, they approach to the Land, and where there are rich medows, or marſhes, they ſet forth Planks, penning the doors of thoſe cages, they beat three or four times upon a Drum, which they have expreſly for that purpoſe, whereupon all theſe fowl, being ſix or ſeven thouſand at the leaſt, go out of the boat with a mighty noiſe, & ſo fall to feeding all along the waters ſide; Now when the Owner perceives, that theſe fowl have fed ſufficiently, and that it is time to return them, he beats the drum the ſecond time, at the ſound whereof they gather all together, and re-enter with the ſame noiſe, as they went out, wherein it is ſtrange to obſerve, that they return all in again, not ſo much as one miſſing. That done, the Maſter of the boat parts from that place, and afterwards when he thinks it is time for them to lay, he repairs towards land, and where he finds the grounds dry, and good graſs, he opens the doors, and beats the drum again, at which all the fowl of the boat come forth to lay, and then at ſuch time as the Maſter judges that theſe fowl have laid, he beats his drum afreſh, and ſuddenly in haſte they all throng in to the boat, not ſo much as one remaining behind; Thereupon two or three men get aſhore, with baskets in their hands, wherein they gather up the egs, till they have gotten eleven or twelve [illegible] and ſo they proceed on their voyage to make ſale of their war, which being [illegible] themſelves

ſelves anew, they go for to buy more unto them that breed them, whoſe trade it is to ſell them young, for they are not ſuffered to keep them when they are great, as the others do, by reaſon, as I have ſaid before, no man may deal in any commodity for which he hath not permiſſion from the Governors of the Towns. They that get their living by breeding of Ducks have neer to their Houſes certain Ponds, where many times they keep ten or eleven thouſand of theſe duckings, ſome bigger, ſome leſſer. Now for to hatch the Eggs, they have in very long galleries twenty and thirty furnaces full of dung, wherein they bury two hundred, three hundred, and five hundred Eggs together, then ſtopping the mouth of each furnace that the dung may become the hotter, they leave the Eggs there till they think the young ones are diſcloſed, whereupon putting into every ſeveral furnace a Capon half pulled, and the skin ſtripped from off his breſt, they leave him ſhut up therein for the ſpace of two dayes, at the end whereof being all come out of the ſhell, they carry them into certain places under ground made for that purpoſe, ſetting them bran ſoaked in liquor, and ſo being left there looſe ſome ten or eleven dayes, they go afterwards of themſelves into the ponds, where they feed and bring them up for to ſell them unto thoſe former Merchants, who trade with them into divers parts, it being unlawfull for one to trench upon anothers traffick, as I have before related, ſo that in the Markets and publique places, where proviſions for the mouth are ſold, if any that ſell Gooſe Eggs do chance to be taken ſeazed with Hens Eggs, and it is ſuſpected that they ſell of them, they are preſently puniſhed with thirty laſhes on the bare Buttocks, without hearing any juſtification they can make for themſelves, being as I have ſaid, found ſeazed of them, ſo that if they will have Hens Eggs for their own uſe, to avoid incurring the penalty of the Law they muſt be broken at one end, whereby it may appear that they keep them not to ſell, but to eat. As for them that ſell Fiſh alive, if any of their Fiſh chance to die, they cut them in pieces, and ſalting them ſell them at the price of ſalt-fiſh, which is leſſe then that of freſh-fiſh, wherein they proceed ſo exactly, that no man dares paſſe the limits, which are preſcribed and ordained by the *Conchalis* of the State, upon pain of moſt ſevere puniſhment, for in all this Country the King is ſo much reſpected, and Juſtice ſo feared, as no kinde of perſon, how great ſoever, dares murmur, or look awry at an Officer, no not at the very *Hoppes*, which are as the Bayliffs or Beadles amongſt us.

## Chap. XXXI.

*The order which is obſerved in the moving Towns that are made upon the Rivers, and that which further befell us.*

S.1. WEe ſaw likewiſe all along this great River a number of Hogs both wilde and domeſtick, that were kept by certain men on horſeback, and many herds of tame red Deer, which were driven from place to place like Sheep, to feed, all lamed of their right legs, to hinder them from running away, and they are lamed ſo, when they are but Calves, to avoid the danger, that otherwiſe they might incur of their lives: We ſaw alſo divers Parks, wherein a world of Dogs were kept to be ſold to the Butchers, for in theſe Countries they eat all manner of Fleſh, whereof they know the price, and of what creatures they are, by the choppings they make of them; moreover we met with many ſmall Barques, whereof ſome, were full of Pigs, others of Tortoiſes, Frogs, Otters, Adders, Eeeles, Snails, and Lizards, for as I have ſaid, they buy there of all that is judged good to eat; now to the end that ſuch proviſions may paſſe at an eaſier rate, all that ſell them are permitted to make traffick of them in ſeveral faſhions; true it is, that in ſome things they have greater Franchiſes, then in others, to the end that by means thereof no Merchandiſe may want ſale: And becauſe the Subject I now treat of diſpences me to ſpeak of all, I will relate that which we further obſerved there, and whereat we were much abaſhed, judging thereby how far men ſuffer themſelves to be carried by their Intereſts, and extream avarice; you muſt know then that in this Country there are a many of ſuch as make a trade of buying and ſelling mens Excrements, which is not ſo mean a Commerce amongſt them, but that there are many of them grow rich by it, and are held in good account; now theſe Excrements ſerve to manure grounds that are newly grubb'd, which is found to be far better for that purpoſe then the ordinary dung: They which make a trade of buying it go up and down the ſtreets with certain Clappers, like our Spittle men, whereby they give to underſtand what they

deſire,

deſire without publiſhing of it otherwiſe to people, in regard the thing is filthy of it ſelf; whereunto I will adde thus much, that this commodity is ſo much eſteemed amonſt them, and ſo great a trade driven of it, that into one ſea port, ſometimes there comes in one tyde two or three hundred Sayls laden with it: Oftentimes alſo there is ſuch ſtriving for it, as the Governours of the place are fain to enterpoſe their authority for the diſtribution of this goodly commodity, and all for to manure their grounds, which ſoyled with it, bears three crops in one year. We ſaw many boats likewiſe laden with dryed orange pills, wherewith in victualing houſes they boyl dogs fleſh, for to take away the rank ſavour and hhmidity of it, as alſo to reader it more firm: In brief, we ſaw ſo many *Vaucans*, *Lanteaas*, and *Barcaſſes*, in this river, laden with all kinds of proviſion, that either the ſea or land produces, and that in ſuch abundance, as I muſt confeſs I am not able to expreſſe it in words; for it is not poſſible to imagine the infinite ſtore of things that are in this Country, of each whereof you ſhall ſee two or three hundred Veſſels together at a time; all full, eſpecially at the Fairs, and Markets, that are kept upon the ſolemn feſtival days of their *Pagodes*, for then all the fairs are free, and the *Pagodes* for the moſt part are ſeituated on the banks of rivers, to the end all commodities may the more commodiouſly be brought thither by water. Now when all theſe veſſels come to joyn together, during theſe Fairs, they take ſuch order, as they make as it were a great and fair Town of them, ſo that ſometimes you ſhall have of them a league in length, and three quarters of a league in bredth, being compoſed of above twenty thouſand veſſels, beſides *Balons*, *Gnedees*, and *Manchuas*, which are ſmall boats, whoſe number is infinite; For the Government hereof there are threeſcore Captains appointed, of which thirty are to ſee good order kept, and the other thirty are for the guard of the Merchants that come thither, to the end they may ſail in ſafety; Moreover there is above them a *Chaem*, who hath abſolute power both in civil, and criminal cauſes, without any appeal or oppoſition whatſoever, during the fifteen days, that this Fair laſts, which is from the new to the full Moon; And indeed more come to ſee the policy, order, and beauty of this kind of Town, then otherwiſe; for to ſpeak the truth, the framing of it in that manner with veſſels, makes it more to be admired then all the Edifices that can be ſeen upon the land; There are in this moving Town two thouſand ſtreets, exceeding long, & very ſtrait, incloſed on either ſide with ſhips, moſt of which are covered with ſilks, and adorned with a world of banners, flags, and ſtreamers, wherein all kind of commodities that can be deſired, are to be ſold; In other ſtreets are as many trades to be ſeen, as in any Town on the Land, amidſt the which they that traffique, go up and down in little *Manchuas*, and that very quietly, and without any diſorder; Now if by chance any one is taken ſtealing, he is inſtantly puniſhed according to his offence; As ſoon as it is night, all theſe ſtreets are ſhut up with cords athwart them, to the end none may paſſe after the retreat ſounded; In each of theſe ſtreets there are at leaſt a duzen of lanthorns, with lights burning, faſtened a good heighth on the Maſts of the veſſels, by means whereof all that go in and out are ſeen, ſo that it may be known who they are, from whence they come, and what they would have, to the end the *Chaem* may the next morning receive an account thereof; And truly to behold all theſe lights together in the night, is a ſight ſcarce able to be imagined, neither is there a ſtreet without a Bell, and a Sentinel, ſo as when that of the *Chaems* ſhip is heard to ring, all the other bels anſwer it, with ſo great a noiſe of voices adjoyned thereunto, that we were almoſt beſides our ſelves, at the hearing of a thing, which cannot be well conceived; and that was ruled with ſuch good order: In every of theſe ſtreets, even in the pooreſt of them, there is a Chappel to pray in, framed upon great *Barcaſſes*, like to Gallies, very neat, and ſo well accommodated, that for the moſt part they are enriched with ſilks, and cloth of gold; In theſe Chappels are their Idols, and Prieſts which adminiſter their ſacrifices, and receive the offerings that are made them, wherewith they are abundantly furniſhed for their living; Out of each ſtreet, one of the moſt account, or chiefeſt Merchant is choſen to watch all night in his turn with thoſe of his Squadron, beſides the Captains of the government, who in Ballons, walk the round without, to the end no thiefe may eſcape by any avenue whatſoever, and for that purpoſe theſe guards cry as loud as they can that they may be heard. Amongſt the moſt remarkable things, we ſaw one ſtreet, where there were above an hundred veſſels, laden with Idols of guilt wood, of divers faſhions, which were ſold for to be offered to the *Pagodes*, together with a world of feet, thighs, arms, and heads, that ſick folks bought to offer in devotion; There alſo we beheld other ſhips, covered with ſilk hangings, where Comedies, and other playes were repreſented to entertain the people withall, which in great numbers

flocked thither; In other places, Bils of exchange for Heaven were ſold, whereby theſe Prieſts of the Divel promiſed them many merits, with great intereſt, affirming that without theſe bils they could not poſſibly be ſaved, for that God, ſay they, is a mortal enemy to all ſuch as do not ſome good to the *Pagodes*, whereupon they tell them ſuch fables and lies, as theſe unhappy wretches do often times take the very bread from their mouths to give it them; There were alſo other veſſels all laden with dead mens skuls, which divers men bought for to preſent as an offering, at the tombs of their friends, when they ſhould happen to dye; for, ſay they, as the deceaſed is laid in the grave in the company of theſe skuls, ſo ſhall his ſoul enter into Heaven, attended by thoſe unto whom thoſe skuls belonged, wherefore when the Porter of Paradiſe ſhall ſee ſuch a Merchant, with many followers, he will do him honour, as to a man that in this life hath been a man of quality, for if he be poor, and without a train, the Porter will not open to him, whereas contrarily the more dead mens skuls he hath buried with him, the more happy he ſhall be eſteemed; There were many boats likewiſe, where there were men that had a great many of Cages, full of live birds, who playing on divers inſtruments of muſick, exhorted the people with a loud voice, to deliver thoſe poor creatures of God, that were there in captivity, whereupon many came and gave them mony for the redemption of thoſe priſoners, which preſently they let out of the cages, and then as they flew away, the redeemers of them cried out to the birds, *Pichan pitanel catan vacaxi*, that is, *Go, and tell God, how We ſerve him here below.* In imitation of theſe, there are others alſo, who in their ſhips, kept a great many of little live fiſhes in great pots of water, and like the ſellers of birds invite the people, for Gods cauſe to free thoſe poor innocent fiſhes, that had never ſinned, ſo that divers bought many of them, and caſting them into the river, ſaid, *Get ye gone, and tell there below, the good I have done you for Gods ſake.* To conclude all, the veſſels where theſe things are expoſed to ſale, are ſeldom leſs in number then two hundred, beſides thouſands of others, which ſell ſuch like wares in a far greater quantity.

§. 2 We ſaw likewiſe many *Barcaſſes* full of men and women; that played upon divers ſorts of inſtruments, and for mony gave them muſick that deſired it; There were other veſſels laden with horns, which the Prieſts ſold, therewith to make feaſts in Heaven, for they ſay, that thoſe were the horns of ſeveral beaſts, which were offered in ſacrifice to the Idols out of devotion, and for the performance of vows that men had made in divers kind of misfortunes, and ſickneſſes, wherein they had at others times been; And that as the fleſh of thoſe beaſts, had been given here below for the honour of God to the poor, ſo the ſouls of them for whom thoſe horns were offered, do in the other world eat the ſouls of of thoſe beaſts to whom thoſe horns belonged, and thereunto invite the ſouls of their friends, as men uſe to invite others here on earth; Other veſſels we ſaw covered with blacks, and full of tombs, torches, and great wax lights, as alſo women in them, that for money would be hired to weep and lament for the dead; others there were, called *Pitalens*, that in great barques kept divers kinds of wild beaſts to be ſhewed for mony, moſt dreadful to behold as Serpents, huge Adders, monſtrous Lizards, Tygers, and many others ſuch like; we ſaw in like ſort a great number of Stationers, which ſold all manner of books, that could be deſired, as well concerning the creation of the world, whereof they tell a thouſand lies, as touching the States, Kingdoms, Iſlands, and Provinces of the world, together with the Laws and Cuſtoms of Nations, but eſpecially of the Kings of *China*, their number, brave acts, and of all things elſe that happened in each of their reigns, Moreover we ſaw a great many of the light, ſwift Foyſts, wherein were men very well armed, who cried out with a loud voice, that if any one had received an affront, whereof he deſired to be avenged, let him come unto them, and they would cauſe ſatisfaction to be made him; In other veſſels there were old women, that ſerved for midwives, and that would bring women ſpeedily and eaſily a bed, as alſo a many of Nurſes, ready to be entertained for to give children ſuck; There were barques likewiſe very well adorned, and ſet forth, that had in them divers reverend old men, and grave matrons, whoſe profeſſion was to make marriages, and to comfort widows, or ſuch as had loſt their children, or ſuffered any other misfortune; In others there were a number of young men and maids, that lacked Maſters, and Miſtreſſes, which offered themſelves to any that would hire them; There were other veſſels that had in them ſuch as undertook to tell fortunes, and to help folks to things loſt. In a word, not to dwell any longer upon every particular, that was to be ſeen in this moving Town, for then I ſhould never have done, it ſhall ſuffice me to ſay, that nothing can be deſired on land, which was not to be had in their veſſels, and that in greater abundance then I have delivered, wherefore I

will paſſe from it to ſhew you that one of the principal cauſes why this Monarchy of *China*, that contains two and thirty Kingdoms, is ſo mighty, rich, and of ſo great commerce, is, becauſe it is exceedingly repleniſhed with rivers, and a world of Chanals that have been anciently made by the Kings, great Lords, and people thereof, for to render all the Country navigable, and ſo communicate their labours with one another: The narroweſt of theſe Chanals have bridges, of hewed ſtone over them, that are very high, long and broad, whereof ſome are of one ſtone, eighty, ninety, nay, an hundred ſpans long, and fifteen, or twenty broad, which doubtleſſe is very marvellous, for it is almoſt impoſſible to comprehend by what means ſo huge a maſſe of ſtone could be drawn out of the Quarry without breaking, and how it ſhould be tranſported to the place where it was to be ſet. All the ways and paſſages, from Cities, Towns, and Villages, have very large cauſeys made of fair ſtone, at the ends whereof are coſtly pillars and arches, upon which are inſcriptions with letters of gold, containing the prayſers of them that erected them; moreover there are handſome ſeats placed all along for poor paſſengers to reſt themſelves on: There are likewiſe innumerable Aqueducks and fountains every where, whoſe water is moſt wholeſom and excellent to drink; And in divers parts there are certain Wenches of love, that out of charity proſtitute themſelves to travellers, which have no mony, and although amongſt us this is held for a great abuſe and abomination, yet with them it is accounted a work of mercy, ſo that many on their death-beds do by their teſtaments bequeath great revenues, for the maintenance of this wickedneſs, as a thing very meritorious for the ſalvation of their ſouls; moreover many others have left lands for the erecting and maintaining of houſes, in deſerts and unhabited places, where great fires are kept all the night to guide ſuch as have ſtrayed out of their way, as alſo water for men to drink, and ſeats to repoſe them in, and that there may be no default herein, there are divers perſons entertained with very good means, to ſee theſe things carefully continued, according to the inſtitution of him that founded them for the health of his ſoul. By theſe marvels which are found in the particular Towns of this Empire, may be concluded what the greatneſs thereof might be, were they joyned all together; but for the better ſatisfaction of the Reader, I dare boldly ſay, if my teſtimony may be worthy of credit, that in one and twenty years ſpace, during which time, with a world of misfortune, labour and pain, I traverſed the greateſt part of *Aſia*, as may appear by this my diſcourſe, I had ſeen in ſome countrys a wonderfull abundance of ſeveral ſorts of victuals, and proviſions, which we have not in our *Europe*, yet without ſpeaking what each of them might have in particular, I do not think there is in all *Europe* ſo much as there is in *China* alone; And the ſame may be ſaid of all the reſt, wherewith Heaven hath favoured this clymate, as well for the temperature of the air, as for that which concerns the policy, and riches, the magnificence and greatneſs of their eſtate; Now that which gives the greateſt luſter unto it, is, their exact obſervation of juſtice, for there is ſo well ruled a Government in this Country, as it may juſtly be envied of all others in the world; And to ſpeak the truth, ſuch as want this particular, have no gloſs, be they otherways never ſo great & commendable. Verily, ſo often as I repreſent unto my ſelf thoſe great things which I have ſeen in this *China*, I am on the one ſide amazed to think how liberally it hath pleaſed God to heap up on this people, the goods of the earth, & on the other ſide I am exceedingly grieved to conſider how ungratefull they are in acknowledging ſuch extraordinary favours; for they commit amongſt themſelves an infinite of moſt enormous ſins, wherewithal they inceſſantly offend the Divine Goodneſs, as well in their bruitiſh and diabolical Idolatries, as in the abominable ſin of *Sodomy*, which is not only permitted amongſt them in publique, but is alſo accounted for a great vertue according to the inſtructions of their Prieſts.

## CHAP. XXXII.

### *Our Arrival at the City of* Pequin; *together with our impriſonment, and that which moreover happened unto us there; as alſo the great Majeſty of the Officers of their Court of Juſtice.*

AFter we were departed from that rare and marvellous Town, whereof I have ſpoken, we continued our courſe up the river, until at length on *Tueſday*, the nineteenth of *October*, in the year 1541. we arrived at the great City of *Pequin*, whither, as I have ſaid before, we had been remitted by Appeal; In this manner chained three and three together, we were caſt into a priſon, called *Gofanianſerca*, where for our welcom we had at the firſt daſh thirty §. 1.

laſhes

laſhes a piece given us, wherewith ſome of us became very ſick: Now as ſoon as the *Chiſun* who conducted us thither, had preſented the proceſs of our ſentence, ſealed with twelve ſeals, to the Juſtice of the *Aytao*, which is their Parliament, the twelve *Chonchalis* of the criminal Chamber, unto whom the cogniſance of our cauſe appertained, commanded us preſently away to priſon, whereupon one of thoſe twelve, aſſiſted by two Regiſters, and ſix or ſeven officers, whom they term *Hupes*, and are much like our Catchpoles here, terrified us not a little, as he was leading us thither, for giving us very threatning ſpeeches; *Come*, ſaid he unto us, *By the power and authority, which I have from the Aytao of Batampina, chief Preſident of the two and thirty Judges of ſtrangers, within whoſe breſt are the ſecrets of the Lyon crowned on the throne of the world incloſed, I enjoyn and command you to tell me, what people you are, as alſo of what country, and whether you have a King, who for the ſervice of God, and for the diſcharge of his dignity, is inclined to do good to the poor, and to render them juſtice, to the end that with tears in their eyes, and hands lifted up, they may not addreſſe their complaints to that Soveraign Lord, which hath made the bright Enamel of the skies, and for whoſe holy feet all they that reign with him, ſerve but for ſandals.* To this demand we anſwered him, that we were poor ſtrangers, natives of the Kingdom of *Siam*, who being imbarqued with our Merchandiſe for *Liampoo*, were caſt away in a great ſtorm at ſea, from whence we eſcaped naked with the loſs of all that we had, and how in that deplorable eſtate we were fain to get our living by begging from door to door, till ſuch time as at our arrival at the Town of *Taypor*, the *Chumbim*, then reſident there, had arreſted us for priſoners without cauſe, and ſo ſent us to the City of *Nanquin*, where by his report we had been condemned to the whip, and to have our thumbs cut off, without ſo much as once daigning to hear us in our juſtifications, by reaſon whereof lifting up our eyes to Heaven, we had been adviced to have recourſe with our tears to the four and twenty Judges of auſtere life, that through their zeal to God, they might take our cauſe in hand, ſince by reaſon of our poverty we were altogether without ſupport, and abandoned of all men, which with an holy zeal they incontinently effected by revoking the cauſe, and annulling the judgment that had been given againſt us, and that theſe things conſidered we moſt inſtantly beſought him, that for the ſervice of God he would be pleaſed to have regard to our miſery, and the great injuſtice that was done us, for that we had no means in this Country, nor perſon that would ſpeak one word for us. The Judg remained ſomtimes in ſuſpence upon that we had ſaid to him, at length he anſwered, that we need ſay no more to him, for it is ſufficient that I know you are poor, to the end this affair may go another way then hitherto it hath done, nevertheleſs to acquit me of my charge, I give you five days time, conformably to the Law of the third Book, that within the ſaid term you may retain a Proctor to undertake your cauſe, but if you will be adviſed by me, you ſhall preſent your requeſt to the *Tanigores* of the ſacred Office, to the end that they carryed by an holy zeal of the honour of God, may out of compaſſion of your miſeries, take upon them to defend your right. Having ſpoken thus, he gave us a *Taeis* in way of alms, and ſaid further to us, Beware of the priſoners that are here, for I aſſure you that they make it their trade, to ſteal all that they can from any one; whereupon entring into another chamber where there were a great number of priſoners, he continued there above three hours in giving them audience, at the end whereof he ſent ſeven and twenty men, that the day before had received their judgment to execution, which was inflicted upon them by whipping to death, a ſpectacle ſo dreadful to us, and that put us in ſuch a fright, as it almoſt ſet us beſides our ſelves: The next morning, as ſoon as it was day, the Jaylors clapt irons on our feet, and manacles on our hands, and put us to exceeding great pain, but ſeven days after we had endured ſuch miſery, being laid on the ground one by another, and bewayling our diſaſter, for the extream fear we were in, of ſuffering a moſt cruel death, if that which we had done at *Calemplay* ſhould by any means chance to be diſcovered, it pleaſed God that we were viſited by the *Tanigores* of the houſe of mercy, which is of the juriſdiction of this priſon, who are called in their language *Coſilem Gnaxy*; At their arrival all the priſoners bowing themſelves, ſaid with a lamentable tone, *Bleſſed be the day wherein God doth viſit us by the miniſtery of his ſervants*; whereunto the *Tanigories* made anſwer with a grave and modeſt countenance, *The Almighty and divine hand of him that hath formed the beauty of the ſtars keep and preſerve you*; Then approaching to us, they very courteouſly demanded of us what people we were, and whence it proceeded that our impriſonment was more ſenſible to us then to others? To this ſpeech we replied with tears in our eyes, that we were poor ſtrangers, ſo abandoned of men, as in all

that

that Country there was not one that knew our names, and that all we could in our poverty say to intreat them to think of us for Gods ſake, was contained in a letter, that we had brought them from the Chamber of the Society of the houſe of *Quiay Hinarol*, in the City of *Nanquin*; whereupon *Chriſtophoro Borralho*, preſenting them with the letter, they received it with a new ceremony, full of all curteſie, ſaying, *Prayſed be he who hath created all things, for that he is pleaſed to ſerve himſelf of ſinners here below, whereby they may be recompenſed at the laſt day of all days, by ſatisfying them double their labour with the riches of his holy treaſures, which ſhall be done, as we believe in as great abundance, as the drops of rain fall from the clouds to the earth.* After this, one of the four, putting up the Letter, ſaid unto us, that as ſoon as the Chamber of Juſtice for the poor was open, they would all of them give an anſwer to our buſineſs, and ſee us furniſhed with all that we had need of, and ſo they departed from us: Three days after they returned to viſit us in the priſon, and in the next morning coming to us again, they asked us many queſtions anſwerable to a memorial which they had thereof, whereunto we replyed in every point according as we were queſtioned by each of them, ſo as they remained very well ſatisfied with our anſwers; Then calling the Regiſter to them, who had our papers in charge, they inquired very exactly of him, touching many things that concerned us, and withall required his advice about our affair; that done, having digeſted all that might make for the converſation of our right into certain heads, they took our proceſs from him, ſaying, they would peruſe it all of them together in their Chambers of Juſtice with the Proctors of the houſe, and the next day return it him again, that he might carry it to the *Chaem*, as he was reſolved before to do.

Not to trouble my ſelf with recounting in particular all that occurred in this affair, until ſuch time as it was fully concluded, wherein ſix months and an half were imployed, during the which we continued ſtil priſoners in ſuch miſery, I will in few words relate all that befel us unto the end; when as our buſineſs was come before the twelve *Conchalis* of the criminal Court, the two Proctors of the houſe of mercy moſt willingly took upon them to cauſe the unjuſt ſentence, which had been given againſt us, to be revoked; Having gotten then all the proceedings to be diſannulled, they by petition remonſtrated unto the *Chaem*, who was the Preſident of that Court, *How we could not for any cauſe whatſoever be condemned to death, ſeeing there were no witneſſes of any credit that could teſtifie that we had robbed any man, or had ever ſeen us carry any offenſive weapons contrary to the prohibition made againſt it by the Law of the firſt book, but that we were apprehended quite naked, like wretched men, wandering after a lamentable ſhipwrack, and that therefore our poverty and miſery was worthy rather of a pitiful compaſſion, then of that rigour, wherewith the firſt Miniſters of the arm of wrath had cauſed us to be whipt; moreover that God alone was the Judg of our innocency, in whoſe name they required him once, twice, nay many times, to conſider that he was mortal, and could not laſt long, for that God had given him a periſhable life, at the end whereof he was to render an account of that which had been required of him, ſince by a ſolemn oath he was obliged to do all that ſhould be manifeſt to his judgment, without any conſideration of men of the world, whoſe cuſtom it was to make the ballance ſway down, which God would have to be upright, according to the integrity of his divine Juſtice.* To this petition the Kings Proctor oppoſed himſelf, as he that was our adverſe party, and that in certain articles, which he framed againſt us, ſet forth, how he would prove by ocular witneſſes, as well of the Country, as ſtrangers, that we were publique thieves, making a common practiſe of robbing, and not merchants, ſuch as we pretended to be; whereunto he added, that if we had come to the Coaſt of *China* with a good deſigne, and with an intent to pay the King his due in his Cuſtom-houſes, we would have repaired to the ports, where they were eſtabliſhed by the Ordinance of the *Aytan* of the Government, but for a puniſhment, becauſe we went from Iſle to Iſle, like Pirats, Almighty God, that deteſts ſin and robbery, had permitted us to ſuffer ſhipwrack, that ſo falling into the hands of the Miniſters of his juſtice, we might receive the guerdon of our wicked works, namely, the pains of death, whereof our crimes rendred us moſt worthy; In regard of all which, he deſired we might be condemned according to the Law of the ſecond book, that commanded it in expreſs terms; And that if for other conſiderations, no way remarkable in us, we could by any law be exempted from death, yet nevertheleſs for that we were ſtrangers, and vagabonds, without either faith, or knowledg of God, that alone would ſuffice at leaſtwiſe to condemn us to have our hands and noſes cut off, and ſo to be baniſhed for ever into the Country of *Ponxideytay*, whither ſuch peo-

§. 2.

ple

the *Chaems* table, becauſe it was of ſilver, had no carpet on it, nor any thing elſe, but a cuſhion of cloth of gold, and a Scandith; Now all theſe things put together, as we ſaw them, carried a wonderful ſhew of State and Majeſty; But to proceed, upon the fourth ringing of a bell, one of the *Cachalis* ſtood up, and after a low obeyſance made to the *Chaem*, with a very loud voice, that he might be heard of every one, he ſaid, *Peace there, and with all ſubmiſſion hearken, on pain of incurring the puniſhment, ordained by the* Chaem *of the Government for thoſe, that interrupt the ſilence of ſacred Juſtice.* Whereupon this fame ſitting down again, another aroſe, and with the like reverence, mounting up to the Tribunal, where the *Chaem* ſat, he took the Sentences from him that held them in his hand, and publiſhed them aloud one after another, with ſo many ceremonies, and compliments, as he employed above an hour therein; At length coming to pronounce our judgment, they cauſed us to kneel down, with our eyes fixed on the ground, and our hands lifted up, as if we were praying unto Heaven, to the end that in all humility we might hear the publication thereof, which was thus; *Bitan Dicabor, the new* Chaem *of this ſacred Court, where juſtice is rendred to ſtrangers, and that by the gracious pleaſure of the Son of the Sun, the Lion crowned on the throne of the world, unto whom are ſubjected all the Scepters and Crowns of the Kings that govern the earth; ye are ſubjected under his feet by the grace and will of the moſt High in Heaven, having viewed and conſidered the Appeal made to me by theſe nine ſtrangers, whoſe cauſe was commanded hither by the City of* Nanquin, *by the four and twenty of auſteer life, I ſay, by the oath I have taken upon my entry into the Charge, which I exerciſe for the* Aytao *of* Bitampina, *the chief of two and thirty that govern all the people of this Empire, that the ninth day of the ſeventh Moon, in the fifteenth year of the reign of the Son of the Sun, I was preſented with the accuſations, which the* Cumbim *of* Taypor, *ſent me againſt them, whereby he chargeth them to be theeves, and robbers of other mens goods, affirming that they have long practiſed that trade, to the great offence of the Lord above, who hath created all things; and withall that without any fear of God they uſed to bathe themſelves in the blood of thoſe, that with reaſon reſiſted them, for which they have already been condemned to be Whipt, and have their thumbs cut off, whereof the one hath been put in execution; but when they came to have their thumbs cut off, the Procters for the poor, oppoſing it, alledged in their behalf, that they were wrongfully condemned, becauſe there was no proof of that wherewith they were charged, in regard whereof they required for them, that in ſtead of judging them upon a bare ſhew of uncertain ſuſpitions, volunble teſtimonies might be produced, and ſuch as were conformable to the divine Laws, and the Juſtice of Heaven; whereunto anſwer was made by that Court, how juſtice was to give place to mercy, whereupon they that undertook their cauſe made their complaint to the four and twenty of auſteer life, who both out of very juſt conſiderations, and the regard they had to the little ſupport they could have, for that they were ſtrangers, and of a Nation ſo far diſtant from us, as we never heard of the Country where they ſay they were born, mercifully inclining to their lamentable cries, ſent them and their cauſe to be judged by this Court, wherefore omitting the proſecution thereof here by the Kings Procter, being able to prove nothing whereof he accuſed them, affirms only that they are worthy of death for the ſuſpicion and jealouſie they have given of themſelves, but in regard ſacred juſtice, that ſtands upon conſiderations which are pure and agreeable to God, admits of no reaſons from an adverſe party, if they be not made good by evident proofs, I thought it not fit to allow of the Kings Procters accuſations, ſince he could not prove what he had alledged, whereupon inſiſting on his demand, without ſhewing either any juſt cauſes, or ſufficient proof concerning that he concluded againſt theſe ſtrangers, I condemned him in twenty* Taels *of ſilver amends to his adverſe parties, being altogether according to equity, becauſe the reaſons alledged by him were grounded upon a bad end, and ſuch as were neither juſt, nor pleaſing to God, whoſe mercy doth always incline to their ſide that are poor and feeble on the earth, when as they invoke him with tears in their eyes, as is daily and clearly manifeſted by the pitiful effects of his greatneſs; ſo that having thereupon expreſly commanded the* Tangotes *of the houſe of mercy, to alledge whatſoever they could ſay in their behalf, they accordingly did ſo, within the time that was prefixed them for that purpoſe; And ſo all proceedings having received their due courſe, the cauſe is now come to a final judgment: Wherefore every thing duly viewed and conſidered, without regard had to any humane reſpect, but only to the merit and equity of their cauſe, and according to the reſolution of the Laws, accepted by the twelve* Chaems *of the Government in the fifth book of the Will and pleaſure of the Son of the Sun, who*

in

*in ſuch caſes out of his greatneſs and goodneſs hath more regard to the complaints of the poor, then to the inſolent clamors of the proud of the earth; I do ordain, and decree, that theſe nine ſtrangers ſhall be clearly quit and abſolved of all that, which the Kings Proctor hath laid to their charge, as alſo of all the puniſhment belonging thereunto, condemning them only to a years exile, during which time they ſhall work for their living in the reparations of Quanſy; and when as eight months of the ſaid year ſhall be accompliſhed, then I expreſly enjoyn all the* Chumbims, Conchalis, Monteos, *and other Miniſters of their government, that immediately upon their preſenting of this my Decree unto them, they give them a paſſeport and ſafe conduct, to the end they may freely and ſecurely return into their Country, or to any other place they ſhal think fit.* After this ſentence was thus publiſhed in our hearing, we all cried out with a loud voice, *The Sentence of thy clear judgment is confirmed in us, even as the purity of thy heart is agreeable to the ſon of the Sun.* This ſaid, one of the *Conchalis*, that ſate at one of the tables, ſtood up, and having made a very low obeiſance to the *Chaem*, he ſaid aloud five times one after another, to all that preſſe of people, which were there in great number; *Is there any one in this Court, in this City, or in this Kingdom, that will oppoſe this Decree, or the deliverance of theſe nine priſoners?* Whereunto no anſwer being made the two boyes, that repreſented juſtice and mercy, touched the enſignes which they held in their hands together, and ſaid aloud, *Let them be freed and diſcharged according to the ſentence very juſtly pronounced for it*; whereupon one of thoſe Miniſters, whom they call *Huppes*, having rung a bell thrice, the two *Chumbims* of execution, that had formerly bound us, unloſed us from our chain, and withall took off our manicles, collers, and the other irons from our legs, ſo that we were quite delivered, for which we gave infinite thanks to our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, becauſe we always thought, that for the ill conceit men had of us, we ſhould be condemned to death. From thence ſo delivered as we were, they led us back to the priſon, where the two *Chumbims* ſigned our enlargment in the Jaylors book; nevertheleſs that we might be altogether diſcharged, we were to go two months after to ſerve a year according to our ſentence, upon pain of becoming ſlaves for ever to the King, conformable to his Ordinances: Now becauſe we would preſently have gone about to demand the alms of good people in the City, the *Chiſun*, who was as Grand Provoſt of that priſon, perſwaded us to ſtay till the next day, that he might firſt recommend us to the *Tanigores* of mercy, that they might do ſomething for us.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

### *What paſt betwixt us, and the Tanigores of mercy, with the great favors they did us; and a brief Relation of the City of* Pequin, *where the King of* China *kept his Court.*

THE next morning the four *Tanigores* of mercy came to viſit the Infirmiry of this priſon, as they uſed to do; where they rejoyced with us for the good ſucceſs of our Sentence, giving us great teſtimony, how well contented they were with it, for which we returned them many thanks, not without ſhedding abundance of tears, whereat they ſeemed to be not a little pleaſed, and willed us not to be troubled with the term we were condemned to ſerve in, for they told us that inſtead of a year we ſhould continue but eight months there, and that the other four months, which made the third part of our puniſhment, the King remitted it by way of alms for Gods ſake, in conſideration that we were poor, for otherwiſe if we had been rich, and of ability, we ſhould have had no favour at all, promiſing to cauſe this dimunition of puniſhment to be endorſed on our Sentence, and beſides that they would go, and ſpeak to a very honourable man for us, that was appointed to be the chief Marſhal, or Monteo, of *Quanſy*, the place where we were to ſerve, to the end he might ſhew us favour, and cauſe us to be truly paid for the time we ſhould remain there: Now becauſe this man was naturally a friend to the poor, and inclined to do them good, they thought it would be fit to carry us along with them to his houſe, the rather for that it might be he would take us into his charge; we gave them all very humble thanks for this good offer of theirs, and told them that God would reward this charity, they ſhewed us for his ſake; whereupon we accompanied them to the *Monteos* houſe, who came forth to receive us in his outward Court, leading his wife by the hand, which he did, either out of a greater form of complement, or to do the more honour to the *Tanigores*,

*res*, and coming neer them he proſtrated himſelf at their feet, and ſaid: *It is now, my Lord, and holy brethren, that I have cauſe to rejoyce, for that it hath pleaſed God to permit, that you his holy ſervants ſhould come unto my houſe, being that which I could not hope for, in regard I held my ſelfe unworthy of ſuch favour.* After the *Tanigores* had uſed many complements and cereremonies to him, as is uſuall in that Country, they anſwered him thus, *May God, our Soveraign Lord, the infinite ſource of mercy, recompence the good thou doſt for the poor with bleſſing in this life; for believe it, dear brother, the ſtrongeſt ſtaff wherein the ſoul doth lean to keep her from falling ſo often as ſhe happens to ſtumble, is the charity, which we uſe towards our neighbour, when as the vain glory of this world doth not blind the good zeal wherennto his holy Law doth oblige us, and that thou mayſt merit the bleſſed felicity of beholding his face, we have brought thee here theſe nine* Portugals, *who are ſo poor, as none in this Kingdom are like to them; wherefore we pray thee that in the place whither thou art going now, as* Monteo, *thou wilt do for them all that thou thinkeſt will be acceptable to the Lord above, in whoſe behalf we crave this of thee.* To this Speech the *Monteo*, and his wife, replyed in ſuch courteous and remarkable terms, as we were almoſt beſides our ſelves to hear in what manner they attributed the ſucceſſe of their affairs, to the principal cauſe of all goodneſs, even as though they had the light of faith, or the knowledg of the Chriſtian verity. Hereupon they withdrew into a Chamber, into which we went not, and continued there about half an hour; then as they were about to take leave of one another, they commanded us to come in to them, where the *Tanigores* ſpake to them again about us, and recommending us unto them more then before, the *Monteo* cauſed our names to be written down in a book that lay before him, and ſaid unto us, *I do this, becauſe I am not ſo good a man, as to give you ſomething of mine own, nor ſo bad as to deprive you of the ſweat of your labour, wherennto the King hath bound you, wherefore even at this inſtant you ſhall begin to get your living, although you do not ſerve us yet, for the deſire I have that this may be accounted to me for an alms, ſo that now you have nothing to do, but to be merry in my houſe, where I will give order that you ſhall be provided of all that is neceſſary for you; Beſides this, I will not promiſe you any thing, for the fear I am in of the ſhewing ſome vanity by my promiſe, and ſo the Divel may make uſe thereof as of an advantage, to lay hold on me, a matter that often arrives through the weakneſs of our nature; wherefore let it ſuffice you for the preſent to know, that I will be mindful of you for the love of theſe holy brethren here, who have ſpoken to me for you.* The four *Tanigores* thereupon taking their leave, gave us four *Taeis*, and ſaid unto us, *Forget not to render thanks unto God for the good ſucceſs you have had in your buſineſs, for it would be a grievous ſin in you not to acknowledge ſo great a grace.* Thus were we very well entertained in the houſe of this Captain for the ſpace of two months, that we remained there, at the end whereof we parted from thence, for to go to *Quanſy*, where we were to make up our time, under the conduct of this Captain, who ever after uſed us very kindly, and ſhewed us many favours, untill that the *Tartars* entred into the Town, who did a world of miſchief there, as I will more amply declare hereafter.

§. 2. Before I recount that which happened unto us, after we were imbarqued with thoſe *Chineſes* that conducted us, and that gave us great hope of ſetting us at liberty, I think it not amiſs to make a brief relation here of the City of *Pequin*, which may truly be termed the capital of the Monarchy of the world, as alſo of ſome particulars I obſerved there, as well for its arches and policy, as for that which concerns its extent, its government, the laws of the Country, and the admirable manner of providing for the good of the whole State, together in what ſort they are paid, that ſerve in the time of war, according to the Ordinances of the Kingdom, and many other things like unto theſe, though I muſt needs confeſs that herein I ſhall want the beſt part, namely, wit, and capacity, to render a reaſon in what clymate it is ſcituated, and in the heigth of how many degrees, which is a matter the learned and curious moſt deſire to be ſatisfied in; But my deſigne having never been other (as I have ſaid heretofore) then to leave this my book unto my children, that therein they may ſee the ſufferings I have undergone, it little imports me to write otherwiſe then I do, that is, in a groſs and rude manner; for I hold it better to treat of theſe things in ſuch ſort as nature hath taught me, then to uſe Hyperboles, and ſpeeches from the purpoſe, whereby the weakneſs of my poor underſtanding may be made more evident. Howbeit ſince I am obliged to make mention of this matter, by the promiſe I have made of it heretofore, I ſay, that this City, which we call *Pequin*, and they of the Country *Pequin*, is ſcituated in the heighth of forty and one degrees of Northerly latitude; the

the walls of it are in circuit (by the report of the *Chineſes* themſelves, and as I have read in a little book, treating of the greatneſs thereof, and intituled *Aquiſendan*, which I brought ſince along with me into *Portugal*) thirty large leagues, namely ten long, and five broad; Some others hold, that it is fifty, namely ſeventeen in length, and eight in bredth: and foraſmuch as they that intreat of it are of different opinions, in that the one make the extent of it thirty leagues, as I have ſaid before, and others fifty, I will render a reaſon of this doubt, conformable to that which I have ſeen my ſelf. It is true, that in the manner it is now built, it is thirty leagues in circuit, as they ſay, for it is invironed with two rows of ſtrong walls, where there are a number of towers and bulwarks after our faſhion; But without this circuit, which is of the City it ſelf, there is another far greater, both in length and bredth, that the *Chineſes* affirm was anciently all inhabited, but at this preſent there are only ſome Boroughs and Villages, as alſo a many of fair houſes, or caſtles about it, amongſt the which there are ſixteen hundred, that have great advantages over the reſt, and are the houſes of the Proctors of the ſixteen hundred Cities, and moſt remarkable Towns of the two and thirty Kingdoms of this Monarchy, who repair unto this City at the general Aſſembly of the Eſtates, which is held every three years for the publique good. Without this great incloſure, which (as I have ſaid) is not comprehended in the City, there is in a diſtance of three leagues broad, and ſeven long, fourſcore thouſand Tombs of the *Mandarins*, which are little Chappels all guilded within, and compaſſed about with Billifters of iron and latin, the entries whereinto are through very rich and ſumptuous arches: near to theſe Chappels there are alſo very great houſes, with gardens and tufted woods of high trees, as alſo many inventions of ponds, fountains, and aqueducts; whereunto may be added, that the walls of the incloſure are on the inſide covered with fine porcelain, and on the fanes above are many Lions pourtrayed in gold, as alſo in the ſquares of the ſteeples, which are likewiſe very high, and embelliſhed with pictures. It hath alſo five hundred very great Palaces, which are called *the houſes of the Son of the Sun*, whither all thoſe retire, that have been hurt in the Wars for the ſervice of the King, as alſo many other ſouldiers, who in regard of age or ſickneſs are no longer able to bear arms, and to the end that during the reſt of their days they may be exempted from incommodity, each of them receives monthly a certain pay to find himſelf withall, and to live upon. Now all theſe men of War, as we learned of the *Chineſes*, are ordinarily an hundred thouſand, there being in each of thoſe houſes two hundred men according to their report. We ſaw alſo another long ſtreet of low houſes, where there were four and twenty thouſand oar-men, belonging to the King *Panoures*; and another of the ſame ſtructure a good league in length, where fourteen thouſand Taverners that followed the Court dwelt; as alſo a third ſtreet like unto the other two, where lives a great number of light women, exempted from the tribute, which they of the City pay, for that they are Curtiſans, whereof the moſt part had quitted their husbands for to follow the wretched trade; and if for that cauſe they come to receive any hurt, their husbands are grievouſly puniſhed for it, becauſe they are there as in a place of freedom, and under the protection of the *Tutan* of the Court, Lord Steward of the Kings houſe. In this incloſure do likewiſe remain all the Landreſſes, by them called *Maynates*, which waſh the linnen of the City, who as we were told, are above an hundred thouſand, and live in this quarter, for that there are divers rivers there, together with a number of wells, and deep pools of water, compaſſed about with good walls. Within this ſame incloſure, as the ſaid *Aquiſendan* relates, there are thirteen hundred gallant and very ſumptuous houſes of religious men and women, who make profeſſion of the four principal Laws of thoſe two and thirty which are in the Empire of *China*, and it is thought that in ſome of theſe houſes there are above a thouſand perſons, beſides the ſervants, that from abroad do furniſh them with victuals, and other neceſſary proviſions. We ſaw alſo a great many houſes, which have fair buildings of a large extent, with ſpacious incloſures, wherein there are gardens, and very thick woods, full of any kind of game, either for hawking, or hunting, that may be deſired; And theſe houſes are as it were Inns, whither come continually in great number people of all ages, and ſexes, as to ſee Comedies, Plays, Combates, Bul-baitings, Wraſtlings, and magnificent Feaſts, with the *Tutans*, *Chaems*, *Conchacys*, *Ayaos*, *Bracalons*, *Chumbins*, *Mantees*, *Lanteas*, *Lords*, *Gentlemen*, *Captains*, *Merchants*, and other rich men, do make for to give content to their kindred and friends; Theſe houſes are bravely furniſhed with rich hangings, beds, chairs, and ſtools, as likewiſe with huge cupbards of plate, not only of ſilver, but of gold alſo; and the attendants that wait at the table, are maids ready to be married, very beautiful, and gallantly attired; howbeit all

this

this is nothing in compariſon of the ſumptuouſneſs, and other Magnificences that we ſaw there. Now the *Chineſes* aſſured us, there were ſome feaſts that laſted ten days after the *Carachina*, or *Chineſe* manner, which in regard of the ſtate, pomp, and charge thereof, as well in the attendance of ſervants and wayters, as in the coſtly fare of all kind of fleſh, fowl, fiſh, and all delicacies in muſick, in ſports of hunting, and hawking, in playes, comedies, tilts, turneyes, and in ſhews both of horſe and foot, fighting and skirmiſhing together, do coſt above twenty thouſand *Taeis*. Theſe Inns do ſtand in at leaſt a million of gold, and are maintained by certain Companies of very rich Merchants, who in way of commerce and traffique employ their mony therein, whereby it is thought they gain far more, then if they ſhould venture it to ſea. It is ſaid alſo, that there is ſo good and exact an order obſerved there, that whenſoever any one will be at a charge that way, he goes to the *Xipaton* of the houſe, who is the ſuperintendant thereof, and declares unto him what his deſigne is, whereupon he ſhews him a book, all divided into chapters, which treats of the ordering and ſumptuouſneſs of Feaſts, as alſo the rates of them, and how they ſhall be ſerved in, to the end, that he who will be at the charge, may chuſe which he pleaſes; This book, called *Pinetoren*, I have ſeen, and heard it read, ſo that I remember how in the three firſt Chapters thereof, it ſpeaks of the feaſts, whereunto God is to be invited, and of what price they are; and then it deſcends to the King of *China*, of whom it ſayes, *That by a ſpeciall grace of Heaven, and right of Soveraignty, he hath the Government of the whole earth, and of all the Kings that inhabit it.* After it hath done with the King of *China*, it ſpeaks of the feaſts of the *Tutons*, which are the ten Soveraign dignities, that command over the forty *Chaems*, who are as the Vice-royes of the State. Theſe *Tutons* alſo are termed the beams of the Sun, for, ſay they, as the King of *China* is the Son of the Sun, ſo the *Tutons*, who repreſent him, may rightly be termed his beams, for that they proceed from him, even as the rayes do from the Sun; But ſetting aſide the bruitiſhneſs of theſe *Gentiles*, I will only ſpeak of the Feaſt, whereunto God is to be invited, which I have ſeen ſome to make with much devotion, though for want of faith, their works can do them little good.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

### *The Order which is obſerved in the Feaſts, that are made in certain Inns; and the State, which the* Chaem *of the two and thirty Univerſities keeps; with certain remarkable things in the City of* Pequin.

THe firſt thing whereof mention is made in the Preface of that Book, which treats of Feaſts, as I have ſaid before, is the Feaſt, that is to be made unto God here upon earth, of which it is ſpoken in this manner: *Every Feaſt, how ſumptuous ſoever it be, may be paid for with a price, more or leſs, conformable to the bounty of him that makes it, who for all his charge beſtowed on it reaps no other recompence, then the praiſe of flatterers and idle perſons; Wherefore, O my Brother,* ſaith the Preface of the ſaid Book, *I counſel thee to imploy thy goods in feaſting of God in his poor, that is to ſay, ſecretly to ſupply the neceſſities of good folks, ſo that they may not periſh for want of that which thou haſt more then thou needeſt. Call to mind alſo the vile matter wherewith thy father ingendred thee, and that too, which is far more abject, wherewith thy mother conceived thee, and ſo thou wilt ſee how much inferiour thou art, even to the brute beaſts, which without diſtinction of reaſon apply themſelves to that whereunto they are carried by the fleſh; and ſeeing that in the quality of a man thou wilt invite thy friends, who poſſibly by to morrow may not be, to ſhew that thou art good and faithful, invite the poor creatures of God, of whoſe groans and neceſſities he like a pitiful Father taketh compaſſion, and promiſeth to him that doth them good infinite ſatisfaction in the houſe of the Sun, where as an Article of faith we hold, that his ſervants ſhall abide for evermore in eternal happineſs.* After theſe words, and other ſuch like, worthy to be obſerved, the *Xipaton*, who, as I told you, is the chief of them that govern this great Labyrinth, ſhews him all the Chapters of the Book, from one end to the other, and bids him look what manner of men, or Lords he will invite, what number of gueſts, and how many days he will have the feaſt to laſt; for adeth he, the *Kings*, and *Tutons*, at the feaſts that are made for them, have ſo many Meſſes of meat, ſo many Attendants, ſuch Furniture, ſuch Chambers, ſuch veſſel, ſuch plate, ſuch ſports, and ſo many days of hawking, and hunting, all which amounts to ſuch a ſum of mony: Then if he will not beſtow ſo much, the *Xipaton* ſhews him in another Chapter, the feaſts which

are

are ordinarily made for the *Chaems*, *Aytaos*, *Ponchacis*, *Bracalons*, *Anchacis*, *Conchalaas*, *Lunteas*, or for Captains, and rich men, whereas other kind of persons of meaner condition have nothing else to do, but to sit down, and fall to on free cost, so that there are usually fifty or threescore rooms full of men and women of all sorts; There are also in other rooms most excellent and melodious consorts of musick, namely of Harps, Viols, Lutes, Bandores, Corners, Sackbuts, and other Instruments, which are not in use amongst us. If it be a feast of women, as it often falls out to be, then are the wayters on the table likewise women, or young Damosels, richly attired, who for that they are maids, and endued with singular beauty, it happens many times that men of extraordinary quality fall in love with them, and do marry them. Now for a conclusion of that which I have to say of these Inns, of all the mony, which is spent upon such feasts, four in the hundred, whereof the *Xipaton* paies the one half, and they that make the feasts the other, is set apart for the entertainment of the table of the poor, whereunto for Gods sake all manner of people are admitted that will come to it; Moreover, they are allowed a Chamber, and a good bed, but that only for the space of three days, unless they be women with child, or sick persons, which are not able to travel; for in that case they are entertained a longer time, because regard is had unto the people according to the need they are in. We saw also in this outward inclosure, which, as I have delivered, invirons all the other City, two and thirty great Edifices, or Colledges, distant about a flight shoot the one from the other, where such, as apply themselves to the study of the two and thirty Laws, which are professed in the two and thirty Kingdoms of this Empire, do recide. Now in each of these Colledges, according as we could guess by the great number of persons that we saw there, there should be above ten thousand Scholers; and indeed the *Aqueſondoo*, which is the Book that treats of these things, makes them amount in the whole to four hundred thousand: There is likewise somewhat apart from the rest, another far greater and fairer Edifice, of almost a league in circuit, where all those that have taken degrees, as well in their Theologie, as in the Laws of the government of this Monarchy, do live. In this University there is a *Chaem*, who commands over all the Heads of the Colledges, and is called, by a title of eminent dignity, *Xiley-xitapon*, that is to say, Lord of all the Nobles. This *Chaem*, for that he is more honourable, and of an higher quality then all the rest, keeps as great a Court as any *Tutor*; for he hath ordinarily a guard of three hundred *Mogores*, four and twenty *Loſbers* that go with silver Maces before him, and six and thirty women, which mounted on white ambling Nags, trapped with silk and silver, ride playing on certain very harmonious instruments of musick, and singing to the tune thereof, make a pleasing Consort after their manner. There are also led before him twenty very handsome spare horses, without any other furniture then their clothes of silver tinsel, and with headstals full of little silver bells, every horse being waited on by six Halberdiers, and four footmen very well apparelled; Before all this train goes four hundred *Huppes*, with a number of great long chains, which trailing on the ground, make such a dreadful ratling and noise, as does not a little terrifie all that are within hearing; Then next to them marches twelve men on horseback, called *Peretandas*, each of them carrying an Umbrello of carnation Sattin, and other twelve that follow them with banners of white damask, deeply indented, and edged about with golden frenge; Now after all this pomp comes the *Chaem* sitting in a triumphant Charlot, attended by threescore *Conchalas*, *Chumbims*, and *Manteos*, such as amongst us are the Chancellors, Judges, and Councellors of the Courts of Justice, and these go all on foot, carrying upon their shoulders Cymiters richly garnished with gold. Last of all follow lesser officers, that are like unto our Registers, Examiners, Auditors, Clarks Atturneys, and Solicitors, all likewise on foot, and crying out unto the people with a loud voice for to retire themselves into their houses, and clear the streets, so as there may be nothing to hinder or trouble the passage of this magnificence. But the most observable thing herein is, that close to the Person of the *Chaem*, march two little boyes on horseback, one on the right hand, the other on the left, richly attired, with their ensignes in their hands, signifying *Justice*, and *Mercy*, whereof I have spoken heretofore; That on the right side representing mercy, is clothed in white, and that on the left representing justice is apparelled in red; The horses whereon these little boyes are mounted, have on them foot-clothes of the same colour their garments are, and all their furniture and trappings are of gold, with a kind of net-work over them, made of silver thread; After each of these children march six young youths, about fifteen years of age, with silver Maces in their hands, so that all these things together are so remarkable, as there is no man that beholds them, but on the one side trembles for fear, and on the other side remains astonished

ſtoniſhed at the ſight of ſo much greatneſs, and majeſty. Now that I may not longer dwel on that which concerns this great incloſure, I will paſs over in ſilence many other marvels that we ſaw there, conſiſting in rich & fair buildings in magnificen: *Pagodes*, in bridges placed upon great pillars of ſtone, on either ſide whereof are rayls or grates of iron finely wrought, and in high ways, that are ſtraight, broad, and all very well paved, whereof I think fit not to ſpeak, for by that which I have already ſaid, one may eaſily judg of what I have omitted, in regard of the reſemblance and conformity that is between them; wherefore I will only intreat, and that as ſuccinctly as I can, of certain buildings, which I ſaw in this City, chiefly of four, that I obſerved more curiouſly then the reſt, as alſo of ſome other particularities, that well deſerve to be inſiſted upon.

§. 2. This City of *Peqnin*, whereof I have promiſed to ſpeak more amply then yet I have done, is ſo prodigious, and the things therein remarkable, as I do almoſt repent me for undertaking to diſcourſe of it, becauſe to ſpeak the truth, I know not where to begin, that I may be as good as my word; for one muſt not imagine it to be, either as the City of *Rome*, or *Conſtantinople*, or *Venice*, or *Paris*, or *London*, or *Sevill*, or *Liſbon*, or that any of the Cities of *Europe* are comparable unto it, how famous or populous ſoever they be: Nay I will ſay further, that one muſt not think it to be like to Grand *Cairo* in *Egypt*, *Tauris* in *Perſia*, *Amadaba* in *Cambaya*, *Biſnagar* in *Narſingna*, *Goura* in *Bengala*, *Ava* in *Chaleu*, *Timplan* in *Calaminhan*, *Martaban* and *Bagou* in *Pegu*, *Guimpel* and *Tinlau* in *Siammon*, *Odia* in the Kingdom of *Sornau*, *Paſſarvan* and *Dema* in the Iſland of *Jaoa*, *Pangor* in the Country of the *Laquiens*, *Uſangea* in the *Grand Cauchin*, *Lancama* in *Tartaria*, and *Meaco* in *Jappun*, all which Cities are the Capitals of many great Kingdoms; for I dare well affirm, that all thoſe ſame are not to be compared to the leaſt part of the wonderful City of *Peqnin*, much leſs to the greatneſs and magnificence of that which is moſt excellent in it, whereby I underſtand her ſtately buildings, her inward riches, her exceſſive abundance of all that is neceſſary for the entertaining of life, alſo the world of people, the infinite number of Barques and Veſſels that are there, the Commerce, the Courts of Juſtice, the Government and the State of the *Tutons*, *Chaems*, *Anchacys*, *Aytaos*, *Puchancys*, and *Bracanons*, who rule whole Kingdoms, and very ſpacious Provinces, with great pentions, and are ordinarily reſident in this City, or others for them, when as by the Kings command they are ſent about affairs of conſequence. But ſetting theſe things aſide, whereof yet I intend to ſpeak more amply, when time ſhall ſerve, I ſay that this City, (according to that which is written of it, both in the *Aqueſcudoo* before mentioned, and all the Chronicles of the Kingdom of *China*) is thirty leagues in circuit, not comprehending therein the buildings of the other incloſure that is without it, and is invironed with a double wall, made of good ſtrong free-ſtone, having three hundred and threeſcore gates, each of which hath a ſmall Fort, compoſed of two high towers, with its ditches, and draw-bridges; and at every gate is a Regiſter, & four Porters with halberds in their hands, who are bound to give account of all that goes in and out. Theſe gates by the Ordinance of the *Tuton*, are divided according to the three hundred and threeſcore dayes of the year, ſo that every day in his turn hath the feaſt of the invocation of the Idol, whereof each gate bears the name, celebrated with much ſolemnity. This great City hath alſo within that large incloſure of her walls, as the *Chineſes* aſſured us, three thouſand and three hundred *Pagodes* or Temples, wherein are continually ſacrificed a great number of birds and wild beaſts, which they hold to be more agreeable unto God, then ſuch as are kept tame in houſes, whereof their Prieſts render divers reaſons to the people, therewith perſwading them to believe ſo great an abuſe for an article of faith. The ſtructures of theſe *Pagodes*, whereof I ſpeak, are very ſumptuous, eſpecially thoſe of the orders of the *Menegrepos*, *Conquiays*, and *Talagrepos*, who are the Prieſts of the four Sects of *Xaca*, *Amida*, *Gizom*, and *Canom*, which ſurpaſs in antiquity the other two and thirty of that Labyrinth of the Divel, who appears to them many times in divers forms, for to make them give more credit to his impoſtures and lies. The principal ſtreets of this City are all very long and broad, with fair houſes of two or three ſtories high, and incloſed at both ends with balliſters of iron and lattin; the entrance into them is through lanes, that croſs theſe great ſtreets, at the ends whereof are great arches, with ſtrong gates, which are ſhut in the night, and on the top of the arches, there are watch-bels; Each of theſe ſtreets hath its Captain, and officers, who walk the round in their turns, and are bound every ten dayes to make report into the Town-houſe of all that paſſeth in their quarters, to the end that the *Punchacys*, or *Chaems* of the Government, may take ſuch order therein, as reaſon requires. Moreover this great City (if credit may

be

be given to that which the ſaid book, ſo often before mentioned by me, records) hath an hundred and twenty Canals, made by the Kings and people in former times, which are three fathom deep, and twelve broad, croſſing through the whole length and bredth of the City, by the means of a great number of bridges, built upon arches of ſtrong free-ſtone, at the end whereof there are pillars, with chains, that reach from the one to the other, and reſting places for paſſengers to repoſe themſelves in: It is ſaid that the bridges of theſe hundred & twenty Canals, or Aqueducts, are in number eighteen hundred, and that if one of them is fair and rich, the other is yet more, as well for the faſhion, as for the reſt of the workmanſhip thereof. The ſaid Book affirms, *That in this City there are ſixſcore Piatzues, or publique places, in each of the which is a Fair kept every month.* Now during the two months time that we were at liberty in this City, we ſaw eleven or twelve of theſe Fairs, where were an infinite company of people, both on horſ-back, and on foot, that out of boxes hanging about their necks ſold all things that well neer can be named, as the Haberdaſhers of ſmall wares do amongſt us, beſides the ordinary ſhops of rich Merchants, which were ranged very orderly in the particular ſtreets, where was to be ſeen a world of ſilk ſtuffs, tinſels, cloth of gold, linnen, and cotton-cloth, ſables, ermyns, muſk, aloes, fine pourcelain, gold and ſilver plate, pearl, ſeed pearl, gold in powder, and lingots, and ſuch other things of value, whereat we nine *Portugals* were exceedingly aſtoniſhed; But if I ſhould ſpeak in particular of all the other commodities, that were to be ſold there, as of iron, ſteel, lead, copper, tin, latin, corral, cornalin, cryſtal, quickſilver, vermillion, ivory, cloves, nutmegs, mace, ginger, tamarinds, cinnamon, pepper, cardamone, borax, hony, wax, ſanders, ſugar, conſerves, acates, fruit, meal, rice, fleſh, veniſon, fiſh, pulſe, and herbs; there was ſuch abundance of them, as it is ſcarce poſſible to expreſs it in words. The *Chineſes* alſo aſſured us, that this City hath an hundred and threeſcore Butchers ſhambles, and in each of them an hundred ſtalls, full of all kinds of fleſh that the earth produceth, for that theſe people feed on all, as Veal, Mutton, Pork, Goat, the fleſh of Horſes, Buffles, Rhinocerets, Tygers, Lions, Dogs, Mules, Aſſes, Otters, Shamois, Bodgers, and finally of all other beaſts whatſoever. Furthermore, beſides the weights which are particularly in every ſhambles, there is not a gate in the City that hath not its ſcales, wherein the meat is weighed again, for to ſee if they have their due weight that have bought it, to the end that by this means the people may not be deceived. Beſides thoſe ordinary Shambles, there is not ſcarce a ſtreet but hath five or ſix Butchers ſhops in it, where the choiceſt meat is ſold; there are withall many Taverns, where excellent fare is alwayes to be had, and cellers full of gammons of bacon, dried tongues, poudered geeſe, and other ſavoury viands, for to reliſh ones drink, all in ſo great abundance, that it would be very ſuperfluous to ſay more of it; but what I ſpeak is to ſhew how liberally God hath imparted to theſe miſerable blinded wretches the good things which he hath created on the earth, to the end that his holy Name may therefore be bleſſed for evermore.

## Chap. XXXV.

### *The Priſon of* Xinanguibaleu, *wherein thoſe are kept, Which have been condemned to ſerve at the reparations of the Wall of* Tartaria; *and another incloſure, called the Treaſure of the dead, With the revennes whereof this priſon is maintained.*

DEſiſting now from ſpeaking in particular of the great number of the rich and magnificent buildings, which we ſaw in this City of *Pequin*, I will only inſiſt on ſome of the Edifices thereof, that ſeemed more remarkable to me then the reſt, whence it may be eaſie to infer, what all thoſe might be, whereof I will not make any mention here to avoid prolixity; And of theſe neither would I ſpeak, were it not that our Lord may one day permit, that the *Portugal* Nation, full of valour, and of lofty courage, may make uſe of this relation for the glory of our great God, to the end that by theſe humane means, and the aſſiſtance of his divine favor, it may make thoſe barbarous people underſtand the verity of our holy Catholique faith, from which their ſins have ſo far eſloigned them, as they mock at all that we ſay to them thereof: Herennto I will adde, that they are extravagant, and ſenceleſs, as they dare boldly affirm, that only with beholding the face of the Son of the Sun, which is their King, a ſoul would be more happy then with all other things of the world beſides, which perſwades me that if God of his infinite mercy and goodneſs would grant, that the King of the people might become a Chriſtian, it would be an eaſie matter to convert all his Subjects, where * hold it difficult for

ſo much as one to change his belief, and all by reaſon of the great awe they are in of the Law, which they fear and reverence a like, and whereof it is not to be believed how much they cheriſh the Miniſters. But to return to my diſcourſe, the firſt building which I ſaw of thoſe that were moſt remarkable, was a priſon, which they call *Xinanguibalen*, that is to ſay, *The incloſure of the Epiles*; the circuit of this priſon is two leagues ſquare, or little leſs, both in length and bredth: It is incloſed with a very high wall without any battlements; the wall on the outſide is invironed with a great deep ditch full of water, over the which are a many of drawbridges, that are drawn up in the night with certain iron chains, and ſo hang ſuſpended on huge caſt pillars; In this priſon is an arch of ſtrong hewed ſtone, abutting in two towers, in the tops whereof are ſix great ſentinel bells, which are never rung but all the reſt within the ſaid incloſure do anſwer them, which the *Chineſes* affirm to be above an hundred, and indeed they make a moſt horrible din. In this place there are ordinarily three hundred thouſand priſoners, between ſeventeen and fifty, whereat we were much amazed, and indeed we had good cauſe, in regard it is a thing ſo unuſual and extraordinary. Now deſiring to know of the *Chineſes* the occaſion of ſo marvellous a building, and of the great number of priſoners that were in it; they anſwered us, that after the King of *China*, named *Criſnago Docotay*, had finiſhed a wall of three hundred leagues ſpace betwixt this Kingdom of *China*, and that of *Tartaria*, as I have declared other where, he ordained by the advice of his people, (for to that effect he cauſed an Aſſembly of his Eſtates to be held) that all thoſe which ſhould be condemned to baniſhment, ſhould be ſent to work in the repairing of this wall, and that after they had ſerved ſix years together therein, they might freely depart, though they were ſentenced to ſerve for a longer time, becauſe the King pardoned them the remainder of the term by way of charity and alms; but if during thoſe years, they ſhould happen to perform any remarkable act, or other thing, wherein it appeared they had advantage over others, or if they were three times wounded in the Sallies they ſhould make, or if they killed ſome of their enemies, they were then to be diſpenſed with for all the reſt of their time, and that the *Chaem* ſhould grant them a certificate thereof, where it ſhould be declared why he had delivered them, and how he had thereby ſatisfied the Ordinances of War. Two hundred and ten thouſand men are to be continually entertained in the work of the wall, by the firſt inſtitution, whereof defalcation is made of a third part, for ſuch are dead, maimed, and delivered, either for their notable actions, or for that they had accompliſhed their time: And likewiſe when as the *Chaem*, who is as the chief of all thoſe, ſent to the *Pitaucamay*, which is the higheſt Court of Juſtice, to furniſh him with that number of men, they could not aſſemble them together ſo ſoon as was neceſſary, for that they were divided in ſo many ſeveral places of that Empire, which is prodigiouſly great, as I have delivered before, and that withall a long time was required for the aſſembling them together, another King, named *Gopiley Aparan*, who ſucceeded to that *Criſnago Dacotay*, ordained that the great incloſure ſhould be made in the City of *Pequin*, to the end that as ſoon as any were condemned to the work of this wall, they ſhould be carried to *Xinanguibalen* for to be there altogether, by which means they might be ſent away without any delay, as now is done. So ſoon as the Court of Juſtice hath committed the priſoners to this priſon, whereof he that brings them hath a Certificate, they are immediately left at liberty, ſo that they may walk at their pleaſure within this great incloſure, having nothing but a little plate of a ſpan long, and four fingers broad, wherein theſe words are engraven, *Such a one of ſuch a place hath been condemned to the general exile for ſuch a cauſe, he entred ſuch a day, ſuch a month, ſuch a year.* Now the reaſon why they make every priſoner to carry this plate for a teſtimony of their evil actions, is, to manifeſt for what crime he was condemned, and at what time he entred, becauſe every one goes forth conformably to the length of time that ſhall be ſince he entred in. Theſe priſoners are held for duly delivered when they are drawn out of captivity for to go and work at the wall, for they cannot upon any cauſe whatſoever be exempted from the priſon of *Xinanguibalen*, and the time they are there is counted to them for nothing, in regard they have no hope of liberty but at that inſtant when their turn permits them to work in the reparations, for then they may be ſure to be delivered, according to the ordinance whereof I have made mention before. Having now delivered the occaſion whereof ſo great a priſon was made, before I leave it I hold it not amiſs to ſpeak of a Fair, which we ſaw there, of two that are uſually kept every year, which thoſe of the Country call, *Gunxinem, Apparan, Xinanguibalen*, that is to ſay, *The rich Fair of the priſon of the condemned*; Theſe Fairs are kept in the months of *July*, and *January*, with very magnificent feaſts, ſolemnized for the invocation of

their

their Idols; And even, there they have their plenory indulgences, by means whereof great riches of gold and ſilver are promiſed them in the other world. They are both of them frank and free, ſo as the Merchants pay no duties, which is the cauſe that they flock thither in ſuch great number, as they aſſured us that there were three millions of perſons there; And foraſmuch as I ſaid before, that the three hundred thouſand that are impriſoned there, are at liberty, as well as thoſe that go in and out, you ſhall ſee what courſe they hold to keep the priſoners from getting forth amongſt others. Every one that is free and comes in hath a mark ſet on the wriſt of his right arm with a certain Confection made of Oyl, Bitumen, Lacre, Rubarb, and Alum, which being once dry cannot be any wayes defaced, but by the means of vinegar and ſalt mingled together very hot; And to the end that ſo great a number of people may be marked, on both ſides of the gates ſtand a many of *Chainpatoens*, who with ſtamps of lead, dipt in this Bitumen, imprints a mark on every one that preſents himſelf unto them, and ſo they let him enter; which is only practiſed on men, not upon women, becauſe none of that Sex are ever condemned to the labour of the wall. When therefore they come to go out of the gates, they muſt all have their arms bared where this mark is, that the ſaid *Chainſapoens*, who are the Porters and Miniſters of this affair, may know them, and let them paſs; and if by chance any one be ſo unhappy as to have that mark defaced by any accident, muſt even have patience, and remain with the other priſoners, in regard there is no way to get him out of this place if he be found without that mark. Now thoſe *Chainſapoens* are ſo dextrous and well verſed in it, that an hundred thouſand men may in an hour go in and out without trouble, ſo that by this means the three hundred thouſand priſoners continue in their captivity, and none of them can ſlip away amongſt others to get out. There are in this priſon three great incloſures like great towns, where there are a number of houſes, and very long ſtreets, without any lanes; and at the entrance into each ſtreet there are good gates, with their ſentinel bells aloft, together with a *Chumbim*, and twenty men for a Guard; within a flight ſhoot of thoſe incloſures are the lodgings of the *Chaem*, who commands all this priſon, and thoſe lodgings are compoſed of a number of fair houſes, wherein are many out-Courts, Gardens, Ponds, Halls, and Chambers, inriched with excellent inventions, able to lodge a King at his eaſe, how great a Court ſoever he have. In the two principal of theſe Towns there are two ſtreets, each of them about a flight ſhoot long, which abut upon the *Chaems* lodgings, arched all along with ſtone, and covered over head like the Hoſpital at *Liſbon*, but that they far ſurpaſs it. Here are all things to be ſold that one can deſire, as well for victual, and other kind of proviſions, as for all ſorts of Merchandiſe, and rich wares. In thoſe arched ſtreets, which are very ſpacious and long, are theſe two Fairs kept every year, whither ſuch an infinite multitude of people reſort, as I have declared before. Moreover within the incloſure of this priſon are divers woods of tall and high trees, with many ſmall ſtreams, and ponds of clear ſweet water for the uſe of the priſoners, and to waſh their linnen, as alſo ſundry Hermitages, and Hoſpitals, together with twelve very ſumptuous and rich Monaſteries, ſo that whatſoever is to be had in a great Town, may in great abundance be found within the incloſure, and with advantage in many things, becauſe the moſt part of theſe priſoners have their wives and children there, to whom the King gives a lodging anſwerable to the houſhold, or family, which each one hath.

The ſecond of thoſe things, which I have undertaken to relate, is another incloſure we ſaw almoſt as big as the former, compaſſed about with ſtrong walls, and great ditches. This place is called *Muxipuran*, which ſignifies *The treaſure of the dead*, where are many towers of hewed carved ſtone, and ſteeples diverſly painted. The walls on the top are in ſtead of battlements inviroued with iron grates, where there are a number of idols of different figures, as of Men, Serpents, Horſes, Oxen, Elephants, Fiſhes, Adders, and many other monſtrous forms of creatures, which were never ſeen, ſome of Braſs, and Iron, and others of Tin, and Copper; ſo that this infinite company of ſeveral figures joyned together is one of the moſt remarkable and pleaſanteſt things that can be imagined. Having paſt over the bridge of the ditch we arrived at a great Court that was at the firſt entrance, incloſed round about with huge gates, and paved all over with white and black ſtones in chequer work, ſo poliſhed and bright, as one might ſee himſelf in them as in a looking glaſs; In the midſt of this Court was a pillar of Jaſper fix and thirty ſpans high, and as it ſeemed all of one piece, on the top whereof was an idol of ſilver in the figure of a woman, which with her hands ſtrangled a Serpent, that was excellently enamelled with black and green. A little further at the entrance of another gate, which ſtood between two very high towers, and accompanied with four and twenty pillars of huge great §. 2.

ſtone, there were two figures of men, each of them with an iron club in his hand, as if they had ſerved to guard that paſſage, being an hundred and forty ſpans high, with ſuch hideous and ugly viſages, as makes them even to tremble that behold them; The *Chineſes* called them *Xixipatan Xalican*, that is to ſay, *The blowers of the houſe of ſmoak*. At the entring into this gate there were twelve men with halberds, and two Regiſters, ſet at a table, who enrolled all that entred there, unto whom every one paid a matter of a groat: when we were entred within this gate, we met with a very large ſtreet, cloſed on both ſides with goodly arches, as well in regard of the workmanſhip, as the reſt, round about the which hung an infinite company of little bells of lattin by chains of the ſame mettal, that moved by the air, made ſuch a noiſe as one could with much ado hear one another: This ſtreet might be about half a league long and within theſe arches, on both ſides of the way, were two rows of low houſes, like unto great Churches, with ſteeples all guilt, and divers inventions of painting: Of theſe houſes the *Chineſes* aſſured us there was in that place three thouſand, all which from the very top to the bottom were full of dead mens skuls, a thing ſo ſtrange, that in every mans judgment a thouſand great ſhops could hardly contain them. Behind theſe houſes, both on the one ſide and the other, were two great Mounts of dead mens bones, reaching far above the ridges of the houſes, full as long as the ſtreet, and of a mighty bredth. Theſe bones were ordered and diſpoſed one upon another ſo curiouſly and aptly, that they ſeemed to grow there; Having demanded of the *Chineſes* whether any regiſter was kept of theſe bones, they anſwered, there was; for the *Talagrepos*, unto whoſe charge the adminiſtration of theſe three thouſand houſes was commited, enrolled them all; and that none of theſe houſes yielded leſs then two thouſand *Taeis* revenue out of ſuch lands, as the owners of theſe bones had bequeathed to them for their ſouls health; and that the rent of all theſe three thouſand houſes together amounted unto five millions of gold yearly, whereof the King had four, and the *Talagrepos* the other for to defray the expences of this Fabrick; and that the four appertained to the King, as their Support, who diſpenced them in the maintenance of the three hundred thouſand priſoners of *Xinanguibalen*. Being amazed at this marvel, we began to go along this ſtreet, in the midſt whereof we found a great *Piazza*, compaſſed about with two huge grates of lattin, and within it was an Adder of braſs infolded into I know not how many boughts, and ſo big that it contained thirty fathom in circuit, being withall ſo ugly and dreadful, as no words are able to deſcribe it. Some of us would eſtimate the weight of it, and the leaſt opinions reached to a thouſand quintals, were it hollow within, as I believe it was. Now although it was of an unmeaſurable greatneſs, yet was it in every part ſo well proportioned, as nothing can be amended, whereunto alſo the workmanſhip thereof is ſo correſpondent, that all the perfection which can be deſired from a good workman is obſerved in it. This monſtrous Serpent, which the *Chineſe* call, *The glutonous Serpent of the houſe of ſmoak*, had on the top of his head a bowl of iron, two and fifty foot in circumference, as if it had been thrown at him from ſome other place; Twenty paces further was the figure of a man of the ſame braſs in the form of a Gyant, in like manner very ſtrange and extraordinary, as well for the greatneſs of the body, as the hugeneſs of the limbs: This Monſter held an iron bowl juſt as big as the other aloft in both his hands, and beholding the Serpent with a frowning and angry countenance, he ſeemed as though he would throw this bowl at him. Round about this figure was a number of little idols all guilt on their knees, with their hands lifted up to him, as if they would adore him. All this great edifice was conſecrated to the honour of this Idol, called *Mauclupaven*, whom the *Chineſes* affirmed to be the treaſurer of all the dead mens bones, and that when the glutonous Serpent before mentioned came to ſteal them away, he made at him with that bowl which he held in his hands, whereupon the Serpent in great fear fled immediately away to the bottom of the profound houſe of ſmoak, whither God had precipitated him for his great wickedneſs; and further that he had maintained a combate with him three thouſand years already, and was to continue the ſame three thouſand years more, ſo that from three thouſand to three thouſand years he was to imploy five bowls, wherewith he was to make an end of killing him; Hereunto they added, that as ſoon as this Serpent ſhould be dead, the bones that were there aſſembled, would return into the bodies, to which they appertained formerly, and ſo ſhould go and remain for ever in the houſe of the Moon; To theſe bruciſh opinions they joyn many others ſuch like, unto which they give ſo much faith, that nothing can be able to remove them from it, for it is the doctrine that is preached unto them by their *Bonzes*, who alſo tell them that the true way to make a ſoul happy, is to gather theſe bones together into this place, by means whereof there

is

is not a day passes but that a thousand or two of these wretches bones are brought thither. Now if some for their far distance cannot bring all the bones whole thither, they will at least-wise bring a tooth or two, and so they say that by way of an alms they make as good satisfaction as if they brought all the rest; which is the reason that in all these chunel houses there is such an infinite multitude of these teeth, that one might lade many ships with them.

We saw in a great Plain without the walls of this City another building, very sumptuous and rich, which they call *Nacapirau*, that is to say, the Queen of Heaven, for it is the opinion of these blinded wretches, that our Lord above is married like the Kings here below, and that the children which he hath had by the *Nacapirau*, are the Stars we see twinkling in the Firmament by night, and that when any exhalation comes to dissolve in the air, they say that it is one of his children that is dead, whereof his other brothers are so grieved, that they shed such abundance of tears, as the earth is watered therewith, by which means God provides us of our living, as it were in manner of alms bestowed for the souls of the deceased. But letting pass these and other such like fooleries, I will only intreat of such particulars, as we observed in this great Edifice, whereof the first was one hundred and forty Convents of this accursed Religion, both of men and women, in each of which there are four hundred persons, amounting in all to six and fifty thousand, besides an infinite number of religious servants, that are not obliged to their vow of profession that are within, who for a mark of their Priestly dignity are clothed in violet, with green stars on them, having their head, beard, and eye-brows shaven, and wearing beads about their necks to pray with, but for all that they crave no alms, by reason they have revenue enough to live on. The next was an inclosure within this huge building, a league in circuit, the walls whereof were built upon arches, vaults, of strong hewed stone, and underneath them were Galleries, invironed all about with ballisters of lattin; within this inclosure at a gate, through which we past, we saw under most deformed figures the two porters of hell, at least they believe so, calling the one *Bacharon*, and the other *Quagifau*, both of them with iron clubs in their hands, and so hideous and horrible to see to, that it is impossible to behold them without fear. Having past this gate under a chain, that went a cross from the brest of one of these divels to the other, we entred into a very fair street, both for bredth and length, inclosed at either end with many arches, diversly painted, on the top whereof were all along two rows of idols to the number of five thousand; Now we could not well judg of what matter these idols were made, howsoever they were guilt all over, and upon their heads they wore myters of sundry inventions. At the end of this street was a great square place, paved with black and white stone, and compassed about with four rows of gyants in brass, each of them fifteen foot high, with halberds in their hands, and their hair and beards all guilt, which was not only a very pleasing object to the eye, but also represented a kind of majestical greatness. At the end of this place was *Quiay Huyan*, the god of rain, which idol was so huge, that with his head he touched the battlements of the tower, being above twelve fathom high; he was likewise of brass, and both from his mouth, head, and brest, at six and twenty several places came out streams of water: Having past between his legs, which stood stradling at a great distance, one from another, we entred into a large room, as long as a Church, where there were three ships set upon very big and high pillars of Jasper; all along the walls thereof on both sides were a many of idols, great and little in divers forms all guilt, fitted and disposed in such order, as they took up all the bredth and length of the walls, and seemed at first sight to be all gold: At the end of this room or temple upon a round Tribunal, whereunto one ascended by fifteen winding stairs, was an altar, proportionable to the same Tribunal, whereon stood the image of *Nacapirau*, in the likeness of a very fair woman, with her hair hanging upon her shoulders, and her hands lifted up to Heaven. Now for that she was guilt all over with fine gold, and that with a great deal of art and care, she glistered in that manner as it was unpossible to continue looking on her, so dazled were a mans eyes with the rayes that darted from her. Round about this Tribunal on the first four stairs were the Statues of twelve Kings of *China* in silver, with crowns on their heads, and maces on their shoulders; a little lower were three rows of idols guilt, kneeling on their knees, and holding up their hands, and all about hung a number of silver candlesticks with seven branches apiece. When we were out of this, we went through another street all arched like that by which we entred in, and from this we passed through two other streets full of very stately buildings, and so came to a gate, that stood between four high tow[illegible] was a *Chifun*, with thirty Halberdiers, and

§. 3

two

two Regiſters, which wrot down the names of all that went in and out, as they did ours, and ſo we gave them about a groat for our paſſage out.

## Chap. XXXVI.

### *Of an Edifice, ſituated in the midſt of the river, wherein were the hundred and thirteen Chappels of the Kings of* China; *With the publique Granaries eſtabliſhed for the relief of the poor.*

TO give an end to the matter, whereof I intreat, which would be infinite if I ſhould recount every thing in particular, amongſt the great number of marvellous buildings, which we ſaw, the moſt remarkable to my ſeeming was an incloſure, ſeated in the midſt of the river of *Batampina*, containing ſome league in circuit in an Iſland, and invironed with fair hewed ſtone, which on the out-ſide was about eight and thirty foot high above the water, and on the in-ſide even with the ground, being encompaſſed with two rows of balliſters of lattin, whereof the outermoſt were but ſix foot high, for the commoditie of ſuch as would reſt themſelves there, and the innermoſt were nine foot high, having ſix Lyons of ſilver ſtanding upon huge bowls, which are the arms of the King of *China*, as I have ſaid elſewhere. Within the incloſure of theſe balliſters ſtood in very goodly order an hundred and thirteen Chappels after the faſhion of Bulwarks all round, in each of which was a rich Tomb of Alabaſter, placed with much art upon the heads of two ſilver Serpents, which in regard of the many boughts wherein they were entertained ſeemed to be ſnakes, though they had the viſages of women, and three horns on their heads, the explication whereof we could not poſſibly learn. In each of theſe Chappels were thirteen branched Candleſticks with ſeven great lights a piece in them, ſo that to compute the whole, the candleſticks of theſe hundred and thirteen Chappels amount to a thouſand, four hundred, thirty and nine. In the midſt of a great place, invironed round about with three rows of winding ſtairs, and two ranks of idols, was a very high tower, with five ſteeples diverſly painted, and ſilver Lions on the top of all: Here the *Chineſes* told us were the bones of thoſe hundred and thirteen Kings, that had been tranſported thither from theſe Chappels below: And it is the opinion of theſe brutiſh people, that theſe bones, which they hold for great reliques, do feaſt one another at every new Moon; in regard whereof theſe *Barbarians* uſe on that day to offer unto them a great Charger full of all kind of fowl, as alſo Rice, Beef, Pork, Sugar, Hony, and all other ſorts of victual that one can name; wherein their blindneſs is ſuch, as in recompence of theſe meats, which the Prieſts take unto themſelves, they imagine that all their ſins are forgiven them, by way as it were of a plenory indulgence. In this tower likewiſe we ſaw an exceeding rich Chamber, covered on the inſide all over from the top to the bottom with plates of ſilver. In this Chamber were the Statues of thoſe hundred and thirteen Kings of *China* all of ſilver, where in each of them were the bones of each ſeveral King incloſed; Now they hold, according as they are made to believe by their prieſts, that theſe Kings thus aſſembled together converſe every night one with another, and paſs away the time in ſundry ſports, which none is worthy to ſee, but certain *Bonzes*, whom they term *Cabizundes*, a title amongſt them of the moſt eminent dignity, ſuch it may be as the Cardinals of *Rome*. To this beaſtly ignorance the wretches adde many other blind tales, which they are aſſuredly perſwaded are very clear and manifeſt truths: Within this great incloſure we counted in ſeventeen places three hundred and forty bells of caſt mettal, namely twenty in each place, which are all rung together on thoſe days of the Moon, wherein they ſay theſe Kings do viſit and feaſt one another. Near to this tower in a very rich Chappel, built upon ſeven and thirty pillars of fair hewed ſtone, was the image of the goddeſs *Amida*, made of ſilver, having her hair of gold, and ſeated upon a Tribunal fourteen ſteps high, that was all overlaid with fine gold; Her face was very beautiful, and her hands were heaved up towards Heaven, at her armpits hung a many of little idols not above half a finger long filed together, whereupon demanding of the *Chineſes* what thoſe meant, they anſwered us, *That after the Waters of Heaven had overflowed the earth, ſo that all mankind was drowned by an univerſal Deluge, God ſeeing that the World would be deſolate, and no body to inhabit it, he ſent the goddeſs* Amida, *the chief Lady of honour to his Wife* Nacapirau *from the Heaven of the Moon, that ſhe might repair the loſs of drowned mankind, and that then the goddeſs having ſet her feet on a Land, from which the Waters were withdrawn, called* Calemphuy, (which was the ſame Iſland, whereof I have ſpoken heretofore, in the ſtreight of *Nanquin*, whereof *Antonio de Faria*

went

went on land) *ſhe was changed all into gold, and in that manner ſtanding upright with her face looking up unto Heaven, ſhe ſweat out at her armpits a great number of children, namely males out of the right, and females out of the left, having no other place about her body whence ſhe might bring them forth, as other Women of the World have, Who have ſinned, and that for a chaſtiſement of their ſin, God by the order of nature hath ſubjected them to a miſery full of corruption and filthineſs, for to ſhew how odious unto him the ſin was that had been committed againſt him. The goddeſs* Amida *having thus brought forth theſe creatures, which they affirm were thirty three thouſand, three hundred, thirty and three, two parts of them females, and the other males, for ſo ſay they the World was to be repaired, ſhe remained ſo feeble and faint with this delivery, having no body to aſſiſt her at her need, that ſhe fell down dead in the place, for which cauſe the Moon at that time in memory of this death of hers, whereat ſhe was infinitely grieved, put her ſelf into mourning, which mourning they affirm to be thoſe black ſpots we ordinarily behold in her face, occaſioned indeed by the ſhadow of the earth, and that when there ſhall be ſo many years run out, as the goddeſs* Amida *brought forth children, which were, as I have delivered, thirty three thouſand, three hundred, thirty and three, then the Moon will put off her mourning, and afterwards be as clear as the day.* With theſe and ſuch like fopperies did the *Chineſes* ſo turmoil us, as we could not chuſe but grieve to conſider how much thoſe people, which otherwiſe are quick of apprehenſion, and of good underſtanding, are abuſed in matter of Religion with ſuch evident and manifeſt untruths. After we were come out of this great place, where we ſaw all theſe things, we went unto another Temple of religious Votaries, very ſumptuous and rich, where they told us the Mother of the then reigning King, named *Nhay Camiſama*, did abide, but thereunto we were not permitted to enter, becauſe we were ſtrangers; From this place through a ſtreet, arched all along, we arrived at a Key, called *Hichario Topiten*, where lay a great number of veſſels, full of pilgrims from divers Kingdoms, which came inceſſantly on pilgrimage to this Temple, for to gain, as they believe, plenary indulgences, which the King of *China*, and the *Chaems* of the Government, do grant unto them, beſides many priviledges and franchiſes throughout the whole Country, where victuals are given them abundantly, and for nothing. I will not ſpeak of many other Temples, or *Pagodes*, which we ſaw in this City whileſt we were at liberty, for I ſhould never have done to make report of them all, howbeit I may not omit ſome other particulars, that I hold very fit to be related before I break off this diſcourſe; whereof the firſt were certain houſes, in ſeveral parts of this City, called *Laginampurs*, that is to ſay, *The School of the poor*, wherein fatherleſs and motherleſs children, that are found in the ſtreets, are taught to write and read, as alſo ſome trade, whereby they may get their living, and of theſe houſes, or ſchools, there are about ſome five hundred in this City; Now if it happen that any of them through ſome defect of nature cannot learn a trade, then have they recourſe to ſome means for to make them get their living according to each ones incommodity; As for example, if they be blind they make them labour in turning of handmills; if they be lame of their feet, they cauſe them to make laces, riband, and ſuch like manufactures; if they be lame of their hands, then they make them earn their living by carrying of burdens; but if they be lame both of feet and hands, ſo that nature hath wholly deprived them of means to get their living, then they ſhut them up in great Convents, where there are a number of perſons that pray for the dead, amongſt whom they place them, and ſo they have their ſhare of half the offerings that are made there, the Prieſts having the other half; if they be dumb, then they are ſhut up in a great houſe, where they are maintained with the amerciaments that the common ſort of women, as oyſterwives, and ſuch like, are condemned in for their ſcolding and fighting one with another; As for old queans, that are paſt the trade, and ſuch of the younger ſort as by the lewd exerciſe thereof are become diſeaſed with the pox, or other filthy ſickneſs, they are put into other houſes, where they are very well looked unto, and furniſhed abundantly with all things neceſſary, at the charge of the other women that are of the ſame trade, who thereunto pay a certain ſum monthly, and that not unwillingly, becauſe they know that they ſhall come to be ſo provided for themſelves by others, and for the collecting of this money there are Commiſſioners expreſly deputed in ſeveral parts of the City. There are alſo other houſes, much like unto Monaſteries, where a great many of young maids, that are Orphans, are bred up, and theſe houſes are maintained at the charge of ſuch women as are convicted of adultery; for ſay they it is moſt juſt, that if there be one which hath loſt her ſelf by her diſhoneſty, there ſhould be another, that ſhould be maintained by her vertue. Other places there are alſo, where decayed old people are kept

at

at the charge of Lawyers, that plead unjuſt cauſes, where the parties have no right; and of Judges, that for favoring one more then another, and corrupted with bribes, do not execute juſtice as they ought to do; whereby one may ſee with how much order and policy theſe people govern all things.

§.2 In the proſecution of my diſcourſe it will not be amiſs here to deliver the marvellous order and policy, which the Kings of *China* obſerve in furniſhing their States abundantly with proviſions and victuals, for the relief of the poor people, which may very well ſerve for an example of charity, and good government, to Chriſtian Kingdoms and Commonwealths. Their Chronicles report, that a certain King, great Grandfather to him that then raigned in *China*, named *Chanſi-Zarao Panagor*, very much beloved of his people for his good diſpoſition and vertues, having loſt his ſight by an accident of ſickneſs, reſolved to do ſome pious work, that might be acceptable to God, to which effect he aſſembled his Eſtates, where he ordained, that for the relief of the poor there ſhould be Granaries eſtabliſhed in all the Towns of his Kingdom for wheat and rice, that in the time of dearth (which many times happened) the people might have wherewithall to nouriſh themſelves that year, and to that purpoſe he gave the tenth part of the Duties of his Kingdom by a Grant under his hand, which when he came to ſigne accordingly with a golden ſtamp, that he ordinarily uſed becauſe he was blind, it pleaſed God to reſtore him perfectly to his ſight again, which he enjoyed ſtill as long as he lived; By this example, if it were true, it ſeemed that our Lord Jeſus Chriſt would demonſtrate, how acceptable the charity that good men exerciſe towards the poor is to him, even though they be *Gentiles*, and without the knowledge of the true Religion; Ever ſince there have been always a great many of Granaries in this Monarchy, and that to the number of an hundred and fourteen thouſand. As for the order which the Magiſtrates obſerve in furniſhing them continually with corn, is ſuch as followeth; A little before reaping time all the old corn is diſtributed forth to the inhabitants, as it were by way of love, and that for the term of two months, after this time is expired, they unto whom the old corn was lent, return in as much new, and withall ſix in the hundred over and above for waſte, to the end that this ſtore may never fail: But when it falls out to be a dear year, in that caſe the corn is diſtributed to the people without taking any gain or intereſt for it, and that which is given to the poorer ſort, who are not able to repay what hath been lent to them, is made good out of the Rents, which the Countries pay to the King, as an alms beſtowed on them by his ſpecial grace. Touching the Kings Revenues, which are paid in ſilver *Picos*, they are divided into three parts, whereof the firſt is for the maintenance of the King, and his State, the ſecond for the defence of the Provinces, as alſo for the proviſions of Magazines, and Armies, and the third to be laid up and reſerved in a Treaſury, that is in this City of *Pequin*, which the King himſelf may not touch, unleſs it be upon occaſion for defence of the Kingdom, and to oppoſe the *Tartars*, *Cauchins*, and other Neighbouring Princes, who many times make grievous war upon him. This Treaſure is by them called *Chidampur*, that is to ſay, *The Wall of the Kingdom*, for they ſay, that by means of this treaſure, being well imployed and carefully managed, the King needs lay no impoſitions upon the people, ſo that they ſhall not be any ways vexed and oppreſſed, as it happens in other Kingdoms for want of this providence. Now by this that I have related one may ſee, how in all the great Monarchy the Government is ſo excellent, the Laws ſo exactly obſerved, and every one ſo ready and careful to put the Princes Ordinances in execution, that Father *Navier*, having well noted it, was wont to ſay, that if ever God would grant him the grace to return into *Portugal*, he would become a Suter to the King for to peruſe over the rules and ordinances of thoſe people, and the manner how they govern both in time of war and peace; adding withall that he did not think the *Romans* ever ruled ſo wiſely in all the time of their greateſt proſperity, and that in matter of policy the *Chineſes* ſurpaſſed all other Nations of whom the Ancients have written.

## Chap. XXXVII.

### *The great number of Officers, and other people, which are in the King of* China's *Pallace; with our going to* Quincay *to accompliſh the time of our Exile; and what befell us there.*

OUt of the fear I am in left coming to relate in particular all thoſe things which we ſaw within the large incloſure of this City of *Pequin*, they that ſhall chance to read them may call them

them in queſtion, and not to give occaſion alſo unto detractors, who judging of things according to the little world they have ſeen, may hold thoſe truths for fables, which mine own eyes have beheld, I will forbear the delivery of many matters, that poſſibly might bring much contentment to more worthy ſpirits, who not judging of the riches and proſperity of other Countres by the poverty and miſery of their own, would be well pleaſed with the relation thereof. Howbeit on the other ſide I have no great cauſe to blame thoſe, who ſhall not give credit to that which I ſay, or make any doubt of it, becauſe I muſt acknowledge, that many times when I call to mind the things that mine eyes have ſeen, I remain confounded therewith, whither it be the Grandeurs of this City of *Pequin*, or the magnificence wherewith this *Gentile* King is ſerved, or the pomp of the *Chaems*, and *Anchacys* of the Government, or the dread and awe wherein all men are of theſe Miniſters, or the ſumptuouſneſs of their Temples and *Pagodes*, together with all the reſt that may be there, for within the only incloſure of the Kings Pallace there are above a thouſand Eunuchs, three thouſand women, and 12 thouſand men of his Guard, unto whom the King gives great entertainment and pentions: alſo twelve *Tutons*, dignities that are Soveraign above all others, whom, as I have already declared, the vulgar call, *The beams of the Sun*; Under theſe twelve *Tutons*, there are forty *Chaems*, or Vice-roys; beſides many other inferiour dignities, as Judges, Majors, Governours, Treaſurers, Admirals, and Generals, which they term, *Anchacys*, *Aytaos*, *Ponchacy*, *Lanteas*, and *Chumbinns*, whereof there are above five hundred always reſiding at the Court, each of them having at the leaſt two hundred men in his train, which for the moſt part to ſtrike the greater terror are of divers Nations, namely, *Megores*, *Perſians*, *Curazens*, *Moems*, *Calaminhams*, *Tartars*, *Cauchins*, and ſome *Braamas* of *Chalen*, and *Tangun*; for in regard of valour, they make no account of the Natives, who are of a weak and effeminate complection, though otherwiſe I muſt confeſs they are exceeding able and ingenious in whatſoever concerneth Mechanick Trades Tillage, and Husbandry; they have withall a great vivacity of ſpirit, and are exceeding proper and apt for the inventing of very ſubtle & induſtrious things. The women are fair and chaſte, and more inclined to labour then the men, The Country is fertile in victual, and ſo rich & abounding in all kind of good things, as I cannot ſufficiently expreſs it, & ſuch is their blindneſs as they attribute all thoſe bleſſings to the only merit of their King, and not to the Divine Providence, and to the goodneſs of that Soveraign Lord, who hath created all things. From this blindneſs and incredulity of theſe people are theſe great abuſes, and confuſed ſuperſtitions derived, which are ordinary amongſt them, and wherein they obſerve a world of diabolical ceremonies; For they are ſo brutiſh and wicked as to ſacrifice humane blood, offering it up with divers ſorts of perfumes, and ſweet ſavors; Moreover they preſent their Prieſts with many gifts, upon aſſurance from theſe profane wretches, of great bleſſings in this life, and infinite riches and treaſure in the other; To which effects the ſame Prieſts grant them I know not what Certificates, as it were Bills of Exchange, which the common people call *Conchinnoces*, that after their death they may ſerve above in Heaven to procure for them a recompence of an hundred for one; wherein theſe miſerable creatures are ſo blinded, that they ſave the very meat & drink from their own mouths to furniſh thoſe accurſed prieſts of Satan with all things neceſſary, believing that theſe goodly bills they have from them, will aſſuredly return them that benefit. There are alſo Prieſts of another Sect, called *Nanſtolins*, who contrary to thoſe others preach, and affirm with great oaths, that reaſonable creatures live and die like beaſts, & therfore that they are to make merry, & ſpend their goods jovially whiles life ſhall laſt, there being no other after this, as all but fools & ignorants are to believe. There is another Sect, named *Trimechan*, who are of opinion that ſo long time as a man ſhall live in this world, ſo long ſhall he remain under ground, until at length by the prayers of their prieſts his ſoul ſhall reaſſume the body of a child of ſeven days old, wherein he ſhall live again till he ſhall grow ſo ſtrong, as to re-enter into the old body, which he hed left in the grave, and ſo be tranſported into the Heaven of the Moon, where they ſay he ſhal live many years, & in the end be converted into a ſtar, which ſhall remain fixed above in the Firmament for ever. Another Sect there is called *Gyſon*, who believe that only the beaſts in regard of their ſufferings, and the labour which they endure in this life, ſhall poſſeſs Heaven after their death, & not man, that leadeth his life according to the luſts of the fleſh, robbing, killing, and committing a world of other offences, by reaſon whereof, ſay they, it is not poſſible for him to be ſaved, unleſs at the hour of death he leave all his eſtate to the *Pagodes*, and to the Prieſts, that they may pray for him; whereby one may ſee that all the intentions of their diabolical Sects is not founded but upon a very tyranny, and upon the intereſts of the *Bonzes*, who are they that preach this pernicious doctrine

to the people, and perſwaded them with many fables to believe it; In the mean time theſe things ſeem ſo true to theſe wretches that hear them, as they very willingly give them all their goods, imagining that thereby only they can be ſaved, and freed from thoſe puniſhments and fears, wherewithall they threaten them if they do otherwiſe. I have ſpoken here of no more then theſe three Sects, omitting the reſt of the two and thirty, which are followed in this great Empire of *China*, as well becauſe I ſhould never have done (as I have ſaid heretofore) if I would relate them all at large, as for that by theſe it may be known what the others are, which are nothing better, but in a manner even the very ſame; wherefore leaving the remedy of ſuch evils, and great blindneſs to the mercy and providence of God, unto whom only it appertains; I will paſs on to the declarations of the miſeries we indured during our exille in the Town of *Quancy*, until ſuch time as we were made ſlaves by the *Tartars*, which happened in the year, 1544.

§. 2. We had been now two months and an half in this City of *Pequin*, when as on *Saturday*, the thirteenth of *July*, 1554. we were carried away to the Town of *Quanſy*, there to ſerve all the time that we were condemned unto: Now as ſoon as we arrived there, the *Chaem* cauſed us to be brought before him, and after he had asked us ſome queſtions, he appointed us to be of the number of fourſcore Halberdiers, which the King aſſigned him for his Guard; This we took as a ſpecial favour from God, both in regard this imployment was not very painful, as alſo becauſe the entertainment was good, and the pay of it better, being aſſured beſides that at the time we ſhould recover our liberty. Thus lived we almoſt a month very peaceably, and well contented for that we met with a better fortune then we expected, when as the divel, ſeeing how well all we nine agreed together (for all that we had was in common amongſt us, and whatſoever miſery any one had we ſhared it with him like true brothers,) he ſo wrought that two of our company fell into a quarrel, which proved very prejudicial to us all; This diviſion ſprung from a certain vanity too familiar with the *Portugal* Nation, whereof I can render no other reaſon, but that they are naturally ſenſible of any thing that touches upon honour. Now ſee what the difference was, two of us nine falling by chance in conteſt about the extraction of the *Madureyras* and the *Fonſecas*, for to know which of theſe two houſes was in moſt eſteem at the King of *Portugals* Court, the matter went ſo far, that from one word to another they came at length to terms of oyſter-wives, ſaying one to the other, Who are you? and again, who are you? ſo that thereupon they ſuffered themſelves to be ſo tranſported with choller, that one of them gave the other a great box on the ear, who inſtantly returned him a blow with his ſword, which cut away almoſt half his cheek, this ſame feeling himſelf hurt caught up an halbert, and therewith ran the other through the arm; this diſaſter begot ſuch part-taking amongſt us, as of nine that we were ſeven of us found our ſelves grievouſly wounded; In the mean time the *Chaem* came running in perſon to this tumult with all the *Anchacys* of Juſtice, who laying hold of us gave us preſently thirty laſhes a piece, which drew more blood from us then our hurts; This done, they ſhut us up in a dungeon under ground, where they kept us ſix and forty days with heavy iron collers about our necks, manacles on our hands, and irons on our legs, ſo that we ſuffered exceedingly in this deplorable eſtate. This while our buſineſs was brought before the Kings Atturny, who having ſeen our accuſations, and that one of the articles made faith, that there were ſixteen witneſſes againſt us, he ſtuck not to ſay, *That we were people without the fear or knowledge of God, who did not confeſs him otherwiſe with our mouths, then as any wild beaſt might do if he could ſpeak; that theſe things preſuppoſed it was to be believed, that we were men of blood, of a Language, of a Law, of a Nation, of a Country, and of a Kingdom, the inhabitants whereof wounded and killed one another moſt cruelly, without any reaſon or cauſe, and therefore no other judgment could be made of us, but that we were the ſervants of the moſt giuttenous Serpent of the profound pit of ſmoak, as appeared by our workes, ſince they were no better then ſuch as that accurſed Serpent had accuſtomed to do, ſo that according to the Law of the third Book of the Will of the Son of the Sun, called* Mileterau, *We were to be condemned to a baniſhment from all commerce of people, as a venemous and contagious plague; ſo that we deſerved to be confined to the Mountains of* Chabaguay, Sumbor, *or* Lamau, *whither ſuch as we were uſe to be exiled, to the end they might in that place hear the wild beaſts howl in the night, which were of as vile a breed and nature as we.* From this priſon we were one morning led to a place, called by them *Pitan Calidan*, where the *Anchacy* ſat in judgment with a majeſtical and dreadful greatneſs; He was accompanied by divers *Chumbinis*, *Uppes*, *Lanteas*, and *Cypatuns*, beſides a number of other perſons;

there each of us had thirty laſhes a piece more given us, and then by publique ſentence we were removed to another priſon, where we were in better caſe yet then in that out of which we came, howbeit for all that we did not a little deteſt amongſt our ſelves both the *Fonſecas*, and the *Madureyras*, but much more the divel, that wrought us this miſchief. In this priſon we continued almoſt two months, during which time our ſtripes were throughly healed, howbeit we were exceedingly afflicted with hunger, and thirſt. At length it pleaſed God that the *Chaems* took compaſſion of us; for on a certain day, wherein they uſe to do works of charity for the dead, coming to review our ſentence he ordained, *That in regard we were ſtrangers, and of a Country ſo far diſtant from theirs, as no man had any knowledge of us, nor that there was any book or Writing which made mention of our name, and that none underſtood our language; as alſo that we were accuſtomed, and even hardned to miſery and poverty, which many times puts the beſt and moſt peaceable perſons into diſorder, and therefore might well trouble ſuch, as made no profeſſion of patience in their adverſities, whence it followed, that our diſcord proceeded rather from the effects of our miſery; then from any inclination unto mutiny and tumult, wherewith the Kings Attorny charged us; and furthermore repreſenting unto himſelf what great need there was of men for the ordinary ſervice of the State, and of the Officers of Juſtice, for which proviſion neceſſarily was to be made, he thought fit, that the puniſhment for the crimes we had committed, ſhould in the way of an alms beſtowed in the Kings name be moderated, and reduced to the whipping which we had twice already had, upon condition nevertheleſs that we ſhould be detained there as ſlaves for ever, unleſs it ſhould pleaſe the* Tuton *otherwiſe to ordain of us.* This ſentence was pronounced againſt us, and though we ſhed a many of tears to ſee our ſelves reduced unto this miſerable condition, wherein we were, yet this ſeemed not ſo bad unto us as the former. After the publication of this Decree we were preſently drawn out of priſon, and tied three and three together, then led to certain iron Forges, where we paſt ſix whole months in ſtrange labours, and great neceſſities, being in a manner quite naked, without any bed to lie on, and almoſt famiſhed. At laſt after the enduring of ſo many evils, we fell ſick of a Lethargy, which was the cauſe, in regard it was a contagious diſeaſe, that they turned us out of doors for to go and ſeek our living, until we became well again. Being thus ſet at liberty we continued four months ſick, and begging the alms of good people from door to door, which was given us but ſparingly, by reaſon of the great dearth that then reigned over all the Country, ſo as we were conſtrained to agree better together, and to promiſe one another by a ſolemn oath, that we took, to live lovingly for the future, as good Chriſtians ſhould do, and that every month one ſhould be choſen from amongſt us to be as it were a kind of Chief, whom, by the oath we had taken, all the reſt of us were to obey, as their Superior, ſo that none of us was to diſpoſe of himſelf, nor do any thing, without his command, or appointment; and thoſe rules were put into writing by us, that they might be the better obſerved; As indeed God gave us the grace to live ever afterward in good peace and concord, though it were in great pain, and extream neceſſity of all things.

We had continued a good while living in peace and tranquility, according to our fore-mentioned agreement, when as he, whoſe lot it was to be our Chief that month, named *Chriſtovano Baralho*, conſidering how neceſſary it was to ſeek out ſome relief for our miſeries by all the ways that poſſibly we could, appointed us to ſerve weekly two and two together, ſome in begging up and down the Town, ſome in getting water and dreſſing our meat, and others in fetching wood from the Forreſt, both for our own uſe, & to ſell. Now one day my ſelf & one *Gaſpar de Meyrelez* being enjoyned to go to the Forreſt, we roſe betimes in the morning, & went forth to perform our charge; And becauſe this *Gaſpar de Meyrelez* was a pretty Muſician, playing well on a Cittern, whereunto he accorded his voice, which was not bad, being parts that are very agreeable to thoſe people, in regard they imploy the moſt part of their times in the delights of the fleſh; they took great pleaſure in hearing of him, ſo as for that purpoſe they invited him very often to their ſports, from whence he never returned without ſome reward, wherewith we were not a little aſſiſted: As he and I then were going to the wood, and before we were out of the Town, we met by fortune in one of the ſtreets with a great many of people, who full of jollity were carrying a dead corps to the grave with divers banners, and other funeral pomp, in the midſt whereof was a Conſort of muſick and voices; Now he, that had the chief ordering of the Funeral, knowing *Gaſpar de Meyrelez*, made him ſtay, and putting a Cittern into his hands, he ſaid unto him, *Oblige me, I pray thee, by ſinging as loud as thou canſt; ſo as thou mayſt be* [redacted] *whom we are carrying to burial, for I ſwear unto thee, that he was* [redacted] *was ſeparated from his wife and children, whom he dearly*

§. 3

*dearly loved all his life time. Gaſpar de Meyrelez* would fain have excuſed himſelf, alledging many reaſons thereupon to that end, but ſo far was the Governour of the *Funeral* from accepting them, that contrarily he anſwered him very angerly. *Truly, if thou wilt not deign to beneſit this defunct with the gift, that God hath given thee, of ſinging, and playing on this inſtrument, I will no longer ſay, that thou art an holy man, as we all believed hitherto, but that the excellency of that voice which thou haſt comes from the inhabitants of the houſe of ſmoak, whoſe nature it was at firſt to ſing very harmoniouſly, though now they weep and waul in the profound lake of the night, like hunger-ſtarved dogs, that gnaſhing their teeth, and foaming with rage againſt men diſcharge the froth of their malice by the offences, which they commit againſt him, that lives in the higheſt of the Heavens.* After this ten or eleven of them were ſo earneſt with *Gaſpar de Meyrelez*, as they made him play almoſt by force, and led him to the place, where the deceaſed was to be burnt, according to the cuſtom of thoſe *Gentiles*. In the mean time ſeeing my ſelf left alone without my comrade I went along to the Forreſt for to get ſome wood according to my Commiſſion, and about evening returning back with my load on my back I met with an old man in a black damask Gown furred clean through with white Lamb, who being all alone, as ſoon as he eſpied me, he turned a little out of the way, but perceiving me to paſs on without regarding him, he cried ſo loud to me, that I might hear him, which I no ſooner did, but caſting my eye that way, I obſerved that he beckened to me with his hand, as if he called me, whereupon imagining there was ſomething more then ordinary, herein I ſaid unto him in the *Chineſe* Language, *Potanquinay*, which is, Doeſt thou call me? whereunto returning no anſwer, he gave me to underſtand by ſignes that in effect he called me; conjecturing then that there might be ſome thieves thereabouts, which would bereave me of my load of wood, I threw it on the ground to be the better able to defend my ſelf, and with my ſtaff in my hand, I went fair and ſoftly after him, who ſeeing me follow him began to double his pace athwart a little path, which confirmed me in the belief I had before that he was ſome thief, ſo that turning back to the place where I left my load, I got it up again on my back as ſpeedily as I could, with a purpoſe to get into the great high way, that led unto the City; But the man gueſſing at my intention, began to cry out louder to me then before, which making me turn my look towards him, I preſently perceived him on his knees, and ſhewing me afar off a ſilver croſs about a ſpan long, or thereabout, lifting up withall both his hands unto Heaven; wherat being much amazed, I could not imagine what this man ſhould be, in the mean time he with a very pitiful geſture ceaſed not to make ſignes unto me to come to him; whereupon ſomewhat recollecting my ſelf, I reſolved to go and ſee who he was, and what he would have, to which end with my ſtaff in my hand I walked towards him, where he ſtayed for me; when as then I came near him, having always thought him before to be a *Chineſe*, I wondred to ſee him caſt himſelf at my feet, and with tears and ſighs to ſay thus unto me, *Bleſſed and prayſed be the ſweet Name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, after ſo long an exile hath ſhewed me ſo much grace, as to let me ſee a Chriſtian man, that profeſſeth the Law of my God fixed on the Croſs.* I muſt confeſs that when I heard ſo extraordinary a matter, and ſo far beyond my expectation, I was therewith ſo ſurpriſed, that ſcarcely knowing what I ſaid, *I conjure thee*, anſwered I unto him, *in the Name of our Lord Jeſus to tell me who thou art?* At theſe words this unknown man redoubling his tears, *Dear Brother*, replyed he, *I am a poor Chriſtian, by Nation a Portugal, and named* Vaſco Calvo, *brother to* Diego Calvo, *who was ſomtime Captain of* Don Nuno Manoel *his ſhip, and made a Slave here in this Country about ſeven and twenty years ſince, together with one* Tome Perez, *who* Loppo Soarez *ſent as Ambaſſador into this Kingdom of* China, *and that ſince died miſerably by the occaſion of a Portugal Captain.* Whereupon coming throughly to my ſelf again, I lifted him up from the ground where he lay weeping like a child; and ſhedding no fewer tears then he, I intreated him that we might ſit down together, which he would hardly grant, ſo deſirous he was to have me go preſently with him to his houſe, but ſitting down by me he began to diſcourſe the whole ſucceſs of his travels, and all that had befallen him ſince his departure from *Portugal*, till that very time, as alſo the death of the Ambaſſador *Tome Perez*, and of all the reſt, whom *Fernand Perez d' Andrada* had left at *Canton* to go to the King of *China*, which he recounted in another manner then our Hiſtorians have delivered it. After we had ſpent the remainder of the day in entertaining one another with our paſſed adventures, we went to the City, where having ſhewed me his houſe, he deſired me that I would inſtantly go and fetch the reſt of my fellows, which accordingly I did, and found them all together in the poor lodging where we lay, and having

having declared unto them what had befallen me, they were much abaſhed at it, as indeed they had cauſe, conſidering the ſtratagems of the accident, ſo they went preſently along with me to *Vaſco Calvo's* houſe, who waiting for us, gave us ſuch hearty welcome, as we could not chuſe but weep for joy; Then he carried us into a Chamber where was his wife, with two little boys, and two girls of his; ſhe entertained us very kindly, and with as much demonſtration of love, as if ſhe had been the mother or daughter to either of us; After this we ſat down at the table, which he had cauſed to be covered, and made a very good meal of many ſeveral diſhes provided for us: Supper done, his wife aroſe very courteouſly from the table, and taking a key which hung at her girdle, ſhe opened the door of an Oratory, where there was an altar, with a ſilver croſs, as alſo two candleſticks, and a lamp of the ſame, and then ſhe and her four children falling down on their knees, with their hands lift up to Heaven, began to pronounce theſe words very diſtinctly in the *Portugal* tongue: *O thou true God, We wretched ſinners do confeſs before thy Croſs, like good Chriſtians, as we are, the moſt ſacred Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, three Perſons, and one God; and alſo we promiſe to live and dye in thy moſt Holy Catholique Faith, like good and true Chriſtians, confeſſing and believing ſo much of thy holy truth, as is held and believed by thy Church; In like manner We offer up unto thee our ſouls, which thou haſt redeemed with thy moſt precious blood, for to be wholly imployed in thy ſervice all the time of our lives, and then to be yielded unto thee at the hour of our death, as to our Lord and God, unto whom We acknowledge they appertain both by Creation and Redemption.* After this Confeſsion *they ſaid the Lords Prayer, and the Creed,* which they pronounced very diſtinctly, whereat we could not chuſe but ſhed a world of tears to ſee theſe innocents, born in a Country, ſo far remote from ours, and where there was no knowledge of the true God, thus to confeſs his Law in ſuch religious terms. This being done, we returned becauſe it was three of the clock in the morning to our lodging, exceedingly aſtoniſhed at that we had ſeen, as at a thing which we had great reaſon to admire.

## Chap. XXXVIII.

*A* Tartar *Commander enters with his Army into the Town of* Quincay, *and that which followed thereupon; With the* Nauticors *beſieging the Caſtle of* Nixiamcoo, *and the taking of it by the means of four of us* Portugals.

WE had been now eight months and an half in this captivity, wherein we endured much misery, and many incommodities, for that we had nothing to live upon but what we got by begging up and down the Town, when as one *Wedneſday*, the third of *July*, in the year 1544. a little after midnight there was ſuch a hurly burly amongſt the people, that to hear the noiſe and cries which was made in every part, one would have thought the earth would have come over and over, which cauſed us to go in haſte to *Vaſco Calvo* his houſe, of whom we demanded the occaſion of ſo great a tumult, whereunto with tears in his eyes he anſwered us, that certain news were come how the King of *Tartary* was fallen upon the City of *Pequin* with ſo great an Army, as the like had never been ſeen ſince *Adams* time; In this army, according to report, were ſeven and twenty Kings, under whom marched eighteen hundred thouſand men, whereof ſix hundred thouſand were horſe, which were come by land from the Cities of *Luançama*, *Famſtir*, and *Mecny*, with fourſcore thouſand *Rhinocerots*, that draw the waggons, wherein was all the Bigage of the Army; as for the other twelve hundred thouſand, which were foot, it was ſaid that they arrived by Sea in ſeventeen thouſand veſſels, down through the river of *Batampina*; By reaſon whereof the King of *China* finding himſelf too weak for the reſiſting of ſuch great forces, had with a few retired himſelf to the City of *Nanquin*. And that alſo it was reported for a certain, that a *Nauticor*, one of the chiefeſt *Tartar* Commanders, was come to the Forreſt of *Malincataran*, not above a league and an half from *Quinçay*, with an Army of threeſcore and two thouſand Horſe, wherewith he marched againſt the Town, that in all likelihood he would be there within two hours at the furtheſt. Theſe news ſo troubled us, that we did nothing but look one upon another, without being able to ſpeak a word to any purpoſe, howbeit deſiring to ſave our ſelves, we prayed *Vaſco Calvo* to ſhew us what means he thought we might uſe to effect it, who ſad and full of grief thus anſwered us; O that we were in our Country between *Laura* and *Carnche*, where I have often been, and ſhould be there now in ſafety, but ſince it cannot be ſo, all that we can do for S. 1.

the

the preſent, is to recommend our ſelves to God, and to pray unto him to aſſiſt us; for I aſſure you that an hour ago I would have given a thouſand *Taeis* in ſilver to any one, that could have got me from hence, and ſaved me with my wife and children, but there was no poſſibility for it, becauſe the gates were then all ſhut up, and the walls round about invironed with armed men, which the *Chaem* hath placed there to withſtand the enemy. So my fellows and I, that were nine in number, paſt the reſt of the night there in much affliction and unquietneſs, without any means of counſelling one another, or reſolving on what we were to do, continually weeping for the extream fear we were in of what ſhould become of us. The next morning a little before Sun-riſing the enemy appeared in a moſt dreadful manner, they were divided into ſeven very great Battalions, having their Enſignes quartered with green and white, which are the colours of the King of *Tartaria*; marching in this order to the ſound of their Trumpets, they arrived at a *Pagode*, called *Petilau Nameioo*, a place of good receit, in regard of the many lodgings it had, which was not much diſtant from the walls. In their Vantguard they had a number of Light-horſe, who ran confuſedly up and down with their Lances in their Reſts. Being in this ſort come to the *Pagode*, they ſtayed there about half an hour, and then marching on till they were within an harquebuſe ſhot of the walls, they ſuddenly ran to them with ſuch hideous cries, as one would have thought that Heaven and Earth would have come together, and rearing up above two thouſand Ladders, which for that purpoſe they had brought along with them, they aſſaulted the Town on every ſide with a moſt invincible courage. Now though the beſieged at the beginning made ſome reſiſtance, yet was it not able to hinder the enemy from effecting his deſigne, for by the means of certain iron rams broking up the four principal gates, they rendred themſelves Maſters of the Town after they had ſlain the *Chaem*, together with a great number of *Mandarins*, and Gentlemen, that were run thither to keep them from entring; Thus did theſe *Barbarians* poſſeſs themſelves of this miſerable Town, whereof they put all the inhabitants they could meet withall to the ſword, without ſparing any; and it was ſaid that the number of the ſlain amounted to threeſcore thouſand perſons, amongſt whom were many women and maids of very great beauty, which appertained to the chiefeſt Lords of the place. After the bloody Maſſacre of ſo much people, and that the Town was fired, the principal houſes overthrown, and the moſt ſumptuous Temples laid level with the ground, nothing remaining on foot during the diſorder, the *Tartars* continued there ſeven days, at the end whereof they returned towards *Pequin*, where their King was, and from whence he had ſent them to this execution, carrying with them a world of gold and ſilver only, having burnt all the Merchandiſe they found there, as well becauſe they knew not how to tranſport it away, as for that the *Chineſes* ſhould not make any benefit of it: Two days after their departure they arrived at a Caſtle, named *Nixianicoo*, where the *Nauticor* of *Luançama*, their General, pitched his Camp, and intrenched himſelf on all ſides with an intention to take it by aſſault the next day to be revenged on the *Chineſes* there, for that upon his paſſing by them towards *Quinçay*, they had cut off an hundred of his men by an Ambuſcado.

§. 2 After the Army was encamped, and intrenched, and that the General had placed ſure Guards and Sentinels in all places, he retired to his Tent, whither he ſent for the ſeventy Captains that commanded his Army, unto whom upon their arrival he diſcovered his reſolution, which being well approved of they fell into deliberation in what manner the Caſtle ſhould be aſſaulted the day following, which concluded on, the next morning as ſoon as it was light the ſouldiers began to march towards the Caſtle, divided into fourteen Bataillions; being come within a flight ſhoot of it with the ſound of trumpets, and moſt hideous cries, they reared up their Ladders againſt the walls, and couragiouſly mounted up; but in the heat of this aſſault, where every one ſhewed his valour, the one in bravely attempting, and the other in well defending, the *Tartar* in leſs then two hours loſt above three thouſand of his men, which made him ſound a retreat in great diſorder, and he paſt the reſt of that day in burying the dead, and curing of the wounded, whereof, there being a great number, the moſt part died not long after, for that the arrows wherewith they were hurt had been ſmeared by the *Chineſes* with ſo ſtrange and deadly poiſon, as there was no remedy to be found for it. In the mean time the *Tartar* Commanders ſeeing the ill ſucceſs of this aſſault, and fearing the King would be offended at ſo great a loſs for ſo ſmall an occaſion, perſwaded the General to call another Councel, wherein it might be conſidered, whether it would be moſt expedient for the Kings honour to perſiſt in the Siege of that place, or to give it over, whereupon this affair coming accordingly into deliberation it was a long time debated with ſuch diverſity of opinions, as they were not able to

con-

concluded upon any thing, ſo that it was thought fit, in regard it was then late to put off the Aſſembly till the next day; This reſolution taken, every man retired to his quarter. Now we being led away amidſt a great many of other ſlaves, with whom we had eſcaped out of the fire of the Town, it fell out, whether for our good, or for our greater misfortune, we could not then tell, that we were under the Guard, as priſoners of war, of one of that Aſſembly, a rich and honourable man, who returning to his tent with three other perſons, of like quality to himſelf, whom he had invited to Supper, it chanced after they were riſen from table that one of them eſpied us, where we ſtood chained in a corner of the tent, and perceiving us to weep was ſo moved, that he demanded of us what people we were? what the name of our Country was? and how we came to be ſlaves to the *Chineſes?* whereunto we gave ſuch an anſwer, as the *Tartar* ingaging himſelf further in this diſcourſe, enquired of us whether our King was inclined to the wars, and whether we did uſe to fight in our Country? to whom one of our companions, named *Jorge Mendez*, replyed that we did, and that we had been trained up from our infancy in a military courſe of life; which ſo pleaſed the *Tartar*, that calling his two friends unto him, Come hither, ſaid he, and have the patience to hear what theſe priſoners can ſay; for believe me they ſeem to be men of underſtanding; whereupon the other two came near, and hearing us relate ſome part of our misfortunes, it begat a deſire in them to ask us other queſtions, wherein having ſatisfied them the beſt that we could, one of them that ſeemed more curious then the reſt, addreſſing himſelf to *Jorge Mendez*, ſpake thus; *Since you have ſeen ſo much of the World, as you ſay, if there were ere a one amongſt you that could find out any device, or ſtratagem of war, whereby the* Mitaquer (*for ſo was the* Nauticot *called*) *might take this Caſtle, I vow to you that he would become your priſoner, whereas you are his.* Then *Jorge Mendez*, never conſidering with what imprudence he ſpake, nor underſtanding what he ſaid, nor into what danger he was putting himſelf, boldly anſwered him; *If my Lord* Mitaquer *will in the name of the King give it us under his hand, that we ſhall have a ſafe conduct to convey us by Sea to the Iſle of* Ainan, *from whence we may freely return into our Country, poſſibly I may be the man that will ſhew him how he ſhall take the Caſtle with little ado.* This Speech being heard, and maturely conſidered by one of the three, a man in years, and of great authority, as having the honour to be much eſteemed and beloved of the *Mitaquer*, *Think well of what thou ſayeſt, replyed he to* Jorge Mendez, *for I aſſure thee if thou doeſt it, that whatſoever thou demandeſt ſhall be granted thee, I, and more too.* Hereupon the reſt of us ſeeing what *Jorge Mendez* was going to undertake, as alſo how far he ingaged himſelf in his promiſe, and that the *Tartars* began already to ground ſome hope thereupon, we thought fit to reprehend him for it, and to tell him, that he was not to hazard himſelf ſo at random by promiſing a thing that might bring us into the danger of our lives. *I fear nothing leſs*, ſaid he unto us, *for as for my life, in the eſtate where now I am, I make ſo little account of it, that if any of theſe* Barbarians *would play for it at* Primero, *I would with three of the worſt cards in the pack venture it upon the firſt encounter, for I am confident that all the benefit they can expect from us will never oblige them to grant us either life or liberty, ſo that for my particular I had as lief die to day as to morrow, judg you only by that which you ſaw them do at* Quincay, *whether you are likely to be better dealt withall now.* The *Tartars* were much abaſhed to ſee us thus in conteſtation one with another, and to hear us talk ſo loud, which is not uſual amongſt them, wherefore they reprehended us very ſeriouſly, ſaying, *That it was for women to ſpeak aloud, who could not put a bridle to their tongue, nor a key to their mouths, and not for men, that carry a ſword, and are made for the Wars: Howbeit if it were ſo that* Jorge Mendez *could execute what he had propounded, the* Mitaquer *could not refuſe him any thing he could demand.* This ſaid, the *Tartars* retired every one to his lodging, for that it was eleven of the clock at night, the firſt watch being newly paſt, and the Captains of the Guard beginning then to walk the round about the camp at the ſound of divers inſtruments, as is the cuſtom in ſemblable occaſions.

The fame of the three *Tartar* Commanders, which I ſaid before was ſo eſteemed of by the *Mitaquer*, had no ſooner learnt of *Jorge Mendez*, that he could tell how to take the Caſtle of *Nixiamcoo*, but that he went preſently to acquaint the General with it, and making the matter greater then it was, he told him, that he could do no leſs then ſend for him to hear his reaſons, which peradventure would perſwade him to give credit unto him, and in caſe it proved not ſo, yet was there nothing loſt thereby. The *Mitaquer* being well pleaſed with this advice, ſent incontinently a Command to *Tileymay*, which was the Captain under whoſe §. 1.

Guard

Guard we were, for to bring us unto him, as preſently he did. Being then arrived, chained as we were, at the *Mitaquers* Tent, we found him ſet in Councel with the ſeventy Commanders of the Army about two hours after midnight; At our coming he received us with an affable countenance, yet grave and ſevere, and cauſing us to approach nearer unto him, he commanded part of our chains to be undone, then asked us if we would eat, whereunto we anſwered moſt willingly, for that in three days together we had not ſo much as taſted a bit of any thing, whereat the *Mitaquer* was very much offended, and ſharply reproving the *Tileymay* for it, willed two great platters of ſodden rice, and Ducks cut in ſmall pieces to be ſet before us, whereto we fell with ſuch an appetite, like men that were almoſt famiſhed, as thoſe of the company, who took great pleaſure to ſee us feed ſo, ſaid to the *Mitaquer*, *When as you had nothing elſe, my Lord, but cauſe theſe to come before you for to ſlack their hunger, verily you had done very much for them, by ſaving them from a languiſhing death, which otherwiſe they could not have avoided, and ſo you might have loſt theſe ſlaves, of whom the ſervice or ſale might have been ſome way profitable unto you, for if you will not make uſe of them at* Lancama, *you may ſell them for a thouſand* Taeis *at leaſt*. Hereat ſome began to laugh, but the *Mitaquer* commanded more rice to be given us, together with ſome apples, and other things, conjuring us again to eat, as a thing which he took pleaſure to ſee us do, wherein we moſt willingly gave him ſatisfaction. After we had fed well, he began to talk with *Jorge Mendez* about that which had been told him of him, and of the means that were to be uſed for taking the Caſtle, making him many great promiſes of honours, pentions, favour with the King, and liberty for all the reſt of his fellows, with other ſuch offers, as paſſed all meaſure: For he ſwore unto him that if by his means God ſhould give him the victory, whereby he ſought nothing but to be revenged on his enemies for the blood which they had ſhed of his men, he ſhould every way be like unto himſelf, or at leaſt to any of his children which ſoever; Herewith *Jorge Mendez* found himſelf ſomewhat perplexed, becauſe he held it almoſt impoſſible for him to bring it to effect, howſoever he told him, that not to hold him longer in hand, he did not think but if he might view the Caſtle with his own eys, he might then peradventure let him know how it might be taken, wherefore if his Lordſhip pleaſed, he would the next morning conſider it all about, and thereupon render him an account what courſe was to be taken therein. The *Mitaquer*, & all the reſt, allowed very well of his anſwer, and greatly commending him for it ſent us to be lodged in a Tent not far from his, where we ſpent the reſt of the night under a ſure Guard; you may judg now in what fear we were, knowing that if the buſineſs did not ſucceed according to the deſire of theſe *Barbarians*, they would cut us all in pieces, for that they were a people which for never ſo ſmall a matter would not ſtick to kill twenty or thirty men, without any regard either of God, or any thing elſe. The next morning about eight of the clock, *Jorge Mendez*, and two of us, that were appointed to accompany him, went to ſurvey the place with thirty horſe for our ſafe-Guard; when as *Jorge Mendez* had well obſerved the ſcituation thereof, as alſo that part whereby it might moſt commodiouſly be aſſaulted, he returned to the *Mitaquer*, that expected him with impatience, to whom he gave an acount of what he had ſeen, and facilitated the taking of the Caſtle with little hazard, whereat the *Mitaquer* was ſo overjoyed, that he preſently cauſed the reſt of our irons, and the chains, wherewith we were faſtened by the neck and feet to be taken off, ſwearing to us by the rice he did eat, that as ſoon as he came to *Pequin*, he would preſent us to the King, and infallibly accompliſh all that he had promiſed us, for the more aſſurance whereof he confirmed it by a Deed under his hand, that was written in letters of gold, to make it more authentical. That done, he ſent for us to dinner, and would needs have us to ſit with him at table, doing us many other honours according to their manner, which greatly contented us, but on the other ſide we were in no little fear, leaſt this affair ſhould not for our ſins have a ſucceſs anſwerable to that hope the *Mitaquer* had already conceived of it. The reſt of this day the Commanders ſpent in reſolving upon the order that was to be obſerved for aſſaulting the Caſtle, wherein *Jorge Mendez* was the ſole Director: Firſt of all then an infinite company of Bavins & Fagots was gotten together for to fill up the ditches; there were alſo three hundred Ladders made, very ſtrong, and ſo large, that three men might eaſily mount up on them a front without incombring one another; likewiſe there was a world of Paniers, Doſſers, and Baskets provided, together with a great multitude of Mattocks, and Spades, that were found in the Villages and Burroughs thereabout, which the inhabitants had deſerted upon the bruit of this war, and all the ſouldiers of the Army made preparation of ſuch things as they ſhould need the next day when the aſſault was to be given s

In

In the mean time *Jorge Mendez* rode always by the *Mitaquers* ſide, who ſhewed him many great favours, which we perceived had begotten in him a ſtately carriage, far differeat from that he was wont to have, whereat we wondring, ſome of us (who envious of anothers good fortune, and out of an ill nature) could not chuſe but murmur, ſaying one to another, as it were in diſdain, and in a kind of jeering, *What think you of this dog? verily he will be the cauſe that either to morrow morning we ſhall be all cut in pieces, or if the buſineſs he hath undertaken ſucceed as we deſire, it is probable that he will be in ſuch credit with theſe* Barbarians, *that we ſhall account it for a happineſs to be his ſervants*; and this was the talk which we had amongſt us. The next day all the Army was put into order, and divided into twelve Battallions, whereof they made twelve Files, and one Counterfile in the Vantguard, that incompaſſed the whole Camp in manner of an half moon: upon the wings were the foremoſt with all that Maſs of Bavins, Ladders, Baskets, Mattocks, Spades, and other materials to fill up the ditch, and make it equal with the reſt of the ground. Marching in this manner they arrived at the Caſtle, which they found ſtrongly mann'd, and with a number of Flags and Streamers waving upon the Battlements. The firſt Salutation between the beſiegers and the beſieged was with arrows, darts, ſtones, and pots of wild-fire, which continued about half an hour, then the *Tartars* preſently filled the ditch with bavins and earth, and ſo reared up their ladders againſt the wall, that now by reaſon of the filling up of the ditch was not very high; The firſt that mounted up was *Jorge Mendez*, accompanied with two of ours, who as then reſolved had ſet up their reſt, either to die there, or to render their valour remarkable by ſome memorable act, as in effect it pleaſed our Lord that their reſolution had a good ſucceſs, for they not only entred firſt, but alſo planted the firſt colours upon the wall, whereat the *Mitaquer*, and all that were with him, were ſo amazed, as they ſaid one to another, Doubtleſs if theſe people did beſiege *Pequin*, as we do, the *Chineſes*, which defend that City, would ſooner loſe their honour, then we ſhall make them to do it with all the forces we have; in the mean time all the *Tartars*, that were at the foot of the ladders, followed the three *Portugals*, and carried themſelves ſo valiantly, what with the example of a Captain that had ſhewed them the way, as out of their own natural diſpoſition, almoſt as reſolute as thoſe of *Japan*, that in a very ſhort ſpace above 5000 of them were got upon the walls from whence with great violence they made the *Chineſes* to retire, whereupon ſo furious and bloody a fight enſued between either party, that in leſs then half an hour the buſineſs was fully decided, and the Caſtle taken, with the death of two thouſand *Chineſes* and *Mogores* that were in it, there being not above ſixſcore of the *Tartars* ſlain. That done the gates being opened, the *Mitaquer* with great acclamations of joy entred, and cauſing the *Chineſes* colours to be taken down, and his own to be advanced in their places, he with a new ceremony of rejoycing at the ſound of many inſtruments of war after the the manner of the *Tartars* gave rewards to the wounded, and made divers of the moſt valiant of his followers Knights, by putting bracelets of gold about their right arms; and then about noon he with the chief Commanders of his Army, for the greater triumph dined in the Caſtle, where he alſo beſtowed bracelets of gold upon *Jorge Mendez*, and the other *Portugals*, whom he made to ſit down at table with him; After the cloth was taken away, he went out of the Caſtle with all his company, and then cauſing all the walls of it to be diſmantelled, he razed the place quite to the ground, ſetting on fire all that remained with a number of ceremonies, which was performed with great cries and acclamations to the ſound of divers inſtruments of war; Moreover he commanded the ruines of this Caſtle to be ſprinkled with the blood of his enemies, and the heads of all of them that lay dead there to be cut off; as for his own ſouldiers that were ſlain, he cauſed them to be triumphantly buried, and ſuch as were hurt to be carefully looked unto; this done, he retired with a huge train, and in great pomp to his tent, having *Jorge Mendez* cloſe by him on horſback; As for the other eight of us, together with many brave Noblemen and Captains, we followed him on foot. Being arrived at his tent, which was richly hung, he ſent *Jorge Mendez* a thouſand *Taeis* for a reward, and to us but an hundred a piece, whereat ſome of us, that thought themſelves to be better qualified, were very much diſcontented, for that he was more reſpected then they, by whoſe means, as well as his, the enterpriſe had been ſo happily atchieved, though by the good ſucceſs thereof we had all obtained honour and liberty.

## Chap. XXXIX.

*The* Mitaquer *departs from the Caſtle of* Nixiamcoo, *and goes to the King of* Tartary *his Camp before Pequin; with that which we ſaw till we arrived there; and the* Mitaquers *preſenting us unto the King.*

§. 1 THe next day the *Mitaquer* having nothing more to do where he was, reſolved to take his way towards the City of *Pequin*, before which the King lay, as I have delivered before; To this effect having put his Army into battel aray, he departed from thence at eight of the clock in the morning, and marching leaſurely to the ſound of his warlike inſtruments, he made his firſt ſtation about noon upon the bank of a river, whoſe ſcituation was very pleaſant, being all about invironed with a world of fruit trees, and a many goodly houſes, but wholly deſerted, and bereaved of all things which the *Barbarians* might any way have made booty of. Having paſt the greateſt heat of the day there, he aroſe and marched on until about an hour in the night that he took up his lodging at a prety good Town, called *Luntimay*, which likewiſe we found deſerted, for all this whole Country was quite diſpeopled for fear of the *Barbarians*, who ſpared no kind of perſon, but whereſoever they came put all to fire and ſword, as the next day they did by this place, and many other along this river, which they burnt down to the ground; and that which yet was more lamentable, they ſet on fire, and clean conſumed to aſhes a great large plain, being above ſix leagues about, and full of corn ready to be reaped. This cruelty executed, the Army began again to move, compoſed as it was of ſome three ſcore and five thouſand horſe, (for as touching the reſt they were all ſlain, as well at the taking of *Quinçay*, as in that of the Caſtle of *Nixiamçoo*,) and went on to a mountain, named *Pommitay*, where they remained that night; The next morning diſlodging from thence, they marched on ſomewhat faſter then before, that they might arrive by day at the City of *Pequin*, which was diſtant about ſeven leagues from that mountain: At three of the clock in the afternoon we came to the river of *Palamxitan*, where a *Tartar* Captain, accompanied with an hundred horſe, came to receive us, having waited there two days for that purpoſe; The firſt thing that he did, was the delivering of a letter from the King to our General, who received it with a great deal of ceremony; From this river to the Kings quarter, which might be ſome two leagues, the Army marched without order, as being unable to do otherwiſe, partly as well in regard of the great concourſe of people, wherewith the ways were full in coming to ſee the Generals arrival, as for the great train which the Lords brought along with them, that over-ſpread all the fields; In this order, or rather diſorder, we arrived at the Caſtle of *Lantir*, which was the firſt Fort of nine that the Camp had for the retreat of the Spies, there we found a young Prince, whom the *Tartar* had ſent thither to accompany the General, who alighting from his horſe, took his Scymitar from his ſide, and on his knees offered it unto him, after he had kiſſed the ground five times, being the ceremony or compliment ordinarily uſed amongſt them; The Prince was exceedingly pleaſed with this honour done unto him, which with a ſmiling countenance, and much acknowledgment of words he teſtified unto him; This paſt, the Prince with a new ceremony ſtept two or three paces back, and lifting up his voice with more gravity then before, as he that repreſented the Perſon of the King, in whoſe name he came, ſaid unto him, *He, the border of whoſe rich veſture my mouth kiſſeth, and that out of an incredible greatneſs maſtereth the Scepters of the earth, and of the Iſles of the Sea, ſends thee word by me, Who am his ſlave, that thy honourable arrival is no leſs agreeable unto him, then the Summers ſweet morning is to the ground, when as the dew doth comfort and refreſh our bodies, and therefore would have thee without further delay to come and hear his voice mounted on his horſe, whoſe trappings are garniſhed with jewels taken out of his Treaſury, to the end, that riding by my ſide, thou mayeſt be made equal in honour to the greateſt of his Court, and that they which beholding thee marching in this ſort, may acknowledge that the right hand of him is mighty and valiant unto whom the labours of war giveth this recompence.* Hereupon the Mitaquer proſtrating himſelf on the earth, with his hands lifted up, anſwered him thus, *Let my head be an hundred times trampled on by the ſole of his feet, that all thoſe of my race may be ſenſible of ſo great a favour, and that my eldeſt Son may ever carry it for a mark of honour.* Then mounting on the horſe, which the Prince had given him, trapped with gold and precious ſtones, being one of thoſe that the King uſed to ride on himſelf, they marched on with a great

a great deal of State and Majeſty. In this pomp were many ſpare horſes led richly harneſſed; there were alſo a number of Uſhers, carrying ſilver Maces on their ſhoulders, and ſix hundred Halberdiers on horsback, together with fifteen Chariots, full of ſilver Cymbals, and many other ill tuned barbarous inſtruments, that made ſo great a din, as it was not poſſible to hear one another. Moreover in all this diſtance of way, which was a league and an half, there were ſo many men on horsback, as one could hardly paſs through the croud in any part thereof. The *Mitaquer* being thus in triumph arrived at the firſt trenches of the Camp, he ſent us by one of his Servants to his quarter, where we were very well received, and abundantly furniſhed with all things neceſſary for us.

Fourteen days after we arrived at this Camp, the *Mitaquer*, our General, ſent for us to his Tent, where in the preſence of ſome of his Gentlemen, he ſaid unto us; *To morrow morning about this time be you ready, that I may make good my word unto you, which is to let you ſee the face of him, whom we hold for our Soveraign Lord, a grace that is done you out of a particular reſpect to me; And this his Majeſty doth not only grant unto you, but your liberty alſo, which I have obtained of him for you, and which in truth I am no leſs glad of, then of the taking of* Mixiancoo, *the particulars whereof you may relate unto him, if you come to be ſo happy as to be queſtioned by him about it. Withall I aſſure you that I ſhall take it for a great ſatisfaction, if when you ſhall return into your Country, you will remember that I have kept my word with you, and that therein I have ſhewed my ſelf ſo punctual, as it may be I would not for that conſideration demand of the King ſome other thing more profitable for me, that you may know this was that which I only deſired: Alſo the King hath done me the honour to grant it me preſently, and that with ſuch exceeding demonſtration of favour, as I muſt confeſs I am thereby more obliged unto you, then you are to me.* Having ſpoken thus unto us we proſtrated our ſelves upon the ground, and in this ſort anſwered him. *My Lord, the good which you have pleaſed to do us is ſo great, that to go about to thank you with words (as the World uſeth to do) in the ſtate we now are in, would rather be an ingratitude, then a true and due acknowledgment; ſo that we think it better to paſs it by in ſilence within the ſecret of that ſoul which God hath put into us; And therefore ſince our tongues are of no uſe to us herein, and that they cannot frame words, capable to ſatisfie ſo great an obligation, as this is, wherein all of us ſtand for ever ſo infinitely ingaged unto you, we muſt with continual tears and ſighs beg of the Lord which made Heaven and earth, that he will reward you for it; for it is he that out of his infinite mercy and goodneſs, hath taken upon him to pay that for the poor, which they of themſelves are not able to diſcharge; It is he then, that will throughly recompence you and your children for this good office you have done us, and whereby you merit to have a ſhare in his promiſes, and to live long and happily in this world.* Amongſt thoſe which accompanied the *Mitaquer* at that time, there was one named *Bonquinnda*, a man in years, and of the principaleſt Lords of the Kingdom, who in this Army commanded over the ſtrangers and *Rhinocerots*, that ſerved for the Guard of the Camp; This ſame, unto whom more reſpect was born then to all the reſt that were preſent, had no ſooner heard our anſwer, but lifting up his eyes to Heaven he ſaid, *O! Who could be ſo happy, as to be able to ask of God the explication of ſo high a ſecret, whereunto the Weakneſs of our poor underſtanding cannot arrive; for I would fain know from Whence it comes, that he permits people ſo far eſtoigned from the knowledge of our truth, to anſwer on the ſuddain in terms ſo agreeable to our ears, that I dare well ſay, nay, I will venture my head on it, that concerning things of God, and Heaven, they know more ſleeping, then We do broad awake, Whence it may be inferred that there are Prieſts amongſt them that underſtand the courſe of the Stars, and the motions of the Heavens, far better then our* Bonzes *of the houſe of* Lechura. Whereupon all that were about him anſwered, *Your Greatneſs hath ſo much reaſon for it, that We were obliged to beleeve it as an Article of our faith, Wherefore we think it were fit, that theſe ſtrangers ſhould not be ſuffered to go out of our Country, where, as our Maſters and Doctors, they might teach us ſuch things they know of the World. That which you adviſe, replyed the* Mitaquer, *is not much amiſs, and yet the King would never permit it for all the treaſures of* China, *becauſe if he ſhould, he would then violate the truth of his Word, and ſo loſe all the reputation of his greatneſs, Wherefore you muſt excuſe me if I do not propound things unto him that cannot be;* whereupon turning himſelf towards us, *Go, get you gone,* ſaid he unto us, *and to morrow morning fail not to be ready for to come again when I ſhall ſend for you.* Theſe words exceedingly contented us, as there was great cauſe they ſhould; and accordingly the next day he ſent us nine horſes very well furniſhed, upon which we mounted, and ſo went to his Tent; He

in the mean time had put himſelf into a *Piambre* (that is ſomewhat like to a Litter) drawn with two horſes richly harneſſed; round about him for his Guard marched threeſcore Halberdiers, ſix pages apparelled in his Livery mounted on white Curtals, and we nine on horſback a little more behind. In this manner he went on towards the place where the King was, whom he found lodged in the great and ſumptuous Edifice of the Goddeſs *Nacapiran*, by the *Chineſes* called the Queen of Heaven, whereof I have ſpoken at large in the thirty fourth *Chapter*. Being arrived at the firſt trenches of the Kings Tent, he alighted out of his Litter, and all the reſt likewiſe off from their horſes, for to ſpeak to the *Nautaran*, of whom with a kind of ceremony, after the faſhion of the *Gentiles*, he craved leave to enter, which was preſently granted him. Thereupon the *Mitaqu r* being returned into his Litter, paſſed through the gates in the ſame manner as before, only we and the reſt of his followers waited upon him on foot. When he came to a low and very long Gallery, where there was a great number of Gentlemen, he alighted again out of his Litter, and told us that we were to attend him there, for that he would go and know whether it were a fit time to ſpeak with the King, or no. We ſtayed there then about an hour, during the which ſome of the Gentlemen that were in the Gallery obſerving us to be ſtrangers, and ſuch kind of people as they had never ſeen the like, they called us, and very courteouſly bid us to ſit down by them, where having ſpent ſome time in beholding certain tumblers ſhewing feats of activity, we perceived the *Mitaquer* coming forth with four very beautiful boys, attired in long coats after the *Turkiſh* faſhion, garded all over with green and white, and wearing about the ſmall of their legs little hoops of gold in the form of irons and ſhackles. The Gentlemen that were p eſent, as ſoon as they ſaw them roſe up on their feet, and drawing out their Courtelaſſes, which they wore by their ſides, they laid them on the ground with a new kind of ceremony, ſaying three times, *Let the Lord of our heads live an hundred thouſand years.* In the mean while as we lay with our heads bending to the ground, one of thoſe boys ſaid aloud unto us; *You men of the other end of the World, rejoyce now, for that the hour is come, wherein your deſire is to be accompliſhed, and that you are to have the liberty, which the* Mitaquer *promiſed you at the Caſtle of* Nixiamcoo, *wherefore ariſe from off the earth, and lift up your hands to Heaven, rendring thanks unto the Lord, who during the night of our peaceable reſt, enammels the Firmament with Stars, ſeeing that of himſelf alone, without the merit of any fleſh, he hath made you to encounter in your exile with a man that delivers your perſons.* To this Speech, proſtrated as we were on the ground, we returned him this anſwer by our truch-man, *May Heavens grant us ſo much happineſs, as that his foot may trample on our heads*; whereunto he replied, *Your wiſh is not ſmall, and may it pleaſe God to accord you this gift of riches.*

§. 3. Theſe four boys, and the *Mitaquer*, whom we followed, paſt through a Gallery, erected upon five and twenty pillars of braſs, and entred into a great room, where there were a number of Gentlemen, and amongſt them many ſtrangers, *Mogores*, *Perſians*, *Bordies*, *Calaminhams*, and *Bramaas*. After we were out of this room, we came unto another, where there were many armed men, ranged into five Files all along the room, with Courtelaſſes on their ſhoulders, that were garniſhed with gold. Theſe ſtayed the *Mitaquer* a little, and with great complements asked him ſome queſtions, and took his oath upon the Maces the boys carried, which he performed on his knees, kiſſing the ground three ſeveral times, whereupon he was admitted to paſs on into a great place, like a quadrangle; there we ſaw four ranks of Statues of braſs, in the form of wild men, with clubs and crowns of the ſame mettal guilt: Theſe Idols or Gyants, were each of them ſix and twenty ſpans high, and ſix broad, as well on the breſt, as on the ſhoulders; their countenances were hideous and deformed, and their hair curled like to *Negroes*. The deſire we had to know what theſe figures ſignified, made us to demand it of the *Tartars*, who anſwered us, that they were the three hundred and threeſcore gods, which framed the days of the year, being placed there expreſly, to the end that in their effigies they might be continually adored, for having created the fruits which the earth produceth; and withall that the King of *Tartary* had cauſed them to be tranſported thither from a great Temple, called *Angicamoy*, which he had taken in the City of *Xipeton*, out of the Chappel of the Tombs of the Kings of *China*, for to triumph over them, when as he ſhould happily return into his Country, that the whole world might know how in deſpight of the King of *China* he had captivated his gods. Within this place, whereof I ſpeak, and amidſt a plantation of Orange-trees, that was invironed within a fence of Ivy, Roſes, Roſemary, and many other ſort of flowers, which we have not in *Europe*, was a Tent pitched upon twelve Baliſters of the wood of Champhire, each

of

of them wreathed about with ſilver in the faſhion of knotted card-work, bigger then ones arm. In this Tent was a low Throne in the form of an Altar, garniſhed with branched work of fine gold, and over it was a cloth of State, ſet thick with ſilver Stars; where alſo the Sun and Moon were to be ſeen, as alſo certain clouds, ſome of them white, and others of the colour of which appear in the time of rain, all enammelled ſo to the life, and with ſuch art, that they beguiled all thoſe that beheld them, for they ſeemed to rain indeed, ſo as it was impoſſible to ſee a thing more compleat, either for the proportions or colours. In the midſt of this Throne upon a bed lay a great Statue of ſilver called *Abican Nilancor*, which ſignifies, *the God of the health of Kings*, that had been alſo taken in the Temple of *Angicamoy*. Now round about the ſame Statue were four and thirty Idols of the height of a child of five or ſix years old, ranged in two Files, and ſet on their knees, with their hands lifted up towards this Idol, as if they would adore him. At the entry into this Tent there were four young Gentlemen richly clad, who with each of them a Cenſer in his hand, went two and two about, then at the ſound of a bell proſtrated themſelves on the ground, and cenſed one another, ſaying with a loud voice, *Let our cry come unto thee as a ſweet perfume, to the end thou mayeſt hear us.* For the Guard of this Tent, there were threeſcore Halberdiers, who at a little diſtance invironed it all about. They were clothed with guilt leather, and had Murrians on their heads curiouſly engraven; all which were very agreeable and majeſtical objects. Out of this place we entred into another diviſion, where there were four Chambers very rich and well furniſhed, in the which were many Gentlemen, as well ſtrangers as *Tartars*. From thence paſſing on whith r the *Mitaquer*, and the young boys conducted us, we arrived at the door of a great low room, in form like to a Church, where ſtood ſix Uſhers with their Maces, who with a new complement to the *Mitaquer* cauſed us to enter, but kept out all others. In this room was the King of *Tartaria*, accompanied with many Princes, Lords, and Captains, amongſt whom were the Kings of *Paſua*, *Mecuy*, *Capinper*, *Raina Benan*, *Anchefacotay*, and others to the number of fourteen, who in rich attire were all ſeated ſome three or four paces from the foot of the Tribunal. A little more on the one ſide were two and thirty very fair women, who playing upon divers inſtruments of muſick, made a wonderful ſweet Conſort. The King was ſet on his Throne under a rich Cloth of State, and had about him twelve young boys kneeling on their knees, with little Maces of gold like Scepters, which they carried on their ſhoulders; cloſe behind him was a young Lady extreamly beautiful, and wonderfully richly attired, with a Ventiloe in her hand, wherewith ſhe ever and anon fanned him. This ſame was the ſiſter of the *Mitaquer* our General, and infinitely beloved of the King, for whoſe ſake therefore it was that he was in ſuch credit and reputation throughout the whole Army: The King was much about forty years of age, full ſtature, ſomewhat lean and of a good aſpect; His beard was very ſhort, his Muſtaches after the *Turkiſh* manner, his eyes like to the *Chineſes*, and his countenance ſevere and majeſtical; As for his veſture, it was violet colour, in faſhion like to a *Turkiſh* Roak imbroydered with pearl, upon his feet he had green Sandals wrought all over with gold pearl, and great purls among it, and on his head a ſattin cap of the colour of his habit, with a rich band of diamonds and rubies intermingled together: Before we paſt any farther, after we had gone ten or eleven ſteps in the room, we made our complement by kiſſing of the ground three ſeveral times, and performing other ceremonies, which the Truch-men taught us: In the mean time the King commanded the muſick to ceaſe, and addreſſing himſelf to the *Mitaquer*; Ask theſe men of the other end of the world ſaid he unto him, whether they have a King, what is the name of their Country, and how far diſtant it is from this Kingdom of *China* where now I am? Thereupon one of ours ſpeaking for all the reſt, anſwered; That our Country was called *Portugal*, that the King thereof was exceeding rich and mighty, and that from thence to the City of *Pequin* was at the leaſt three years voyage. This anſwer much amazed the King, becauſe he did not think the world had been ſo large, ſo that ſtriking his thigh with a wand that he had in his hand, and lifting up his eyes to Heaven, as though he would render thanks unto God; he ſaid aloud, ſo as every one might hear him: *O Creator of all things; are we able to comprehend the marvels of thy greatneſs, we that at the beſt are but poor worms of the earth?* Fuxiquidane, fuxiquidane, *let them approach, let them approach.* Thereupon beckening to us with his hand, he cauſed us to come even to the firſt degree of the Throne, where the fourteen Kings ſat, and demanded of him again, as a man aſtoniſhed, *Pucau, pucau*, that is to ſay, *how far, how far?* whereunto he anſwered as before, that we ſhould be at leaſt three years in returning to our Country. Then he asked why we came not rather by Land, then by Sea, where ſo many

many labours and dangers were to be undergon? Thereunto he replyed, that there was too great an extent of land, through which we were not assured to pass, for that it was commanded by Kings of several nations. *What come you to seek for then*, added the King, *and Wherefore do you expose your selves to such dangers?* Then having rendred him a reason to this last demand with all the submission that might be, he stayed a pretty while without speaking, and then shaking his head three or four times, he addressed himselfe to an old man that was not far from him, and said, *Certainly we must needs conclude, that there is either much ambition, or little justice in the Country of these people, seeing they come so far to conquer other Lands.* To this Speech the old man, named *Raia Benan*, made no other answer but that it must needs be so, for men, said he, who have recourse unto their industry and invention to run over the Sea for to get that which God hath not given them, are necessarily carried thereunto, either by extream poverty, or by an excess of blindness and vanity, derived from much covetousness, which is the cause why they renounce God, and those that brought them into the world. This reply of the old man was seconded with many jeering words by the other Courtiers, who made great sport upon this occasion, that very much pleased the King, in the mean time the women fell to their musick again, and so continued, till the King withdrew into another Chamber in the company of these fair Musicians, and that young Lady which fanned him, not so much as one of those great Personages, daring to enter besides: Not long after one of those twelve boys, that carried the Scepters before mentioned, came to the *Mitaquer*, and told him from his sister, that the King commanded him not to depart away, which he held for a singular favour, by reason this message was delivered to him in the presence of those Kings and Lords that were in the room, so that he stirred not, but sent us word, that we should go unto our tent with this assurance, that he would take care the Son of the Sun should be mindful of us.

## CHAP. XL.

### *The King of* Tartaria's *raising of his Siege from before* Pequin, *for to return into his Country, and that which passed until his Arrival there.*

5.1. WE had been now full three and forty dayes in this Camp, during which time there past many fights and skirmishes between the besiegers and the besieged, as also two assaults in the open day which were resisted by them within with an invincible courage like resolute men as they were; In the mean time the King of *Tartaria*, seeing how contrary to his hope so great an enterprise had been, wherein he had consumed so much treasure, caused his Council of War to be assembled, in the which were present the seven and twenty Kings that accompanied him, and likewise many Princes, and Lords, and the most part of the chief Commanders of the Army: In this Council it was resolved, that in regard Winter was at hand, and that the rivers had already overflowed their banks with such force and violence, as they had ravaged and carried away most of the Trenches and Pallisadoes of the Camp, and that moreover great numbers of the souldiers died daily of sickness, and for want of victuals, that therefore the King could not do better then to raise his Siege, and be gone before Winter came, for fear left staying longer, he should run the hazard of losing himself, and his Army: All these reasons seemed so good to the King, that without further delay he resolved to follow this counsel, and to obey the present necessity, though it were to his great grief. so that incontinently he caused all his Infantry and Ammunition to be imbarqued, then having commanded his Camp to be set on fire, he himself went away by Land with three hundred thousand Horse, and twenty thousand Rhinocerots: Now after they had taken an account of all the dead, they appeared to be four hundred and fifty thousand, the most of whom died of sickness, as also an hundred thousand Horses, and threescore thousand Rhinocerots, which were eaten in the space of two months and an half, wherein they wanted victual, so that of eighteen hundred thousand men wherewith the King of *Tartaria* came out of his Country to besiege the City of *Pequin*, before the which he lay six months and an half, he carried home some seven hundred and fifty thousand less then he brought forth, whereof four and fifty thousand died of sickness, famine, and war, and three hundred thousand went and rendred themselves unto the *Chinoses*, drawn thereunto by the great pay which they gave them, and other advantages of honour and presents which they continually bestowed on them; whereat we are not to marvel, seeing experience doth shew, how that alone is of far more power to oblige men, then all other things in the world;

world. After the King of *Tartaria* was gone from this City of *Pequin*, upon a *Munday*, the seventeenth of *October*, with three hundred thousand horse, as I have related before, the same day about evening he went and lodged near to a river, called *Quayaragun*, and the next morning an hour before day the Army began to march at the sound of the Drums, Fifes, and other instruments of war, according to the order prescribed them; In this manner he arrived a little before night at a Town, named *Guiiampea*, which he found altogether depopulated: After his Army had reposed thereabout an hour and an half, he set forth again, and marching somewhat fast he came to lodg at the foot of a great mountain, called *Liampeu*, from whence he departed towards morning. Thus marched he eight leagues a day for fourteen days together, at the end whereof he arrived at a good Town, named *Guanxitim*, which might contain about eleven or twelve thousand fires; There he was counselled to furnish himself with victuals, whereof he had great need, for which purpose therefore he begirt it round, and skaling it in the open day, he quickly made himself Master of it, and put it to the sack with so cruel a Massacre of the inhabitants, as my fellows and I were ready to swoond for very astonishment: Now after that the wood and fire had consumed all things, and that the Army was abundantly provided of ammunition and victual, he departed at the break of day; and though he past the next morning in the view of *Caixiloo*, yet would not he attaque it, for that it was a great and strong Town, and by estimation impregnable, having heard besides that there were fifty thousand men within it, whereof ten thousand were *Mogors*, *Cauchins*, and *Champaas*, resolute souldiers, and much more warlike then the *Chineses*. From thence passing on he arrived at the walls of *Smgrachiran*, which are the very same, that, as I have said heretofore, do divide those two Empires of *China* and *Tartaria*; There meeting with no resistance he went and lodged on the further side of it at *Panquinor*, which was the first of his own Towns, and seated some three leagues from the said wall, and the next day he marched to *Pfipator*, where he dismissed the most part of his people. In this place he stayed not above seven days, which he spent in providing pay for his souldiers, and in the execution of certain prisoners he had taken in that war, and brought along with him: These things thus expedited, he, as a man not very well pleased, imbarqued himself for *Lançame*, in sixscore *Lanloes*, with no more then ten or eleven thousand men: So in six dayes after his imbarquing, he arrived at *Lançame*, where not permitting any reception to be made him he landed about two hours within night.

§. 2 The King abode in this City of *Lançame* until such time as all his forces, as well horse as foot, were arrived there, which was within six and twenty days, then having all his Army together, he went on to another City far greater and fairer, called *Tuymicoa*, where he was visited by some Princes his Neighbours, and by the Ambassadors of many other Kings and Soveraigns of more remoter Countrys, of which the chiefest were six great and mighty Monarchs, namely *Xataanas* the *Sophy* of *Persia*; *Siamon* Emperour of the *Guecs*, whose Country borders on that of *Bramaa*, and *Tangun*; the *Calaminham*, *Lord of the indomptable force of the Elephant of the Earth*, as I shall deliver hereafter, when I come to treat of him and his State; the *Sournam* of *Odiaa*, that names himself the King of *Siam*, whose dominion runs seven hundred leagues along the coast with that of *Tanansarin*, and on *Champaa* side with the *Malayos*, *Berdios*, and *Patanes*, and through the heart of the Country with *Passieloqua*, *Capioper*, and *Chiammay*, as also with the *Lanlos*, and *Guecs*, so that this Prince alone hath seventeen Kingdoms within his State, by reason whereof, for to make himself the more redoubted amongst the *Gentiles*, he causeth himself to be stiled, *The Lord of the white Elephant*; the fifth was the great *Mogor*, whose State is within the heart of the Country, near to the *Corazones*, a Province bordering upon *Persia*, and the Kingdom of *Dely*, and *Chitor*; and the last an Emperour of a Country, named *Caran*, as we were informed there, the bounds of whose Soveraignty are at the Mountains of *Goncalidan*, fifty degrees further on, where a certain people live, whom they of the Country call *Moscovites*, whereof we have some in this City, which were fair of complection, well shapen, and apparelled with Breeches, Cassocks, and Hats, like to the *Flemings* which we see in *Europe*, the chiefest of them wearing Gowns lined with Sables, and the rest with ordinary furs. The Ambassador of this Emperor of *Caran*, was more remarkable in his entry, then all the rest: He had for his Guard about sixscore men, armed with arrows, and Partisans damasked with gold and silver, and all attired alike in violet and green; After them marched on horseback twelve Ushers, carrying silver Maces, before whom twelve horses were led, that had carnation clothes on them, bordered about with gold and silver; They were

were followed by twelve huge tall men, that ſeemed to be Giants, clothed with Tygers skins as wild men are uſed to be painted of them holding in his hand a great Greyhound by a ſilver chain; Then appeared twelve little Pages, mounted on white Hackneys, having green velvet Saddles, trimmed with ſilver lace and frenge, they were all apparelled alike in crimſon ſattin Caſſocks, lined with martens, breeches, and hats of the ſame, and great chains of gold ſcarf-wiſe about them; Theſe twelve boys were all of one equal ſtature, ſo fair of face, ſo well favoured, and of ſo ſweet a proportion of body, as I believe there have never been any ſeen more accompliſhed: For himſelf, he was ſeated in a Chariot with three wheels on each ſide, garniſhed all over with ſilver; Round about this *Pirange*, (for ſo was this Chariot called) there were forty foot-men in jerkins, and breeches of green and red cloth, laced all over with carnation ſilk lace, having ſwords by their ſide above three fingers broad, with the hilts, handles, and chaps of ſilver, and hunting horns hanging in ſilver chains, bandrick-wiſe about them, and on their heads they wore caps, with feathers in them full of ſilver ſpangles: Thus was the equipage of this Ambaſſador ſo ſumptuous and ſtately, that one might very well conclude he belonged to ſome very rich and mighty Prince. Now going one day as attendants on the *Misaquer*, who went to viſit him from the King, amongſt other things that we ſaw in his lodging, we obſerved there for one of the greateſt rarities in that Country, five Chambers hung all with very rich Arras, ſuch as we have in Chriſtendom; and no queſtion brought from thence: In each of theſe Chambers was a Cloth of State of gold or ſilver tinſel, and under it a Table with a Baſon and Ewer of ſilver of a very coſtly faſhion; alſo a Chair of State of rich violet ſtuff trimmed with gold frenge, and at the foot of it a Coſhion of the ſame, all upon an exceeding large foot-pace of tapeſtry; There was alſo a chafingdiſh of ſilver, with a perfuming pot of the ſame, out of the which proceeded a moſt delicate odour; At the door of each of thoſe five Chambers ſtood two Halberdiers, who permitted perſons of quality to enter that came thither to ſee them; In another very great room in form like to a Gallery, there was upon a very high and large foot-pace a little table placed, covered with a damask table-cloth, edged about with gold-frenge, and upon a ſilver plate a napkin with a fork and a ſpoon of gold, as alſo two little ſalt-ſellers of the ſame mettal: Now about ten or eleven paces on the one ſide from this table were two cupbards of plate of all kind of faſhions, and other veſſels of great value; Moreover at the four corners of this table were four ciſterns about the bigneſs of a buſhel, with their kettels faſtened to them with chains all of ſilver, as alſo two very great candleſticks of the ſame with white wax candles in them but not lighted; There were alſo at the door of the room twelve handſome Halberdiers, clothed in mantles like to *Iriſh* rug, with Scymitars by their ſides, all covered over with plates of ſilver, which Guard (as ordinarily it is with them) were very haughty and rude in their anſwers to all that ſpeak to them. Although this Ambaſſadour was come thither in the way of viſit as the reſt, yet the principal ſubject of his Ambaſſy was to treat of a marriage between the Emperour of *Caran*, and a ſiſter of the *Tartar*, named *Meica vidan*, that is to ſay, a rich Saphir, a Lady about ſome thirty years of age, but very handſom, and exceeding charitable to the poor, whom we ſaw divers times in this City at the chiefeſt Feaſts, which theſe people uſe to ſolemnize at certain times of the year, after the manner of the *Gentiles*. Howbeit letting aſide all this, whereof I had not ſpoken but that it ſeemed more remarkable unto me then all the reſt, I will return to my former diſcourſe, as well concerning our liberty, as the voyage that we made even to the Iſlands of the Sea of *China*, whether the Emperour of *Tartaria* cauſed us to be conveighed, to the end that ſuch as ſhall come after us may attain to the knowledge of a part of thoſe things, whereof it may be they have never heard ſpoken until this preſent.

## Chap. XLI.

### *In what manner we were brought again before the King of* Tartaria; *with our departure from that Kingdom; and all that we ſaw, and befell us in our voyage, till our arrival at the Court of the King of* Cauchinchina.

§. 1. After ſome time had been ſpent in the Celebrations of certain remarkable Feaſts, that were made for joy of the concluſion of a marriage betwixt the Princeſs *Meica vidan*, the Kings ſiſter, and the Emperour of *Caran*, the *Tartar* by the advice of his Captains reſolved to return anew to the Siege of *Pequin*, which he had formerly quitted, taking the ill ſucceſs

ceſs that he had) there as a great affront to his perſon; To this effect then he cauſed all the Eſtates of his Kingdom to be aſſembled, and alſo made a league with all the Kings and Princes bordering in his Dominions: whereupon conſidering with our ſelves how prejudicial this might prove to the promiſe had been made us for the ſetting of us at liberty, we repaired to the *Mitaquer*, and repreſented unto him many things that made for our purpoſe, and obliged him to keep his word with us; To the which he returned us this anſwer: Certainly you have a great deal of reaſon for that you ſay, and I have yet more not to refuſe you that which you demand of me with ſo much juſtice; wherefore I reſolve to put the King in mind of you, that you may enjoy your liberty, and the ſooner you ſhall be gone from hence, the ſooner you ſhall be freed from the labours which the time begins to prepare for us in the enterpriſe that his Majeſty hath newly undertaken by the counſel of ſome particulars, who for that they know not how to govern themſelves have more need to be counſelled, then the earth hath need of water to produce the fruits that are ſowed in her; but to morrow morning I ſhall put the King in mind of you, and your poverty, and withall I ſhall preſent unto him how you have poor fatherleſs child ren, as you have heretofore told me, to the end he may be thereby incited to caſt his eyes upon you, as he is accuſtomed to do in like caſes, which is none of the leaſt marks of his greatneſs. Hereupon he diſmiſſed us for that day, and the next morning he went to *Pontivey*, which is a place where the King uſeth to give audience to all ſuch as have any ſuit to him; There beſeeching his Majeſty to think of us, he anſwered him, that as ſoon as he diſpatched away an Ambaſſador to the King of *Cauchenchina*, he would ſend us along with him, for ſo he had reſolved to do: With this anſwer the *Mitaquer* returned to his houſe, where we were ready attending his coming, and told us what the King had promiſed him, wherewithal not a little contented we went back to our lodging; There in the expectation of the good ſucceſs of this promiſe we continued ten days with ſome impatience, at the end whereof the *Mitaquer* by the Kings expreſs command carried us with him to the Court, where cauſing us to approach near to his Majeſty, with thoſe ceremonies of greatneſs which are obſerved in coming before him, being the ſame we uſed at *Pequin*, after he had beheld us with a gentle eye, he bid the *Mitaquer* ask of us whether we would ſerve him, and in caſe we would, he ſhould not only be very well pleaſed with it, but he would alſo give us better entertainment, and more advantagious conditions then all the ſtrangers that ſhould follow him in this war. To this demand the *Mitaquer* anſwered very favourably for us, how he had often heard us ſay, that we were married in our Country, and had a great charge of children, who had no other means to maintain them, but what we got with our labour, which was poorly enough God knows: The King heard this ſpeech with ſome demonſtration of pity, ſo that looking on the *Mitaquer*; *I am glad*, ſaid he, *to know that they have ſuch good cauſe to return home as they ſpeak of, that I may with the more contentment acquit me of that which thou haſt promiſed them in my name.* At theſe words the *Mitaquer*, and all we that were with him, lifting up our hands, as to a teſtimony of our thankfulneſs unto him, we kiſſed the ground three times, and ſaid, *May thy feet reſt themſelves upon a thouſand generations, to the end that thou mayſt be Lord of the inhabitants of the earth.* Hereat the King began to ſmile, and ſaid to a Prince that was near him, *Theſe men ſpeak as if they had been bred amongſt us*; Then caſting his eye upon *Jorge Mendez*, who ſtood before all us next to the *Mitaquer*; *And thou*, ſaid he unto him, *in what condition art thou, wilt thou go, or ſtay?* whereupon *Mendez*, who had long before premeditated his anſwer, *Sir*, replyed he, *for me, that have neither wife, nor children to bewail my abſence, the thing I moſt deſire in the world is to ſerve your Majeſty, ſince you are pleaſed therewith, whereunto I have more affection then to be Chacim of* Pequin *one thouſand years together.* At this the King ſmiled again, and then diſmiſſed us, ſo that we returned very well ſatisfied to our lodging, where we continued three days in a readineſs to depart, at the end of which by the mediation of the *Mitaquer*, and means of his ſiſter, who, as I have ſaid before, was wonderfully beloved of the King, his Majeſty ſent us for the eight that we were two thouſand *Taeis*, and gave us in charge to his Ambaſſadour, whom he ſent to the City of *Uzamgnee* in *Cauchenchina*, in the company of the ſame King of *Cauchenchina's* Ambaſſador: With him we departed from thence five days after, being imbarqued in the veſſel wherein he went himſelf: But before our departure *Jorge Mendez* gave us a thouſand Duckets, which was eaſie for him to do, for that he had already ſix thouſand of yearly rent, withal he kept us company all that day, and at length took his leave of us, not without ſhedding many a tear for grief that he had ſo expoſed himſelf to a voluntary exile.

§. 2 Being departed from this City of *Tuymican* on the ninth day of *May*, in the year one thouſand, five hundred, forty and four, we came to lodg that night at a Univerſity in a *Pagode* called *Guatipanior*, where the two Ambaſſadors were very well entertained by the *Tuyxivan* of the houſe, which is as the Rector thereof, and the next morning when it was broad day, both of them continued their courſe down the river, each one in his own ſhip; beſides other two wherein their ſtuff was; About two hours in the night we arrived at a little Town, named *Puxanguim*, well fortified with Towers and bulwarks after our manner, as alſo with very broad ditches, and ſtrong bridges of hewed ſtone; there was likewiſe great ſtore of Artillery, or Cannons of wood, made like unto the pumps of ſhips, behind the which they put boxes of iron, that held their charge, and were faſtened unto them with iron bands; as for the bullets which they ſhot, they were like unto thoſe of Falconets, and half black: Being much amazed to ſee this, we demanded of the Ambaſſador who it was that had invented thoſe kind of guns? whereunto they anſwered, that it was certain men, called *Almains*, and of a Country named *Muſcovy*, who by a very great lake of ſalt-water, came down to this Town in nine veſſels rowed with oars, in the company of a widdow woman, Lady of a place, called *Gaytor*, who they ſaid was chaſed out of her Country by a King of *Denmark*, ſo that flying for refuge with three ſons of her, the great Grand-father of this King of *Tartaria* made them all great Lords, and gave them certain kinſwoman of his in marriage, from whom are extracted the chiefeſt families of this Empire. The next morning we parted from this Town, and that night lay at another more nobler, named *Enxcan*: Five days after we continued our voyage down this river, and then we arrived at a great Temple, called *Singuaſatur*, where we ſaw an incloſure of above a league in circuit, in which were builded an hundred, threeſcore, and four houſes, very long and broad, after the faſhion of Arcenals, all full up to the very tyles of dead mens heads, whereof there was ſo great a number, that I am afraid to ſpeak it, for that it will hardly be credited. Without each of theſe houſes were alſo great piles of the bones of theſe heads, which were three fathom higher then the ridges of them, ſo that the houſe ſeemed to be buried, no other part of them appearing but the frontiſpiece where the gate ſtood; not far from thence upon a little hill on the South-ſide of them was a kind of a platform, whereunto one went up by certain winding-ſtairs of iron, and through four ſeveral doors; Upon this platform was the talleſt, the moſt deformed, and dreadful Monſter that poſſibly can be imagined, ſtanding upon his feet, and leaning againſt a mighty tower of hewed ſtone; he was made of caſt iron, and of ſo great and prodigious a ſtature, that by gueſs he ſeemed to be above thirty fathom high, and more then ſix broad, notwithſtanding the which deformity he was exceedingly well proportioned in all his limbs, only his head was ſomewhat too little for ſo great a body. This monſter held in both his hands a bowl of the ſame iron, being ſix and thirty ſpans about. Beholding ſo ſtrange and monſtrous a thing, we demanded of the *Tartar* Ambaſſadour the explication thereof, who willing to ſatisfie our curioſity, *If you knew*, anſwered he, *what the power of this God is, and how needful it is for you to have him to friend, certainly you would think is well imployed if you preſented him with all your means, how great ſoever they might be, and give them to him rather then to your own children; for you muſt know that this great Saint, which you ſee there, is the Treaſurer of the bones of all thoſe that are born into the World, to the end that at the laſt day, when men come to be born again he may give to every one the ſame bones which he had upon earth, for he knows them all, and can tell in particular to what body each of thoſe bones belong: Whereupon you are further to underſtand, that he, who in this life ſhall be ſo unadviſed as not to honour him, nor preſent him with ſomething, will be but in an ill caſe in the other World, for this Saint will then give him ſome of the rotteneſt bones he can meet withal, and one or two leſs then he ſhould have, by means whereof he will become deformed, lame, or crooked, and therefore if you will follow my counſel, you ſhall make your ſelves of his fraternity, by offering ſomething unto him, and you will find by experience the good that will redound to you thereof hereafter.* We deſired alſo to know of him what the bowle which this Monſter held in his hand, ſignified, whereunto he anſwered us, *That he held it to fling it at the head of the gluttonous Serpent, that lived in the profound Obiſm of the houſe of ſmoak, when he ſhould come thither to ſteal away any of thoſe bones.* After this we enquired of him how this Monſter was called, and he told us that his name was, *Pachinavan du beculem Prinaufaque*, and that it was threeſcore and fourteen thouſand years ſince he was begotten on a Tortois, called *Migama*, by a Sea-horſe, that was an hundred and thirty fathom long, named *Tybrem vucam*, who had been King of the Giants of *Fanius*; he told

told us likewiſe many other brutiſh fooleries and abſurdities, which thoſe of that Country believe as their Creed, and wherewith the Divel precipitates them all into hell; Moreover this Ambaſſadour aſſured us, that the gifts which were preſented to this Idol, amounted to above two hundred thouſand *Taeis* of yearly rent, without compriſing therein what came from Chappels, and other foundations of obits from the principal Lords of the Country, the Revenue whereof was far greater then that of the gifts; For a concluſion he told us, that this ſame Idol had ordinarily twelve thouſand prieſts attending on his ſervice, who were maintained with meat, drink, and clothing, only to pray for the dead, that is to ſay, for thoſe unto whom theſe bones appertained; we were alſo aſſured, that theſe prieſts never went out of this incloſure without the permiſſion of their Superiours, but that there was ſtill without ſix hundred ſervants, who took care for the providing of all things neceſſary for them; And further that it was not lawful for theſe prieſts, ſave once a year, to break within this incloſure the vow which they had made of chaſtity, but without the ſame they might whore their pleaſure with whomſoever they would, without committing any ſin; There was alſo a *Serraglio* there, wherein many women, appointed for that purpoſe were ſhut up, whom their Governeſſes permitted to have to do with the prieſts of this beaſtly and diabolical Sect.

Continuing our voyage from this *Pagode*, or Monaſtery of *Gentiles*, whereof we have ſpoken, the next day we arrived at a very fair Town, called *Quanginau*, which ſtands on the bank of the river; In this place the Ambaſſadours ſtayed three whole dayes for to furniſh themſelves with certain things they wanted, as alſo for to ſee the feaſtings and joy that was made at that time upon the entry of the *Talapicor* of *Echuna*, which is their Pope, who was going then unto the King for to comfort him about the ill ſucceſs he had in *China*. Amongſt other graces, which this *Talapicor* beſtowed on the inhabitants of this Town, in recompence of the charge they had been at for his reception, he granted unto them, that they might be all Prieſts, and adminiſter their ſacrifices in what places ſoever they were, and likewiſe that they might therefore receive the ſame entertainment and gifts, that were accuſtomed to be given unto our Prieſts, without any difference between them and thoſe that upon examination had been promoted to that dignity; Moreover he gave them power to grant Bills of Exchange for Heaven unto all ſuch as ſhould do them good here below. To the Ambaſſador of *Cauchinchina* he granted as a moſt ſingular favor, that he might legitimate any that would pay him for it, & alſo confer on the Lords of the Court titles, and marks of honour, as far forth as if he had been King, whereof the fooliſh Ambaſſador was ſo proud, as ſetting aſide covetouſneſſe, though it were a vice he was naturally inclined unto, he imployed all that ever he had there in gifts upon thoſe Prieſts, and beſides not contented therewith, he for that end borrowed of us the two thouſand *Taeis* the King had given us, which afterwards he paid us again with intereſt after fifteen in the hundred. After theſe matters the two Ambaſſadors reſolved to continue their voyage, but before their departure they went to viſit the *Talapicor* in a *Pagode* where he was lodged, for in regard of his greatneſs, and that he was held for a Saint, he might not abide with any man, but with the King only. Now as ſoon as he underſtood of the Ambaſſadors coming to him he ſent them word not to go away that day, becauſe he was to preach at the Church of certain religious women of the Invocation of *Pontimaquen*; this they took for a great honour, and incontinently went to the *Pagode*, where the Sermon was to be: At their arrival they found ſuch a concourſe of people, that they were conſtrained to remove the Pulpit to another very great place, which in leſs then an hour was invironed with Scaffolds, hung about with ſilk ſtuff, whereon the one ſide were the Ladies, richly apparelled, and on the other the Princeſs, called *Vanguenaran*, with all the *Menigregues*, or religious women of the *Pagode*, being in number above three hundred. After the *Talapicor* was gone up into the Pulpit, and that he had made an exterior ſhew of much holineſs, ever and anon lifting up his hands and eyes to Heaven, he began his Sermon in this manner, *Like as it is the property of water to cleanſe all things, and of the Sun to warm all creatures, ſo it is the property of God through a cœleſtial and divine nature to do good unto all; Wherefore we are all bound, as well in general and particular, to imitate this our Lord, who hath created, and doth nouriſh us, by doing that unto thoſe, who ſtand in need of the good of this World, as we would that they ſhould do unto us, for that by this work we are more pleaſing unto him, then by any other whatſoever. For as the good Father of a Family rejoyceth to ſee his children made much of, and preſents given to them, ſo our Heavenly Lord, who is the true Father of us all, rejoyceth at ſuch time as with a zeal of charity we communicate one with another; whereby it is evident, that the covetous man,*

§. 3

*who ſhuts his hand, when the poor ask ſomething of him which they want, conſtrained thereunto by neceſſity, and that turns him another way without aſſiſting them, ſhall be treated in the ſame manner by a juſt judgment of God, and driven down into the bottom of the ſink of the night, where like a frog he ſhal croke without ceaſing, being tormented by the hunger of his covetouſneſs: This being ſo, I do adviſe and enjoyn you all, ſince you have ears to hear me, that you do that which the Law of the Lord obligeth you to do, which is, that you give of that whereof you have too much, to the poor, who have not wherewith to feed themſelves, to the end God may not be wanting to you when you ſhall be at the laſt gaſp of your life: Go to then, let this charity be ſo remarkable and univerſal in you, that the very fowls of the air may taſte of your liberality; And this you ought to do to keep the poor, having need of what you poſſeſs in exceſs, from being forced by their neceſſity to rob other men of their goods, whereof you would be no leſs blameable, then if you killed an infant in the cradle; I commend alſo unto your remembrance that which is written in the Book of our truth, touching the good you are bound to do unto the Prieſts, that pray for you, to the end they may not periſh for want of the good you ought to do unto them, which would be as great a ſin before God, as if you ſhould cut the throat of a little white heifer when ſhe is ſucking of her Dam, by the death of whom a thouſand ſouls would die, which are buried in her as in a golden Tomb, in expectation of the day, which is to accompliſh the promiſe, that was made unto them, wherein they ſhall be transformed into white pearls for to dance in Heaven, like unto the motes which are in the beams of the Sun.* Having uttered theſe things, he added many others thereunto, and delivering a world of extravagancies and fooleries, he beſtirred himſelf in ſuch manner, as was a wonder to behold, ſo that we eight *Portugals* were exceedingly amazed at the extream devotion of theſe people, and how that in lifting up their hands to Hands to Heaven, they ever and anon repeated this word *Taiximida*, that is to ſay, *So we believe*; In the mean time one of our fellows, named *Vincent Moroſa*, hearing the auditors ſo often uſe that word *Taiximida*, ſaid in imitation of them, *Such may thy life be*; and that with ſuch a grace, and ſo ſetled a countenance, not ſeeming any way to jeer him, that not one in the Aſſembly could forbear laughing: He in the mean while continued ſtill firm, and more and more confirmed, ſeeming even to weep out of an exceſs of devotion; Now his eyes being always fixed on the *Talapicor*, he whenſoever he chanced to look on him could not chuſe but do as the reſt did, ſo that upon the concluſion of his Sermon all that heard him fell to laughing out-right: The Prioreſs her ſelf, and all the *Menigregues* of her Monaſtery could not contain themſelves in their ſerious humour, imagining that the faces which the *Portugal* made, and his actions, were ſo many effects of his devotion, and good meaning; For if one had thought it to be otherwiſe, and that he had not done it out of deriſion, no queſtion but he had been ſo chaſtiſed, as he ſhould never have been able to mock again. When the Sermon was ended, the *Talapicor* returned to the *Pagod* where he lodged, being accompanied with the moſt honourable of all the Aſſembly, together with the Ambaſſadours, unto whom all the way as he went he ceaſed not to commend the devotion of the *Portugal*, *Look*, ſaid he, *there is not ſo much as theſe people, who live like beaſts, and without the knowledge of our truth, but ſee well enough that there is nothing but what is godly in that I have preached*; whereunto all anſwered that it was as he ſaid.

§. 4. The day after we parted from the Town of *Quanginan*, and continued our voyage down the river for the ſpace of fourteen dayes, during the which we ſaw a number of Towns, and great Boroughs on either ſide of us, at the end whereof we arrived at a City, called *Lechana*, the chiefeſt of the Religion of theſe *Gentiles*, and ſuch it may be, as *Rome* is amongſt us. In this City was a very ſumptuous Temple, where there were many remarkable edifices, in the which ſeven and twenty Kings or Emperours of this Monarchy of *Tartaria* have been buried. Their Tombs are in Chappels, wonderful rich, as well for the excellency of their workmanſhip, which is of an infinite coſt, as for that they are within covered all over with plates of ſilver, wherein there are divers Idols of different forms made alſo of ſilver. On the North ſide a little part from the Temple was an incloſure worthy the obſervation, both for its extent, and the fortification thereof; within it were two hundred and fourſcore Monaſteries, as well of men, as of women, dedicated to certain Idols, and for the ſervice of all theſe *Pagodes*, or Temples there are ordinarily, as we were aſſured, two and forty thouſand Prieſts and *Menigrepes*, not comprizing therein thoſe which were lodged without the incloſure for the ſervice of theſe falſe prieſts. We obſerved that in theſe two hundred and fourſcore houſes there was an infinite company of pillars of braſs, and upon the top of each pillar are idols of the ſame

metal

mettal guilt, besides those which likewise were there all of silver: These Idols are the Statues of them, whom in their false Sect they hold for Saints, and of whom they recount such fopperies, as would make a man wonder to hear them; For they give unto each of them a Statue, more or less rich, and guilded, according to the degrees of vertue which they have exercised in this life: And this they do expresly, that the living may be incited to imitate them, to the end there may be as much done unto them when they are dead. In one of these Monasteries of the Invocation of *Quiay Frigau*, that is to say, *The God of the moats of the Sun*, was a sister of the Kings, the widdow of *Raia Benan*, Prince of *Pafua*, whom the death of her husband had made resolve to shut her self up in this Monastery, with six thousand women that had followed her thither, and she had taken upon her, as the most honourable Title she could think on, the name of, *the broom of the House of God*. The Ambassadors went to see this Lady, and kissed her feet as a Saint; she received them very courteously, and demanded many things of them with great discretion, whereunto they rendred such answers as became them; but coming to cast her eye upon us, who stood somewhat far off, and understanding that never any of our Nation was seen in those parts before, she enquired of the Ambassadors of what Country we were? They answered, that we were come from a place at the other end of the world, whereof no man there knew the name. At those words she stood much amazed, and causing us to come nearer, she questioned us about many things, whereof we gave her such an account as greatly contented her, and all that were present; In the mean time the Princess wondring at the answers, which one of ours made her, *They speak*, said she, *like men that have been brought up amongst people, who have seen more of the world then we have*. So after she had heard us talk a while of some matters, that she had propounded unto us, she dismissed us with very good words, and caused an hundred *Taeis* to be given us in way of an alms. The Ambassadors having taken their leave of her, continued their voyage down along the river, so that at the end of five days we arrived at a great Town, called *Rendacalem*, scituated on the uttermost Confines of the Kingdom of *Tartaria*: Out of this place we entred upon the State of the *Xinaleygrau*, and therein we proceeded on four days together, until such time as we came to a Town, named *Voulem*, where the Ambassadors were very well entertained by the Lord of the Country, and abundantly furnished with all things necessary for their voyage, as also with Pilots to guide them in those rivers. From thence we pursued our course for seven days together, during the which we saw not any thing worthy of note, and at length came to a straight, called *Catencur*, whereinto the Pilots entred, as well to abridge their voyage, as to avoid the encounter of a famous Pirot, who had robbed those parts of most of their wealth. Through this straight running East, as also East, North-east; and somtimes East, and by East, according to the windings of the water we arrived at the Lake of *Singapamor*, called by them of the Country *Cunebetea*, which was, as our Pilots affirmed, six and thirty leagues in extent, where we saw so many several sorts of birds, that I am not able to recount them. Out of this Lake of *Singapamor* (which as an admirable Master-piece nature hath opened in the heart of this Country) do four very large and deep rivers proceed, whereof the first is named *Ventrau*, that runneth Eastward through all the Kingdoms of *Sornau*, and *Siam*, entring into the Sea by the Bar of *Chiamtabun*, in six and twenty degrees; The second, *Jangumaa*, that going South, and South-east, traverseth also the greatest part of this Country, as likewise the Kingdom of *Chiammay*, the *Laos*, *Gueos*, and another part of *Danbambur*, disimboking into the Sea by the Bar of *Martabano*, in the Kingdom of *Pegu*, and there is in distance from the one to the other by the degrees of this Climate, above seven hundred leagues; The third, called *Pamphilen*, passeth in the same manner through all the Countries of *Capimper* and *Sacotay*, and turning above that second river runs quite through the Empire of *Monginoco*, and a part of *Meleytay*, and *Sevady*, rendring it self into the Sea by the Bar of *Cosmim*, near to *Arracan*; The fourth, which in all likelihood is as great as the rest, is not known by any name, neither could the Ambassadors give us any reason for it: but it is probable, according to the opinion of divers, that it is *Ganges* in the Kingdom of *Bengala*, so that by all the discoveries which have been made in these Oriental Countries it is conceived, that there is not a greater river then it: Having crossed this Lake we continued our course for the space of seven dayes, till we came to a place named *Caleyputa*, the inhabitants whereof would by no means permit us to land, for the Ambassadors endeavouring to do so, they entertained us with such store of darts and stones from the shore, as we thought us not a little happy in that we could save our selves from the danger of it. After we had gotten out of this place, much vexed with the bad entreaty

we

we had received there, that which moſt afflicted us was to ſee our ſelves unprovided of things we were greatly in need of, but by the counſel of our Pilots we ſailed by another river far larger then the ſtraight which we had left, and that by the ſpace of nine dayes, at the end whereof we arrived at a very good Town, called *Tarem*, the Lord of which was ſubject to the *Cauchin*, who received the Ambaſſadors with great Demonſtrations of love, and furniſhed them abundantly with all that they wanted. The next day we departed from thence about Sun-ſet, and continuing our voyage down the river about ſeven days after we came to an Anchor in the Port of *Xolor*, which is a very fair Town, where all the enammelled purcelain, which is carried to *China*, is made. There the Ambaſſadors ſtayed five days, during which time they cauſed their ſhips, that were very heavy, to be haled aſhore by the force of boats: That done, and proviſion made of all things neceſſary, they went to ſee certain Mines, which the King of *Cauchin* hath in that place, from whence great ſtore of ſilver is drawn, and the Ambaſſadors being deſirous to know how much ſilver thoſe Mines yielded every year, they were anſwered, that the whole amounted to ſome ſix thouſand *Picos*, which make eight thouſand Quintals of our weight.

§. 5. After our departure from the Town of *Xolor* we ſtill continued our courſe for five days together down that great river, and ſaw all along that while a many of great Boroughs, and goodly Towns; for in that Climate the Land is better then other where, very well peopled, and full of riches; withall the rivers are frequented with a world of veſſels, and the fields very well tilled, and repleniſhed with abundance of wheat, rice, all kind of pulſe, and exceeding great Sugar-canes, whereof there is marvellous ſtore in all that Country. The Gentlemen there are ordinarily clothed in ſilk, and mounted on horſes handſomly furniſhed; as for the women, they are exceeding white and fair. Now it was not without much labour, pain, and danger, that we paſſed thoſe two Channels, as alſo the river of *Ventinan*, by reaſon of the Pyrats that uſually are encountred there, nevertheleſs we at the length arrived at the Town of *Manaquilen*, which is ſcituated at the foot of the Mountains of *Chomay*, upon the Frontiers of the two Kingdoms of *China*, and *Cauchenchina*, where the Ambaſſadors were both well received by the Governour thereof. The next morning departing from that place, they went and lay in a Town, named *Quinancaxi*, which appertained to an Aunt of the Kings, whom they went to viſite; ſhe gave them a very kind reception, and withall told them for news, that the King her Nephew, was newly returned from the War of the *Tinocouhos*, and wonderfully well pleaſed with his good ſucceſs therein; whereunto ſhe added many particularities, which they were glad to hear, eſpecially when ſhe aſſured them, that the King, after he had diſmiſſed the forces that he had carried out with him, was gone with a ſmall Train to the City of *Fanangrem*, where he intended to ſpend ſome time in hunting & fiſhing, & then to go & winter at *Uſamguee*, the capital City of this Empire of *Cauchim*. When as they had conſulted a while upon theſe news, they reſolved to ſend their four veſſels away to *Uſamguee*, and themſelves to travel by land to *Fanangrem*, where they underſtood the King was. This deliberation taken they put incontinently into execution, & that by the advice of this Princeſs, who for that purpoſe cauſed them to be furniſhed with horſes for themſelves, & their people, as alſo with eight Rhinocerots for the tranſportation of their baggage. They began their journy then about three days after, and having travelled fourſcore & ſix leagues, in the ſpace of thirteen days, and that with much toil & labour, by reaſon of certain mountains which they were to paſs, that were of a long extent, and very rough and ſtony, in the end they arrived at a great lodging, called *Tarandachit*, ſeated upon the bank of a river; There they paſſed the night, and the next morning they parted thence for to go to a Town, named *Lindan Panoo*, where they were very well received by the Captain thereof, a kinſman of the Ambaſſadors of *Cauchenchina*; who was come not about ſix days before from *Fanangrem*, where the King remained ſtill, being not more then fifteen leagues from that place. After that this Captain hath told this Ambaſſador his kinſman ſome other news of the Court, and of the ſucceſs of the war, he further advertiſed him that a Son in law of his was dead, for the love of whom his daughter the wife of the deceaſed, had caſt her ſelf into a pile of flaming fire, where with her husbands body ſhe was conſumed to aſhes, at which all her kinred exceedingly rejoyced, for that by ſo generous an end ſhe had given proof of what ſhe had ever been. The Ambaſſador himſelf, her father, teſtified alſo no little content for the ſame, ſaying; *Now it is, O my daughter, that I know aſſuredly thou art a Saint, and that thou ſerveſt thy husband in Heaven, wherefore I promiſe and ſwear to thee, that for ſo memorable an end, wherein thou haſt given an infallible proof of the Royal blood whereof thou art deſcended, I will in memory of thy goodneſs build thee ſuch a magnificent and honourable houſe, as ſhall*

*make*

at his return, and demanded of us for this good office he had done us, that we would write him out ſome of thoſe prayers which we made to our God, whoſe ſlave, he ſaid, he infinitely deſired to be, in regard of the great excellencies which he had heard us deliver of him; This we not only granted him very readily, but alſo gave him infinite thanks beſides for this his great favour ſhewed unto us, which we made more account of then all the benefits that had been propounded unto us by the King of *Tartaria*, if we would have continued in his ſervice. After the King was departed from the City of *Fanangrem*, he proceeded on in his journy travelling but only ſix leagues a day, by reaſon of the great number of perſons that he carried along with him; The firſt day he dined at a little Town, called *Benau*, where he ſtayed until the evening, and then went to lodge at a Monaſtery, named *Pamgatur*; The next morning he departed from thence, and ſo with not above three thouſand horſe in his Train, he proſecuted his journy for nine dayes together, paſſing by many goodly Towns, at leaſt they ſeemed to be ſo, without permitting any reception to be made him by any of them; In this manner he arrived at the City of *Lingator*, ſeated on a river of freſh water, which for the bredth and deepneſs of it is frequented with much ſhipping; There he abode five days, for that he found himſelf ſomewhat indiſpoſed with the tediouſneſs of the journy: From this place he departed before day, taking no greater company with him then thirty horſe, and ſo withdrawing himſelf from the communication of ſo much people, as continually importuned him, he ſpent moſt part of the time as he went by the way in hawking and hunting; thoſe of the Countryes by which he paſt providing game always ready for him. In this ſort going on he ſlept moſt commonly amidſt very thick woods in Tents pitched for him to that purpoſe. Being arrived at the river of *Bagnetor*, he paſſed down the ſame in certain veſſels, called *Laulees* and *Jangoas*, which were there ready for him, till he came to a Town, named *Natibaſoy*, where about evening he landed without any kind of pomp; The reſt of his journy he made by land, ſo that at the end of thirteen dayes he arrived at *Uzamguee*, where he had a moſt magnificent reception. At his entry thereinto there marched before him, as it were in triumph, all the ſpoyls which he had taken in the wars, whereof the principal, and thoſe which he made moſt reckoning of, were twelve Chariots laden with the Idols, of whom I have ſpoken heretofore, and whereof the forms were different, as they uſe to have them in their *Pagods*. Of theſe Idols there were threeſcore and four of braſs, which ſeemed to be Gyants, and nineteen of ſilver of the ſame Stature, for, as I have delivered before, theſe people glory in nothing ſo much, as to triumph over thoſe idols, that ſo they may ſay, *That in deſpight of their enemies he had made their gods his ſlaves*; Round about theſe twelve Chariots went divers Prieſts by three and three weeping, and bound with iron chains; After them followed forty other Chariots, each of them being drawn by two Rhinocerots, and full from the bottom to the top of an infinite company of Arms, and trayled Colours; In the tayl of them there were twenty more, carrying each of them a very great Cheſt, barr'd with iron, and wherein, as we were told, was the treaſure of the *Tunocoubos*; In the ſame order marched all other things, which are uſed to be moſt eſteemed of in ſuch triumphant entries, as two hundred Elephants armed with Caſtles, and warlike *Panoures*, which are certain ſwords that are faſtened to their teeth when they fight, and a great number of horſes laden with ſacks full of dead mens heads and bones; ſo that in this entry this King of *Cauchin* preſented to the view of his people all that he had gained from his enemies in the battail he had given them. After we had been a full month in this City, during which time we had ſeen a world of ſtately ſhews, ſports, and ſeveral ſorts of rejoycings, accompanied with moſt coſtly feaſts and banquets, ſet forth and made not onely by the greater perſons, but by the common people alſo, the *Tartar* Ambaſſadour, that had brought us thither, moved the King again about our voyage, whereunto he gave us ſo gracious an ear, that he preſently commanded we ſhould be furniſhed with a Veſſel for to carry us to the Coaſt of *China*, where we hoped to meet with ſome *Portugal* ſhip, that might tranſport us to *Malaca*, and from thence to the *Indies*, which accordingly was done, whereupon without further delay we prepared all things neceſſary for our departure.

## Chap. XLIII.

*Our Departure from the City of* Uzamguee, *and our adventures till our arrivall at the Isle of* Tanixuma, *which is the first Land of* Jappon; *with our going ashore there.*

§.1 UPon the twelfth of *January* we departed from the City of *Uzamguee*, exceedingly rejoycing at our escape from so many labours and crosses, which we before had sustained, and imbarqued our selves upon a river, that was above a league broad, down the which we went seven dayes together, beholding in the mean time on either side thereof many fair Towns, and goodly Boroughs, which by the outward appearance we believed were inhabited by very rich people, in regard of the sumptuousness of the buildings, not only of particular houses, but much more of the Temples, whose steeples were all covered over with gold, as likewise in regard of the great number of Barques and Vessels, that were on this river, abundantly fraught with all sorts of provisions and merchandise. Now when we were come to a very fair Town, called *Quangeparun*, containing some eighteen or twenty thousand fires, the *Nandeiuna*, who was he that conducted us by the expresse commandment from the King, stayed there twelve dayes to trade in exchange of silver and pearl; whereby he confessed to us that he had gained fourteen for one, and that if he had been so advised as to have brought salt thither, he had doubled his money above thirty times: we were assured that in this Town the King had yearly out of the silver Mines above fifteen hundred *Picos*, which are forty thousand Quintals of our weight, besides the huge revenue, that he drew out of many other different things: This Town hath no other fortification then a weak brick wall, eight foot high, and a shallow ditch some thirty foot broad; The inhabitants are weak and unarmed, having neither Artillery, nor any thing for their defence, so that five hundred resolute souldiers might easily take it. We parted from this place on *Tuesday* morning, and continued our course thirteen dayes, at the end whereof we got to the Port of *Sanckan*, in the Kingdom of *China*. Now because there was no shipping of *Malaos* there, for they were gone from thence nine dayes before, we went seven leagues further to another Port, named *Lampacau*, where we found two Junckes of *Malaya*, one of *Patana*, and another of *Lugor*; And whereas it is the quality of us *Portugals* to abound in our own sence, and to be obstinate in our opinions, there arose amongst us eight so great a contrariety of judgment about a thing, wherein nothing was so necessary for us, as to maintain our selves in peace and unity, that we were even upon the point of killing one another; But because the matter would be too shamefull to recount in the manner as it past, I will say no more but that the *Nacoda* of the *Lorche*, which had brought us thither from *Uzamguee*, amazed at this so great barbarousness of ours, seperated himself from us in such displeasure, that he would not charge himself either with our messages or letters, saying, that he had rather the King should command his head to be cut off, then to offend God in carrying with him any thing whatsoever that belonged to us. Thus different as we were in opinions, and in very bad terms amongst our selves, we lingered above nine dayes in this little Island, during which time the three Junckes departed without vouchsafing to take us in, so that we were constrained to remain in these solitudes, exposed to many great dangers, out of which I did not think that ever we could have escaped, if God had not been extraordinarily merciful unto us; for having been there seventeen dayes in great misery and want; it happened that a Pyrat, named *Samipocheca*, arrived in this place, who having been defeated, went flying from the Fleet of *Aytao* of *Chincheo*, that of eight and twenty Sayl, which this Pyrat had, had taken six and twenty of them from him, so that he had with much ado escaped with those only two remaining, wherein the most part of his men were hurt, for which cause he was constrained to stay there seven dayes to have them cured: Now the present necessity inforcing us to take some course whatsoever it were, we were glad to agree for to serve under him until such time as we might meet with some good opportunity to get unto *Malaca*. Those twenty dayes ended, wherein yet there was no manner of reconciliation between us, but still continuing in discord we imbarqued our selves with this Pyrat, namely three in the Junk where he himself was, and five in the other, whereof he had made a Nephew of his Capeam. Having left this Island with an intent to sail unto a Port, called *Lailoo*, some seven leagues from *Chinchco*, we continued our voyage with a good wind all along the Coast of *Lamau* for the space of nine dayes, until that one morning when we were near to the river of salt, which is about

about five leagues from *Chabaquea*, it was our ill fortune to be aſſailed by a Pirate, who with ſeven great Juncks fell to fighting with us from ſix in the morning till ten of the clock before noon, in which conflict we were ſo entertained with ſhot, and pots full of artificial fire, that at laſt there were three Sail burnt, to wit, two of the Pirats, and one of ours, which was the Junck wherein the five *Portugals* were, whom we could by no means ſuccour, for that then moſt of our men were hurt; But at length towards night being well refreſhed by the afternoons gale, it pleaſed our Lord that we eſcaped out of this Pirats hands. In this ill equipage wherein we were we continued our courſe for three dayes together, at the end whereof we were invironed by ſo great and impetuous a Tempeſt, that the ſame night in which it ſeized us we loſt the Coaſt, and becauſe the violence of the Storm would never ſuffer us after to recover it again, we were forced to make with full Sail towards the Iſlands of the *Lequios*, where the Pirate, with whom we went, was well known, both to the King, and thoſe of the Country; with this reſolution we ſet our ſelves to ſail through the Archipelage of theſe Iſlands, where notwithſtanding we could not make land, as well for that we wanted a Pilot to ſteer the veſſel, ours being ſlain in the laſt fight, as alſo becauſe the wind and tide was againſt us; Amidſt ſo many croſſes we beat up and down with labour enough from one rhomb to another for three and twenty dayes together, at the end whereof it pleaſed God that we diſcovered land, whereunto approaching to ſee if we could deſcry any appearance of a Port, or good anchorage, we perceived on the South-coaſt near to the Horizon of the Sea a great fire, which perſwaded us that there we might peradventure find ſome Borough, where we might furniſh our ſelves with freſh water, whereof we had very great need. So we went and rode juſt before the Iſland in ſeventy fathom, and preſently we beheld two *Almadias* come towards us from the Land with ſix men in them, who being come cloſe to the ſide of our Junck, and having complemented with us according to their manner, demanded of us from whence we came? whereunto having anſwered, that we came from *China* with merchandiſe intending to trade in this place if we might be ſuffered, one of the ſix replyed; That the *Nautaquim*, Lord of that Iſland, called *Tanixumaa*, would very willingly permit it upon payment of ſuch cuſtoms as are uſual in *Japan*, which is, continued he, this great Country that you ſee here before you: At theſe news, and many other things, which they told us, we were exceeding glad, ſo that after they had ſhewed us the Port, we weighed anchor, and went and put our ſelves under the lee-ſhoar of a creek, which was on the South-ſide, and where ſtood a great Town, named *Miay-gimaa*, from whence there came inſtantly abord of us divers *Paraos* with refreſhments, which we bought.

§. 2. We had not been two hours in this Creek of *Miaygimaa*, when as the *Nautaquim*, Prince of this Iſland of *Tanixumaa* came directly to our Junck, attended by divers Gentlemen and Merchants, who had brought with them many Cheſts full of ſilver Ingots, therewith to barter for our commodities; ſo after ordinary complements paſt on either ſide, and that we had given our word for his eaſieſt coming aboard of us; he no ſooner perceived us three *Portugals*, but he demanded what people we were, ſaying, that by our beards and faces we could not be *Chineſes*: Hereunto the Pirate anſwered, That we were of a Country called *Malaca*, whither many years before we were come from another Land, named *Portugal*, which was at the further end of the world; At theſe words the *Nautaquim* remained much amazed, and turning himſelf to his followers; *Let me not live*, ſaid he unto them, *if theſe men here be not the* Chenchicogis, *of whom it is written in our books, that flying on the top of the waters they ſhall from thence ſubdue the inhabitants of the earth, where God hath created the riches of the world, wherefore it will be a good fortune for us if they come into our Country as good friends.* Thereupon having called a woman of *Lequia*, whom he had brought to ſerve as an interpreter between him and the *Chineſe*, Captain of the Junck; *Ask the Necoda*, ſaid he unto her, *where he met with theſe men, and upon what occaſion he hath brought them hither with him into our Country of* Jappon? The Captain thereunto replied, That we were honeſt men and Merchants, and that having found us at *Lampacau*, where we had been caſt away, he had out of charity taken us in, as he uſed to do unto all ſuch as he met withall in the like caſe, to the end that God might out of his gracious goodneſs be thereby moved to deliver him from the danger of ſuch violent Tempeſts, as commonly they that ſail on the Sea are ſubject to periſh in. This ſaying of the Pirate ſeemed ſo reaſonable to the *Nautaquim*, that he preſently came abord of us, and becauſe thoſe of his Train were very many, he commanded that none but ſuch as he named ſhould enter in. After he had ſeen all the commodities in the Junck, he ſate him

him down in a Chair upon the Deck, and began to queſtion us about certain things which he deſired to know, to the which we anſwered him in ſuch ſort, as we thought would be moſt agreeable to his humour, ſo that he ſeemed to be exceedingly ſatisfied therewith: In this manner he entertained us a good while together, making it apparent by his demands that he was a man very curious, and much inclined to hear of novelties, and rare things. That done he took his leave of us, and the *Necoda*, little regarding the reſt, ſaying, *Come and ſee me at my houſe to morrow, and for a preſent bring me an ample relation of the ſtrange things of that great World through which you have travelled, as alſo of the Countries that you have ſeen, and withall remember to tell me how they are called, for I ſwear unto you that I would far more willingly buy this commodity then any that you can ſell me.* This ſaid, he returned to Land, and the next morning as ſoon as it was day he ſent us to our Junck a great *Parao*, full of divers ſorts of refreſhments, as Reaſons, Pears, Melons, and other kinds of fruits of that Country; In exchange of this preſent the *Necoda* returned him by the ſame meſſenger divers rich pieces of ſtuff, together with certain knacks and rarities of *China*, and withall ſent him word, that as ſoon as his Junck ſhould be at anchor, and out of danger of the weather, he would come and wait on him aſhore, and bring him ſome patterns of the commodities which we had to ſell; as indeed the next morning he went on land, and carried us three along with him, as alſo ſome ten or eleven of the chiefeſt of the *Chineſes* of his Company, to the end that at this firſt ſight he might ſettle a good opinion of himſelf in this people for the better ſatisfaction of that vanity whereunto they are naturally inclined; we went then to the *Nautaquims* houſe, where we were very well entertained, and the *Necoda* having given him a rich preſent, ſhewed him the patterns of all the commodities he had, wherewith he reſted ſo contented, that he ſent preſently for the principal Merchants of the place, with whom the *Necoda* having agreed upon a price for his commodities, it was reſolved that the next day they ſhould be tranſported from the Junck unto a certain houſe, which was appointed for the *Necoda* and his people to remain in till ſuch time as he ſhould ſet ſail for *China*: After all this was concluded, the *Nautaquim* fell again to queſtioning of us about many ſeveral matters, whereunto we rendred him ſuch anſwers as might rather fit his humour, then agree with the truth indeed, which yet we did not obſerve but in ſome certain demands that he made us, where we thought it neceſſary to make uſe of certain particulars altogether fained by us, that ſo we might not derogate from the great opinion he had conceived of our Country. The firſt thing he propounded was, how he had learned from the *Chineſes* and *Lequios*, that *Portugal* was far richer, and of a larger extent, then the whole Empire of *China*, which we confirmed unto him. The ſecond, how he had likewiſe been aſſured, that our King had upon the Sea conquered the greateſt part of the world, which alſo we averred to be ſo; The third, that our King was ſo rich in gold and ſilver, as it was held for moſt certain, that he had above two thouand houſes full of it even to the very tops; but thereunto we anſwered, that we could not truly ſay the number of the houſes, becauſe the Kingdom of *Portugal* was ſo ſpacious, ſo abounding with treaſure, and ſo populous, as it was impoſſible to ſpecifie the ſame. So after the *Nautaquim* had entertained us above two hours with ſuch and the like diſcourſe, he turned him to thoſe of his Train, and ſaid, *Aſſuredly not one of thoſe Kings, which at this preſent we know to be on the earth, is to be eſteemed happy, if he be not the vaſſal of ſo great a Monarch as the Emperour of this people here.* Whereupon having diſmiſſed the *Necoda* and his Company, he intreated us to paſſe that night on ſhore with him, for to ſatisfie the extream deſire that he had to be informed from us of many things of the world, whereunto he was exceedingly carried by his own inclination; withall he told us, that the next day he would aſſigne us a lodging next to his own Pallace, which was in the moſt commodious place of the Town, and for that inſtant he ſent us to lie at a very rich Merchants houſe, who entertained us very bountifully that night.

## CHAP. XLIV.

*The great honour which the* Nautaquim, *Lord of the Iſle, did to one of us for having ſeen him ſhoot with an Harquebuſe; and his ſending me to the King of* Bungo; *and that which paſſed till my arrival at his Court.*

S.1 THe next day the *Chineſe Necoda* diſimbarqued all his commodities, as the *Nautaquim* had enjoyned him, and put them into ſure rooms, which were given him for that purpoſe, and

and in three dayes he ſold them all, as well for that he had not many, as becauſe his good fortune was ſuch that the Country was at that time utterly unfurniſhed thereof, by which means this Pirate profited ſo much, that by this Sale he wholly recovered himſelf of the loſſe of the ſix & twenty Saile which the *Chineſe* Pirate had taken from him; for they gave him any price he demanded, ſo that he confeſſed unto us, that of the value of ſome five and twenty hundred *Taeis* which he might have in goods, he made above thirty thouſand. Now as for us three *Portugals*, having nothing to ſell, we imployed our time either in fiſhing, hunting, or ſeeing the Temples of theſe *Gentiles*, which were very ſumptuous and rich, whereinto the *Bonzes*, who are their prieſts, received us very courteouſly, for indeed it is the cuſtome of thoſe of *Japon* to be exceeding kind and courteous. Thus we having little to do, one of us, called *Diego Zeimoto*, went many times a ſhooting for his pleaſure in an *Harquebuſe* that he had, wherein he was very expert, ſo that going one day by chance to a certain Marſh, where there was great ſtore of fowl, he killed at that time about ſix and twenty wild Ducks; In the mean time theſe people beholding this manner of ſhooting, which they had never ſeen before, were much amazed at it, inſomuch that it came to the notice of the *Nautaquim*, who was at that inſtant riding of horſes, and not knowing what to think of this novelty ſent preſently for *Zeimoto*, juſt as he was ſhooting in the Marſh, but when he ſaw him come with his *Harquebuſe* on his ſhoulder and two *Chineſes* with him carrying the fowl, he was ſo mightily taken with the matter, as he could not ſufficiently admire it: for whereas they had never ſeen any Gun before in that Country, they could not comprehend what it might be, ſo that for want of underſtanding the ſecret of the powder, they all concluded that of neceſſity it muſt be ſome Sorcery; Thereupon *Zeimoto* ſeeing them ſo aſtoniſhed, and the *Nautaquim* ſo contented, made three ſhoots before them, whereof the effect was ſuch, that he killed one Kite, and two Turtle Doves; In a word then, and not to loſe time, by endeering the matter with much Speech, I will ſay no more, but that the *Nautaquim* cauſed *Zeimoto* to get up on the horſes croupper behind him, and ſo accompanied with a great croud of people, and four Huſhers, who with Battoons headed with iron went before him, crying a long the ſtreets, [*Know all men, that the* Nautaquim, *Prince of this Iſland of* Tanixumaa, *and Lord of our heads, enjoyns and expreſly commands, That all perſons whatſoever, which inhabit the Land that lies between the two Seas, do honour this* Chenchicogim, *of the further end of the World, for even at this preſent and for hereafter he makes him his kinſman, in ſuch manner as the* Jacharons *are, who ſit next his Perſon; and whoſoever ſhall not do ſo willingly, he ſhall be ſure to loſe his head.* Whereunto all the people anſwered with a great noiſe; *We will do ſo for ever.* In this pomp *Zeimoto* being come to the Palace gate, the *Nautaquim* alighted from his horſe, and taking him by the hand, whileſt we two followed on foot a pretty way after, he led him into his Court, where he made him ſit with him at his own table, and to honour him the more, he would needs have him lodg there that night, ſhewing many other favours to him afterwards, and to us alſo for his ſake. Now *Zeimoto* conceiving, that he could not better acknowledge the honour which the *Nautaquim* did him, then by giving him his *Harquebuſe*, which he thought would be a moſt acceptable preſent unto him; on a day when he came home from ſhooting, he tendred it unto him with a number of Pigeons and Turtle-doves, which he received very kindly, as a thing of great value, aſſuring him that he eſteemed of it more, then of all the treaſures of *China*, and giving him withall in recompence thereof a thouſand *Taeis* in ſilver, he deſired him to teach him how to make the powder, ſaying, that without that the *Harquebuſe* would be of no uſe to him, as being but a piece of unprofitable iron, which *Zeimoto* promiſed him to do, and accordingly performed the ſame. Now the *Nautaquim* taking pleaſure in nothing ſo much as ſhooting in this *Harquebuſe*, and his Subjects perceiving that they could not content him better in any thing, then in this, wherewith he was ſo much delighted, they took a pattern of the ſaid *Harquebuſe* to make others by it, & the effect thereof was ſuch, that before our departure (which was five months & an half after) there was ſix hundred of them made in the Country; nay I will ſay more, that afterwards, namely the laſt time that the Vice-roy *Don Alphonſo de Noronha* ſent me thither with a preſent to the King of *Bungo*, which happened in the year 1556. thoſe of *Japon* affirmed, that in the City of *Fucheo*, being the chief of that Kingdom, there were above thirty thouſand; whereat finding my ſelf to be much amazed, for that it ſeemed impoſſible unto me, that this invention ſhould multiply in ſuch ſort, certain Merchants of good credit aſſuredme that in the whole Iſland of *Japon* there were above three hundred thouſand *Harquebuſes*, and that they alone had tranſported of them in the way of trade to the Country of

the

the *Lequios*, at ſix ſeveral times, to the number of five and twenty hundred; ſo that by the means of that one, which *Zeimoto* preſented to the *Nautaquim* in acknowledgment of the honour and good offices that he had done him, as I have declared before, the Country was filled with ſuch abundance of them, as at this day there is not ſo ſmall an hamlet but hath an hundred at the leaſt; for as for Cities and great Towns they have them by thouſands, whereby one may perceive what the inclination of this people is, and how much they are naturally addicted to the wars, wherein they take more delight, then any other Nation that we know.

§. 2. We had been now three and twenty dayes in the Iſland of *Tanixumaa*, where very contentedly we paſt away the time, either in fiſhing, fowling, or hunting, whereunto theſe people of *Jappon* are much addicted, when as a veſſel belonging to the King of *Bungo* arriving in that Port, in the which were divers men of quality, and certain Merchants, whoas ſoon as they were landed went to wait upon the *Nautaquim* with their preſents, according to the uſual uſance of the Country: Amongſt them there was an ancient man, very well attended, and unto whom the reſt carried much reſpect, that falling on his knees before the *Nautaquim*, preſented him with a letter, and a rich Courtelaſs garniſhed with gold, together with a box full of ventiloes, which the *Nautaquim* received with a great deal of ceremony: Then having ſpent ſome time with him in asking of certain queſtions, he read the letter to himſelf, and thereupon having remained a prety while as it were in ſuſpence, and diſmiſſed the bearer thereof from his preſence, with an expreſs charge unto thoſe about him to ſee him honourably entertained, he called us unto him, and commanded the Truchman that was there by, to uſe theſe words unto us, *My good Friends, I intreat you that you will hear this letter read, which is ſent me from my Lord and Uncle, and then I will let you know what I deſire of you*; So giving it to a Treaſurer of his, he commanded him to read it, which inſtantly he did, and theſe were the contents of it, *Thou right eye of my face*, Hyaſcarangoxo, Nautaquim *of* Tanixuma, *I* Orgemdoo, *Who am your Father in the true love of my bowels, as he from Whom you have taken the name and being of your Perſon, King of* Bungo *and* Facatta, *Lord of the great Houſe of* Fiancima, Toſa, *and* Bandou, *Chief Soveraign of the petty Kings of the Iſlands of* Goto, *and* Xumanaxeequa, *I give you to underſtand, my Son, by the words of my mouth, which are ſpoken of your perſon, that ſome dayes ſince certain men, coming from your Country, have aſſured me, that you have in your Town three* Chenchicogims *of the other end of the World, men that accommodate themſelves very well with thoſe of* Japan, *are clothed in ſilk, and uſually wear ſwords by their ſides, not like Merchants that uſe traffique, but in the quality of perſons that make profeſſion of honour, and which by that only mean pretend to render their names immortal; Moreover I have heard for a truth, that theſe ſame men have entertained you at large with all matters of the whole Univerſe, and have affirmed unto you on their faith that there is another World greater then ours, inhabited with black and tawny people, of whom they have told you things moſt incredible to our judgment, for which cauſe I infinitely deſire you, as if you were my Son, that by* Fiangeandono, *whom I have diſpatched from hence to viſit my daughter, you will ſend me one of thoſe three ſtrangers, which I am told you have in your houſe; the rather for that you know my long indiſpoſition, accompanied with ſo much pain and grief, hath great need of ſome diverſion: Now if it ſhould happen that they would not be willing thereunto, you may then aſſure them, as well on your own faith, as on mine, that I will not fail to return them back in all ſafety; whereupon, like a good Son that deſires to pleaſe his Father, ſo order the matter that I may rejoyce my ſelf in the ſight of them, and ſo have my deſire accompliſhed. What I have further to ſay unto you, my Ambaſſadour* Fingeandono *ſhall acquaint you with, by whom I pray you liberally impart to me the good news of your perſon, and that of my daughter, ſeeing ſhe is as you know the apple of my right eye, whereof the ſight is all the joy of my face. From the houſe of* Fucheo *the ſeventh Mamoque of the Moon.* After that the *Nautaquim* had heard this letter read; The King of *Bungo*, ſaid he unto us, is my Lord, and my *Uncle*, the brother of my mother, and above all he is my good Father, for I call him by that name, becauſe he is ſo to my wife, which is the reaſon that he loves me no leſs then his own children, wherefore I count my ſelf exceedingly bound unto him, and do ſo much deſire to pleaſe him, that I could now find in my heart to give the beſt part of my Eſtate for to be transformed into one of you, as well for to go unto him, as to give him the content of ſeeing you, which out of the knowledge I have of his diſpoſition, I am aſſured he will value more then all the treaſures of *China*; Now having thus

acquainted

acquainted you with his deſire, I earneſtly intreat you to render your ſelves conformable thereunto, and that one of you two will take the pains to go to *Bungo*, there to ſee that King whom I hold for my Father, and my Lord, for as for this other to whom I have given the name and being of a kinſman, I am not willing to part with him till he hath taught me to ſhoot as well as himſelf. Hereupon *Chriſtovano Borralho*, and I, greatly ſatisfied with the *Nautaquim's* courteſie, anſwered him, that we kiſſed his Highneſs hands for the exceeding honour he did us in vouchſafing to make uſe of us, and ſeeing it was his pleaſure ſo to do, that he ſhould for that effect make choice of which of us two he thought beſt, and he ſhould not faile to be ſuddainly ready for the voyage. At theſe words ſtanding a while in muſing to himſelf, he looked on me, and ſaid, I am reſolved to ſend him there, becauſe he ſeems not ſo ſolemn, but is of a more lively humour, wherewith thoſe of *Japon* are infinitely delighted, and may thereby cheer up the ſick man, whereas the too ſerious gravity of this other, ſaid he, turning him to *Borralho*, though very commendable for more important matters, would ſerve but to entertain his melancholy in ſtead of diverting it. Thereupon falling into merry diſcourſe and jeſting with thoſe about him, whereunto the people of *Japon* are much inclined, the *Fingeandono* arrived, unto whom he preſented me, with a ſpecial and particular recommendation touching the aſſurance of my perſon, wherewith I was not only well ſatisfied, but had my mind alſo cleared from certain doubts, which out of the little knowledge I had of theſe peoples humours, had formerly troubled me. This done, the *Nautaquim* commanded two hundred *Taeis* to be given me for the expence of my voyage, whereupon the *Fingeandono* and I imbarqued our ſelves in a veſſel with Oars, called a Funee, and in one night having traverſed all this Iſland of *Tanixumaa*, the next morning we caſt anchor in an Haven, named *Hiamangoo*, from whence we went to a good Town, called *Quanquixumaa*, and ſo continuing our courſe afore the wind, with a very fair gale, we arrived the day enſuing at a very ſweet place, named *Tanora*, whence the morrow after we went to *Minato*, and ſo forward to a Fortreſs of the King of *Bungoes*, called *Oſquy*, where the *Fingeandono* ſtayed ſome time, by reaſon that the Captain of the place (who was his Brother in law) found himſelf much indiſpoſed in his health. There we left the veſſel in which we came, and ſo went by land directly to the City, where being arrived about noon, the *Fingeandono*, becauſe it was not a time fit to wait upon the King, went to his own houſe. After dinner having reſted a little, and ſhifted himſelf into a better habit, he mounted on horſback, and with certain of his friends rode to the Court, carrying me along with him, where the King was no ſooner advertiſed of his coming, but he ſent a Son of his about nine or ten years of age to receive him, who accompanied with a number of Noble-men, richly apparelled, and his Uſhers with their Maces going before him, took the *Fingeandono* by the hand, and beholding him with a ſmiling countenance; *May thy entrance*, ſaid he unto him, *into this houſe of the King my Lord, bring thee as much content and honour as thy children deſerve, and are worthy, being thine, to ſit at table with me in the ſolemn Feaſts.* At theſe words the *Fingeandono* proſtrating himſelf on the ground; *My Lord*, anſwered he, *I moſt humbly beſeech them that are in Heaven above, which have taught thee to be ſo courteous and ſo good, either to anſwer for me, or to give me a tongue ſo voluble, as may expreſs my thankfulneſs in terms agreeable to thy ears for the great honour thou art pleaſed to do me at this preſent, for in doing otherwiſe I ſhould offend no leſs, than theſe ingrateſull wretches, which inhabit the loweſt pit of the profound and obſcure houſe of ſmoak:* This ſaid, he offered to kiſs the Cutclaſs which the young Prince wore by his ſide, which he would by no means permit, but taking him by the hand, he led him to the King his Father, unto whom, lying ſick in his bed, he delivered a letter from the *Nautaquim*, which after he had read, he commanded him to call me in from the next room where I ſtaid attending, which inſtantly he did, and preſented me to the King, who entertaining me very graciouſly. *Thy arrival*, ſaid he unto me, *in this my Country is no leſs pleaſing to me, than the rain which falls from Heaven is profitable to our fields that are ſowed with Rice.* Finding my ſelf ſomewhat perplexed with the novelty of theſe terms, and this manner of ſalutation, I made him no anſwer for the inſtant, which made the King ſay to the Lords that were about him, I imagine that this ſtranger is daunted with ſeeing ſo much company here, for that peradventure he hath not been accuſtomed unto it, wherefore I hold it fit to remit him unto ſome other time, when as he may be better acquainted, and not be ſo abaſhed at the ſight of people. Upon this Speech of the Kings I anſwered by my Truchman, that whereas his Highneſs had ſaid that I was daunted, I confeſſed that it was true, not in regard of ſo many folks as were about me, becauſe I had ſeen far many more,

but

but that my amazement proceeded from the conſideration that I was now before the feet of ſo great a King, which was ſufficient to make me mute an hundred thouſand years, if I could live ſo long; I added further, that thoſe which were preſent there ſeemed to me but men, as I my ſelf was, but as for his Highneſs, that God had given him ſuch great advantages above all, as it was his pleaſure that he ſhould be Lord, and that others ſhould be meer ſervants, yea, and that I my ſelf was but a ſilly Ant, in compariſon of his greatneſs, ſo that his Majeſty could not ſee me in regard of my ſmalneſs, nor I in reſpect thereof be able to anſwer unto his demands. All the Aſſiſtants made ſuch account of this mad anſwer of mine, as clapping their hands by way of aſtoniſhment, they ſaid unto the King, Mark I beſeech your Highneſs how he ſpeaks to purpoſe; verily it ſeems that this man is not a Merchant, which meddles with baſe things as buying and ſelling, but rather a *Bonzo*, that offers ſacrifices for the people, or if not ſo, ſurely he is ſome great Captain that hath a long time ſcoured the Seas. Truly, ſaid the King, I am of the ſame opinion, now that I ſee him ſo reſolute; but let every man be ſilent, becauſe I purpoſe that none ſhall ſpeak to him but my ſelf alone, for I aſſure you that I take ſo much delight in hearing him talk, that at this inſtant I feel no pain. At thoſe words the Queen and her daughters, which were ſet by him, were not a little glad, and falling on their knees, with their hands lifted up to Heaven, they thanked God for this his great goodneſs unto him.

## CHAP. XLV.

*The great miſhap that befel the King of* Bungo's *Son, with the extream danger that I was in for the ſame; and what followed thereupon.*

§. 1 A Little after the King cauſed me to approach unto his bed, where he lay ſick of the Gout, when I was near him, *I pree thee*, ſaid he unto me, *be not unwilling to ſtay here by me, for it does me much good to look on thee, and talk with thee; thou ſhalt alſo oblige me to let me know whether in thy Country, which is at the further end of the World, thou haſt not learn'd any remedy for this diſeaſe wherewith I am tormented, or for the lack of appetite, which hath continued with me now almoſt theſe two months without eating any thing to ſpeak of.* Hereunto I anſwered, that I made no profeſſion of phyſick, for that I had never learnt that art, but that in the Junck, wherein I came from *China*, there was a certain wood, which infuſed in water healed far greater ſickneſſes then that whereof he complained, and that if he took of it, it would aſſuredly help him; To hear of this he was very glad, inſomuch that tranſported with an extream deſire to be healed, he ſent away for it in all haſte to *Tanixumaa*, where the Junck lay, and having uſed of it thirty dayes together, he perfectly recovered of this diſeaſe, which had held him ſo for two years together, as he was not able to ſtir from one place to another. Now during the time that I remained with much content in this City of *Fuchea*, being ſome twenty dayes, I wanted not occaſions to entertain my ſelf withall; for ſometimes I was imployed in anſwering the queſtions, which the King, Queen, Princes, and Lords asked of me, wherein I eaſily ſatisfied them, for that the matters they demanded of me, were of very little conſequence. Other-whiles I beſtowed my ſelfe in beholding their Solemnities, the Temples, where they offered up their prayers, their warlike Exerciſes, their naval Fleets, as alſo their fiſhing and hunting, wherein they greatly delight, eſpecially in the high flying of Falcons, and Vultures. Oftentimes I paſt away the time with my *Harquebuſe* in killing of Turtles, and Quailes, whereof there is great abundance in the Country. In the mean ſeaſon this new manner of ſhooting ſeemed no leſs marvellous and ſtrange to the inhabitants of this Land, then to them of *Tanixumaa*, ſo that beholding a thing which they had never ſeen before, they made more reckoning of it then I am able to expreſs, which was the cauſe that the Kings ſecond Son, named *Arichandono*, of the age of ſixteen or ſeventeen years, and whom the King wonderfully loved, intreated me one day to teach him to ſhoot, but I put him off, by ſaying that there needed a far longer time for it then he imagined, wherewith not well pleaſed, he complained to his Father of me, who to content the Prince deſired me to give him a couple of charges for the ſatisfying of his mind; whereunto I anſwered, that I would give him as many as his Highneſs would be pleaſed to command me. Now becauſe he was that day to dine with his Father, the matter was referred to the afternoon, howbeit then too there was nothing done, for that he waited on his Mother to a Village adjoyning, whither they came from all parts on pilgrimage by reaſon of a certain feaſt, which was celebrated there for the health of the

the King: The next day this young Prince came with only two young Gentlemen waiting on him to my lodging, where finding me asleep on a Mat, and my *Harquebuse* hanging on a hook by, he would not wake me till he had shot off a couple of charges, intending, as he told me afterwards himself, that these two shoots should not be comprised in them I had promised him: Having then commanded one of the young Gentlemen, that attended him, to go softly and kindle the Match, he took down the *Harquebuse* from the place where it hung, and going to charge it, as he had seen me do, not knowing how much powder he should put in, he charged the Piece almost two spans deep, then putting in the bullet, he set himself with it to shoot at an Orange tree that was not far off, but fire being given, it was his ill hap that the *Harquebuse* brake into three pieces, and gave him two hurts, by one of the which his right hand thumb was in a manner lost, instantly whereupon the Prince fell down as one dead, which the two Gentlemen perceiving, they ran away towards the Court, crying along in the streets that the strangers *Harquebuse* had killed the Prince; At these sad news the people flocked in all haste with weapons and great cries to the house where I was; Now God knows whether I was not a little amazed when coming to awake I saw this tumult, as also the young Prince lying along upon the floor by me weltring in his own blood without stirring either hand or foot; All that I could do then was to imbrace him in my arms, so besides my self, as I knew not where I was. In the mean time, behold the King comes in a Chair carried upon four mens shoulders, and so sad and pale, as he seemed more dead then alive; after him followed the Queen on foot leaning upon two Ladies, with her two daughters, and a many of women all weeping. As soon as they were entred into the Chamber, and beheld the young Prince extended on the ground, as if he had been dead, imbraced in my arms, and both of us wallowing in blood, they all concluded that I had killed him, so that two of the Company drawing out their Scymitars, would have slain me; which the King perceiving, *Stay, stay*, cried he, *let us know first how the matter goes, for I fear it comes further off, and that this fellow here hath been corrupted by some of these Traitors kinred, whom I caused to be last executed.* Thereupon commanding the two young Gentlemen to be called which had accompanied the Prince, his Son, thither, he questioned them very exactly; Their answer was, that my *Harquebuse* with the inchantments in it had killed him: This deposition served but to incense the Assistants the more, who in a rage addressing themselves to the King; What need, Sir, have you to hear more, cried they? here is but too much, let him be put to a cruel death: Therewith they sent in all haste for the *Jarabuca*, who was my Interpreter, to them; now for that upon the arrival of this disaster he was out of extream fear fled away, they brought him straightly bound to the King, but before they fell to examining of him, they mightily threatned him, in case he did not confess the truth; whereunto he answered trembling, and with tears in his eyes, that he would reveal all that he knew. In the mean time being on my knees, with my hands bound, a *Bonze*, that was President of their Justice, having his arms bared up to his shoulders, and a Poynard in his hand dipped in the blood of the young Prince, said thus unto me, *I conjure thee, thou Son of some Divel, and culpable of the same crime, for which they are damned that inhabit in the house of smoak, where they lye buried in the obscure and deep pit of the Center of the earth, that thou confess unto me with a voice so loud, that every one may hear thee, for what cause thou hast with these sorceries and inchantments killed this young innocent, whom we hold for the hairs, and principal ornament of our heads.* To this demand I knew not what to answer upon the suddain, for that I was so far besides my self, as if one had taken away my life, I believe, I should not have felt it; which the President perceiving, and beholding me with a terrible countenance, *Seest thou not*, continued he, *that if thou dost not answer to the questions I ask thee, that thou mayst hold thy self for condemned to a death of blood, of fire, of water, and of the blasts of the wind; for thou shalt be dismembred into the air, like the feathers of dead fowl, which the wind carries from one place to another, separated from the body with which they were joyned whilest they lived.* This said, he gave me a great kick with his foot for to rowse up my spirits, and cried out again, *Speak, confess who they are that have corrupted thee? what sums of money have they given thee? how are they called? and where are they at this present?* At these words being somewhat came again to my self, I answered him, that God knew my innocence, and that I took him for witness thereof: But he not contented with what he had done began to menace me more then before, and set before my eyes an infinite of torments and terrible things; wherein a long time being spent, it pleased God at length that the young Prince came to himself, who no sooner saw the King his Father, as also his Mo-

ther and Sisters dissolved into tears, but that he desired them not to weep, and that if he chanced to die, they would attribute his death to none but himself, who was the only cause thereof, conjuring them moreover by the blood, wherein they beheld him weltring, to cause me to be unbound without all delay, if they desired not to make him die anew: The King much amazed with this language, commanded the Manacles to be taken off which they had put upon me; whereupon came in four *Bonzoes* to apply remedies unto him, but when they saw in what manner he was wounded, & that his thumb hung in a sort but by the skin, they were so troubled at it, as they knew not what to do; which the poor Prince observing, Away, away, said he, send hence these divels, and let others come that have more hears to judg of my hurt, since it hath pleased God to send it me; Therewith the four *Bonzoes* were sent away, and other four came in their stead, who likewise wanted the courage to dress him, which the King perceiving was so much troubled as he knew not what to do, howbeit he resolved at length to be advised therein by them that were about him, who counselled him to send for a *Bonzo*, called *Teixeandone*, a man of great reputation amongst them, and that lived then at the City of *Facataa*, some seventy leagues from that place; but the wounded Prince not able to brook these delayes; *I know not*, answered he, *what you mean by this counsel which you give my Father, seeing me in the deplorable estate wherein I am, for whereas I ought to have been drest already, you would have me stay for an old rotten man, who cannot be here until one hath made a journey of an hundred and forty leagues, both in going and coming, so that it must be a month at least before he can arrive, wherefore speak no more of it, but if you desire to do me a pleasure, free this Stranger a little from the fear you have put him in, and clear the room of all this throng, he that you believe hath hurt me will help me as he may, for I had rather die under the hands of this poor Wretch, that hath wept so much for me, then be touched by the* Bonzo *of* Facataa, *who at the age he is of, of ninety and two years, can see no further then his nose.*

## CHAP. XLVI.

*My curing the young Prince of* Bungo; *with my return to* Tanicuma, *and imbarquing there for* Llampoo; *and also that which hapened to me on land, after the shipwrack we suffered by the way.*

§. I. THe King of *Bungo* being extreamly grieved to see the disaster of his Son, turned himself to me, and beholding me with a very gentle countenance; *Stranger*, said he unto me, *try I pray thee if thou canst assist my Son in this peril of his life, for I sware unto thee if thou canst do it, I will make no less esteem of thee, then of him himself, and will give thee whatsoever thou wilt demand of me*: Hereunto I answered the King, that I desired his Majesty to command all those people away, because the coyle that they kept confounded me; and that then I would see whether his hurts were dangerous, for if I found that I was able to cure them, I would do it most willingly: Presently the King willed every one to be gone, whereupon approaching unto the Prince, I perceived that he had but two hurts; one on the top of his forehead, which was no great matter, and the other on his right hand thumb, that was almost cut off: So that our Lord inspiring me, as it were, with new courage, I besought the King not to be grieved, for I hoped in less then a month to render him his Son perfectly recovered. Having comforted him in this manner, I began to prepare my self for the dressing of the Prince, but in the mean time the King was very much reprehended by the *Bonzoes*, who told him, that his Son would assuredly die that night, and therefore it was better for him to put me to death presently, then to suffer me to kill the Prince out-right, adding further, that if it should happen to prove so, as it was very likely, it would not only be a great scandal unto him, but also much alienate his peoples affections from him. To these speeches of the *Bonzoes* the King replyed, that he thought they had reason for that they said, and therefore he desired them to let him know how he should govern himself in this extremity; You must, said they, stay the coming of the *Bonzo Teixeandone*, and never think of any other course, for we assure you in regard he is the holiest man living he will no sooner lay his hand on him but he will heal him straight, as he hath healed many others in our sight: As the King was even resolved to follow the earned counsel of these servants of the Divel, the Prince complained that his wounds pained him in such sort as he was noughts to indure it, and therefore prayed that any handsome remedy

medy might be instantly applied to them, whereupon the King, much distracted between the opinion of the *Bonzoes*, and the danger that his Son was in of his life, together with the extream pain that he suffered, desired those about him to advice him what he should resolve on, in that exigent; not one of them but was of the mind, that it was far more expedient to have the Prince dresst out of hand, then to stay the time which the *Bonzoes* spake of. This counsel being approved of the King, he came again to me, and making very much of me, he promised me mighty matters if I could recover his Son; I answered him with tears in my eyes, that by the help of God I would do it, and that he himself should be witness of my care therein: So recommending my self to God, and taking a good heart unto me, for I saw there was no other way to save my life, but that, I prepared all things necessary to perform the cure. Now because the hurt of the right hand thumb was most dangerous, I begun with that, and gave it seven stitches, whereas peradventure if a Chirurgion had dresst him, he would have given it fewer; as for that of the forehead, I gave it but four, in regard it was much slighter then the other; that done, I applyed to them tow wet in the whites of eggs, and so bound them up very close, as I had seen others done in the *Indiaes*: Five days after I cut the stitches, and continued dressing him as before, until that at the end of twenty days it pleased God he was throughly cured, without any other inconvenience remaining to him, then a little weakness in his thumb; For this cause after that time the King and all his Lords did me much honour; the Queen also, and the Princesses her daughters presented me with a great many Sutes of silks, and the chiefest of the Court with Cymitars, and other things, besides all which the King gave me six hundred *Taeis*, so that after this sort I received in recompence of this my cure above fifteen hundred Duckets, that I carried with me from this place. After things were past in this manner, being advertised by letters from my two Companions at *Tanixumaa*, that the *Chinese* Pirate, with whom we came thither, was preparing for his return to *China*, I besought the King of *Bungo* to give me leave to go back, which he readily granted me, and with much acknowledgement of the curing of his Son he willed a Funce to be made ready for me, furnished with all things necessary, wherein commanded a man of quality, that was attended by twenty of the Kings servants, with whom I departed one *Saturday* morning from the City of *Fucheo*, and the *Friday* following about Sun-set I arrived at *Tanixumaa*, where I found my two Comrades, who received me with much joy. Here we continued fifteen days longer, till such time as the Junck was quite ready, and then we set Sail for *Liampoo*, which is a Sea-port of the Kingdom of *China*, whereof I have spoken at large heretofore, and where at that time the *Portugals* traded. Having continued our voyage with a prosperous wind, it pleased God that we arrived safe at our desired Port, where it is not to be believed how much we were welcome by the Inhabitants of the place. Now because it seemed strange unto them, that we had voluntarily submitted our selves in that sort to the bad faith of the *Chineses*, they asked of us from what Country we came, and where it was that we imbarqued our selves with them? whereupon we freely declared unto them the truth of all, and gave them an account of our Voyage, as also of the new Land of *Japon* that we had discovered, the great abundance of silver that was there, and the exceeding profit that might be made by carrying the commodities of *China* thither; wherewith they were wonderfully contented, and instantly ordained a general Procession to be made by way of thanksgiving unto God for so great a blessing: But withall covetousness began in such sort to seize upon the hearts of most of the Inhabitants, every one striving to be the foremost in this voyage, as they came to divide themselves into troops, and to make several parties, so that even with weapons in their hands they went thronging to buy up the commodities of that Country, which made the *Chinese* Merchants, upon the sight of our unruly avarice, set so high a price upon their wares, that whereas a *Pico* of silk was at first not worth forty *Taeis*, it rose before the end of eight dayes to an hundred and threescore, at which rate too the Merchants seemed to part with it very willingly. Thus by the means of this unreasonable desire of gain nine Juncks, which were then in the Port, were in fifteen days ready to set Sail, though to say the truth they were all in such disorder, and so unprovided, that some amongst them had no other Pilots then the Masters themselves, who had but little understanding in Navigation. In this bad order they departed all in company together one *Sunday* morning, notwithstanding that they had the wind, the season, the sea, and all things else contrary, not suffering themselves to be guided by reason, or the consideration of the dangers which they are subject unto that commit themselves to this Element; For they were so obstinate and so blinded as they would not represent any inconvenience to themselves, and I my self was so infortunate,

that I went along with them in one of their Veſſels. In this manner they ſailed all that ſame day as it were groping between the Iſlands and the firm Land, but about midnight there aroſe in the dark ſo mighty a Storm, accompanied with ſuch horrible rain, that ſuffering themſelves to be carried at the mercy of the wind, they ran upon the Sands of *Gotam*, whereof the nine Juncks two only, as it were by miracle, were ſaved, ſo that the other ſeven were loſt, out of which not ſo much as one man eſcaped. This loſs was thought to amount unto above three hundred thouſand Crowns in commodities, beſides the greater, which was of ſix hundred perſons that left their lives there, whereof there were an hundred and forty *Portugals*, all rich men, and of quality. As for the other two Juncks in one of the which by good hap I was, joyning in conſort together, they followed the courſe they had begun, until ſuch time as they arrived at the Iſland of the *Lequios*; There we were beaten with ſo furious a North-eaſt wind, which increaſed by the conjunction of the new Moon, that our veſſels were ſeperated in ſuch ſort as we could never ſee one another again: After dinner the wind turned to Weſt North-weſt, whereby the Sea was ſo moved, and the waves roſe with ſuch fury, as it was a moſt dreadful thing to behold; whereupon our Captain, named *Gaſpar Melo*, a very courageous Gentleman, ſeeing the greateſt part of the prow of the Junck to be half open, and that there was nine ſpans water in the bottom of her, he reſolved by the advice of all the Officers to cut down the two Maſts, whoſe weight was the cauſe of the opening of the Junck, howbeit this could not be done with ſuch care, but that the main Maſt in its fall overwhelmed fourteen perſons, whereof five were *Portugals*, which were all cruſhed in pieces, a ſpectacle ſo lamentable to behold that it exceedingly grieved every mans heart. Now foraſmuch as the Storm increaſed more and more, we were conſtrained to let our ſelves be carried at the mercy of the Sea even until Sun-ſet, at which time the Junck made an end of ſplitting quite aſunder, whereupon our Captain and every one of us, ſeeing the deplorable eſtate whereunto our ſins had reduced us, fell to preparing our ſelves for our laſt end. Having in this ſort paſt away half of the night, about the firſt quarter of the watch we ſtruck upon a Shelf, where at the firſt blow the Junck broke all to pieces, the event whereof was ſo lamentable that threeſcore and two men left their lives there, ſome of which were drowned, and the reſt ſqueezed to death under the Keel of the Veſſel.

§. 2. There were but four and twenty of us, beſides ſome women, that eſcaped from this miſerable Shipwrack; Now as ſoon as it was day we perceived by the ſight of the Iſland of fire, and of the Mountain of *Taydacano*, that the Land where we were was the great *Lequio*, whereupon with tears in our eyes recommending our ſelves to God, and marching up to the breſt in water, we ſwam over certain deeper places, and ſo went five dayes together in great pain, not finding in all that time any thing to eat but the ſlime which the Sea caſt up on the mud; Howbeit at length by the mercy of God we got to land, where going into the woods we ſuſtained our ſelves with a certain herb like unto Sorrel, whereof there was great plenty along theſe Coaſts, which was all the nouriſhment that we had for three days ſpace that we were there, until at laſt we were eſpyed by a boy that was keeping of cattel, who as ſoon as he had diſcovered us, ran to the next Village, which was ſome quarter of a league off, for to give notice of it to the inhabitants there; who preſently thereupon with the ſound of Drums and Cornets aſſembled all their Neighbours round about them, ſo that within three or four hours they were a Company of about two hundred men, whereof there were fourteen on horſback. As ſoon as they deſcried us a far off, they made directly towards us, whereupon our Captain, ſeeing the wretched eſtate whereunto we were reduced, fell down upon his knees, and began to encourage us with many good words, deſiring us to remember, *That nothing in the World could fall out without the Providence of God, and therefore like good Chriſtians we ſhould aſſure our ſelves it was his pleaſure, that this ſhould be the laſt hour of our lives, ſo that we could not do better then to conform our ſelves to his holy will, and with patience imbrace this pitiful end, which came from his Almighty hand, craving pardon from the bottom of our hearts for all our ſins paſt; and that for himſelf he had ſuch confidence in his mercy, that we duly repenting us according as we were obliged by his holy Commandments, he would not forget us in this our extremity.* Having made us this Exhortation, and lifted up his hands to Heaven, he cried out three times together with abundance of tears, *Lord have mercy upon us*, which words were reiterated by all the reſt, but with ſuch ſighs and groans of true Chriſtians, and ſo full of devotion and zeal, that I may truly ſay, the thing which then we feared leaſt was that which naturally is moſt abhorr'd. As we were in this grievous agony ſix horſmen came unto

us,

us, and beholding us in a manner naked, without arms, on the ground upon our knees, and two women lying as it were dead before us, they were ſo moved with compaſſion, that four of them turning back to the footmen, which were coming on, made them all to ſtay, not ſuffering them to approach us; Howbeit a little after they came to us again, bringing with them ſix footmen, which ſeemed to be ſome of the Officers of Juſtice, who by the commandment of the horſmen tied us, three and three together, and with ſome ſhew of pity bid us, *That we ſhould not be afraid, for that the King of the* Lequios *was a man greatly fearing God, and very well inclined to the poor, upon whom he continually beſtowed much alms:* Moreover they ſwore unto us by their Law, that we ſhould receive no hurt, yet could we not by any means be perſwaded thereunto, for at that time we had ſo little hope of life, that if perſons worthy of credit had aſſured us of it we ſhould hardly have believed them, much leſs theſe cruel and deteſtable *Gentiles*, who neither had Religion, nor any knowledg of God: When they had tied us together, the footmen placed us in the midſt of them, whileſt thoſe on horſback courſed up and down on every ſide, as though they had gone the round; now we no ſooner began to march, but that the three women, which were with us more dead then alive, fell down on the place in a ſwoon, partly through their natural weakneſs, and partly through the fear they were in, ſo that the footmen were forced to take them up in their arms, and each one to carry them in his turn, howbeit for all that before we could arrive at the place whither they were leading us, two of the three died, and were left in the Wood for a prey to the Wolves, Foxes, and other Wild-beaſts, whereof we ſaw great plenty thereabout. At length after we had marched a good while we arrived about Sun-ſet at a great Borough where we were preſently put into a *Pagode* or Temple of theirs, which was invironed with very high walls, and yet for the more ſecurity they placed an hundred men about it to guard us all that night, who with their cries and beating of their Drums, kept us waking till the next morning, for the noiſe thereof, and the conſideration of our preſent miſery, would not ſuffer us to take any reſt.

## CHAP. XLVII.

### *The carrying of us to the Town of* Pungor, *and preſenting us to the* Broquen, *Governour of the Kingdom; With that which enſued upon it.*

AS ſoon as it was morning the next day the chiefeſt women of the Town came to viſit us, and in way of charity brought us a quantity of Rice, boyled fiſh, and certain fruits of the Country for us to eat, ſhewing themſelves to be much moved with our miſery, as well by their words, as by their tears; and ſeeing the extream need we ſtood in of clothes, for that we had little, or ſcarce any upon our bodies, ſix amongſt them, which for that purpoſe were choſen by the reſt, went a begging for us through all the ſtreets of the Town, ſaying; *O good folks, good folks, which make profeſſion of the Law of the Lord, whoſe property is it, if one may ſay ſo, to ſhew himſelf prodigal towards us by communicating his benefits unto us, come forth of your houſes to behold the fleſh of our fleſh, which the wrath of the hand of the Lord Almighty hath touched, and ſuccour them with your alms, to the end the mercy of his greatneſs may not abandon you, as it hath done them.* Theſe words were of ſuch force to ſtir up their charity, as within leſs then an hour we were abundantly furniſhed with all things neceſſary for us: But about three of the clock in the afternoon came a Poſt to this Borough with letters to the *Xivalon* of the place, that is the Captain thereof, who had no ſooner read them, but he cauſed two Drums to beat an Alarum, at the ſound whereof all the people aſſembled together in a great *Pagode* or Temple, where out of a window he ſpake unto them, and gave them to underſtand that the *Broquen*, the Governour of the Kingdom, had commanded us to be brought to the Town of *Pungor*, which was ſome ſeven leagues from thence. The moſt part of them at firſt refuſed to obey this command, ſo that there was great contention about it, in ſuch ſort that nothing could be agreed upon all that day, by means whereof the Poſt was returned to the *Broquen* with a relation of that which had paſt, and ſo we were left there till eight of the clock the next morning, at which time two *Peretandaos*, who are as it were Judges, came accompanied with divers Burgeſſes, and ſome twenty horſmen unto us, and after many writings drawn up by certain publique Regiſters concerning us, they ſent us away the ſame day to a Town, called *Gondexilan*, where we were put into a dungeon, made in the faſhion of a Ciſtern, remaining §. 1

remaining there till the next day up to the middle in filthy ſtanding water, that was full of horſleeches, which made us all gore blood: As ſoon as it was morning they carried us towards *Pungor*, where we arrived about four of the clock in the afternoon, now becauſe it was late the *Broquen* would not ſee us till the day following, and then bound together as we were, he cauſed us to be led through four of the principal ſtreets of the City, where the people thronging from all parts to behold us, ſeemed much to pity our miſery, chiefly the women; In this manner we were brought to a Court of Juſtice, where there was a great many of Officers, amongſt whom we continued a long time waiting for the coming of the Judge, at length upon the thrice ſtriking of a clock, a door that ſtood juſt againſt the place where we attended, was preſently opened, by which we entred into a very ſpacious Hall, where the Governour ſat upon a Throne all adorned with rich tapeſtry, and under a Cloth of State of ſilver tinſel; round about him were ſix Uſhers upon their knees, carrying Maces on their ſhoulders, and all along the room ſtood a Guard with Halberds in their hands, damasked with gold and ſilver; All the reſt of the Hall was full of people of divers Nations, the like whereof we had not ſeen in thoſe Countries. After ſilence was impoſed on all that were preſent, we proſtrated our ſelves before the Throne of the *Broquen*, and weeping ſaid unto him, *Sir, We beſeech thee by that God which hath made Heaven and Earth, and on whoſe power we all of us depend, to take pity of our miſerable fortune, for ſince the waves of the Sea hath brought us to the lamentable eſtate, and wretched condition wherein thou ſeeſt us, we moſt humbly deſire thee that thy goodneſs will be pleaſed to put us into a better before the King, to the end he may be incited to have compaſſion on us poor ſtrangers, that are deſtitute of all ſuccour and favour of the World, for ſo it hath pleaſed God to have it in regard of our ſins.* At theſe words the *Broquen* looking on them that were about him, and ſhaking his head, *What think you of theſe people*, ſaid he unto them, *verily here is one of them that ſpeaks of God as a man which hath the knowledge of his truth, ſo that we may conclude without all doubt, that there is another great World whereof we have no notice, Wherefore ſince theſe men know the Source of all good, it is reaſonable that we ſhould proceed with them according to the requeſt they have made unto us with ſo many tears.* Whereupon turning him towards us, who all this while lay proſtrated on the ground, with our hands lifted up, as if we were worſhipping God; *I muſt confeſs*, ſaid he unto us, *that I have ſo great compaſſion of your miſery, and am ſo grieved to ſee you ſo poor as you are, as I aſſure you in all verity, that I had rather, if it were the good pleaſure of the King, be like unto one of you, as wretched as you are, then to ſee my ſelf in this office, which queſtionleſs was conferred on me for my ſins: wherefore I would be loth to offend you, but the duty of my place obliging me thereunto, I muſt deſire you as friends not to be troubled, if I ask you ſome queſtions, which are neceſſary for the good of Juſtice; and as touching your deliverance, if God affords me life, be aſſured you ſhall have it, for I am moſt confident that the King my Maſters inclination to the poor is truly Royal.* Theſe promiſes exceedingly contented us, and to thank him for them we had recourſe to our tears, which we ſhed in abundance, for our hearts were ſo full, as we could not poſſibly bring forth a word to anſwer him.

§. 2. The *Broquen* cauſed four Regiſters, the two *Peretandaos* of the Court aforeſaid, and ſome eleven or twelve other Officers of Juſtice, to come immediately before him; Then riſing on his feet, he began with a ſevere countenance, and a naked Scymitar in his hand, to examine us, ſpeaking ſo loud as every one might hear him; *I Pinaquila*, ſaid he, Broquen *of this City of* Pungor *by the good pleaſure of him whom we all hold for the hairs of our heads, King of the Nation of the* Lequios, *and of all this Country of the two Seas, where the freſh and ſalt waters divide the Mynes of his treaſures, do adviſe and command you by the rigour and force of my words, to tell me clearly, and with a clean heart, what people, and of what Nation you are, as alſo where your Country is, and how it is called?* To this demand we anſwered according to the truth, that we were *Portugals*, Natives of *Malaca*. *It is well*, added he, *but what adventure brought you into this Country, and whither did you intend to go when as you ſuffered ſhipwrack?* We replied thereunto, That being Merchants, who make no other profeſſion then of traffique, we had imbarqued our ſelves in the Kingdom of *China*, for to go from the Port of *Liampoo* to *Tanixumaa*, where we had formerly been, but that arriving near to the Iſland of Fire we were ſurprized by a mighty tempeſt, ſo that not able to oppoſe the violence of the Sea, we were conſtrained to lie at the mercy of the winds for the ſpace of three dayes and three nights together; and that at the end thereof our Junck ran her ſelf upon the Sands of *Taydican*, where, of ninety and two perſons

that

that we were, threeſcore and eight were drowned, no more eſcaping of that great number but theſe four and twenty of us which ſtood before him all covered over with wounds, that were ſaved as it were by miracle through the ſpecial grace of God. At theſe words ſtanding a little in ſuſpence, *By what tytle*, replied he, *did you poſſeſs ſo much riches, and ſo many pieces of ſilk which were in your Junck, and that were worth above an hundred* Taels, *as I am informed? Truly, it is not credible that you could get ſo much wealth any other way then by theeving, which being a great offence againſt God, is a thing proper to the ſervants of the Serpent of the houſe of ſmoak, and not to thoſe of the houſe of the Sun, where they that are juſt, and of a pure heart, do bathe themſelves amidſt perfumes in the great Pool of the moſt Almighty:* We anſwered hereunto, that aſſuredly we were Merchants, and not thieves, as he was pleaſed to charge us, becauſe the God in whom we believed forbad us by his holy Law, either to kill or to rob. Hereupon the *Broquen* beholding them which were about him; *Doubtleſs*, continued he, *if that which theſe men affirm be true, we may well ſay that they are like unto us, and that their God is much better then all others, as we thinks may be inferred from the truth of their words.* Then turning himſelf towards us, he examined us as before with a ſtern countenance, and the behaviour of a Judg that exerciſeth his charge with integrity: In this examination he beſtowed almoſt an hour, and in the laſt place ſaid unto us; *I would fain know why thoſe of your Country, When as heretofore they took* Malaca, *carried thereunto by extream avarice, did kill our men with ſo little pity? which is ſtill made good by divers Widdows who in theſe Countries have ſurvived their husbands.* To this we made anſwer, how that happened rather by the chance of war, then out of any deſire of robbing, which we had never uſed to do in any place whereſoever we came; *What is this you ſay*, replied he, *can you maintain that he that conquers, doth not rob? that he which uſeth force, doth not kill? that he which ſhews himſelf covetous, is not a thief? that which he oppreſſeth, performs not the action of a Tyrant? and lo, all theſe are the goodly qualities which are given to you, and whereof you are ſaid to be culpable, and that by the affirmation of verity it ſelf: Whence it is manifeſt, that Gods abandoning of you, and permitting the waves of the Sea to ſwallow you up, is rather a pure effect of his juſtice, then any injury that is done to you.* This ſaid he aroſe out of the Chair where he was ſet, and commanded the Officers to return us back to priſon, promiſing to give us audience according to the grace which it ſhould pleaſe the King to ſhew us, and the compaſſion that he would have of us; wherewith we were very much afflicted, and in great diſpair of our lives. The next day the King was advertiſed, as well of our impriſonment, as of the anſwers we had made, by the *Broquens* letters, wherein he had intermingled ſomething in favour of us, by means whereof he did not cauſe us to be executed, as it was ſaid he had reſolved to have done upon certain falſe reports which the *Chineſes* had made to him of us. In this priſon we continued very near two months with much pain, never hearing in all that time ſo much as any word ſpoken of that firſt proceeding againſt us. Now foraſmuch as the King deſired to be more amply informed concerning us by other more particular inquiries then the letters of the *Broquen*, he ſent a certain man unto us, named *Randinao*, for to come ſecretly to the priſon where we were, to the end that under the pretext of being a Merchant-ſtranger, he might exactly learn the cauſe of our arrival in that place, and that upon the report he ſhould make thereof to the King, he might proceed to do that which ſhould ſeem juſt unto him. Howbeit though this was cloſely carried, yet was it our good fortune to be advertiſed of it the day before his coming to us, ſo that we had time enough to arm our ſelves outwardly with all the appearances of miſery and affliction we could poſſibly deviſe, and counterfeit; which expedient next to Gods aſſiſtance ſtood us in more ſtead then any other we could have thought upon. This man then came one morning well accompanied to the priſon, and after he had viewed us all one after another, he called to him the *Interpreter*, who ſerved to interpret for him; *Ask theſe men*, ſaid he, *What is the cauſe that the mighty hand of God hath ſo abandoned them, as to permit their throat ſtrangle an offoll of his Divine Juſtice to be ſubjected to the judgement of men, without having ſo much remorſe of conſcience, as to ſet before their eyes the terrour of that dreadful viſion, which doth uſe to fright the ſoul at the laſt gaſp of a mans life, for it is to be believed that they, who have done that which I obſerve in them, have heaped ſin upon ſin.* We anſwered him thereunto, that he had a great deal of reaſon for what he ſpake, in regard it was very probable that the ſins of men were the principal cauſe of their ſufferings, howbeit that God, as the Soveraign Lord of all, did nevertheleſs in that caſe reſerve to [illegible] pity of them, with [illegible]

his

his bounty wherein all our hope was placed, to the end he would be pleaſed to inſpire the Kings heart with a will to do us juſtice according to our works, for that we were poor ſtrangers deſtitute of all favour, a thing whereof men make moſt account in this world. *That which you ſay*, replyed he, *is very well, provided that your hearts be conformable to your words, and then you are not to be found fault with, for it is moſt certain, that he, Which enammels all that our eyes do behold for the beautifying of the night, and that hath likewiſe made whatſoever the day doth ſhew us for the ſuſtenance of man, who are but Worms of the earth, Will not refuſe you your deliverance, ſeeing you beg of him with ſo many ſighs and tears; Wherefore I intreat you not to diſſemble with me, but truly to confeſs what I deſire to underſtand from you at this preſent; namely, What people you are? of what Nation? in what part of the World you live in, and how the Kingdom of your King is named? Whereunto you ſhall adde the cauſe that hath brought you hither, and to what place you were going With ſo much riches, Which the Sea hath caſt up on the ſhoars of* Taydican, *Whereat all the Inhabitants have ſo wondred, as they were perſwaded that you were Maſters of all the Trade of* China. To theſe, and other like queſtions, which this Spie asked of us, we returned him ſuch anſwers, as was moſt behoofull for us to give him, wherewith he was ſo contented, that making us many offers, he promiſed to move the King for our deliverance. In the mean time he ſpake not a word to us of the occaſion for which he was ſent, but ſtill fained himſelf to be a ſtranger, and a Merchant like one of us. Howbeit when he went away, he carefully recommended us to the Jaylour, and willed him not to let us want any thing, promiſing to ſatisfie him for it to his content; In acknowledgment whereof we gave him many humble thanks with tears in our eyes, whereby he was greatly moved to compaſſion, ſo that he gave us a Bracelet of gold, that weighed thirty Duckats, and alſo ſix ſacks of Rice, and withall deſired us to excuſe him for the ſmalneſs of the preſent he had given us. After this he returned back to the King, unto whom he rendred an account of all that had paſt with us, aſſuring him that we were not ſuch as the *Chineſes* had made him to believe, and offered for proof thereof to pawn his life an hundred times, if need were, which was the cauſe that the King abated much of the ſuſpicion wherewithall they had inveighed him about our manner of lying. But as he was reſolving to give order for our enlargement, as well upon the report of this man, as in regard of the letter which the *Broquen* had written him, there arrived at the Port a *Chineſe* Pyrat with four Juncks, unto whom the King gave his Country for a place of Retreat, upon condition that he ſhould ſhare with him the moity of the booty which he ſhould take, by means whereof he was in great favour with the King, and all them of the Country. Now foraſmuch as our ſins would have it, that this Pyrate was one of the greateſt enemies the *Portugals* had at that time, by reaſon of a fight that we had had with him a little before in the Port of *Lamau*, where *Lancerote Pareyra*, born at *Lyma*, commanded in chief, and in which he had two Juncks burnt, and three hundred of his men ſlain; this dog was no ſooner advertiſed of our impriſonment, and how the King was reſolved to free us, but that he imbroyled the buſineſs in a ſtrange manner, and told him ſo many lies of us, that he lacked but little of perſwading him, that ere long we would be the cauſe of the loſs of his Kingdom: For he aſſured him that it was our cuſtom to play the Spies in a Country under pretence of trading, and then to make our ſelves Maſters of it like robbers as we were, putting all to the ſword that we met withall in it; which wrought ſo powerfully with the King, that he revoked all that he had reſolved to have done, and changing his mind he ordained that in regard of what had been told him, we ſhould each of us be diſmembred into four quarters, and the ſame ſet up in the publique ſtreets, that all the world might know we had deſerved to be uſed ſo.

## CHAP. XLVIII.

### *The King of the* Lequios *ſending a cruel Sentence againſt us to the* Broquen *of the Town, Where we were priſoners, to the end he ſhould put it in execution; and that which happened unto us, till our arrival at* Liampoo.

§. 1. AFter that this cruel Sentence of death had been pronounced againſt us, the King ſent a *Peretanda* to the *Broquen* of the City, where we were priſoners, to the end that within four dayes it ſhould be executed upon our perſons. This *Peretanda* departed preſently away, and upon his arrival at the City, he went and lodged himſelf at a certain widows houſe, that

that was his ſiſter, a very honourable woman, and from whom we had received much alms; This ſame man having ſecretly imparted unto her the cauſe of his coming, & how he was not to return but with a good Certificate unto the King of the performance of this execution, ſhe went ſtraitway, and acquainted a Niece of hers with it, who was daughter to the *Broquen* of the City, in whoſe houſe lay a *Portugal* woman, the wife of a Pilot who was a priſoner with us, and two children of hers, deſiring then to comfort her, ſhe diſcovered unto her all that ſhe had learnt, which ſhe had no ſooner underſtood, but that extreamly afflicted at ſo ſad a news, ſhe fell inſtantly to the ground in a ſwoon, wherein ſhe continued a long time ſpeechleſs; At length being come to her ſelf again, ſhe fell to tearing of her cheeks ſo cruelly with her nails, that all her face was nothing but gore bloud, which, for that it was a new and extraordinary thing in that Country, was incontinently ſpread abroad throughout all the City, inſomuch that all the women being frighted with it, the moſt part of them went forth with their children in their hands to the *Broquens* daughters houſe, where the *Portugal* woman was, more ready to die, then to anſwer to the queſtions one or another of them asked her, & being exceedingly moved with pity to behold her, ſo lamentably taking on, drowned all in tears and blood, which paſſion & grief had drawn from her, they all reſolved to write a letter in favour of us to the old Queen, the Kings Mother, as accordingly they did, and the contents of it were theſe; *Sacred pearl, congealed in the greateſt ſhell of the profoundeſt depth of the Waters; thou Star, enamuelled with rayes of fire; thou treſs of golden hair, intermixed with a Garland of roſes, Whoſe feet are ſo repleniſhed with greatneſs that they reſt upon the top of our heads, like to rubies enchaced in gold, whereof the price is ineſtimable: We that are no other then the leaſt and pooreſt of thy creatures, the daughters and kinſwomen of the* Broquens *wife, together with the reſt of thy captives that have ſet their hands to theſe preſents, do make our moan unto thee concerning a thing which we have ſeen with our eyes, that is a poor woman, a ſtranger, who ſeems to have neither fleſh nor face, drowned as ſhe is in a pool of bloud, beating her breſt with ſuch cruelty, as would ſtir up even wild-beaſts in the Forreſt to compaſſion, and ſtrike fear into every one; Moreover we have heard her cry ſo loud, as we aſſure thee by the Law of all verity, that if God ſhould lend an ear unto her, as we believe he will, becauſe he doth uſually aſſiſt the poor, that are deſpiſed of the World, it is to be feared that ſome great chaſtiſement of famine and fire will fall upon us; Wherefore the extream apprehenſion, which we have of theſe things, cauſeth us to joyn all our voyces together, like little children hungry after their mothers, and humbly beſeech thee, that caſting thine eyes upon the ſoul of the deceaſed King, thy Husband, for whoſe ſake we beg this of thee, thou wilt vouchſafe to make thy ſelfe like the Saints, ſetting aſide all reſpect of the fleſh; For the more thou ſhalt do for God, the greater thou ſhalt be in his houſe, where we verily believe thou ſhalt find the King thy Husband, ſinging to the ſound of the harp of thoſe children, that have never ſinned, the ſong of thine charitable alms; which for Gods ſake, and his, we pray thee to obtaine of the King, thy Son: And this we hope ſhall be a means to move him, both for the love of God, and of thy ſelf, as alſo by the force of our tears and cries, to take pity on theſe ſtrangers, and freely pardon them all the faults, wherewith they are unjuſtly charged, ſince, as thou knoweſt, they are not the Saints of Heaven that uſe to accuſe us, but men, that are infamous, and of an evil life, to whom we are forbidden to lend an ear.* Conchenilau, *the fair Gentlewoman, and well born, but above all more honourable then all thoſe of this City, for having been bred up in the ſervice by her Aunt, ſhall repreſent unto thee on the behalf of God, and the King thy Huſband, for the love of whom we prefer this requeſt unto thee, all the other particularities of this affair, as alſo the grievous tears and groans of theſe poor folks, and the extream ſadneſs and fear of all the inhabitants of this place, who moſt earneſtly beſeech thee to preſent their humble Suit to the King, thy Son, cheriſhed above all others, on whom may it pleaſe the Lord of all good to beſtow ſo much thereof, as with that, which only ſhall be reſting to him, all theſe people, that inhabit the Land, and Iſlands of the Sea, may be repleniſhed.* This letter, ſigned by above an hundred of the chiefeſt women of the City, was ſent by a Gentlewoman, the daughter of the *Mandarin Comanilau*, Governour of the Iſland of *Bancaa*, which is on the the South-ſide of that of the *Lequios*, and good luck would have it that this young Damoſel came thither, but three dayes before the Sentence of death was to be put into execution upon us, in the company of two of her brothers, and ten or eleven Gentlemen, her kinſmen.

This Gentlewoman being arrived at the City of *Bintor*, where the King and the Queen his §. 2.

Mother were, ſhe went to the houſe of an Aunt of hers, the chief Lady of honour to the Queen, and that infinitely loved her, to whom ſhe rendred an account of the occaſion of her coming, and withall repreſented unto her how much it imported both her honour and credit, ſeeing all the reſt had made choice of her for this affair, that her Highneſs ſhould grant her the grace which all of them together made ſuch ſuit unto her for: The Lady having given her Neece the beſt welcome that poſsibly ſhe could by all demonſtrations of her affection, ſhe ſaid unto her, that ſince ſhe perceived this buſineſs ſo much concerned her honour, ſhe would labour by all the means ſhe could that ſhe ſhould not return diſcontented, and fruſtrated of the hope of her requeſt, the rather for that the thing was juſt in it ſelf, and ſo earneſtly ſought for by ſo many great Ladies; whereupon the Gentlewoman, having given her very humble thanks, beſought her to diſpatch the buſineſs with as much ſpeed as might be, in regard we had but two dayes more to live, according to the tenour of our Sentence, after which time all help would be in vain. *Since it is ſo*, anſwered her Aunt, *and that for want of requiſite diligence the poor wretches are like to ſuffer the puniſhment, whereunto the King hath deſtined them upon the* Chineſes *report, I will go and lay my ſelf at the Queens feet, as ſoon as ſhe awakes, which will be within an hour at the furtheſt, to the end that this novelty, not having done ſo theſe ſix years by reaſon of my indiſpoſition, may draw her to demand of me the cauſe of it.* Having ſaid this, ſhe left her Neece behind her, and went and opened a Gallery door, whereof ſhe alone had the key, and ſo entred into the Chamber where the Queen lay; A while after the Queen awaking, found her lying at her feet, whereupon ſhe ſaid unto her; *How now Nhay Meicamur*, (for ſo was this Lady called) *what is it hath brought you hither at this time? certainly it is ſome extraordinary matter. Madam*, anſwered ſhe, *that which your Majeſty ſayes, is very true, and I aſſure my ſelf that it will ſeem no leſs ſtrange in your ears, then it was to me to ſee my Neece arrive here lately with ſo much ſorrow and grief, that I am not able to expreſs it in words.* The Queen having then commanded her to call her in, ſhe preſently fetched her; The firſt thing that this young Gentlewoman did, was to proſtrate her ſelf before the Queen, who was in her bed, and ſo told her weeping the occaſion that brought her thither, and therewithall preſented her with the letter, which the Queen commanded her to read, as accordingly ſhe did; and it is ſaid the Queen was ſo moved with compaſſion at it, that not enduring to have her make an end of reading it, ſhe ſaid many times unto her with tears in her eyes; *Enough, enough, I will hear no more of it at this time, and ſince the buſineſs ſtands in the terms you ſpeak of, God, and the Soul of the King my Husband, for whoſe ſake all theſe Ladies beg this boon of me, forbid, that theſe poor wretches ſhould loſe their lives ſo unjuſtly: The falſe reports which the* Chineſes *have made of them, together with the miſeries they have indured at Sea, may ſerve them inſtead of great puniſhments; Wherefore rely upon me for your requeſt, and in the mean ſpace withdraw your ſelves til to morrow morning betimes, when we will go all three to the King my Son before it be day, and then you ſhall read this letter to him, as you have read it to me, that being incited to pity he may make no difficulty to grant us that which we demand of him with ſo much reaſon.* This reſolution taken, the Queen was no ſooner up the next day, but carrying along with her only her chief Lady, and the Gentlewoman her Neece, ſhe paſt through a Gallery to the Chamber of the King her Son, whom ſhe found ſtill in bed, and having rendred him an account of the occaſion of her coming, ſhe commanded the Gentlewoman to read the letter, as alſo to tell by word of mouth all that had happened in that affair, which the Gentlewoman performed very exactly, but not without mingling her tears with thoſe of her Aunts, as we knew afterwards: In the mean time the King looking on his Mother, *Madam*, anſwered he unto her, *I muſt needs confeſs, that I dream'd this night how I ſaw my ſelf before a very angry Judge, who carying his hand three times to his face, as if he had threatned me; I promiſe thee, ſaid he unto me, that if the blood of theſe ſtrangers doth cry unto me for vengeance, then and thine ſhall ſatisfie my juſtice, which makes me believe, that aſſuredly this viſion comes from God, for whoſe ſake I will do this alms to his praiſe, giving them both life and liberty, that ſo they may go where they will, and moreover I will cauſe a veſſel to be provided for them, furniſhed with all things they ſhall need, all at mine own charge.* The Queen gave the King her Son thanks for this his great grace unto them, and withall commanded her Lady and the Gentlewoman to kiſs his feet, as inſtantly they did, and ſo the Queen retired to her own lodging. Hereupon the King ſent for the *Chaumbins* to command him that the Sentence againſt us might be revoked, telling him all that had paſt, as well concerning his dream, as the requeſt the Queen his Mother had made unto him, which he had granted her. Then the Officers of Juſtice commanding

ing

ing the King much for this action, revoking the former, drew up another Sentence in favour of us, which contained words to this effect, *Broquen of my City of Pungor, I, the Lord of ſeven Generations, and of the hairs of thy head, do ſend thee the ſmiles of my mouth, that thy reputation may be thereby augmented. Conſidering the information which the* Chineſes *had given me of the pernicious manner of living of theſe ſtrangers, aſſuring me by a ſolemn oath, and upon the faith they owe unto their Gods, that infallibly they were Pyrats and robbers, who uſed no other trade then to ſteal away other mens goods, and bathe their hands in the blood of thoſe that would defend their own according to reaſon, as they ſaid was manifeſt to all the world, which they have run over, not leaving any Iſland, Port of the Sea, River, nor Land, that they have not invaded with fire and ſword, committing ſuch enormous and horrible crimes, as for fear of offending God, I may not mention. All which things have at firſt ſight ſeemed unto me moſt worthy to be puniſhed in juſtice according to the Laws of my Kingdom; Wherefore I ſent their Proces to the principal officers of my Crown, who all with one common conſent ſwore unto me that theſe ſtrangers deſerved not only one, but many deaths, if it were poſſible, ſo that relying upon their advice, I wrote unto* Nhay Peretanda, *that he ſhould enjoyn thee from me not to fail within four dayes to put that Sentence of mine in execution. Now foraſmuch as the chieſeſt Dames of your City, whom I hold for my kinſwomen, have been Suiters unto me ſince, that I would be pleaſed to beſtow their lives upon them by way of an alms, alledging many reaſons in their letters to that purpoſe, whereby I might be induced not to deny, but rather to accord them that grace; the fear which I have leaſt their cries ſhould in caſe of refuſal arrive at the higheſt of the Heavens, where that Lord liveth raigning, whoſe property it is to have pity on the tears, which are truly ſhed by thoſe that have a right zeal to his holy Law, hath wrought ſo with me, that freeing my ſelf from that blind paſſion, whereunto the fleſh rendred me inclined, I would not let my choller prevail over the blood of theſe wretches. For which reaſons I command thee, that as ſoon as this fair Gentlewoman, who is of noble extraction, and my kinſwoman, ſhall preſent thee theſe letters, ſigned with my hand, wherewith I confeſs, I am well contented, in regard of the perſons that have made this Suite unto me, thou go unto the priſon, whither thou haſt committed theſe ſtrangers, and that without all delay thou ſet them at liberty, as alſo that thou furniſh them with a veſſel at my charge, giving them moreover ſuch alms as the Law of the Lord commandeth thee to beſtow on them, and that too with a liberal hand; Whereupon thou ſhalt tell them, that they may go away without ſeeing my Perſon, for which I will diſpenſe with them, as well becauſe that labour would be to no purpoſe, as for that, performing as I do the Office of a King, it is not fit for me to behold men, who have a great knowledge of God, and yet ſeem to make little account of his Law, in that they accuſtom themſelves to rob others of their goods. Given at* Bintor *in the third* Chavequa *of the firſt* Mamoquo *of the Moon, in the preſence of the Queen my Mother, the Source of my right eye, and Lady of all my Kingdom.* And ſigned a little below, *Hira Pitau, Xinancor, Ambulec, the firm prop of all Juſtice.* As ſoon as the Gentlewoman had this Letter of the Kings in her hands, ſhe was never at quiet, till ſhe had left her Aunt, and put her ſelf upon her journey, which ſhe continued with ſuch diligence, that in a ſhort ſpace ſhe arrived at the City, and delivered the Letter to the *Broquen*, who preſently upon the reading of it cauſed all the *Peretandas*, *Chumbims*, and other Officers of Juſtice to aſſemble together, and then went with them directly to the Priſon, where we were at that inſtant under a ſure guard; we no ſooner ſaw them enter, but all of us cried out three or four times together, *Lord have mercy upon us*, wherewith the *Broquen*, and all that accompanied him, whereof the priſon was full, were ſo moved, as ſome of them could not forbear weeping, out of the compaſſion they had of us: In the mean time the *Broquen* fell to comforting us in ſuch kind and loving terms, as well expreſſed the greatneſs of his charity: Withall he commanded the irons to be taken off from our hands and feet, and drawing us into an outward Court, he recounted unto us all that had paſt in our buſineſs, whereof we had not any knowledge at all, in regard of the ſtrict watch that was ſet upon us all the while; Then having cauſed the Kings Letters to be publiſhed: *My friends*, ſaid he unto us, *now that God hath ſhewed you ſo much grace, to deliver you as you ſee, I have one requeſt to make unto you, which is, that for my ſake, you will thank him from the bottom of your heart, and praiſe him for it; for if you make this acknowledgement unto him, he will communicate to you from above, whence all good doth proceed, an agreeable repoſe, which is a thing* [illegible] *for us then to live three or four days in the miſeries of this World,* [illegible] *labour, grief,*

*great*

*great affliction, and above all poverty, which is the accomplishment of all evils, and whereby ordinarily our souls are wholly consumed in the deep abyss of the house of smoak.*

§.3. The *Broquen* moreover caused two Paniers full of clothes to be brought to that place, and distributed to them amongst us according to each ones need; That done he carried us home to his house, where all the Ladies of the Town came to see us, testifying by their countenances that they greatly rejoyced at the good success of our deliverance: They comforted us also with great demonstration of pity, which is an effect of the good nature of the women of this Country, that is common to them all; and not contented therewith they entertained us in their houses, one after another during all the time we were there until our departure, for we continued in this City afterwards the space of forty six dayes, in which time we were furnished with all things necessary for us, and that in such abundance, as there was not one of us but carried above an hundred Duckets away with him. As for the *Portugal* woman, of whom I spake before, she had above a thousand, as well in mony, as in other gifts which were given her, by which means her husband in less then an year recovered himself of all the losses he had sustained. After we had with a great deal of contentment past those forty six dayes there, the season proper for our voyage being come, the *Broquen* procured us passage in the Junck of a *Chinese*, which was bound for the Port of *Liampoo* in the Kingdom of *China*, according to the commandment that he had received of the King for that purpose, but first he caused the Captain of the Junck to put in good security for the safety of our persons during all the time of the voyage. In this manner we departed from *Pungor* the capital City of the Island of *Lequios*, of which I will here make a brief relation, to the end that if it shall one day please God to inspire the *Portugal* Nation, principally for the exaltation and increase of the Catholick faith, and next for the great benefit that may redound thereof, to undertake the Conquest of this Island, they may know where first to begin, as also the commodities of it, and the easiness of this Conquest. We must understand then that this Island of *Lequios*, scituated in nine and twenty degrees, is two hundred leagues in circuit, threescore in length, and thirty in bredth. The Country is almost like that of *Japon*, saving that it is a little more mountainous in certain parts, but in the middle it is plainer and more fertile. It is rendred very agreeable by many large Plains, that are watred with divers rivers of fresh water, and from whence are gathered great provisions, especially of Rice and Wheat. It hath Mountains out of which is drawn such quantity of copper, as in regard of the abundance thereof it is so common among those people, that whole Ships are laden with it from thence in way of traffique to all the Ports of *China*, *Lamau*, *Sumbor*, *Chabaquea*, *Tosa*, *Miacoo*, and *Japon*, as likewise to all the other Islands on the South-side thereof; as those of *Sestrau*, *Goto*, *Fucanxi*, and *Pollem*: Moreover in all this Country of the *Lequios*, there is also great store of iron, steel, lead, tin, allum, salt-peeter, brimstone, hony, wax, sugar, and ginger, far better then that which comes from the *Indiaes*. It hath withall a world of Angelin-wood, Chestnuts, Trees, Oak, and Cedar, wherewith thousands of Ships may be made. On the East-side it hath five very great Islands, where many Mynes of Silver are found, as also Pearls, Amber, Frankincense, Silk, Ebony, Brasil, and a great abundance of a certain wood fit for Carpentry, called *Poytan*; It is true that there is not such store of Silk there, as in *China*. The Inhabitants of all this Country do as the *Chineses* cloth themselves, with Linnen, Cotten, Silk, and a kind of Damask-stuff, which comes to them from *Nanquin*; They are great eaters, very much addicted to the delights of the flesh, little inclined to arms, and altogether unfurnished of them; which induceth me to believe that they might be easily conquered, and the rather for that in the year, a thousand, five hundred, fifty and six, a *Portugal* arrived at *Malaca*, named *Pero Gomez a' Almeyda*, servant to the Grand Master of *Santiago*, with a rich Present, and Letters from the *Nautaquim*, Prince of the Island of *Tanixumaa*, directed to King *John* the third; the Substance and Contents of his request was, to have five hundred *Portugals* granted to him, to the end that with them, and his own Forces, he might conquer the Island of *Lequio*, for which he would remain tributary to him at five thousand Kintals of Copper, and a thousand of Lattin yearly; which Ambassy came to no effect, because the Messenger was lost in the Gallion, where *Manuel de Souza de Sepulveda*, also perished. A little further to the Northward of this Island of *Lequio*, there is a great Archipelago of small Islands, from whence is drawn a great quantity of silver, which in my opinion, & by what I gathered out of a petition which *Ruy Lopez de Villalobos* General of the *Castillians* presented to *Jorge de Castro*, at that time Captain of *Ternate*, should be those whereof the Inhabitants

had

had ſome knowledge, and which they called the Iſlands of Silver; and yet I cannot ſee with what reaſon that may be, becauſe both by what I have obſerved, and read, as well in the writings of *Ptolomie*, as other Geographers, not any one of them hath pierced into the Kingdom of *Siam*, and the Iſland of *Sumatra*, only our Coſmographers, ſince the time of *Alphonſo d' Albuquerque* have paſſed a little further, and treated of the *Selebres*, *Paſuaas*, *Mindanaus*, *Champas*, as alſo of *China*, and *Japon*, but not of the *Lequios*, or other *Archipelagoes*, which are to be diſcovered within the vaſt extent of that Sea. From this brief relation which I have made of the Iſland of *Lequios*, may be inferred, both out of what I have heard and ſeen, that with two thouſand men only this Iſland might be taken, together with all the reſt of theſe *Archipelagoes*, whence more profit might be drawn then from the *Indiaes*, and they might be conſerved with leſs charge, as well in regard of men, as other wiſe; for we ſpake there with Merchants, who aſſured us, that the ſole Revenue of three Cuſtom-houſes, and of the Iſland of *Lequios*, amounted unto one million and an half of gold, not compriſing therein either the Maſs of the whole Kingdom, or the Mynes of Silver, Copper, Iron, Steel, Lead, and Tin, which are of a far greater revenue, then the Cuſtoms. I will not ſpeak further of other particularities of this Iſland, which I might here inſert, for that I hold this ſufficient to awaken the courages of the *Portugals*, and incite them to an Enterpriſe, of ſo much ſervice for our King, and profit for themſelves.

## CHAP. XLIX.

*My ſayling from* Liampoo *to* Malaca, *from whence the Captain of the Fortreſs, ſent me to the* Chaubainhaa *at* Martabano; *and all that befil us in our voyage thither.*

§ 1 BEing arrived at *Liampoo*, we were very well received by the *Portugals*, that lived there, From whence within a while after I imbarqued my ſelf in the Ship of a *Portugal*, named *Triſtano de Gaa*, for to return unto *Malaca*, with an intention once more to try my fortune, which had ſo often been contrary to me, as may appear by that which I have delivered before. This Ship being ſafely arrived at *Malaca*, I went preſently unto *Pedro de Faria*, Governour of the Fortreſs, who deſiring to benefit me ſomewhat before the time of his Government was expired, he cauſed me to undertake the voyage of *Martaban*, which was uſually very profitable, and that in the Junck of a *Mahumetan*, named *Necoda Mamude*, who had wife and children at *Malaca*. Now the principal deſigne of this voyage was, to conclude a peace with the *Chanbainhaa*, King of *Martabano*, as alſo to continue the commerce of thoſe of that Country with us, becauſe their Juncks did greatly ſerve for the proviſions of our Fortreſs, which at that time was unfurniſhed thereof by reaſon of the ſucceſs of the Wars of *Jaoa*. Beſides I had a deſigne in this my voyage of no leſs conſequence, then the reſt, which was to get one, called *Lancarote Guerreyro*, to come thither, who was then on the Coaſt of *Tanaſarim* with an hundred men in four Foiſts, under the name of a Rebel or Mutiner; I was to require him to come to the ſuccour of the Fortreſs, in regard it was held for certain, that the King of *Achem* was ſuddainly to fall upon it; ſo that *Pedro de Faria*, ſeeing himſelfe deſtitute of all that was neceſſary for him to ſuſtain a Siege, and of men likewiſe; found it fit to make uſe of theſe hundred men, the rather for that they were neareſt, and ſo might be the ſooner with him. In the third place he ſent me upon another important occaſion, namely to give advice to the Ships of *Bengala*, that they ſhould come all carefully in conſort together, leſt their negligence in their Navigation ſhould be the cauſe of ſome diſaſter. This voyage then I undertook very unwillingly, and parted from *Malaca* upon a *Wedneſday*, the ninth day of *January*, in the year, one thouſand, five hundred, forty and five; being under Sail I continued my courſe with a good wind to *Pulo Praceler*, where the Pilot was a little retarded by means of the Shelves, which croſs all that Channel of the firm Land, even unto the Iſland of *Sumetra*; When we were got forth with much labour, we paſſed on to the Iſlands of *Pulo Sambillaon*, where I put my ſelf into a *Manchua*, which I had very well equipped, and ſayling in it the ſpace of twelve days, I obſerved, according to the order *Pedro de Faria* had given me for it, all the Coaſt of that Country of *Malaya*, which unto *Juncalan* contains an hundred and thirty leagues, entring by all the Rivers of *Bartubaas*, *Salanger*, *Panaagim*, *Quedam*, *Parles*, *Pendah*, and *Sambilan*, *Siam*, without ſo much as hearing any news at all of his enemies in any of them: So continuing the ſame courſe nine days [illegible] the three and twen-

twentieth of our voyage, we went and caſt anchor at a little Iſland, called *Piſandurea*, where the *Necoda*, the *Mahometan* Captain of the Junck, was of neceſſity to make a cable, and furniſh himſelf with wood and water; With this reſolution going on ſhore every man applyed himſelf to the labour he was appointed unto, and therein ſpent moſt part of the day; Now whileſt they were thus at work the Son of this *Mahometan* Captain came and asked me whither I would go with him, and ſee if we could kill a Stag, whereof there was great plenty in that Iſland; I anſwered him that I would accompany him with all my heart, ſo that having taken my *Harquebuſe*, I went along with him athwart the wood, where we had not walked above an hundred ſpaces, but that we eſpied a many of wild boars, that were rooting in the earth near to a pond; Having diſcovered this game, we got as near to them as we could, and diſcharging amongſt them, we carried two of them to the ground: Being very glad of this good ſucceſs we preſently gave a great ſhout, and ran ſtraight to the place we had ſeen them rooting. But ſo dreadful to behold, in this place we found above a dozen bodies of men digged out of the earth, and ſome nine or ten others half eaten. Being much amazed at this object, we withdrew a little aſide by reaſon of the great ſtanch, which proceeded from theſe dead bodies. Hereupon the *Sarrazin* told me, that he thought we ſhould do well to advertiſe his father of this, to the end we might inſtantly ſurround this Iſland all about for to ſee whether we could diſcover any veſſels with Pirats; for, ſaid he, there may be ſome lye hidden behind yonder poynt, whereby we may very well run the hazard of our lives, as it hath often befallen other ſhips, where many men have been loſt by the careleſneſs of their Captains. This advice of the *Sarrazin* ſeemed ſo good unto me, that we preſently returned back unto the Rode, where he gave an account to his father of that we had ſeen. Now for that the *Necoda* was a very prudent man, and ſcalded (as one may ſay) with the like inconveniences, he ſtraightway gave order to have the Iſland ſurrounded, then cauſing the women, children, and linnen, although it were but half waſhed, to be imbarqued, he himſelf being followed by forty men, armed with Harquebuſes and Lances, went directly to the place where we had diſcovered thoſe bodies, and viewing them one after another, with ſtopping our noſes by reaſon of the ſtench, which was inſupportable, he was ſo moved to compaſſion, that he commanded the Marriners to dig a great pit for to bury them in; But as they were about to render them this laſt duty, and looking over them again, there was found upon ſome of them little daggers garniſhed with gold, and on others bracelets: Whereupon the *Necoda*, underſtanding well this myſtery, wiſhed me with all ſpeed to diſpatch away the roving veſſel that I had to the Captain of *Malaca*, for that, as he aſſured me, thoſe dead men, which they ſaw there, were *Achems*, who had been defeated near to *Tanauçarim*, whither their Armies ordinarily retired becauſe of the war which they had with the King of *Siam*. The reaſon he alledged to us for this was, that thoſe which we ſaw there lying dead, having golden bracelets about them, were Captains of *Achem*, who had cauſed themſelves to be buried without permitting them to be taken away, and that he would loſe his head if it were not ſo. For a greater proof whereof, he further added, that he would make ſome more of them to be diſ-enterred, as incontinently he did, and having digged ſome ſeven and thirty of them out of the earth, there was found about them ſixteen bracelets of gold, twelve very rich daggers, and many jewels, ſo that thinking of no other but hunting, we got a booty worth above a thouſand Duckats, which the *Necoda* had, beſides what was concealed; but the truth is, this was not altogether to our advantage, for the moſt part of our men became ſick with the extream ſtench of thoſe bodies. At the very inſtant I diſpatched away the rowing veſſel that we had to *Malaca*, and advertiſed *Pedro de Faria* of the whole ſucceſs of our voyage; Withall I certified him what courſe we had held, as alſo into what Ports, and into what Rivers we had entred, without hearing any other news of his enemies, then that it was ſuſpected they had been at *Tanauçarim*, where by the appearances of thoſe dead bodies, it was to be believed that they had been defeated, whereunto I added for a concluſion, that if I could light on any more aſſured news concerning them, I would preſently acquaint him with it, in what part ſoever I were.

§. 2. After I had diſpatched away the rowing Veſſel to *Malaca*, with the Letters which I had directed to *Pedro de Faria*, and that our Junck was furniſhed with all things neceſſary for her, we ſayled towards the Coaſt of *Tanauçarim*, where, as I ſaid before, I had order to land for to treat with *Lancerote Guerreyro*, that he, and the reſt of the *Portugals* of his Company might come to the ſuccour of *Malaca*, which the *Achems* intended to beſiege, according to the report that went of it. Being under Sail then we arrived at a little Iſland, a league in circuit,

circuit, called *Pulho Hinhor*, where a *Parao* came unto us, in the which were six tawny Moors, poorly clad, with red Boners on their heads; their Boat being come close to our Junck, which was then under Sayl, they sainted us in a way of peace, whereunto we answered in the like manner; That done they demanded of us if there were any *Portugals* amongst us? we told them that there were, but mistrusting it, they desired to see one or two of them upon the hatches, because, added they, it imports much that it should be so. Whereupon the *Necoda* prayed me to come up, which incontinently I did, though at that time I was shut up in my Cabbin below somewhat indisposed in my health; when I was on the deck I called to them that were in the *Parao*, who had no sooner seen me, and known me to be a *Portugal*, but they gave a great shout, and clapping their hands for joy they came abord our Junck. Then one of them, who by his countenance seemed to have more Authority then the rest, began to say unto me; *Signior, Before I crave leave of thee to speak, I desire thee to read this Letter, to the end it may induce thee the more readily to believe that which I am to say unto thee.* Thereupon out of an old filthy clout he took a Letter, wherein after I had opened it, I found this written: *Signiors Portugals, Which are true Christians, this honourable man, that shall shew you this Letter, is King of this Island, newly converted to the Faith, and called* Dom Lancerote; *He hath rendred many good Offices, not only to them, who have subscribed this writing, but to us also that have navigated on these Coasts: For he hath given us very important advertisements of the treasons, which the* Achems *and* Turks *have plotted against us, so that by the means of this honest man we have discovered all their designes: Withall God hath made use of him for to give us not long since a great victory against them, wherein we have taken from them one Gally, four Gallsots, and five Foists, with the death of above a thousand* Sarazins. *Wherefore we intreat you, by the wounds of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the merits of his holy passion, not only to keep him from all wrong, but to assist him with all your power, as the manner is of all good* Portugals, *that it may serve for an example to those which shall know this, to do the like in imitation of you; And so we kiss your hands this thirteenth day of* November, 1544. This Letter was signed by more then fifty *Portugals*, amongst whom were the four Captains that I sought for, namely, *Lançerote Guerreyra*, *Antonio Gomez*, *Pedro Ferreyra*, and *Cosmo Bernaldes*. When I had read this Letter, I made a tender of my person to this petty King, for otherwayes my power was so small, as it could not reach further then to the giving him a bad dinner, and a red Bonnet I had on, which all worn as it was, was yet better then his own. Now after this poor King had made some Declaration to me of himself, and of his miseries, lifting up his hands to Heaven, and shedding abundance of tears; *Our Lord Jesus Christ*, said he unto me, *whose slave I am, doth know what great need I have now of the favour and succour of some Christians, for because I am a Christian, as they are, a* Mahometan *slave of mine about four months ago, reduced me to that extremity, wherein I behold my self at this instant, being not able in the state I am in to do any other then cast up mine eyes to Heaven, and lament my misfortune, with much sorrow, and little remedy. And I assure thee by the verity of that holy and new Law, whereof I now make profession, that only for being a Christian, and a friend to the* Portugals, *I am persecuted in this sort. Now for that being alone, as thou art, it is not possible for thee to assist me; I beseech thee,* Signior, *to take me along with thee, to the end that this Soul which God hath put into me may not perish, and in recompense thereof I promise to serve thee as a slave all the dayes of my life.* Lo this is that which this poor King said with so many tears, as it was great pity to behold it. In the mean time the *Necoda*, who was of a good disposition, and charitably inclined, was very much moved with the disaster of this unfortunate King, so that he gave him a little Rice, and some linnen to cover himself withall, for he was so ragged, that one might see his naked skin every where about him. After he had informed himself from him of certain particulars, the knowledge whereof concerned him, he demanded him where his enemy was, and what forces he had? Whereunto he answered, That he was a quarter of a league from thence, in a Cabbin covered with straw, having not above thirty fisher-men with him, who were most of them without Arms. Hereupon the *Necoda* cast his eye upon me, and seeing me sad, for that I was not able of my self to succour this poor Christian, thinking withall that he should much oblige me thereby, *Signior*, said he unto me, *if thou were now Captain of this Junck, as I am, What remedy wouldst thou give to the tears of this poor man, wherewith also thy eyes do participate?* I knew not what reply to make him, for that I was greatly moved to behold my Neighbour, a Christian like my self, to suffer in that manner, which the

*Neco-*

*Necoda*'s ſon perceiving, who was, as I have ſaid, a young man of a good ſpirit, and brought up amongſt the *Portugals*, and gueſſing at the ſhame and ſorrow I was in, he deſired his father to lend him twenty Mariners of his Junck, that by their means he might re-eſtabliſh this poor King, and chaſe the Thief out of the Iſland; To this the *Necoda* anſwered, That if I would demand ſo much of him, he would do it very willingly; whereupon caſting my ſelf at his feet and embracing him, which is the humbleſt complement uſed amongſt them, I told him with tears in my eyes, that if he would do me this favour I would be his ſlave whileſt I lived, and that both he and his children ſhould find how ready I would be always to acknowledg the ſame; He preſently granted my requeſt, ſo that cauſing the Junck to approach near the ſhoar, he prepared himſelf in three Boats with one Faulcon, three Baſes, and threeſcore Men, *Jaos* and *Leſons*, all well armed, for thirty of them carried Harquebuſes, the reſt Lances, and Bows and Arrows, beſides Grenadoes, and other ſuch like Fireworks, as we thought were convenient for our deſign.

§. 3. It was about two of the clock in the afternoon when we landed, and ſo we went directly to the Trench where the Enemies were. The *Necoda*'s ſon led the Vaunigard, conſiſting of forty men, whereof twenty were armed with Harquebuſes, and the reſt with Bows and Arrows; The *Necoda* himſelf brought on the Rere, wherein were thirty Soldiers, carrying a Banner, which *Pedro de Faria* had given him at his parting from *Malaca*, with a croſs painted in it, to the end he might be known for a Vaſſal to our King, in caſe he ſhould encounter any of our Ships. Marching in this order by the guiding of this petty King, we arrived where the Rebel was with his men ſet in order, who by their ſhouting and cries ſeemed in ſhew not to make any reckoning of us. They were in number about fifty, but weak, unarmed, and utterly deſtitute of all things neceſſary for their defence, having for all their Arms but Staves, ten or eleven Lances, and one Harquebuſe. As ſoon as we had diſcovered them we gave fire to the Faulcon and Baſes, diſcharging withall twenty Harquebuſes, whereupon the Theeves betook themſelves preſently to flight, being in great diſorder, and moſt of them hurt; We purſued them then ſo cloſe, that we overtook them on the top of a little hill, where they were defeated in the ſpace of two *credoes*, not one of them eſcaping with life ſave only three, whom we ſpared for that they ſaid they were Chriſtians. That done, we went to a Village, where there were not above twenty poor low Cabbins, covered with ſtraw, in it we found ſome threeſcore and four women, with a many of little children, who no ſooner perceived us, but all of them with tears fell a cryed out, *Chriſtian, Chriſtian, Jeſus, Jeſus.* At theſe words being fully perſwaded that they were Chriſtians, I deſired the *Necoda* that he would cauſe his ſon to retire, and not ſuffer any of them to be killed becauſe they were not Gentiles, which he preſently yielded unto, and yet for all that he could not keep the Cabbins from ſacking, though in them all there was not found the value of five Duckets. For the people of this Iſland are ſo poor, that ſcarce one of them is worth a groat; they feed on nothing but a little fiſh, which they take with angling, and eat it broiled on the coals without ſalt, yet are they ſo vain and preſumptuous, that not one almoſt amongſt them but terms himſelf a King of ſome vile piece of ground, whereon there is little more then one poor Cabbin; beſides, neither the men nor the women have wherewithall to cover their nakedneſs. After the ſlaughter of the rebellious *Sarrazin* and his followers, and the re-eſtabliſhment of the poor Chriſtian King, putting him in poſſeſſion of his wife and children, whom his Enemy had made ſlaves, together with above threeſcore and three Chriſtian Souls, we ordeined a kind of Church amongſt them, for the inſtruction of thoſe that were newly converted; And then returning to our Junck, we preſently ſet ſail, and continued our courſe towards *Tanaſçarim*, where I was perſwaded I ſhould find *Lancerote Guerreyra*, and his companions, for to treat with them about the buſineſs, whereof I have formerly ſpoken: But for as much as in the Letter, which the petty King ſhewed me, the *Portugals* made mention of a Victory which God had given them againſt the *Turks* and *Achems* of this Coaſt, I hold it not amiſs to relate here how that hapned, as well for the content the Reader may take therein, as to ſhew that there is no enterprize which valiant Soldiers at a need may not bring to paſs, in regard whereof it imports much to cheriſh, and make eſteem of them. For eight months and more our hundred *Portugals* had ſcoured up and down this Coaſt in four well rig'd Foiſts, wherewith they had taken three and twenty rich Ships, and many other leſſer Veſſels, ſo that they which uſed to ſail in thoſe parts were ſo terrified with the ſole name of the *Portugals*, as they quitted their

Commerce

Commerce without making any further uſe of their ſhipping: By this ſurceaſe of Trade the Cuſtom-houſes of the Ports of *Tanaugarim*, *Junçalan*, *Merguim*, *Vagarau*, and *Tavay*, fell much in their Revenue, in ſo much that thoſe people were conſtrained to give notice of it to the Emperor of *Sornau*, King of *Siam*, and ſoveraign Lord of all that Country, beſeeching him to give a remedy to this miſchief, whereof every one complained. Inſtantly whereupon, being then at the City of *Odiaa*, he ſent with all ſpeed to the Frontire of *Lanhos* for a Turkiſh Captain of his, named *Heredrin Mahomet*, the ſame who in the year one thouſand five hundred thirty and eight came from *Suez* to the Army of *Soliman* the *Baſhaw*, Vice-roy of *Cairo*, when as the great *Turk* ſent him to invade the *Indiaes*; but it fell out that this man ſlipping from the body of the Army arrived in a Gally on the Coaſt of *Tanaugarim*, where he was entertained by the *Sornau* King of *Siam*, and for a Pention of twelve thouſand Duckets by the year ſerved him as a General of that Frontire. Now for that the King held this *Turk* for invincible, and made more account of him then of all others, he commanded him from the place where he was, with three hundred *Janizaries* that he had with him, and giving him a great ſum of mony he made him General of all the Coaſt of this Sea, to the end he might free thoſe people from our incurſions, withall he promiſed to make him Duke of *Banchaa*, which is an eſtate of great extent, if he could bring him the heads of four *Portugal* Captains. This proud *Turk*, becomming more inſolent by the reward and promiſes which the King made him poſted preſently away to *Tanauçarim*, where being arrived he rigged forth a Fleet of ten Sails for to fight with us, being ſo confident of vanquiſhing us, as in anſwer of certain Letters, which the *Sornau* had written unto him from *Odiaa*, theſe words was found in one of them. *From the time that my head was eſtoigned from the feet of your Highneſs for to execute this ſmall enterprize, wherein it ſeems you are pleaſed I ſhould ſerve you, I continued my Voyage till at the end of nine days I arrived at* Tanaucarim, *where I preſently provided my ſelf of ſuch Veſſels as were neceſſary for me, and indeed would have had but only two, for I hold it moſt infallible that thoſe would ſuffice to chaſe away theſe petty Thieves; howbeit not to diſobey the Commiſſion, which* Coumbracalon *the Governor of the Empire hath given me under your great Seal, I have made ready the great Gally, as alſo the four little ones, and the five Foiſts, with which I purpoſe to ſet forth with all ſpeed; For I fear leſt theſe Dogs ſhould have news of my coming, and that for my ſins God ſhould be ſo much their friend, as to give them leaſure to fly, which would be ſo great a grief unto me, that the very imagination thereof might be my death; or through an exceſs of deſpair render me like unto them; but I hope that the Prophet* Mahomet, *of whoſe Law I have made profeſſion from mine infancy, will not permit that it ſhould ſo happen for my ſins.* This *Heredrin Mahomet* being arrived at *Tanauçarim*, as I have delivered before, preſently made ready his Fleet, which was compoſed of five Foiſts, four Galliots, and one Gally Royal: Within theſe Veſſels he imbarqued eight hundred *Mahometans*, men of combat (beſides the Mariners,) amongſt the which were three hundred *Janizaries*, as for the reſt they were *Turks*, *Greeks*, *Malabares*, *Achems*, and *Mogores*, all choyce men, and ſo diſciplined, that their Captain held the Victory already for moſt aſſured; Aſſiſted with theſe Forces he parted from the Port of *Tanauçarim* for to go in the queſt of our men, who at that time were in this Iſland of *Pulbo Hinber*, whereof the foreſaid Chriſtian was King. Now during thoſe levies of men of War, this petty King going to the Town for to ſell ſome dryed fiſh there, as ſoon as he perceived what was intended againſt us, he left all his Commodities behind him, and in all haſte returned to this Iſland of his; where finding our men in great ſecurity, as little dreaming of that which was in hand againſt us, he related it all unto them, whereat they remained ſo much amazed, as the importance of the matter did require; In ſo much that the ſame night and the next day having well caulked their Veſſels which they had drawn aſhore, they launched them into the Sea, after they had imbarqued their proviſions, their water, their artillery, and ammunition. So falling to their oars, with a purpoſe (as I have heard them ſay ſince) to get to *Bengala*, or to *Racan*, for that they durſt not withſtand ſo great an Army; but as they were unreſolved thereupon, and divided in opinion, behold they ſaw all the ten Sails appearing together, and behind them five great Ships of *Guzarates*, whoſe Maſters had given *Heredrin Mahomet* thirty thouſand Duckets for to ſecure them againſt our *Portugals*. The ſight of theſe fifteen Sails put our men into a very great confuſion, and becauſe they were not able at that time to make reſiſtance for that the wind was contrary, they put themſelves into a Creek, which was by the Iſland, and inviron-

rounded by a Down, or Hill, where they resolved to attend what God would send them: In the mean time the five *Guzarat* Ships shewed themselves with full sails at Sea, and the ten Sails with oars went directly to the Island, where they arrived about Sun-set. Presently thereupon the *Turkish* Captain sent out Spies to the Ports, where he was advertised that they had been, and entered by little and little into the mouth of the Haven, that so he might render himself more assured of the prize which he pretended to make, with hope that as soon as it was day he should take them all, and so bound hand and foot present them to the *Xerxes* of *Siam*, who in recompence thereof had promised him the State of *Banchaa*, as I have said before. The *Manchua*, which had been at the Port to spy them out, returned to the Fleet about two hours within night, and told *Heredrin* for newes, that they were fled and gone, wherewith it is said this Barbarian was so afflicted, that tearing his hair, *I always feared*, said he weeping, *my sins would be the cause that in the execution of this enterprize God would shew himself more a Christian, then a* Sarazin, *and that* Mahomet *would be like to these Dogs, of whom I go in quest.* This said, he fell down all along in the place, and so continued a good while without speaking a word. Nevertheless being come again to himself he gave order, like a good Captain, to all that was necessary. First of all then he sent the four Galliots in quest of them to an Island, called *Taubasoy*, distant from that of *Pulbo Himber* about seven leagues, for he was perswaded that our men were retired thither, because this was a better Harbor then that of the Island from whence they were gone. As for the five Foists he divided them into three, whereof he sent two to another Island, named *Sambilan*, and other two to those which were nearest to the firm Land, for that all these places were very proper to shelter one in; As for the fifth Foist, in regard she was fleeter then the rest, he sent her along with the four Galliots, that she might before it was day bring him news of that which should happen, with promise of great reward for the same; but during these things our men, who had always a watchful eye, seeing the *Turk* had rid himself of his greatest Forces, and that there was no more remaining with him but the Gally wherein he was, they resolved to fight with him, and so sallying out of the Creek, where they had shrouded themselves, they rowed directly to her. Now in regard it was past midnight, and that the Enemies had but weak Sentinels, for that they thought themselves most secure, and never dreamt of any body lying in wait to attaque them there, our four Foists had the opportunity to board her all together, and threescore of their lustiest men leaping suddenly into her, in less then a quarter of an hour, and before the Enemies knew where they were for to make use of their Arms, they killed above fourscore *Turks*, as for the rest they cast themselves all into the Sea, not one man remaining alive: The dog *Heredrin Mahomet* was slain amongst the rest, and in this great action God was so gracious to our men, and gave them this Victory at so cheap a rate, that they had but one young man killed, and nine *Portugals* hurt. They assured me since, that in this Gally in so short a time, what by water, and the sword, above three hundred *Mahometans* lost their lives, whereof the most part were *Jenizaries* of the Gold Chain, which among the *Turks* is a mark of honor. Our *Portugals* having past the rest of the night with much contentment, and always keeping good watch, it pleased God that the next morning the two Foists arrived from the Island whither they had been sent, who altogether ignorant of that which had past, came carelessly doubling the point of the Haven, where the Gally lay, so that the four Foists made themselves Masters of them in a little space, and with the loss of but a few men. After so good a success they fell diligently to work in fortifying the Gally and the two Foists, which they had taken, and then flanked the South-side of the Island with five great Pieces of Ordnance to defend the entry into the Haven. Now about evening the other two Foists arrived, making to Land with the same indiscretion as the others, and although they had much ado to reach them, yet were they constrained at length to render themselves, with the loss only of two *Portugals*. Hereupon our men resolved to attend the four Galliots that remained, and which had been sent to the next Island, but the next day so great a wind arose from the North, that two of them were cast away upon the Coast, not one that was in them escaping. As for the other two about evening they discovered them very much in disorder, destitute of oars, and separated above three leagues the one from the other; But at last about Sun-set one of them came to the Port, and run the same fortune as the former, without saving any one of the *Sarazins* lives. The next morning an hour before day, the wind being very calm, our men discovered the other Galliot, which for want of oars was not able to recover the Port, in

regard

regard whereof our men reſolved to go and fetch her in, as accordingly they did, and coming ſomewhat near her with two Cannon ſhot, they killed the moſt part of them that were in her, and ſo bording her took her very eaſily; Now becauſe all her men were either ſlain, or hurt, they drew her to land by force of other Boats; ſo that of the ten Sail of this Fleet, our men had the Gally, two Galliots, and four Foyſts; as for the other two Galliots, they were caſt away on the Iſle of *Taubaſoy*, as I have delivered before, and touching the fift Foyſt, no news could be heard of her, which made it credible that ſhe alſo ſuffered ſhipwrack, or that the wind had caſt her upon ſome of the other Iſlands. This glorious victory, which it pleaſed God to give us, was obtained in the month of *September*, one thouſand, five hundred, forty and four, on *Michaelmas* Eve, which rendred the name of the *Portugals* ſo famous through all thoſe Coaſts, that for three years after there was nothing elſe ſpoken of, ſo that the *Chanbainhaa*, King of *Martabano* hearing of it, ſent preſently to ſeek them out, and promiſed them great advantages if they would ſuccour him againſt the King of *Bramaa*, who at that time was making preparation in his City of *Pegu*, for to go and beſiege *Martabano*, with an Army of ſeven hundred thouſand men.

## Chap. L.

### *The Continuance of our voyage to the Bar of* Martabano; *and certain memorable particularities happening there.*

§. 1. BEing departed, as I ſaid, from the Iſland of *Pulho Hinbor*, we continued our courſe towards the Port of *Tarnaſſery* for the affair, of which I have ſpoken, but upon the approach of the night, the Pilot deſiring to avoid certain ſands that were to the Prow-ward of him, put forth to Sea, with an intention as ſoon as it was day to return towards land with the Weſterly wind, which at that inſtant blew from the *Indies* by reaſon of the Seaſon. We had now held this courſe five dayes, running with much labour by many different roombs, when as it pleaſed God that we accidentally diſcovered a little veſſel, and for as much as we thought it to be a Fiſher-boat, we made to it, for to be informed from them in her whereabouts we were, and how many leagues it was from thence to *Tarnaſſery*, but having paſſed cloſe by her, and haled her without receiving any anſwer, we ſent off a Shallop well furniſhed with men for to compel her to come abord us: Our Boat then going directly to the veſſel, we entred her, but were much amazed to find in her only five *Portugals*, two dead, and three alive, with a Coffer, and a ſack full of *Tangues*, and *Larins*, which is the mony of that Country, and a ſardle, wherein there were Baſins and Ewers of ſilver, and two other very great Baſins. Having laid up all this ſafely, I cauſed the *Portugals* to be brought into our Junck, where looking very carefully unto them, yet could I not in two dayes get one word from them; But at length by the means of yolks of egs, and good broaths, which I made them take, they came again to themſelves, ſo that in ſix or ſeven dayes they were able to render me a reaſon of their accident. One of thoſe *Portugals* was called *Chriſtovano Doria*, who was ſince ſent into this Country for a Captain to Saint *Tomé*; the other *Luys Tabo da*, and the third *Simano de Britó*, all men of credit, and rich Merchants. Theſe ſame recounted unto us, that coming from the *Indies* in a veſſel belonging to *Jorge Manhoz*, that was married at *Goa*, with a purpoſe to go to the Port of *Coaringan*, in the Kingdom of *Bengala*, they were caſt away in the ſands of *Rucano* for want of taking heed, ſo that of fourſcore perſons, that they were in the veſſel, onely ſeventeen being ſaved, they had continued their courſe all along by the Coaſt for five dayes together, intending if poſſibly they could to recover the river of *Coſmira* in the Kingdom of *Pegu*, there to ſhip themſelves for the *Indies* in ſome veſſel or other that they ſhould meet with in the Port; but whileſt they were in this reſolution, they were ſo driven by a moſt impetuous Weſterly wind, that in one day and a night they loſt the ſight of Land, finding themſelves in the main Sea without Oars, without Sayls, and all knowledge of the winds, they continued in that State ſixteen dayes together, at the end whereof their water coming to fail, all died but thoſe three he ſaw before him. Upon the finiſhing of this relation we proceeded on in our courſe, and within four days after we met with five *Portugal* veſſels, which were ſayling from *Bengala* to *Malaca*. Having ſhewed them *Pedro de Faria's* Order, I deſired them to keep in conſort together for fear of the *Achems* Army, that ranged all over the Coaſt, leſt through their imprudence they ſhould fall into any miſchief, and thereof I demanded a Certificate from them, which they willingly

granted, as alſo furniſhed me very plentifully with all things neceſſary. Having made this diſpatch we continued our courſe, and nine days after we arrived at the Bar of *Martabano*, on a *Friday*, the ſeven and twentieth of *March*, one thouſand, five hundred, forty and five, having paſt by *Tarnaſſery*, *Toway*, *Mergwin*, *Juncay*, *Pullo*, *Caunda*, and *Vagarun*, without hearing any tidings of thoſe hundred *Portugals*, in ſearch of whom I went, becauſe before that they had taken pay in the ſervice of the *Chanbainhaa*, King of *Martabano*, who, according to report, had ſent for them to aſſiſt him againſt the King of *Bramaa*, that held him beſieged with an Army of ſeven hundred thouſand men, as I have declared before; howbeit they were not at this time in his Service, as we ſhall ſee preſently.

§. 2. It was almoſt two hours within night, when we arrived at the mouth of the River, where we caſt anchor with a reſolution to go up the next day to the City; Having continued ſome time very quiet, we ever and anon heard many Cannon ſhot, whereat we were ſo troubled, as we knew not what to reſolve on; As ſoon as the Sun roſe, the *Necoda* aſſembled his men to Counſel, for in Semblable occaſions he always uſed ſo to do, and told them, that as ſure as they were all to have a ſhare in the peril, ſo it was fit that every one ſhould give his advice about it; Then he made them a Speech, wherein he repreſented unto them that which they had heard that night, and how in regard thereof he feared to go unto the City. Their opinions upon it were very different, howbeit at length they concluded, that their eyes were to be witneſſes of that whereof they ſtood in ſuch doubt: To this end we ſet Sail, having both wind and tyde, and doubled a point, called *Monnay*, from whence we diſcovered the City, invironed with a world of men, and upon the River almoſt as many veſſels, and although we ſuſpected what this might be, becauſe we had heard ſomething of it, yet left we not off from ſayling to the Port, where we arrived with a great deal of care, and having diſcharged our Ordnance according to the uſual manner in ſigne of peace, we perceived a veſſel very well furniſhed, came directly to us from the ſhore, wherein there was ſix *Portugals*, at which we exceedingly rejoyced; Theſe preſently came aboard our Junck, where they were very well entertained, & having declared unto us what we were to do for the ſafety of our perſons, they counſelled us not to budge from thence for any thing in the world, as we had told them our reſolution was to have fled that night to *Bengala*, becauſe if we had followed that deſigne, we had aſſuredly been loſt, and taken by the Fleet which the King of *Bramaa* had in that place, conſiſting of ſeventeen hundred Sayls, wherein were compriſed an hundred Gallies very well furniſhed with ſtrangers. They added withall, that they were of opinion I ſhould go aſhore with them to *Joano Cayeyro*, who was Captain of the *Portugals*, for to give him an account of the cauſe that brought me thither, the rather for that he was a man of a ſweet diſpoſition, and a great friend of *Pedro de Faria's*, to whom they had often heard him give much commendation, as well for his noble extraction, as for the goodly qualities that were in him; beſides they told me that I ſhould find *Lançarote Gueyreyro*, and the reſt of the Captains with him, unto whom my aforeſaid Letters were directed, and that I ſhould do nothing therein prejudicial to the Service of God, and the King. This counſel ſeeming good unto me, I went preſently to land with the *Portugals* to wait on *Joano Cayeyro*, to whom I was exceeding welcome, as likewiſe to all the reſt that were in his quarters, to the number of ſeven hundred *Portugals*, all rich men, and of good eſteem. Then I ſhewed *Joano Cayeyro* my Letters, and the Order that *Pedro de Faria* had given me; Moreover I treated with him about the affair that led me thither; whereupon I obſerved that he was very inſtant with the Captains, to whom I was addreſt, who anſwered him that they were ready to ſerve the King in all occaſions that ſhould be preſented, howbeit ſince the Letter of *Pedro de Faria*, Governour of *Malaca*, was grounded on the fear that he was in of the Army of the *Achems*, compoſed of an hundred and thirty Sayl, whereof *Bijaya Sora* King of *Pedir*, was General, and it having fallen out, that his Admiral had been defeated at *Tarnaſery* by thoſe of the Country, with the loſs of ſeventy *Lanchares*, and ſix thouſand men, it was not needful they ſhould ſtir for that occaſion; for according to what they had ſeen with their own eyes, the Forces of that enemy were ſo mightily weakned, as they did not think he could in ten years ſpace recover again the loſs he had ſuſtained. To this they added many other reaſons, which made them all to agree, that it was not neceſſary they ſhould go to *Malaca*. After theſe things I deſired *Joano Cayeyro* to make me a Declaration of all that had paſt in this buſineſs, that it might ſerve me as it were for a Certificate at my return to our Fortreſs, determining as ſoon as I had it to get me from this place, for that I had nothing more to do there. With this reſolution I ſtayed there with *Joano Cayeyro*, in

continual

continual expectation to be gone when the Seaſon ſhould ſerve for the Junck to depart, and remained with him at this Siege the ſpace of ſix and forty days, which was the chief time of the King of *Bramaa* his abode there, of whom I will ſay ſomething here in a few words, becauſe I conceive the curious would be well content to know what ſucceſs the *Chanbainhaa*, King of *Martabane*, had in this war. This Siege had laſted now ſix months and thirteen dayes, in which ſpace the City had been aſſaulted five times in plain day, but the beſieged defended themſelves always very valiantly, and like men of great courage: Howbeit in regard they were inſenſibly conſumed with length of time, and the ſucceſs of war, and that no ſuccour came to them from any part, their enemies were without compariſon far more in number then they, in ſuch ſort as the *Chanbainhaa* found himſelf ſo deſtitute of men, as it was thought he had not above five thouſand ſouldiers left in the City, the hundred and thirty thouſand which were ſaid to be there at the beginning of the Siege, being conſumed by Famine, or the Sword, by reaſon whereof the Counſel aſſembling for to deliberate what was to be done thereupon, it was reſolved that the King ſhould ſound his enemy by his Intereſt, which he preſently put in execution: For that effect he ſent to tell him, that if he would raiſe the Siege he would give him thirty thouſand Biſſes of ſilver, which is in value a million of gold, and would become his Tributary at threeſcore thouſand Duckets by the year. The anſwer made by the King of *Bramaa* hereunto was, that he could accept of no conditions from him, if he did not firſt yield himſelf to his mercy. The ſecond time he propounded unto him, that if he would ſuffer him to depart away with two ſhips, in one of the which ſhould be his Treaſure, and in the other his Wife and Children, that then he would deliver him the City, and all that was in it. But the King of *Bramaa* would hearken no more to that then the former. The third Propoſition which he made him was this, That he ſhould retire with his Army to *Tagalaa*, ſome ſix leagues off, that ſo he might have liberty to go away freely with all his, and thereupon he would deliver him the City, and the Kingdom, together with all the Treaſure belonging to the King his Predeceſſour, or that in lieu thereof he would give him three millions of gold: But he alſo refuſed this laſt offer, inſomuch that the *Chanbainhaa* utterly diſpairing of ever making his peace with ſo cruel an enemy, began to meditate with himſelf what means he might uſe to ſave himſelf from him; Having long thought upon it he found no better an expedient then therein to ſerve himſelf of the ſuccour of the *Portugals*, for he was perſwaded that by their means he might eſcape the preſent danger. He ſent then ſecretly to tell *Joano Coyeyro*, that if he would imbarque himſelf in the night in his four ſhips, and take him in, with his wife, and children, and ſo ſave them, he would give him half his treaſure. In this affair he very cloſely imployed a certain *Portugal*, named *Paulo de Seixas*, born in the Town of *Obidos*, who at that time was with him in the City; This ſame having diſguiſed himſelf in a *Pegu* habit, that he might not be known, ſtole one night to *Coyeyro's* Tent, and delivered him a Letter from the *Chanbainhaa*, wherein this was contained: *Valiant and faithful Commander of the* Portugals, *through the Grace of the great King of the other end of the world, the ſtrong and mighty Lion, dreadfully roaring, with a Crown of Majeſty in the Houſe of the Sun, I the unhappy* Chanbainhaa, *heretofore a Prince, but now no longer ſo, finding my ſelf beſieged in this wretched and infortunate City, do give thee to underſtand by the Words pronounced out of my mouth, with aſſurance no leſs faithful then true, that I now render my ſelf the Vaſſel of the great King of* Portugal, *Soveraign Lord of me, and my children, with an acknowledgement of homage, and ſuch tribute as he at his pleaſure ſhall impoſe on me: Wherefore I require thee on his behalf, that as ſoon as* Paulo Seixas *ſhall preſent this my Letter unto thee, thou come ſpeedily with thy Ships to the Bulwark of the* Chappel-key, *where thou ſhalt find me ready attending thee, and then without taking further counſel, I will deliver my ſelf up to thy mercy, with all the treaſures that I have in gold, and precious ſtones, whereof I will moſt willingly give the one half to the King of* Portugal, *upon condition that he ſhall permit me with the remainder to leavy in his Kingdom, or in the Fortreſſes which he hath in the* Indies, *two thouſand* Portugals, *to whom I will give extraordinary great pay that by their means I may be re-eſtabliſhed in this State, Which now I am conſtrained to abandon; ſince my ill fortune will have it ſo. As for that which concerns thee, and thy men, I do promiſe them by the faith of my vertue, that in caſe they do help to ſave me, I will divide my treaſure ſo liberally among them, that all of them ſhall be very well ſatisfied and contented; And for that, time will [illegible] further; Paulo de Seixas, by whom I ſend this unto thee, ſhall [illegible], and of the reſt*

*which*

*which I have communicated unto him.* *Joano Cayeyro* had no ſooner received this Letter, but he preſently cauſed the chief of his followers ſecretly to aſſemble together in Councel. Having ſhewed them the Letter, he repreſented unto them how important and profitable it would be for the ſervice of God and the King to accept of the offer, which the *Chanbainhaa* had made them; Whereupon cauſing an Oath to be given to *Paulo de Seixas*, he willed him freely to declare all his knowledg of the matter, and whether it were true that the *Chanbainhaa* his Treaſure was ſo great, as it was reported to be. Thereunto he anſwered by the Oath that he had taken, That he knew not certainly how great his Treaſure was, but that he was well aſſured how he had often ſeen with his own eyes, an houſe in form of a Church, and of a reaſonable bigneſs, all full up to the very tyles of bars and wedges of Gold, which might very well lade two great Ships: He further ſaid, That he had moreover ſeen ſix and twenty Cheſts bound about with ſtrong cords, wherein according to the *Chanbainhaa* his own report was the Treaſure of the deceaſed *Breſagueau* King of *Pegu*, which ſaid Treaſure containing an hundred and thirty thouſand Biſſes, and every Biſs in value five hundred Duckets, made up all together the ſum of threeſcore Millions of Gold: He ſaid alſo, That he knew not certainly the number of the wedges of Gold which he had ſeen in the Temple of the God of Thunder, but he was moſt aſſured notwithſtanding that they would fully lade four good Veſſels: And for a concluſion he told them, That the ſame *Chanbainhaa* had ſhewed him the golden Image of *Quiay Frigau*, which was taken at *Degum*, all full of ſuch rich and reſplendent ſtones, as it was thought the like again were not in the whole world; So that this Declaration which this man made upon Oath aſtoniſhed them ſo that heard it, as they could not poſſibly beleeve it to be true. Howbeit after they had ſent him out of the Tent, they entered into conſultation about this affair, wherein nothing was reſolved, of which I verily beleeve our ſins were the cauſe, for there were in this Aſſembly as many different opinions, as *Babel* had diverſities of Languages, which proceeded eſpecially from the envy of ſix or ſeven men there preſent, who would needs perſwade the reſt, that if this affair ſhould happen to have ſuch ſucceſs, as was hoped for, *Ioano Cayeyro* (unto whom they all bore no good will) would go then into *Portugal* with ſo much honor and reputation, as it would be a ſmall matter for the King to make him an Earl, or a Marquis, or at leaſt recompence him with the Government of the *Indiaes*; ſo that after theſe Miniſters of the Devil had alledged many reaſons wherefore it might not be done, which I think was but the maſk of their weakneſs and ill nature, though it may be they did it out of the fear they were in of loſing both their goods and lives if this matter ſhould come to be diſcovered to the King of *Bramaa*; howſoever they would not agree to accept of this offer, but contrariwiſe they threatened *Joano Cayeyro*, that if he deſiſted not from his purpoſe, which was to comply with the *Chanbainhaa*, they would diſcloſe it to the *Bramaa*, ſo that *Cayeyro* was conſtrained to abandon this buſineſs, leſt if he ſhould perſiſt therein the *Portugals* themſelves would diſcover him, as they threatened to do, without either fear of God, or regard of men.

§. 3. *Joana Cayeyro*, ſeeing he could not poſſibly bring his deſire to paſs, wrote a Letter to the *Canbainhaa*, wherein he uſed many weak excuſes for not performing that which he demanded of him, and giving it to *Paulo de Seixas*, he ſpeedily diſpatched him away with it, ſo that departing about three hours after midnight he arrived ſafe at the City, where he found the *Canbainhaa* attending him in the ſame place which he had named in his Letter, unto whom he delivered the Anſwer he had brought; After he had read it, and thereby found that he could not be ſuccored by our men, as he always thought he ſhould, it is ſaid that he remained ſo confounded, that for very grief and ſorrow he ſunk down to the ground like a dead man, and continuing a pretty while in that manner, at length he came again to himſelf, and then beating his breſt, and bewailing his miſerable fortune, *Ah Portugals*, ſaid he with tears in his eyes, *how ill do you acknowledg that which I have done for you, imagining that thereby I ſhould make acquiſition of your friendſhip, as of a treaſure, to the end that like faithful men you would be aſſiſting to me in ſo great a neceſſity as this is which now I am in, whereby I deſired no other thing then to ſave my childrens lives, inrich your King, and ſtate you in the number of my chiefeſt friends? And would it had pleaſed him, who raigns in the beauty of theſe ſtars, that you had merited before him the doing me this good office, which only for my ſins you have refuſed me, for in ſo doing you had by my means augmented his Law, and I been ſaved in the promiſes of his truth.* Thereupon ſending away *Paulo de Seixas*, with a young

young Wench, by whom he had had two ſons, he gave him a pair of Bracelets, and ſaid unto him, *I deſire thee not to think of this little which now I give thee, but of the great love I have always born thee; above all, forget not to tell the Portugals, with how much cauſe and grief I complain of their extream ingratitude, whereof I will render them culpable before God at the laſt and dreadful day of Judgment:* The night following *Paul de Seixas* came back to the *Portugals*, with two children, and a very fair young Damoſel their Mother, with whom he married afterwards at *Coromandel*, and ſhewed to *Simon de Binto*, and *Pedro de Braga*, Lapidares, the Bracelets which the *Chaubainhas* had given him, who buying them of him payd ſix and thirty thouſand Duckets for them, and had afterwards fourſcore thouſand for them of *Trimira Raia* Governor of *Narſyngua*. Five days after *Paulo de Seixas* coming to the Camp, where he recounted all that I have related before, the *Chaubainhas*, ſeeing himſelf deſtitute of all humane remedy, adviſed with his Councel what courſe he ſhould take in ſo many miſfortunes, that dayly in the neck of one another fell upon him, and it was reſolved by them to put to the ſword all things living that were not able to fight, and with the blood of them to make a Sacrifice to *Quiay Nizandal*, God of Battels, then to caſt all the treaſure into the Sea, that their Enemies might make no benefit of it, afterward to fire the whole City on fire, and laſtly that all thoſe which were able to bear arms ſhould make themſelves *Amoucos*, that is to ſay, men reſolved either to dye, or vanquiſh in fighting with the *Brancas*. The *Chaubainhas* very much approved this counſel, and concluding of it accordingly they fell preſently to the demoliſhing of houſes, and were preparing all other things for the effecting of their deſign, when as one of the three principal Commanders of the City, apprehending that which was to follow the next day, fled the night entring to the Enemies Camp, and there rendered himſelf with four thouſand men under his leading to the *Brancas*; Hereupon the courages of all the reſt were ſo ſtruck by ſuch a ſtrange infidelity and flight, that not one of them cared afterwards either to keep watch, maintain the trenches, or do any other ſervice whatſoever, but generally all that remained ſtuck not to ſay publiquely, that if the *Chaubainhas* would not ſuddenly reſolve to yield himſelf to the *Brancas*, they would open the gates and let him in, for that it would be better for them to dye ſo, than to languiſh and conſume away like rotten beaſts as they did; The *Chaubainhas* ſeeing them ſtiffly bent thereunto for to appeaſe them answered, that he would perform their deſire, howbeit withall he cauſed a review to be made of thoſe that would fight, but he found them to be not above two thouſand in all, and they too ſo deſtitute of courage, as they could hardly have reſiſted feeble women: Beholding himſelf then reduced to the laſt caſt, he communicated his mind to the Queen only, as having no other at that time by whom he may be adviſed, or that indeed could advise him; The only expedient then that he could reſt on, was to render himſelf into the hands of his Enemy, and to ſtand to his mercy, or his rigor. Wherefore the next day about ſix of the clock in the morning he caused a white flag to be hung out over the wall in ſign of peace, whereunto they of the Camp answered with another like banner; Hereupon the *Xenimbrum*, who was as it were Marſhal of the Camp, ſent an horſeman to the bulwark, where the flag ſtood, unto whom it was delivered from the top of the wall, That the *Chaubainhas* deſired to ſend a Letter to the King, ſo as he might have a ſafe-conduct for it, which being ſignified to the *Xenimbrum*, he inſtantly diſpatched away two of good quality in the Army with a ſafe-conduct, and ſo theſe two *Brancas* remaining for hoſteges in the City, the *Chaubainhas* ſent the King a Letter by one of his Prieſts, that was fourſcore years of age, and reputed for a Saint amongſt them. The contents of this Letter were theſe: *The love of children hath ſo much power in this houſe of our weakneſs, that amongſt us, who are fathers, there is not ſo much as one that for their ſakes would not be well contented to deſcend a thouſand times into the deep pit of the houſe of the Serpent, much more would expoſe his life for them, and put himſelf into the hands of one that uſeth ſo much clemency towards them that ſhall do ſo: For which reaſon I reſolved this night with my wife and children, contrary to the opinions that would diſſwade me from this good, which I hold the greateſt of all others, to render my ſelf unto your Highneſs, that you may do with me as you think fit, and as ſhall be moſt agreeable to your good pleaſure. As for the faults, wherewith I may be charged, and which I ſubmit at your feet, I humbly beſeech you not to regard it, that ſo the merit of the mercy, which you ſhall ſhew me, may be the greater before God and men. May your Highneſs therefore be pleaſed to ſend ſome preſently for to take poſſeſſion of my perſon, of my wife, of my children, of the City, of the Treaſure, and of all the Kingdom; all which I do*

even

*even now yield up unto you, as to my Soveraign Lord, and lawful King. All the requeſt that I have to make unto you thereupon with my knees on the ground, is, that we may all of us with your permiſſion finiſh our days in a Cloiſter, where I have already vowed continually to bewail and repine my fault paſt; For as touching the honors and eſtates of the World, wherewith your Highneſs might inrich me, as Lord of the moſt part of the Earth, and of the Iſles of the Sea, they are things which I utterly renounce for evermore. In a word, I do ſolemnly ſwear unto you before the greateſt of all the Gods, who with the gentle touch of his Almighty hand makes the Clouds of Heaven to move, never to leave that Religion which by your pleaſure I ſhall be commanded to profeſs, where being freed from the vain hopes of the World, my repentance may be the more pleaſing to him that pardoneth all things. This holy* Grepo, *Dean of the golden Houſe of Saint* Quiny, *who for his goodneſſe and auſterity of life hath all power over me, will make a more ample relation unto you of what I have omitted, and can more particularly tell you that which concerns the offer I make you of rendring my ſelf, that ſo relying on the reality of his Speech, the unquietneſs wherewith my ſoul is inceſſantly troubled may be appeaſed.* The King of *Bramaa* having read this Letter inſtantly returned another in anſwer thereunto full of promiſes and oaths to this effect, *That he would forget all that was paſt, and that for the future he would provide him an eſtate of ſo great a Revenue, as ſhould very well content him:* Which he but badly accompliſhed, as I ſhall declare hereafter. Theſe news was publiſhed throughout all the Camp with a great deal of joy, and the next morning all the Equipage and Train that the King had in his quarter was ſet forth to view: Firſt of all there were to be ſeen fourſcore and ſix Field-Tents, wonderful rich, each of them being invironed with thirty Elephants, ranked in two Files, as if they had been ready to fight, with Caſtles on their backs full of Banners, and their *Pauores* faſtened to their Trunks, the whole number of them amounted unto two thouſand, five hundred, and fourſcore: Not far from them were twelve thouſand and five hundred *Bramaas*, all mounted on horſes, very richly accouſtred; with the order, which they kept, they incloſed all the Kings quarter in four Files, and were all armed in Corſlets, or Coats of Mayl, with Lances, Cymitars, and guilded Bucklers. After theſe Horſe followed four Files of Foot, all *Bramaas*, being in number above twenty thouſand. For all the other Souldiers of the Camp there were ſo many as they could not be counted, and they marched all in order after their Captains. In this publique Muſter were to be ſeen a world of Banners, & rich colours, & ſuch a number of Inſtruments of war ſounded, that the noiſe thereof, together with that which the Souldiers made, was moſt dreadful, and ſo great as it was not poſſible to hear one another. Now for that the King of *Bramaa* would this day make ſhew of his greatneſs in the reddition of the *Chaubainhaa*, he gave expreſs Command, that all the Captains which were ſtrangers, with their men, ſhould put on their beſt clothes, and Arms, and ſo ranged in two Files, they ſhould make as it were a kind of ſtreet, through which the *Chaubainhaa* might paſs; this accordingly was put in execution; and this ſtreet took beginning from the City gate, and reached as far as to the Kings Tent, being in length about three quarters of a League, or better: In this ſtreet there were ſix and thirty thouſand ſtrangers of two and forty different Nations, namely *Portugals, Grecians, Venetians, Turks, Janizaries, Jews, Armenians, Tartars, Mogores, Abyſſins, Reizbutu, Nobins, Coracones, Perſians, Tuparaas, Gizares, Tanaces, Malabares, Jaos, Achems, Moens, Siams, Luſſons* of the Iſland *Borneo, Chacomas, Arracons, Predins, Papuaas, Selebres, Mindanoas, Pegus, Bramaas*, and many others whoſe names I know not. All theſe Nations were ranked according to the *Xemimbrums* order, whereby the *Portugals* were placed in the Vantgard, which was next to the gate of the City where the *Chubainhaa* was to come; After them followed the *Armenians*, then the *Janizaries* and *Turks*, and ſo the reſt.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LI.

*In what manner the* Chaubainhaa *rendred himſelf to the King of* Bramaa, *and the cruel proceeding againſt the Queen of* Martabano, *and the Ladies, her Attendants.*

§. 1 ABout one of the clock in the afternoon a Cannon was ſhot off, which was the Signal for the inſtant opening of the gates of the City, whereupon firſt of all iſſued out the Souldiers, whom the King had ſent thither for the guard of it, being four thouſand *Siams* and *Bramaas*, all Harquebuſiers, Halberdiers, and Pikemen, with above three hundred armed Elephants; all which were commanded by a *Bramaa*, Uncle to the King, named *Monpocaſſer*, *Bainha* of the City of *Melietay*; Ten or eleven paces after this Guard of Elephants marched divers Princes, and great Lords, whom the King had ſent to receive the *Chaubainhaa*, all mounted on Elephants, richly harneſſed, with Chairs upon their backs, plated over with gold, and Collars of precious ſtones about their necks; Then followed at ſome eight or nine paces diſtance the *Rolim* of *Monnay*, Soveraign *Talapoy* of all the Prieſts of the Kingdom, and held in the reputation of a Saint, who went alone with the *Chaubainhaa*, as a Mediatour between the King and him; immediately after them came in a cloſe Chair, carried upon mens ſhoulders, *Nhay Canatoo*, the daughter of the King of *Pegu*, from whom this *Bramaa* had taken his Kingdom, and wife to the *Chaubainhaa*, having with her four ſmall children, namely, two boyes, and two girls, whereof the eldeſt was not ſeven years old; round about her and them went ſome thirty or forty young women of noble extraction, and wonderful fair, with caſt down looks, and tears in their eyes, leaning upon other women: After them marched in order certain *Talagrepos*, which are amongſt them as the *Capuchins* with us, who bare-foot and bare-headed went along praying, holding beads in their hands, and ever and anon comforting thoſe Ladies the beſt they could, and caſting water in their faces, for to bring them to themſelves again, when as they fainted, which they did very often; A ſpectacle ſo lamentable, as it was not poſſible to behold it without ſhedding of tears; This deſolate Company was attended by another Guard of Foot, and five hundred *Bramaas* on Horſe-back. The *Chaubainhaa* was mounted on a little Elephant, in ſigne of poverty and contempt of the world, conformable to the Religion which he intended to enter into, being ſimply apparelled in a long Caſſock of black velvet, as a mark of his mourning, having his beard, head, and eye-brows ſhaven, with an old cord about his neck, ſo to render himſelf to the King; In this Equipage he appeared ſo ſad and afflicted, that one could not forbear weeping to behold him; As for his age, he was about ſome threeſcore and two yeers old, tall of Stature, with a grave and ſevere look, and the countenance of a generous Prince. As ſoon as he was arrived at a place, which was near to the gate of the City, where a great throng of women, children, and old men waited for him, when they ſaw him in ſo deplorable an eſtate, they all made ſeven times one after another ſo loud and dreadful a cry, as if Heaven and earth would have come together. Now theſe lamentations and complaints were preſently ſeconded with ſuch terrible blows, that they gave themſelves without pity on their faces with ſtones, as they were moſt of them all of a gore blood; In the mean time things ſo horrible to behold, and mournful to hear, ſo much afflicted all the Aſſiſtants, that the very *Bramaas* of the Guard, though men of war, and conſequently but little inclined to compaſſion, being alſo enemies to the *Chaubainhaa*, could not forbear weeping. It was likewiſe in this place, where *Nhay Canatoo*, and all the other Ladies that attended on her, fainted twice, by reaſon whereof they were fain to let the *Chaubainhaa* alight from his Elephant for to go and comfort her; whereupon ſeeing her lying upon the ground in a ſwoon with her four children in her arms, he kneeled down on both his knees, and looking up to Heaven with his eyes full of tears. *O mighty Power of God*, cryed he, *who is able to comprehend the righteous judgements of thy divine Juſtice, in that thou, having no regard to the innocency of theſe little creatures, giveſt way to thy wrath, which paſſeth far beyond the reach of our weak capacities! but remember; O Lord, who thou art, and not what I am:* This ſaid, he fell with his face on the ground, near to the Queen his wife, which cauſed all the Aſſembly, who were without number, to make another ſuch loud and horrible cry, as my words are not able to expreſs it; The *Chaubainhaa* then took water in his mouth, and ſpurted it on his wife, by which means he brought her to her ſelf again, and ſo taking her up in his arms, he fell a comforting her with ſpeeches ſo full of zeal and devotion, as any one that heard him would have taken him rather for a [redacted]

*Gentile.* After he had employed about half an hours time therein, and that they had remounted him on his Elephant, they proceeded on their way in the ſame order as they held before, and as ſoon as the *Chaubainhao* was out of the City gate, and came to the ſtreets which was formed of the ſeveral Companies of the ſtrangers, ranked in two Files, he by chance caſt his eye on that ſide, where the ſeven hundred *Portugals* were, all of them in their beſt clothes, with their buffe-coats, great feathers in their Caps, and their Harquebuſes on their ſhoulders, as alſo *Joano Coyeyro* in the middeſt of them, in a Carnation Satin Suit, and a guilt Partiſan in his hand, wherewith he made room; the afflicted Prince no ſooner knew him, but he preſently fell down on the Elephant, and there ſtanding ſtill without paſſing on, he ſaid with tears in his eyes, to thoſe that were about him; *My brethren, and good friends, I proteſt unto you, that it is a leſs grief unto me to make this ſacrifice of my ſelf, which the divine Juſtice of God permits me to make him this day, than to look upon men ſo wicked and ingrateful as theſe ſame here are; either kill me then, or ſend theſe away, for otherwiſe I will not ſtir a foot further.* Having ſaid ſo he turned away his face three times that he might not behold us, thereby ſhewing the great ſpleen that he bore us; and indeed all things well conſidered there was a great deal of reaſon that he ſhould carry himſelf in that ſort towards us in regard of that which I have related before: In the mean time the Captain of the Guard ſeeing the ſtay which the *Chaubainhao* had made, and underſtanding the cauſe why he would not go on, though he could not imagine wherefore he complained ſo of the *Portugals*, yet he haſtily turned his Elephant towards *Coyeyro*, and giving him a ſcurvy look: *Get you gone*, ſaid he, *and that inſtantly, for ſuch wicked men as you are do not deſerve to ſtand on any ground that bears fruit, and I pray God to pardon him which hath put it in the Kings head that you can be any ways profitable unto him; It were fitter for you therefore to ſhave away your beards that you may not deceive the World as you do, and we will have Women in your places that ſhall ſerve us for our money.* Whereupon the *Bramaas* of the Guard, being incenſed againſt us, drove us away from thence with a great deal of ſhame and contumely. And truly, not to lye, never was I ſo ſenſible of any thing as this in reſpect of the honour of my Country-men. After this, the *Chaubainhao* went on till he came to the Tent of the King, who attended him with a Royal Pomp: for he was accompanied with a great number of Lords, amongſt the which there were fifteen *Bainhaas*, who are as Dukes with us, and of ſix or ſeven others, that were of greater dignity than they: As ſoon as the *Chaubainhao* came near him, he threw himſelf at his feet, and ſo proſtrated on the ground he lay there a good while, as it were in a ſwoon, without ſpeaking a word, but the *Rolim* of *Mounay*, that was cloſe by him, ſupplyed that defect, and like a religious man, as he was, ſpake for him to the King, ſaying; *Sir, Here is a Spectacle able to move thy heart to pity, though the crime be ſuch as it is; Remember then that the thing moſt pleaſing to God in this World, and wherewnto the effects of his mercy is ſooneſt communicated, is ſuch an action, and voluntary ſubmiſſion, as this is, which here thou beholdeſt: It is for thee now to imitate his clemency, and ſo to do thou art moſt humbly intreated by the hearts of all them that are mollified by ſo great a misfortune as this is; Now if thou graunteſt them this their requeſt, which with ſo much inſtance they beg of thee, be aſſured that God will take it in good part, and that at the hour of thy death he will ſtretch forth his mighty hand over thee, to the end thou mayſt be exempted from all manner of faults.* Hereunto he added many other ſpeeches, whereby he perſwaded the King to pardon him; at leaſt-wiſe he promiſed ſo to do, wherewith the *Rolim*, and all the Lords there preſent, ſhewed themſelves very well contented, and commended him exceedingly for it, imagining that the effect ſhould be anſwerable to that which he had ingaged himſelf for before all. Now becauſe it began to be night, he commanded the moſt of them that were about him to retire, as for the *Chaubainhao*, he committed him into the hands of a *Bramaa* Commander, named *Xemin Commedau*, and the Queen his wife, with his children, and the other Ladies were put into the cuſtody of *Xemin Anſedaa*, as well becauſe he had his wife there, as for that he was an honourable old man, in whom the King of *Bramaa* much confided.

§. 2. The fear which the King of *Bramaa* was in leſt the men of war ſhould enter into the City of *Martabano*, and ſhould pillage it now that it was night before he had done all that, which I am hereafter to relate, was the cauſe that he ſent to all the gates of the City, being four and twenty, *Bramaa* Captains for to guard them, with expreſs Commandment, that upon paiſ of death no man ſhould be ſuffered to enter in at any of them, before he had taken order for the performance of the promiſe, which he had made to the ſtrangers to give them the

ſpoyl

ſpoil of it; howbeit he took not that care, and uſed ſuch diligence for the conſideration he ſpake of, but onely that he might preſerve the *Chanbainhaas* treaſure, to which effect he ſpent two whole days in conveighing it away, it being ſo great that a thouſand men were for that ſpace altogether imployed therein; At the end of theſe two days the King went very early in the morning to an hill, called *Beidao*, diſtant from his quarters ſome two or three flight ſhoot, and then cauſed the Captains that were at the Guard of the gates to leave them, and retire away; whereupon the miſerable City of *Martabono* was delivered to the mercy of the Souldiers, who at the ſhooting off of a Cannon, which was the ſignal thereof, entred preſently into it pell-mell, and ſo thronging together, that at the entring into the gates, it is ſaid above three hundred were ſtifled, for as there was there an infinite company of men of War of different Nations, the moſt of them without King, without Law, and without the fear and knowledge of God, they went all to the Spoile with cloſed eyes, and therein ſhewed themſelves ſo cruel minded, that the thing they made leaſt reckoning of was to kill an hundred men for a crown; And truly the diſorder was ſuch in the City, as the King himſelf was fain to go thither ſix or ſeven times in Perſon for to appeaſe it. The Sack of this City endured three days and an half, with ſo much avarice and cruelty of theſe barbarous enemies, as it was wholly pillaged, without any thing left that might give an eye-cauſe to covet it. That done, the King with a new ceremony of Proclamations cauſed the *Chanbainhaas* Pallaces, together with thirty or forty very fair rich Houſes of his principal Lords, and all the *Pagods* and Temples of the City to be demoliſhed, ſo that according to the opinion of many, it was thought that the loſs of thoſe magnificent Edifices amounted to above ten millions of gold: wherewith not yet contented he commanded all the buildings of the City that were ſtill a foot, to be ſet on fire, which by the violence of the wind kindled in ſuch manner, as in that onely night there remained nothing unburnt, yea the very Walls, Towers, and Bulwarks were conſumed even to the foundations. The number of them that were killed in this Sack was threeſcore thouſand perſons, nor was that of the priſoners much leſs. There were an hundred and forty thouſand houſes, and ſeventeen hundred Temples burnt, wherein alſo were conſumed threeſcore thouſand Statues, or Idols of divers mettals, during this Siege they of the City had eaten three thouſand Elephants. There was found in this City ſix thouſand pieces of Artillery, what of braſs and iron, an hundred thouſand Quintals of Pepper, and as much of Sanders, Benjamin, Lacre, Lignum Aloes, Camphire, Silk, and many other kinds of rich Marchandiſe, but above all an infinite number of commodities, which were come thither from the *Indiaes* in above an hundred veſſels of *Cambaya*, *Achem*, *Melinda*, *Ceilam*, and of all the Streight of *Mecqua*, of the *Lequios*, and of *China*. As for the gold, ſilver, precious ſtones, and jewels, that were found there, one knows not truly what they were, for thoſe things are ordinarily concealed; wherefore it ſhall ſuffice me to ſay, that ſo much as the King of *Bramaa* had for certain of the *Chanbainhaas* Treaſure, amounted to an hundred Millions of gold, whereof, as I have ſaid before, our King loſt the Moitie, as well for our ſins, as through the malice and envy of wicked diſpoſitions. The next day after the City was pillaged, demoliſhed, and burnt, there was ſeen in the morning upon the hill where the King was, one and twenty pair of Gallows, twenty of the which were of an equal height, and the other a little lower erected on pillars of ſtone, and guarded by an hundred *Bramaa* Horſmen; There were alſo round about the place very large Trenches, where a great many Banners ſpotted with drops of bloods were planted. As this Novelty promiſed ſomewhat which no man had heard of before, ſix of us *Portugals* ran thither to learn what the matter might be, and as we were going along we heard a great noiſe made by the men of War from the Camp, whereupon we ſaw come out of the Kings Quarter a number of Horſmen, who with Lances in their hands prepared a great Street, and cried out aloud; *Let no man upon pain of death appear in Armes, nor utter that with his mouth which he thinks in his heart.* A pretty way off from theſe Horſe was the *Xemimbrum*, with an hundred armed Elephants, and a good many Foot; after them went fifteen hundred *Bramaas* on Horſback, caſt into four Orders of Files, each of them ſix in a rank, whereof the *Talanagybras*, Viceroy of *Tangu*, was Commander: Then marched the *Chanſereo Siammon* with three thouſand *Siammes*, armed with Harquebuſes and Lances, all in one Battalion: In the midſt of theſe was an hundred and twenty women tyed and bound four and four together, and accompanied with *Talagrepes*, men of great Auſterity, and are ſuch as the *Capachins* amongſt us, who laboured all they might to comfort them in this laſt act of life;

Behind them were twelve Uſhers with Maces, that went before *Nhay Canatoo*, Daughter to the King of *Pegu*, from whom this *Bramaa* Tyrant had uſurped his Kingdom, and wife to the *Chanbainhaa*, with four children of hers, which were carried by ſo many Horſmen: all theſe ſufferers were the wives or daughters of the principal Commanders that the *Chanbainhaa* had with him in the City, upon whom in the way of a ſtrange revenge this *Bramaa* Tyrant deſired to wreak his ſpight, and the hatred that he had alwayes born unto women. The moſt of theſe poor wretches were between ſeventeen and five and twenty years of age, all of them very white and fair, with bright auborn hair, but ſo weak in body, that oftentimes they fell down in a ſwoon, out of which certain women upon whom they leaned, endeavoured ſtill to bring them again, preſenting them Comfits, and other ſuch things fit for that purpoſe, but they would take none of them, for that they were, as I have ſaid, ſo feeble and benummed, as they could ſcarce hear what the *Talegrepos* ſpake unto them, only they now and then lifted up their hands to Heaven. After this Princeſs marched threeſcore *Grepos*, in two Files, praying with their looks fixed on the ground, and their eyes watered with tears, ſaying over and anon in a doleful tone; *Thou which holdeſt thy Being of none but thy ſelf, ſo juſtifie our Works, that they may be agreeable to thy Juſtice.* Whereunto others anſwered weeping; *Grant, Lord, that it may be ſo, that through our fault we loſe not the rich gifts of thy promiſes.* After theſe *Grepos* followed a proceſſion of three or four hundred little children, quite naked from the Girdle-ſted downwards, having in their hands great white wax lights, and cords about their necks; Theſe, like the others, with a ſad and lamentable voice, which moved every one to compaſſion, uttered theſe words: *We moſt humbly beſeech thee, O Lord, to give ear unto our cries and groans, and ſhew mercy to theſe thy Captives, that with a full rejoycing they may have a part of the graces and benefits of thy rich treaſures*; and much more they ſaid to that purpoſe in favour of theſe poor ſufferers: Behind this Proceſſion was another Guard of Footmen, all *Bramaas*, and armed with Lances, Arrows, and ſome Harquebuſes. As for the Rear-ward, it conſiſted of an hundred Elephants, like to them that marched firſt of all, ſo that the number of the men of War that aſſiſted at this Execution, as well for the Guard, as for the Pomp thereof, was ten thouſand Foot, and two thouſand Horſe, beſides the two hundred Elephants, and a world of other people, both Strangers and Natives, that came thither to behold the end of ſo mournful and lamentable and action.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LII.

*In what ſort the ſentence of Death was executed on the perſon of the* Chaubainhas, *King of* Martaban, Nhay Canatoo *his wife, and an hundred and forty Women; with that which the King of* Bramas *did after his return to* Pegu.

§. 1. THeſe poor ſufferers having been led in the order before mentioned clean through the Camp, they came at laſt to the place of Execution, where the ſix Uſhers with a loud voyce made this Proclamation: *Let all manner of people ſee and obſerve the bloody juſtice, which is here to be done by the living God, Lord of all truth, and our King the Soveraign of our Heads, who of his abſolute power doth command that theſe hundred and forty Women be put to death, and thrown into the ayr, for that by their counſel and incitement their Fathers and Huſbands ſtood out againſt us in this City, and at times killed twelve thouſand* Bramaas *of the Kingdom of* Tangu. Then at the ringing of a Bell all the Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice pel-mell together with the guards, made ſuch a cry, as was moſt dreadful to hear; wherupon the cruel Hangmen being ready to put the ſentence of Death in execution, thoſe poor wretches embraced one another, and ſhedding abundance of tears they addreſſed themſelves to *Nhay Canatoo*, who lay at that time almoſt dead in the lap of an old Lady, and with their laſt complements one of them ſpake for all the reſt unto her in this manner; *Excellent Lady, that art as a crown of Roſes upon our Heads, now that we thy humble ſervants are entering into thoſe mournful Manſions where Death doth reſide, comfort us we beſeech thee with thy dear ſight, that ſo we may with leſs grief quit theſe bodies full of anguiſh for to preſent our ſelves before that Almighty juſt Judg, of whom we will for ever implore his juſtice for a perpetual vengeance of the wrong that is done us.* Then *Nhay Canatoo* beholding them with a countenance more dead then alive, anſwered them with a feeble voyce, that could ſcarce be heard, *Go not away ſo ſoon, my Siſters, but help me to ſuſtain theſe little children.* That ſaid, ſhe leaned down again on the boſom of that Lady, without ſpeaking a word more, whereupon the Miniſters of the Arm of Vengeance, ſo they term the Hangmen, layd hold on thoſe poor women, and hanged them up all by the feet, with their heads downwards, upon twenty Gibbets, namely ſeven on each one: now ſo painful a death as this was, made them give ſtrange and fearful groanes and ſobs, until at length the blood ſtifled them all in leſs then an hour. In the mean time *Nhay Canatoo* was conducted by the four women, upon whom ſhe leaned, directly to the Gallows whereon ſhe and her four children were to be hanged, and there the *Rolim* of *Mounay*, who was held amongſt them for a holy man, uſed ſome ſpeeches unto her for to encourage her the better to ſuffer death, whereupon ſhe deſired them to give her a little water, which being brought unto her, ſhe filled he mouth with it, and ſo ſpurted it upon her four children, whom ſhe held in her arms; then having kiſſed them many times, ſhe ſaid unto them weeping, *O my Children, my Children, whom I have conceived anew within the interior of my Soul, how happy would I think my ſelf if I might redeem your lives with the loſs of mine own a thouſand times over if it were poſſible! for in regard of the fear and anguiſh wherein I ſee you at this preſent, and wherein every one ſees me alſo, I ſhould receive Death with as good an heart from the hand of this cruel Enemy, as I willingly deſire to ſee my ſelf in the preſence of the Soveraign Lord of all things, within the repoſe of his celeſtial Habitation.* Then turning her to the Hangman, who was going to bind her two little boys, *Good Friend*, ſaid ſhe, *be not I pray thee ſo void of pity, as to make me ſee my children dye, for in ſo doing thou wouldſt commit a great ſin: wherefore put me firſt to death, and refuſe me not this Boon which I crave of thee for Gods ſake.* After ſhe had thus ſpoken ſhe took her children again in her arms, and kiſſing them over and over in giving them her laſt farewell, ſhe yielded up the ghoſt in the Ladies lap upon whom ſhe leaned, not ſo much as once ſtirring ever after, which the Hangman perceiving, ran preſently unto her and hanged her as he had done the reſt, together with her four little children, two of each ſide of her, and ſhe in the middle. At this cruel and pitiful ſpectacle there aroſe from amongſt all this people ſo great and hideous a cry, that the Earth ſeemed to tremble under the feet of them that ſtood upon it, and withall there followed ſuch a Mutiny throughout the whole Camp, as the King was conſtrained to

fortifie

fortifie himſelf in his quarter with ſix thouſand *Bramaa* Horſe, and thirty thouſand Foot, and yet for all that he thought not himſelf ſecure enough from it, had not the night come, which onely was able to calm the furious motions of theſe men of war; For of ſeven hundred thouſand which were in the Camp, ſix hundred thouſand were by Nation *Pegu's*, whoſe King was the Father of this Queen, that was thus put to death; but this Tyrant of *Bramaa* had ſo diſarmed and ſubjected them, as they durſt not ſo much as quich upon any occaſion. Behold in what an infamous manner *Nhay Canatoo* finiſhed her days, a Princeſs every way accompliſhed, wife to the *Chanbainhaa* King of *Martabano*, and the daughter of the King of *Pegu*, Emperor of nine Kingdoms, whoſe yearly Revenue amounted unto three millions of Gold. As for the infortunate King her Husband, he was the ſame night caſt into the River with a great ſtone tyed about his neck, together with fifty or threeſcore of his chiefeſt Lords, who were either the Fathers, Husbands or Brothers of thoſe hundred and forty Ladies, that were moſt unjuſtly put to ſuch an ignominious death, amongſt the which there were three, whom this King of *Bramaa* had demanded in marriage at ſuch time as he was but a ſimple Earl, but not one of their Fathers would condeſcend unto it, whereby one may ſee how great the revolutions of time and fortune are.

§. 2. After the Tyrant of *Bramaa* had cauſed this rigorous Juſtice to be done, he ſtayed there nine whole days, during the which many of the Inhabitants of the City were alſo executed; At laſt he departed for to go to *Pegu*, leaving behind him *Bainhaa Chaque*, Lord Steward of his Houſe, to take order for all things that might conduce to the pacifying of that Kingdom, and to provide for the repairing of what the fire had conſumed, to which purpoſe he placed a good Gariſon there, and carryed with him the reſt of his Army; *Joano Cayeyro* followed him alſo with ſeven hundred *Portugals*, not above three or four remaining behind in the ruines of *Martabano*, and thoſe too not very conſidetable, except it were one, named *Gonçalo Falcan*, a Gentleman well born, and whom theſe *Gentiles* commonly called *Criſna Pacau*, that is to ſay, *Flower of Flowers*, a very honorable Title amongſt them, which the King of *Bramaa* had given him in recompence of his ſervices: Now for as much as at my departure from *Malaca*, *Pedro de Faria* had given me a Letter directed unto him, whereby he deſired him to aſſiſt me with his favor, in caſe I had need of it in the affair for which he ſent me thither, as well for the ſervice of the King, as for his own particular; as ſoon as I arrived at *Martabano*, where I found him reſident, I delivered him this Letter, and withall gave him an account of the occaſion that brought me thither, which was to confirm the ancient league of Peace that the *Chanbainhaa* had made by his Embaſſadors with them of *Malaca*, at ſuch time as *Pedro de Faria* was firſt Governor of it, and whereof he could not chuſe but have ſome knowledg; adding moreover, how to that effect I had brought the *Chanbainhaa* Letters full of great proteſtations of amity, and a Preſent of certain very rich Pieces of *China*. Hereupon this *Gonçalo Falcan* imagining that by means hereof he might inſinuate himſelf much more into the good grace of the King of *Bramaa*, to whoſe ſide he turned at the ſiege of *Martabano*, quitting that of the *Chanbainhaa*, whom formerly he ſerved, he went three days after the Kings departure to his ſaid Governor, and told him that I was come thither, as Embaſſador from the Captain of *Malaca* to treat with the *Chanbainhaa*, unto whom the Captain ſent an offer of great Forces againſt the King of *Bramaa*, in ſo much that they of the Country were upon the point of fortifying themſelves in *Martabano*, and chaſing away the *Bramaas* out of the Kingdom; whereunto he added ſo many other ſuch like matters, that the Governor ſent preſently to apprehend me, and after he had put me into ſafe cuſtody, he went directly to the Junck, in which I came from *Malaca*, and ſeized upon all the goods that were in her, which were worth above an hundred thouſand duckets, committing the *Necoda*, Captain and Maſter of the Junck, to priſon, as alſo all the reſt that were in her, to the number of an hundred threeſcore and four perſons, wherein comprized forty rich Merchants, *Malayes*, *Menancabo's*, *Mahumetans*, and *Gentiles*, Natives of *Malaca*. All theſe were incontinently condemned to a confiſcation of their goods, and to remain the Kings priſoners, as well as I, for being complices in the Treaſon, which the Captain of *Malaca* had plotted in ſecret with the *Chanbainhaa* againſt the King of *Bramaa*. Having thus cauſed them to be put into a deep Dungeon, he made them to be ſo cruelly ſcourged, that within a month after their impriſonment, of an hundred ſixty four of them, which they were, there dyed nineteen, either of a Lethargy, or of hunger, or thirſt. As for the reſt, they were put into a miſerable

miſerable Shallop without Sails or Oars, wherein they were expoſed down the River: Being delivered in this ſort to the mercy of Fortune, they were caſt by the wind into a deſart Iſland, called *Pulho Cannida*, ſeated twenty leagues within the Sea of this Bar, where they furniſhed themſelves with ſome Sea-fiſh, and ſuch fruits as they found in the woods, and in this neceſſity making a kind of ſail of the clothes they had, and with two Oars, which it may be they met withall there, or made themſelves, they took their courſe all along by the Coaſt of *Junçalan*, and from thence to another place, wherein they employed the ſpace of two months, arriving at length at the River of *Pontas* in the Kingdom of *Querda*, where they all dyed of certain Impoſtumes, which roſe in their throats like unto Carbuncles, two only excepted, who came to *Malaca*, and recounted to *Pedro de Faria* the whole ſucceſs of this ſad Voyage, and how that I was condemned to dye, as indeed I expected every hour to be led to execution, when as it pleaſed God to deliver me miraculouſly; for as ſoon as the *Necoda* and the Merchants were baniſhed in the manner that I have declared, I was committed to another priſon farther off, where I remained ſix and thirty days laden with chains and irons in a moſt cruel and inſupportable manner; During all that time the Traytor *Gonçalo* exhibited againſt me daily new and falſe allegations, wherein he charged me with a world of things, which I never ſo much as thought of, and that to no other intent but to procure my death, that ſo he might rob me, as he had done all the reſt that were in the Junck: To which end, having queſtioned me three ſeveral times in Judgment, I never anſwered any thing to his Interrogatories that was to purpoſe, whereat he and other of my Enemies were much enraged, ſaying, that I did it out of pride, and in contempt of Juſtice, ſo that for a puniſhment thereof they cauſed me to be openly whipped, and a great deal of lacre, which is like unto hard wax, to be dropped ſcalding hot upon me, whereof the pain was ſuch, as it had almoſt killed me, and indeed all that were by, held me for a dead man. Now becauſe for the moſt part I know not what I ſpake, but talked like a deſperate man, I happened three or four times to ſay, that for to rob me of my goods I had all theſe falſe accuſations put upon me, but that Captain *Joano Cayyro*, who was at *Pegu*, would ere it were long acquaint the King with this cruel uſage of me, which was the cauſe of ſaving my life; for even as this wicked Governor was going to have the ſentence executed, which was given againſt me, ſome of his friends counſelled him to forbear, ſaying, that if he put me to death, no doubt but that all the *Portugals*, which were at *Pegu*, would complain of him to the King, and tell him, that for to rob me of an hundred thouſand duckets, which I had there in Commodities, appertaining to the Captain of *Malaca*, he had moſt unjuſtly taken away my life: And that this being ſo, the King would demand an account of him of all thoſe Commodities, or of the Mony for them, and that if he rendered him even all that he had taken from me, yet would not that content him, imagining ſtill there was ſomewhat more, whereby he would ſo put himſelf out of the good grace of the King, as he would never recover it again, which would be the cauſe of the utter overthrown both of himſelf and his children, beſides the diſhonor that would redound to him over and above. This dog the Governor *Bainbaa Chaque*, fearing leſt that ſhould come to paſs which they had ſaid, deſiſted from his former obſtinacy, and correcting the ſentence he had given, he ordained, That I ſhould not dye, but that my goods ſhould be confiſcated, and my ſelf arreſted for the Kings priſoner; As indeed ſo ſoon as I was healed of the hurts, which the burning of the lacre, and the ſtripes of the whips had made upon me, I was conducted in chains to *Pegu*, and there as a priſoner was put into the hands of a *Bramaa*, Treaſurer to the King, named *Dioſoray*, who had alſo in his cuſtody eight other *Portugals*, whoſe ſins had procured them the ſame misfortune, which mine had cauſed unto me; for it was now full ſix months ſince theſe poor wretches had been in his power, being taken in the ſhip of *Don Anrique Deca* of *Cananor*, which by a tempeſt was caſt on that Coaſt. Now ſeeing that hitherto I have diſcourſed of the ſucceſs of my Voyage to *Martabano*, and of the benefit that redounded to me by my going thither for the ſervice of the King, which was no other then the loſs of my goods, and the impriſonment of my perſon; before I engage my ſelf further in theſe relations, I am reſolved to intreat of the divers Fortunes, which I ran in that Kingdom for the ſpace of two years and an half that I travelled therein, being the time of my Captivity, as alſo of the ſeveral Countries through which I was carryed by my croſſes and miſhaps, as [illegible] altogether neceſſary for the declaration of that which I am going on withall. t after

this

this King of *Bramaa* was departed from the City of *Martabane*, as I have related before, he journeyed ſo long that at length he came to *Pegu*, where, before he diſmiſſed his Commanders, he cauſed a Muſter to be made of his Army, and found that of ſeven hundred thouſand men, which he had carryed along with him to the beſieging of the *Chunbainbaa*, there was fourſcore and ſix thouſand of them wanting: And for as much as he had about that time ſome inckling how the King of *Avaa*, confederated with the *Savadi* and *Chalem*, would give entry unto the *Siamon* (whoſe Country borders on the Weſt and Northweſt ſide on the *Calaminhan*, Emperor of the indomptable Forces of the Elephants of the Earth, as I will ſhew hereafter when I ſpeak of him) to the end he might win from this *Bramaa* the chiefeſt ſtrengths of his Kingdom, he like a good Captain as he was, and very cunning in matter of War, before he paſſed on further, cauſed men to be levyed, with whom, as alſo with all other neceſſary things he furniſhed thoſe principal Fortreſſes from whence his greateſt fear proceeded. Then having reſolved to go and beſiege the City of *Prom*, he retained the Army, which he had already a foot, and made new and great preparations throughout the Kingdom, uſing ſuch diligence therein, as in ſix months time he had got together the number of nine hundred thouſand men, whom he imbarqued in twelve thouſand rowing Veſſels, whereof two thouſand were *Seroos*, *Lanlers*, *Caturos*, and *Foiſts*. Now all this great Fleet ſet forth from *Pegu* the ninth day of *March*, 1545. and going up the River of *Anſodaa*, it went to *Danaplun*, where it was furniſhed with all ſuch proviſions as was neceſſary. From this place following on their way through a great River of freſh water, called *Picau Malacon*, which was above a league broad, at length upon the thirteenth of *April* they came within view of *Prom*. There, by ſome whom they took that night, they learned, that the King was dead, and how he had left for his ſucceſſor to the Kingdom a ſon of his of thirteen years of age, whom the King his Father before he dyed had marryed to his wives ſiſter, the Aunt of the ſaid young Prince, and Daughter to the King of *Avaa*. This young King was no ſooner advertiſed of the King of *Bramaa* his coming to beſiege him in his City of *Prom*, but he ſent preſently away to the King his Father-in-law for ſuccor, which he inſtantly granted, and to that end ſpeedily raiſed an Army of 30000 *Mons*, *Tarées*, and *Chalems*, choyce men and trained up in the Wars, of whom he made a ſon of his, and brother to the Queen, General. In the mean time the *Bramaa*, having intelligence thereof, uſed all poſſible diligence for to beſiege the City before ſo great a ſuccor might arrive. To which purpoſe, having landed his Army in a plain, called *Meigavetan*, ſome two leagues below the City, he continued there five days in making ready ſuch preparations as were needful; Having given order for all things, he cauſed his Army to march one morning before day directly to the City, with the ſound of Drums, Fifes, and other ſuch inſtruments of War; where being arrived about noon without any oppoſition, he began preſently to ſettle his Camp, ſo that before it was night, the whole City was environed with Trenches, and very great Ditches, as alſo with ſix rows of Canoons, and other Pieces of Ordnance.

## Chap. LIII.

*That which paſſed between the Queen of* Prom, *and the King of* Bramaa, *together with the firſt Aſſault that was given to the City and the Succeſs thereof.*

THe King of *Bramaa* had been now five days before the City of *Prom*, when as the Queen that governed the State in the place of her Husband, ſeeing her ſelf thus beſieged, ſent to viſit this her enemy with a rich jewel of precious ſtones, which was preſented unto him by a *Talagrepo*, or religious man, of above an hundred years old, who was held amongſt them for a Saint, together with a Letter, wherein this was written; *Great and mighty Lord, more favoured in the Houſe of fortune then all the Kings of the earth, the force of an extream power, an increaſing of the Salt-ſeas, whereinto all leſſer rivers do render themſelves a Shield full of very fair devices, Proceſſor of the greateſt States, upon the Throne whereof thy feet do repoſe with a marvellous Majeſty: I* Nhay Nivolau, *a poor woman, Governeſs, and Tutreſs of my Son, an Orphan, do proſtrate my ſelf before thee with tears in mine eyes, and with the reſpect which ought to be rendred unto thee; I beſeech thee not to draw thy Sword againſt my weakneſs, for thou knoweſt that I am but a ſilly woman, which can but only cry unto God for the wrong that is done me, whoſe property alſo it is to ſuccour with mercy, and to chaſtice with juſtice the States of the world be they never ſo great, trampling them under his feet with ſo redoubted a power, that the very Inhabitants of the profound houſe of ſmoak do fear and tremble before this Almighty Lord: I pray and conjure thee not to take from me that which is mine, ſeeing it is ſo ſmall a thing, as thou ſhalt not be the greater for it when thou haſt it, nor yet the leſs if thou haſt it not; whereas contrarily, if thou, my Lord, wilt ſhew thy ſelf pitiful to me, that act of clemency will bring thee ſuch reputation, as the very Infants themſelves will ceaſe from ſucking the white breaſts of their Mothers for to praiſe thee with the pure lips of their innocency, and likewiſe all they of my Country, and Strangers will ever remember ſuch thy charity towards me, and I my ſelf will cauſe it to be graven on the Tombs of the dead, that both they and the living may give thee thanks for a thing, which I do beg of thee with ſo much inſtance from the bottom of my heart. This holy man,* Avenlachim, *from whom thou ſhalt receive this Letter, written with mine own hand, hath Power and Authority to treat with thee in the Name of my Fatherleſs Son, concerning all that ſhall be judged reaſonable touching the tribute and homage which thou ſhalt think fit to have rendred unto thee, upon condition that thou wilt be pleaſed to let us enjoy our houſes, ſo that under a true aſſurance thereof we may bring up our children, and gather the fruit of our labours for the nouriſhment of the poor Inhabitants of this paltry Town, who will all ſerve thee, and I to with a moſt humble reſpect in all things, wherein thou ſhalt think good to imploy us at thy pleaſure.*

The *Bramaa* received this Letter and Ambaſſage with a great deal of authority, and entertained the Religious man, that delivered it unto him, with much honour, as well in reguard of his age, as for that he was held as a Saint amongſt them; with all he granted him certain things which were at firſt demanded, as a Ceſſation of Arms till ſuch time as Articles ſhould be agreed on, as alſo a permiſſion for the Beſieged to converſe with the Beſiegers, and other ſuch things of little conſequence; In the mean time judging with himſelf that all thoſe offers, which this poor Queen made him, and the humble ſubmiſſions of her Letter proceeded from weakneſs and fear, he would never anſwer the Ambaſſadour clearly, or to purpoſe: Contrarily he cauſed all the places there abouts that were weak, and unarmed, to be ſecretly ranſaked, and the poor Inhabitants thereof to be unmercifully butchered by their barbarous enemies, whoſe cruelty was ſo great, that in five dayes, according to report, they killed fourteen thouſand perſons, the moſt part whereof, were women, children, and old men, that were not able to bear Arms. Hereupon the *Rolim*, who brought this Letter, relying no longer on the falſe promiſes of this Tyrant, and diſcontented with the little reſpect he uſed towards him, demanded leave of him to return to the City, which the *Bramaa* gave him, together with this anſwer; That if the Queen would deliver up her ſelf, her Treaſure, her Kingdom, and her Vaſſals to him, he would recompence her another way for the loſs of her State; but withall that ſhe was to return him a peremptory anſwer to this propoſition of his the very ſame day.

which was all the time I could give her, that ſo he might upon the knowledge of her reſolution determine upon what he had to do. The *Rolim* went herewith back to the City, where he gave the Queen an account of all things, ſaying, That this Tyrant was a man without faith, and replete with damnable intentions, for proof whereof he repreſented unto her the Siege of *Martabano*, the uſage of the *Chanbainhaa* after he rendred himſelf unto him upon his word, and how he had put him, his wife, his children, and the chiefeſt Nobility of his Kingdom to a moſt ſhamefull death. Theſe things conſidered it was inſtantly concluded, as well by the Queen, as by all thoſe of her Councel, that ſhe ſhould defend the City, till ſuch time as ſuccour came from her Father, which would be within fifteen days at the furtheſt: This reſolution taken, ſhe being of a great courage without further delay took order for all things, that were thought neceſſary for the defence of the City, animating to that end her people with great prudence, and a man-like Spirit, though ſhe was but a woman; Moreover, as ſhe liberally imparted to them of her Treaſure, ſo ſhe promiſed every one throughly to acknowledg their ſervices with all manner of recompences and honours, whereby they were mightily encouraged to fight: In the mean ſpace the King of *Bramaa*, ſeeing that the *Rolim* returned him no anſwer within the time prefixt, began the next day to fortifie all the Quarters of his Camp with double rows of Cannon, for to batter the City on every ſide; and for aſſaulting of the walls he cauſed a great number of Ladders to be made, publiſhing withall throughout his whole Army, that all Souldiers upon pain of death ſhould be ready within three days to go to the Aſſault; The time then being come, which was the third of *May*, 1545. About an hour before day the King went out of his Quarter, where he was at anchor upon the river with two thouſand veſſels of choice men, and giving the Signal to the Commanders which were on Land, to prepare themſelves, they altogether in one Body aſſailed the walls, with ſo great a cry, as if Heaven and earth would have come together, ſo that both ſides falling to encounter pell-mell with one another, there was ſuch a conflict betwixt them, as within a little while the air was ſeen all on fire, and the earth all bloody, whereunto being added the claſhing of weapons, and noiſe of guns, it was a ſpectacle ſo dreadful, that we few *Portugals*, who beheld theſe things, remained aſtoniſhed, and almoſt beſides our ſelves: This fight indured full five hours, at the end whereof the Tyrant of *Bramaa* ſeeing thoſe within defend themſelves ſo valiantly, and the moſt part of his Forces to grow faint, he went to land with ten or eleven thouſand of his beſt men, and with all diligence re-inforcing the Companies, that were fighting, the Bickering renewing in ſuch ſort, as one would have ſaid it did but then begin, ſo great was the fury of it. The ſecond trial continued till night, yet would not the King deſiſt from the fight, what counſel ſoever was given him to retire, but contrarily he ſwore not to give over the Enterpriſe begun, and that he would lie that night within the incloſure of the City walls, or cut off the heads of all thoſe Commanders that were not wounded at their coming off; In the mean time this obſtinacy was very pejudicial to him, for continuing the Aſſault till the Moon was gone down, which was two hours paſt midnight, he was then forced to ſound a Retreat, after he had loſt in this Aſſault, as was the next day found upon a Muſter, fourſcore thouſand of his men, beſides thoſe which were hurt, which were thirty thouſand at the leaſt, whereof many died for want of dreſſing, whence iſſued ſuch a plague in the Camp, as well through the corruption of the air, as the water of the river, that was all tainted with blood and dead bodies, that thereby about fourſcore thouſand more periſhed, amongſt whom were five hundred *Portugals*, having no other buriall then the bellies of Vultures, Crows, and ſuch like birds of prey, which devoured them all along the Coaſt where they lay.

§. 2. The King of *Bramaa*, having conſidered that this firſt Aſſault having coſt him ſo dear, would no more hazard his men in that manner, but he cauſed a great Terrace to be made with Bavins, and above ten thouſand Date-trees, which he commanded to be cut down, and on that he raiſed up a platform ſo high, as it over-topped the walls of the City two fathom, and more, where he placed fourſcore pieces of Ordnance, and with them continually battering the City for the ſpace of nine dayes together, it was for the moſt part demoliſhed with the death of fourteen thouſand perſons, which quite abated the poor Queens courage, eſpecially when ſhe came to underſtand that ſhe had but ſix thouſand fighting men left, all the reſt, which conſiſted of women, chidren, & old men, being unfit & unable to bear Arms. The miſerable beſieged ſeeing themſelves reduced to ſuch extreamity, aſſembled together in Councel, and there by the advice of the chiefeſt of them, it was concluded, That all in general ſhould anoint themſelves with the Oile of the Lamps of the Chappel of *Quiay Nivandel*, God of Battail of the field *Vitan*, and ſo offering

offering themſelves up in ſacrifice to him, ſet upon the platform, with a determination either to dye, or to vanquiſh, in vowing themſelves all for the defence of their young King, to whom they had ſo lately done homage, and ſworn to be true and faithful Subjects. This reſolution taken, which the Queen and all her Nobility approved of for the beſt and moſt aſſured, in a time wherein all things were wanting to them for the longer defending themſelves, they promiſed to accompliſh it in the manner aforeſaid by a ſolemn Oath, which they all took; Now there being no further queſtion but to ſee how they ſhould carry themſelves in this affair, they firſt of all made an Uncle of the Queens the Captains of this reſolute Band, who aſſembling theſe ſix thouſand together, the ſame night, about the firſt quarter of the watch, made a ſally out of the two gates that were neereſt to the Terrace and platform, and ſo taking courage from their deſpair, and reſolution to dye, they fought ſo valiantly, that in leſs then half an hour the whole Camp was put in diſorder, the Terrace gained, the fourſcore pieces of Cannon taken, the King himſelf hurt, the Palliſado burnt, the Trenches broken, and the *Xenimbram*, General of the Army, ſlain, with above fifteen thouſand men more, amongſt the which were five hundred *Turks*; there were moreover forty Elephants taken, beſides thoſe that were killed, and eight hundred *Bramaas* made priſoners, ſo that theſe ſix thouſand reſolute men did that, which an hundred thouſand, though valiant enough, could hardly have effected. After this they retreated an hour before day, and upon a review they found, that of ſix thouſand which they were, there was but ſeven hundred ſlain. This bad ſucceſs ſo grieved and incenſed the King of *Bramaa*, as attributing the cauſe thereof to the negligence of ſome of his Captains in the ill guarding of the Terrace, that the day following he cauſed two thouſand *Pegu's* to be beheaded, which had ſtood ſentinel that night. This adventure rendred things quiet for the ſpace of twelve days, during which the beſieged ſtirred not; in the mean time one of the four principal Captain of the City, named *Xemim Meleytay*, fearing that which all others in general miſdoubted, namely, that they could not eſcape from falling into the hands of ſo cruel an Enemy, treated ſecretly with the Tyrant, and upon condition that he would continue him in his charge, not meddle with any of the houſes of his friends, and make him *Xemin* of *Anſedaa* in the Kingdom of *Pegu*, with all the Revenue which the *Bainbaa* of *Malacca* had there, being thirty thouſand Duckats a year, he would deliver him up the City by giving him entrance into it through the gate which he commanded: The King of *Bramaa* accepted hereof, and for a gage of performance on his part, he ſent him a rich Ring from off his finger. This Treaſon ſo concluded, was effected on the three and twentieth of *Auguſt*, in the year 1545. wherein this Tyrant of *Bramaa* carryed himſelf with all the barbarouſneſs and cruelty that he uſed to practiſe in the like caſes. And for as much as I conceive that I ſhould never have done, if I ſhould recount here at large how this affair paſt, I will ſay no more, but that the gate was opened, the City delivered up, the Inhabitants all cut in pieces, without ſo much as ſparing one; the King and Queen made priſoners, their Treaſurers taken, the Buildings and Temples demoliſhed, and many other inhumanities exerciſed with ſuch outragiouſneſs, the belief whereof is beyond the imagination and thought of man, and truly I never repreſent unto my ſelf in what manner it was done, as having ſeen it with mine own eyes, but that I remain as it were aſtoniſhed and beſides my ſelf at it. For as this Tyrant was touched to the quick with the affront he had lately received, ſo he executed all the cruelties he could imagine againſt thoſe miſerable Inhabitants, for to be revenged of the ill ſucceſs he had had in the ſiege, which could not proceed from any other but a baſe mind and vile extraction, for it ordinarily falls out, that barbarouſneſs finds place in ſuch kind of people, rather then in generous and valiant hearts; Whereunto may be added, that he was a man without faith, and of an effeminate diſpoſition, though he was nevertheleſs an Enemy to women, albeit there were in that Kingdom, and in all the others whereof he was Lord, thoſe that were very white and fair. After the bloody ruine of that wretched City, the Tyrant entred into it in great pomp, and and as it were in triumph, through a breach that was made of purpoſe in the wall, and by his expreſs commandment. When he was arrived at the young Kings pallace, he cauſed himſelf to be crowned King of *Prom*, and during the Ceremony of this Coronation, he made that poor Prince, whom he had deprived of his Kingdom, to continue kneeling before him, with his hands held up, as if he adored ſome God, and ever and anon they conſtrained him to ſtoop down and kiſs the Tyrants feet, who in the mean time made ſhew as

if he were not pleaſed therewith. This done, he went into a Balcone, which looked on a great Market place, whither he commanded all the dead children, that lay up and down the ſtreets, to be brought, and then cauſing them to be hacked very ſmall, he gave them, mingled with Bran, Rice, and Herbs, to his Elephants to eat. Afterward, with a ſtrange kind of ceremony, at the ſound of Trumpets, Drums, and other ſuch like Inſtruments, there was above an hundred Horſes led in, loaden with the quarters of men and women, which alſo he commanded to be cut ſmall, and then caſt into a great fire, kindled expreſly for it. Theſe things ſo done, the Queen was brought before him, that was wife to the poor little King, who, as I ſaid before, was but thirteen years of age, and ſhe thirty and ſix, a woman very white, and well-favored, Aunt to her own Husband, Siſter to his Mother, and Daughter to the King of *Avaa*, which is the Country from whence the Rubies, Saphirs, and Emeralds do come to *Pegu*; and it was the ſame Lady, whom this *Braman* had ſent to demand in marriage of her Father, as it was then ſpoken, but that he refuſed him, ſaying to his Embaſſador for an anſwer, That the thoughts of his Daughter ſoared a pitch higher then to be the wife of the *Xemim* of *Tangun*, which was the family whence this Tyrant was iſſued: But now that ſhe was fallen into his hands as his ſlave, whether he uſed her ſo, either out of a revenge of that affront, or out of ſcorn and contempt, ſo it was that he made her to be publiquely ſtript ſtark naked, and to be torn and mangled with whipping, and then in that manner to be led up and down all the City, where amidſt the cries and hooting of the people, he expoſed her to other cruel torments, wherewith ſhe was tortured till ſhe gave up the ghoſt; When ſhe was dead, he made her to be bound to the little King her Husband, who was yet living, and having commanded a great ſtone to be tyed about their necks, they were caſt into the River, which was a kind of cruelty very dreadful to all that beheld it. To theſe barbarous parts he added many others ſo inhumane, as it is not likely that any other but he could imagine the like; And for a concluſion of his cruelties, the next day he cauſed all the Gentlemen that were taken alive, being ſome three hundred, to be impaled, and ſo ſpitted like roſted Pigs, to be alſo thrown into the River, whereby may be ſeen how great and unheard of the injuſtice of this Tyrant was, which he exerciſed on theſe miſerable wretches.

## Chap. LIV.

### *The King of* Brama *his beſieging of the Fortreſs of* Meleytay, *with his going from thence to* Ava; *and that which paſſed there.*

S.1. FOurteen days were paſt ſince the doing of theſe things, during the which the Tyrant employed himſelf in fortifying the City with a great deal of diligence and care, when as his ſpies, whom he had ſent out, brought him word, that from the City of *Avaa* a Fleet of four hundred rowing Veſſels was come down the River of *Queiter*, wherein there were thirty thouſand *Siamoſe* Soldiers, beſides the Mariners, of which the King of *Avaa* ſon, and brother to the poor Queen, was General; for this Prince having received advertiſement of the taking of the City of *Prom*, and of the death of his ſiſter and brother-in-law, went and lodged in the Fortreſs of *Meleytay*, which was ſome twelve leagues up the River from *Prom*. This news much troubled the Tyrant, howbeit he reſolved to go himſelf in perſon againſt his Enemies before that other ſuccors came to joyn with them, as indeed the report went, that fourſcore thouſand, all *Mons* by Nation, and led by the King of *Avaa*, were on their way thither: With this reſolution the Tyrant of *Braman* ſet forth towards *Meleytay* with an Army of three hundred thouſand men, namely two hundred thouſand by Land alongſt the Rivers ſide, whereof the *Chanmigrem* his Foſter-brother was Commander in chief, and the other hundred thouſand under his own conduct, being all choyce men, and imbarqued in two thouſand *Seroos*; Being come within ſight of *Meleytay*, the *Avaas* deſiring to ſhew that the reſolution wherewith they were come thither, was of far more power with them, then any fear they could have, and that alſo their Enemies might not receive any benefit by their Fleet which lay on the River, and do them an affront beſides by taking of it, they ſet all their Veſſels on fire, and burnt them every one; Then, without any dread of that which the fleſh doth naturally moſt fear, they got all into

the

the field, and ranged themſelves into four Battalions, in three of which, whereof each one made ten thouſand men, were the thirty thouſand *Mons*; and in the other, that were ſomewhat bigger, were all the Mariners of the four hundred Veſſels they had burnt: Theſe ſame they placed in the Vaunt-guard, with an intention that they ſhould weary the Enemies, with whom they made a cruel fight, which laſted about half an hour, wherein all theſe Mariners were cut in pieces; preſently after them the thirty thouſand *Mons*, cloſe compacted together in three Battalions, preſented themſelves, and with wonderful violence ſet upon their Enemies, between whom and them followed ſo extraordinary and cruel a battel, as not longer to inſiſt upon it, nor to recount in particular how things paſt, which alſo I cannot well do, it ſhall ſuffice me to ſay, that of the thirty thouſand *Mons*, eight hundred only eſcaped out of it, who being routed, made their retreat into the Fortreſs of *Meleytay*; but that which was moſt memorable herein was that of the King of *Bramaas* two hundred thouſand men, an hundred and fifteen thouſand lay dead in field, and all the reſt for the moſt part were wounded. In the mean time the Tyrant, which came along on the River in the two thouſand *Seroos*, arrived at the place of Battel, where beholding the ſtrange maſſacre which the *Mons* had made of his people, he became ſo enraged at it, that diſ-imbarquing his Forces, he inſtantly layd ſiege unto the Fortreſs, with a purpoſe, as he ſaid, to take all thoſe eight hundred that were in it alive. This ſiege continued ſeven whole days together, during the which thoſe without gave five aſſaults to it, and the beſieged defended themſelves always very valiantly, howbeit ſeeing that the laſt hour of their life was come, and that they could no longer hold that place for their King, as they had hoped they might, by reaſon of the freſh Forces which the King of *Bramaa* had landed, like couragious men as they were they reſolved to dye in the field, as their companions had done, and valiantly revenge their deaths with that of their Enemies, whereunto they were the more willingly carryed, becauſe they perceived well that if they continued ſtill in the place, they ſhould never make uſe of their valor, as they deſired to do, for that the Tyrants Ordnance would by little and little conſume them: This reſolution taken, they under the favor of a very dark and rainy night ſallyed forth, and firſt of all fell upon the two firſt Courts of guard that were on the Lands ſide, cutting all in pieces that they met withall; Then following their deſign they paſſed on like deſperate men, and whether they did it, either to ſhew that they regarded not death which threatened them, or for the deſire they had to gain honor, ſo it was that they behaved themſelves ſo couragiouſly, and preſſed the Tyrant ſo neer, as they forced him to leap into the River, and ſwim for his life, in ſo much that all the Camp was in diſorder, and broken through in I know not how many places, with the death of above twelve thouſand men, amongſt whom were fifteen hundred *Bramaas*, two thouſand ſtrangers of divers Nations, and all the reſt *Pegu's*. This fight laſt not above half an hour, in which time the eight hundred *Mons* were all ſlain, there being not ſo much as one of them that would yield upon any compoſition whatſoever. Hereupon the Tyrant of *Bramaa* ſeeing the fight ended, and all things quiet, went and reaſſembled his Forces together, and ſo entered into the Fortreſs of *Meleytay*, where he preſently commanded the *Xemims* head to be cut off, ſaying, that he was the ſole cauſe of that diſaſter, and that he who had been a Traytor to his King, could not be faithful unto him: behold the recompence which this Tyrant made him for delivering up the City of *Prom* unto him, howſoever it juſtly belonged unto him for a puniſhment of his perfidiouſneſs, that carryed him to betray his King and his own Country into the power of his Enemies: After this they fell to dreſſing of the hurt men, which were in very great number.

We paſt all this night with much apprehenſion, always keeping good watch; and the next morning as ſoon as it was day, the firſt thing that we did was to rid away the dead bodies, which were in ſo great number all over the Camp, that the ground was quite covered with them; After this we took a view of thoſe that were killed, as well on the one, as the other party, and we found that on the *Bramaas* ſide there were an hundred and fourſcore thouſand, and on the Prince of *Avaas* forty and two thouſand, wherein were comprized the thirty thouſand *Mons*. That done, after the Tyrant had fortified the City of *Prom*, as alſo the Fort of *Meleytay*, and made two other Forts upon the bank of the River, in ſuch places as he judged to be moſt important for the ſafety of that Kingdom, he went up the River of *Quitor* in a thouſand rowing *Seroos*, wherein were imbarqued

§. 2.

ſafely

ſeventy thouſand men. In this Voyage his intention was to go in his own perſon, for to obſerve the Kingdom of *Avaa*, and to ſee the City himſelf, the better to conſider the ſtrength of it, and thereby judg what Forces he ſhould bring for to take it; So he proceeded ſtill on for the ſpace of eight and twenty days, and during that time paſſed by many goodly places, which within the Kingdom of *Chalen* and *Jacuçalaon* were upon the bank of the River: At length he arrived at the City of *Avaa* the thirteenth of *October* the ſame year, a thouſand five hundred forty and five; Being come to the Port, he remained there thirteen days, and that while burned between two and three thouſand Veſſels that he found there; Moreover he ſet fire on many Villages thereabout, which coſt him not ſo little but that he loſt in all theſe degaſts eight thouſand of his men, amongſt the which were threeſcore and two *Portugals*. Now whereas this City was very ſtrong, as well in regard of the ſcituation of it, as of the Fortifications which were newly made there, it had beſides within it twenty thouſand *Mons*, who it was ſaid were come thither ſome five days before from the Mountains of *Pondalou*, where the King of *Avaa*, by the permiſſion of the *Siamon*, Emperor of that Monarchy, was levying above fourſcore thouſand men for to go and regain the City of *Prom*: for as ſoon as that King had received certain news of the death of his daughter and ſon-in-law, perceiving that he was not ſtrong enough of himſelf to revenge the wrongs this Tyrant had done him, or to ſecure himſelf from thoſe which he feared to receive of him in time to come, namely the depriving him of his Kingdom, as he was threatened, he went in perſon with his wife and children and caſt himſelf at the *Siamons* feet, and acquainting him with the great affronts he had received, and what his deſire was, he made himſelf his Tributary at threeſcore thouſand Biſſes by the year, which amount to an hundred thouſand Duckets of our mony, and a *gueta* of Rubies, being a meaſure like to our pynt, therewith to make a jewel for his wife; of which Tribute it was ſaid, that he advanced the payment for ten years beforehand, beſides many other precious ſtones, and very rich Plate, which he preſented him with, eſtimated in all at two millions, in recompence whereof the *Siamon* obliged himſelf to take him into his protection, yea and to march into the field for him as often as need ſhould require, and to re-eſtabliſh him within a year in the Kingdom of *Prom*, ſo as for that effect he granted him thoſe thirty thouſand men of ſuccor, which the *Bramas* defeated at *Meleytay*, as alſo the twenty thouſand that were then in the City, and the fourſcore thouſand which were to come to him, over whom the ſaid King of *Avaa* was to be the General. The Tyrant having intelligence thereof, and apprehending that this, above all other things he could fear, might be the cauſe of his ruine, he gave preſent order for the fortifying of *Prom* with much more care and diligence then formerly: howbeit before his departure from this River where he lay at anchor, being about ſome league from the City of *Avaa*, he ſent his Treaſurer, named *Dioçory* (with whom we eight *Portugals*, as I have related before, remained priſoners) Embaſſador to the *Calaminhan*, a Prince of mighty power, who is ſeated in the midſt of this region in a great and ſpacious extent of Country, and of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I come to ſpeak of him. The ſubject of this Embaſſage was to make him his Brother in Arms by a League and Contract of new amity, offering for that effect to give him a certain quantity of Gold and precious ſtones, as alſo to render unto him certain Frontier Lands of his Kingdom, upon condition that the Spring following he ſhould keep the *Siamon* in war for to divert him from ſuccoring the King of *Avaa*, and thereby give him means the more eaſily to take his City from him, without fear of that aſſiſtance which that King hoped ſhould ſerve for an obſtacle to his deſign. This Embaſſador departed then after he had imbarqued himſelf in a *Lanlea*, that was attended on by twelve *Seroos*, wherein there were three hundred men of ſervice, and his guard, beſides the Watermen and Mariners, whoſe number was little leſs. The Preſents which he carryed to the *Calaminhan* were very great, and conſiſted in divers rich pieces, as well of Gold as of precious ſtones, but above all in the Harneſs of an Elephant, which according to reports was worth above ſix hundred thouſand Duckets, and it was thought that all the Preſents put together amounted to a Million of Gold. At his departure, amongſt other favors, which the King his Maſter conferred on him, this ſame was not the leaſt for us, that he gave us eight unto him for to be his perpetual ſlaves; Having clothed us then very well, and furniſhed us abundantly with all things neceſſary, he ſeemed to be exceedingly contented with having us along with him in this Voyage, and ever after he made more account of us, then of all the reſt that followed him.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LV.

*Our going with the King of* Bramma's *Ambaſſadour to the* Calaminham, *with the Courſe which we held until we arrived at the Temple or* Pagod *of* Tintagoogoo, *and a Deſcription thereof.*

IT ſeems fit unto me, and conformable to that which I am relating, to leave for a while this Tyrant of *Bramma*, to whom I will return again when time ſhall ſerve, for to intreat here of the way we held for to go into *Timplan*, the capital City of the Empire of the *Calaminham*, which ſignifies, *Lord of the world*, for in their language *Cala* is Lord, and *Minham* the world; This Prince alſo entitles himſelf, *The abſolute Lord of the indomptable force of the Elephants of the Earth*; And indeed I do not think that in all the world there is a greater Lord then he, as I ſhall declare hereafter. This Ambaſſadour then departing from *Ava* in the month of *October*, a thouſand, five hundred, forty and five, took his courſe up the river of *Queiton*, ſteering Weſt, South-Eaſt, and in many places Eaſtward by reaſon of the winding of the water, and ſo in this diverſity of rhombes we continued our voyage ſeven days together, at the end whereof we arrived at a Channel, called *Guampanoo*, through which the *Rhobanbo*, who was our Pilot, took his courſe, that he might decline the *Siamoni* Country, being ſo commanded to do by the expreſs Order of the King: A while after we came to a great Town, named *Gataldy*, where the Ambaſſadour ſtayed three days to make proviſion of certain things neceſſary for his voyage. Having left this place we went on ſtill, rowing up through his Channel eleven dayes longer, during which time we met not with any place that was remarkable, only we ſaw ſome ſmall villages, the houſes whereof were covered with thatch, and peopled with very poor folks, and yet for all that the fields are full of Cattel, which ſeemed to have no Maſter, for we killed twenty and thirty of them in a day in the ſight of thoſe of the Country, no man ſo much as finding fault with it, but contrarily they brought them in courteſie to us, as if they were glad to ſee us kill them in that ſort. At our going out of this Channel of *Guampanoo* we entred into a very great river, called *Angegumaa*, that was above three Leagues broad, and in ſome places ſix and twenty fathom deep, with ſuch impetuous currents, as they drove us often-times from our courſe; This river we coaſted above ſeven dayes together, and at length arrived at a pretty little walled Town, named *Gumbim*, in the Kingdom of *Jangromaa*, invironed on the Lands ſide for five or ſix Leagues ſpace with Forreſts of *Benjamin*, as alſo with Plains of Lacre, wherewith they ordinarily traded to *Martaban*, and do alſo lade there many veſſels with thoſe commodities for to tranſport them into divers Countries of the *Indies*, as to the Streight of *Mecqua*, to *Alcoçer*, and *Judaa*. There is alſo in this Town great ſtore of Muſk, far better then that of *China*, which from thence is carried to *Martabano* and *Pegu*, where thoſe of our Nation buy of it therewith to traffique at *Narſingua*, *Orixaa*, and *Maſulepatan*. The women of this Country are all very white and well-favoured; They apparel themſelves with Stuffs made of Silk and Cotten-Wool, wear links of gold and ſilver about their legs, and rich Carcanets about their necks; The ground there is of it ſelf exceeding fertile in Wheat, Rice, Millets, Sugar, Wax, and Cattel: This Town with ten leagues of circuit about it, yields every year to the King of *Jangomaa* threeſcore Altars of gold, which are ſeven hundred thouſand Duckets of our mony. From thence we coaſted the river Southward, for the ſpace of above ſeven dayes, and arrived at a great Town, named *Catamma*, which in our language ſignifies, *the golden Crevice*, being the Patrimony of *Randavda Tinhan*, the *Calaminhams* ſecond Son. The *Naugator* of this Town gave good entertainment to the Ambaſſadour, and ſent him many ſorts of refreſhments for his followers; withall he gave him to underſtand that the *Calaminham* was at the City of *Timplan*. We departed from this place on a *Sunday* morning, and the day after about evening we came to a Forreſs, called *Campalagor*, built in the midſt of the river in the form of an Iſland upon a rock, and invironed with good free-ſtone, having three Bulwarks, and two Towers ſeven ſtories high, wherein, they told the Ambaſſador, was one of the four and twenty Treaſures, which the *Calaminham* had in this Kingdom, the moſt part whereof conſiſted in Ingots of ſilver, of the weight of ſix thouſand *Candins*, which are four and twenty thouſand Quintals, and it was ſaid, that all this ſilver was buried in wells under ground: After this we ſtill continued our courſe for the ſpace of thirteen days, [illegible] we ſaw on both ſides of the river many

many very goodly places, whereof the moſt were fair Towns, and the reſt ſtately high Trees, delicate Gardens, and great Plains full of Corn, as alſo much Cattel, red Deer, Shamoiſes, and Rhinocerots, under the keeping of certain men on horſback who looked to them whileſt they fed. On the river there were a great number of veſſels, where in much abundance was all things to be ſold which the earth produceth, wherewith it hath pleaſed God to enrich theſe Countries more then any other in the world. Now foraſmuch as the Ambaſſadour fell ſick here of an Impoſtume in his ſtomack, he was councelled to proceed no further till he was healed, ſo that he reſolved to go with ſome of his Train for to be cured to a famous Hoſpital, ſome twelve Leagues from thence, in a *Pagode*, named *Tinagongoo*, which ſignifies *the God of thouſand Gods*, and ſo departing at the ſame inſtant he arrived there on *Saturday* about night.

§. 2. The Ambaſſadour being ſet on ſhore was the next day led to an Hoſpital, called *Chipancan*, whither the greateſt Lords uſed to repair when they were ſick, and where there were two and forty ſeveral Lodgings very neat and convenient, in one of the which he was placed by the expreſs command of the *Punitalen*, who was as it were Governour of the Hoſpital: There care was taken that he wanted for nothing, but was furniſhed in abundance with all that was neceſſary for him: I will omit the odours, the neatneſs, the care of attendance, the veſſels, the robes, the exquiſite meats, the delicacies, and all the delights that may be imagined, which were to be had there with as much perfection and curioſity, as more cannot be deſired. Thither likewiſe came twice a day to him exceeding fair women, who ſung to the Tune of Inſtruments of Muſick, and at certain hours repreſented Playes, or Comedies before him, that were very pleaſant, and finely ſet forth. Now that I may not trouble my ſelf in recounting here at length the infinite number of things, which I could ſpeak of concerning this Subject, I will paſs over many of them in ſilence, whereof, other perſons that could better expreſs them then my ſelf, would peradventure make great eſteem. After we had been eight and twenty days there, by which time the Ambaſſador was perfectly cured, we departed from thence for to go to a Town, named *Meidur*, twelve leagues further up the river of *Angegunga*; But that I may not be blamed for failing in the promiſe which I made heretofore of ſpeaking of this *Pagode* of *Tinagongoo*, I will here leave the Ambaſſadour to his Voyage, and return me to the *Pagode*, that of ſo many things which we ſaw there I may deliver *ſome one*, for to ſhew how little we Chriſtians do to ſave our ſouls, in compariſon of that much theſe wretches do to loſe theirs. During the eight and twenty dayes which the Ambaſſadour imployed in recovering his health, we nine *Portugals* that waited on him not knowing what to do, or how to beſtow our time in the mean while, no more then the reſt, we paſt it away in divers things, according to each ones fancy and delight, for to that purpoſe we wanted no commodities. Thus ſome applied themſelves to the hunting of Stags and Wild-boars, whereof there is great ſtore in that Country; Some to the purſuing of Tygers, Rhinocerots, Ounces, Zeores, Lions, Buffles, Wild-bulls, and of many other ſuch kind of beaſts which we have not heard ſpoken of in our *Europe*; ſome to ſhooting at Wild-ducks, Geeſe, and ſuch like Water-fowl; ſome to hawking with Vultures and Faulcons; and ſome to fiſhing for Trowts, Mackarels, Chevins, Mullets, Soles, and many other ſorts of fiſh, whereof there is great abundance in all the rivers of this Empire. In this manner we beſtowed our time, now in one thing, and then in another, but that which we gave our ſelves moſt unto was to hear, and ſee, as alſo to enquire after the Laws of the Country, the *Pagodes*, and Sacrifices which we beheld there with much terrour and aſtoniſhment: Howbeit I purpoſe not to make any relation here more then of a few of them, which I conceive may ſuffice to draw out the conſequences of thoſe that I ſhall not diſcourſe of. I ſay then that one of thoſe ſacrifices was made on the day of the new Moon of *December*, namely on the ninth of that Month, which is a time wherein theſe blinded people are accuſtomed to celebrate a Feaſt, called by thoſe of the Country *Maſſunterivoo*; by thoſe of *Jappon*, *Feriou*; by the *Chineſes Maneioo*; by the *Lequios Champas*, and *Cauchins*, *Ampatilor*; by the *Siamens*, *Bramaas*, *Peſuas*, and *Sacotays*, *Sanſaperam*; ſo that though all theſe names through the diverſity of thoſe languages are different, yet do they in our tongue ſignifie all one thing, that is, *The memorial of all the dead*. This was then the Feaſt which we ſaw celebrated here with ſo much diverſity of things that we never dreamt of, as I know not where to begin; for ſuch a multitude of people of all the Nations of theſe Countries came flocking to this place, as is not to be expreſſed, howbeit

beit the chiefeſt cauſe of their repair thither in ſuch numbers, is a Fair, which is kept all the time of the Feaſt, being fifteen dayes, namely from the new to the full Moon. In this Fair are all things to be ſold, which Nature hath created on the earth, or in the Sea, and that in ſo high a degree of abundance, as there is not any one kind of thing, whereof there are not whole Streets of Houſes, Cabbins, or Tents, ſo long that one can hardly ſee from one end to the other. All theſe ſtreets are repleniſhed with very rich Merchants, beſides an infinite company of other people, who are lodged all along the River, which is above two Leagues broad, and planted about with ſeveral ſorts of Trees, as Walnuts, Chefnuts, Cocos, and Dates, whereof every one takes what he pleaſeth, becauſe it doth all belong to the *Pagode*. The Temple of this Idol is a very ſumptuous Edifice, ſcituated in the midſt of a Plain upon a little round hill, more then half a league in circuit: It is built all ſlope fifteen fathom high, and from thence upward it hath a wall of free-ſtone of ſome three fathom, with its Bulwarks, and Towers, after the faſhion of ours. Within the incloſure of this wall there is a platform made level with Battlements, a ſtones caſt in bredth, which together with the wall extends round about the hill, ſo that at firſt ſight one would take it for a Gallery. There are likewiſe all along an hundred and threeſcore Hoſpitals, in each whereof are above an hundred houſes, which are low, but very neat and convenient, where the Pilgrimes, *Fucaões*, and *Daroezes* are entertained, which come thither in troops, like the Gipſies in our *Europe*, with their Captains, each company of them having two or three thouſand perſons, ſome more, ſome leſs, according as the Kingdoms from whence they reſort are nearer or further off; now it is known of what Country they are by the devices which they carry in their Banners. From the top to the bottom it is all invironed with Cypreſs-trees, and Cedars, where many fountains of moſt excellent water do continually flow forth, and on the higheſt part of this hill, almoſt a quarter of a league in circuit, there are four Convents, and in them very ſumptuous and rich Temples, namely two of men, and as many of women, in each of which, as we were aſſured, were very near five hundred perſons. In the midſt of theſe four Monaſteries there is a Garden, compaſſed about with three incloſures of Balliſters of Lattin, having very fair Arches, of curious Maſons-work, and Steeples guilt all over, with a number of little ſilver bels in them, which ring continually with the moving of the air. This Chappel of the Idol *Tinagoogoo* is of a round form, all overlaid on the in-ſide with plates of ſilver wrought in flowers, and garniſhed with a great many Branches for lights of the ſame mettal. This Monſter, of whom we could not judge, whether he were gold, wood, or copper guilt, ſtood upright on his feet, with his hands lifted up to Heaven, and a rich Crown on his head; round about him were many other little Idols on their knees, and beholding him as it were amazed: Below were two men made of braſs, in the faſhion of Gyants, ſeven and thirty ſpans high, and very ugly and deformed, whom they held for the Gods of the twelve months of the year. Without this place alſo there were an hundred and forty Gyants, who ranked in two Files incloſed it round about, and were made of caſt iron, holding Halberds in their hands, as if they had been the Guard of it; ſo that all the Marvels of this Edifice put together made it appear ſo ſtately, that looking upon it one could not ſufficiently eſteem the riches and ſumptuouſneſs thereof. But ſetting aſide for this preſent the relation I could make of the buildings of this *Pagode*, becauſe that which I have ſaid of it may, me thinks, ſuffice for the underſtanding of the reſt, I will intreat here of the Sacrifices which we ſaw to be made there on a feſtival day, called by them, *Xipatilan*, ſignifiing, *The refreſhing of good people.*

## Chap. LVI.

*The great and ſumptuous Proceſſion made in this Pagode, together with their Sacrifices; and other particularities.*

§. 1. WHileſt this Feaſt of theſe *Gentiles*, as alſo the Fair, which was kept all the time thereof, endured for the ſpace of fifteen days, with an infinite concourſe of Merchants and Pilgrims, that came flocking thither from all parts, as I have declared before, there were many Sacrifices made there with different ceremonies, not a day paſſing without ſome new thing or other. For amongſt many of great charge, and very worthy of obſervation, one of the chiefeſt was a *Jubile* after their manner, which was publiſhed the fifth day of the Moon, together with a Proceſſion, that was above three leagues in length, as we could gueſs; It was the common opinion of all, that in this Proceſſion there were forty thouſand Prieſts of the four and twenty Sects, which are in this Empire, moſt of them were of different dignities, and called *Grepos*, *Talagrepos*, *Roolims*, *Nerpois*, *Bices*, *Sacarets*, and *Chanfaranhos*; Now by the ornaments they wear, as alſo by the devices and enſigns which they carry in their hands, they may be diſtinguiſhed, and ſo every of them is reſpected according to his dignity; Howbeit theſe went not on foot as the other ordinary Prieſts, for that they were at this day forbidden upon pain of great ſin to tread upon the ground, ſo that they cauſed themſelves to be born in *Pallaquins*, or Arm-chairs, upon the ſhoulders of other Prieſts their inferiors, apparelled in green Sattin, with their Stoles of Carnation Damask. In the midſt of the ranks of this Proceſſion were all the inventions of their Sacrifices to be ſeen, as alſo the rich Cuſtodes of their Idols, for the which each of them had a particular Devotion; They that carryed them were clothed in yellow, having each of them a big wax candle in his hand, and between every fifteen of thoſe Cuſtodes went a triumphant Charet, all which Charets put together were in number an hundred twenty and ſix: All theſe Charets were four, and ſome five ſtories high, with as many wheels on either ſide; In each of them there were at the leaſt two hundred perſons, what with the Prieſts and the Guards, and on the top of all an Idol of Silver, with a Mitre of Gold on its head, and all of them had rich chains of Pearl and precious ſtones about their necks; round about every Charet went little Boys, carrying Silver Maces on their ſhoulders, and behind them were a many of Caskets full of exquiſite perfumes, as alſo divers perſons with Cenſors in their hands, who ever and anon cenſed the Idol to the ſound of certain Inſtruments of Muſick, ſaying three times with a lamentable voyce, *Lord, aſſwage the pains of the dead, to the end they may praiſe thee peaceably*; whereunto all the people anſwered with a ſtrange noiſe, *Such may thy pleaſure be, and ſo may it come to paſs every day wherein thou ſheweſt us the Sun.* Each of theſe Charets was drawn by above three thouſand perſons, who for that purpoſe made uſe of very long coards, covered with ſilk, and thereby gained to themſelves plenary remiſſion of their ſins, without reſtitution to be made of any thing at all: Now that many might participate of this abſolution by drawing the coard, they ſet their hands to it one after and cloſe to another, continuing doing ſo to the very end, in ſuch ſort that the whole coard was covered with hands, and nothing elſe to be ſeen; but that they alſo which were without might gain this indulgence, they helped thoſe that had their hands on the coard by putting theirs about their ſhoulders, then they that were behind them did the like, and ſo conſequently all the reſt: In this manner throughout the whole length of the coard there were ſix or ſeven Ranks or Files, and in each of them above five hundred perſons. This Proceſſion was environed with a great number of Horſemen, that carryed ſtaves with pikes at both ends, who riding all about, went crying to the people, which were infinite in number, that they ſhould make way, and not interrupt the Prieſts in their prayers: Many times alſo they ſtruck thoſe ſo rudely whom they firſt met withall, as they beat down three or four together, or hurt them grievouſly, no man daring to find fault with, or ſo much as ſpeak a word againſt it. In this order this mervelous Proceſſion paſſed through above an hundred ſtreets, which to that end were all adorned with boughs of Palms and Myrtle, amongſt the which were many Standarts and Banners of Silk planted; There were alſo many Tables ſet up in divers places, where all that deſired it for Gods ſake were admitted to eat of free-coſt, yea and in other parts they had clothes

and

and mony given them; There likewiſe Enemies reconciled themſelves one to another, and the rich men forgave them their debts which were not able to pay. In a word, ſo many good works were done there, more proper for Criſtians, then for Gentiles, as I muſt needs conclude, that if they had been done with Faith and Baptiſm for the love of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and without any mixture of the things of this world, aſſuredly they would have been acceptable to him. But alas! the beſt was wanting to them, and that both for theirs and our ſins. Whileſt this Proceſſion, together with the Charets wherein the Idols were, paſſed along in this manner, and that with a dreadful noiſe of Drums, and other ſuch inſtruments, behold where out of certain wooden Sheds made expreſly for that purpoſe, ſix, ſeven, eight, or ten men, all beſmeared with odors, and wrapped up in ſilk, wearing Gold Bracelets about their wriſts, ſtart forth all at once, and room being inſtantly made them by the people, after they had ſaluted the Idol which was on the top of the Charet, they went and layd themſelves down athwart on the ground, ſo that the wheels coming to go over them cruſh'd them all to pieces, which the aſſiſtants beholding, cryed out aloud together; *My Soul be with thine:* Preſently whereupon nine or ten of the Prieſts deſcending from the Charet took up theſe bleſſed, or rather accurſed, creatures, that ſacrificed themſelves in this ſort, and putting the head, bowels, and all the other members ſo cruſhed in pieces into great bowls made for that purpoſe, they ſhewed them to the people from the higheſt part of the Charet where the Idol ſtood, ſaying with a pitiful voyce, *Miſerable ſinners, fall ye to praying, that God may make you worthy to be a Saint, as this here is, who hath now offered himſelf up as a ſweet ſmelling Sacrifice.* Whereunto all the people proſtrated on the ground anſwered with a fearful noiſe, *We hope that the God of a thouſand Gods will permit to be ſo.* In this manner many other of theſe wretches ſacrificed themſelves, to the number, as we were told by certain Merchants worthy of credit, of ſix hundred and more. After theſe followed other Martyrs of the Devil, whom they called *Xixaporaus*, which ſacrificed themſelves before the ſaid Charets, by moſt mercileſly laſhing themſelves with ſharp Raſors, that to behold them how they did it, one could not think but that they were altogether inſenſible; for they cut off great gobbets of their fleſh, and holding them on high at the end of Arrows, as if they would ſhoot them up to Heaven, they ſaid, *That they made a Preſent thereof to God for the Souls of their Fathers, of their Wives, of their Children, or of ſuch a one, for whoſe ſake they did this wicked work.* Now whereſoever this gobbet of fleſh chanced to fall, there ran ſo much people to catch it up, as oftentimes many were ſtifled in the preſs, for they held it as a very great relique. In this ſort theſe miſerable wretches ſtood upon their feet, all bathed in their own blood, without Noſes, without Ears, and without any reſemblance at all of man, until at length they fell down ſtark dead on the Earth, then came the *Grepos* in all haſte down from the top of the Charet, and cutting off their heads, ſhewed them to all the people, who kneeling on the ground, and lifting up their hands to Heaven cryed out with a loud voyce, *Let us, O Lord, live to that time, wherein for thy ſervice We may do as this ſame here hath done:* There were others alſo whom the Devil drew thither after another manner; Theſe ſame craving an Alms, ſaid, *Give me an Alms for Gods ſake, or if thou doſt it not, I will kill my ſelf.* So that if they were not preſently contented, they would inſtantly cut their own throats with Raſors which they held in their hands, or ſtab themſelves in to the belly, and ſo drop down ſtark dead; whereupon the *Grepos* ran ſuddenly to them, and having cut off their heads, ſhewed them, as before, to the people, who reverenced them proſtrated on the ground. We likewiſe ſaw ſome, named *Nucaraones*, men of a very ill look, clothed with Tygers skins, and carrying in their hands certain pots of Copper full of excrements, and filthy corrupted urine, the ſtench whereof was ſo horrible and inſupportable, as it was not poſſible for any noſtril to endure it; Theſe craving an Alms of the people, ſaid; *Give me an Alms, and that inſtantly, otherwiſe I will eat this ordure which the Devil eats, and beſpatter thee with it, that ſo thou mayſt be accurſed as he is.* They no ſooner uttered theſe words, but that all ran haſtily to give them an Alms, for if they ſtay'd never ſo little, they ſtraightway ſet the pot to their mouths, and taking a great ſup of that ſtinking ſtuff, they there with all to bedaſhed ſuch as they pleaſed; in the mean time all others that beheld them ſo dreſt, holding them accurſed, fell upon them, and entreated them in ſuch a ſtrange faſhion, as the poor wretches knew not which way to turn themſelves; for there was not a man of the company that drove them not away with blows, and that railed not at them, ſaying; *That they were accurſed for having been the cauſe that*

*this holy man had eaten of that beaſtly filth which the Devil feeds upon, and therefore was become ſtinking before God, ſo that he could neither go into Paradiſe, nor live amongſt men.* Behold how ſtrange the blindneſs of this people is, who otherwiſe have judgment and wit enough. I will paſs by much other beaſtlineſs committed by them, which is ſo far eſloigned from all reaſon, as they ſerve for a great motive unto us, to render thanks without ceaſing unto God for the infinite mercy and goodneſs that he ſhews us, in giving us the light of true Faith for the ſaving of our Souls.

§. 2. Of the fifteen days that this Feaſt was to laſt, nine being paſt, all the people, which were there aſſembled, feigning that the gluttonous Serpent of the Houſe of Smoke (who is their *Lucifer*, as I have ſaid elſewhere) was come for to ſteal away the aſhes of them that were dead in theſe ſeveral Sacrifices, and ſo to keep their Souls from going into Heaven, there aroſe among them ſo great and dreadful a noiſe, as words are not able to expreſs it; for to the confuſed voyces that were heard from every part, there was adjoyned ſuch a ringing of Bells and Baſins, beating of Drums, and winding of Horns, as it was not poſſible to hear one another, and all this was done to fright away the Devil. Now this noiſe endured from one of the clock in the afternoon till the next morning, and it is not to be believed what a world of lights and Torches were ſpent that night, beſides the infinite number of fires that were kindled every where; the reaſon hereof was, as they ſaid, *For that* Tinagoogoo, *the God of thouſand Gods, was gone in queſt of the gluttonous Serpent, for to kill him with a Sword which had been given him from Heaven.* After the night had been paſt thus amidſt this infernal noiſe and tumult, as ſoon as it was day the whole Hill, whereon the Temple was built, appeared full of white Banners, which the people beholding, they fell ſtraight to giving thanks unto God, and to that end they proſtrated themſelves on the ground with great demonſtrations of joy, and then began to ſend preſents one to another for the good news they received from the Prieſts by the ſhew of thoſe white Banners, an aſſured ſign that the gluttonous Serpent was killed. So all the people, tranſported with incredible gladneſs, fell to going up the hill, whereon the Temple ſtood, by four and twenty ſeveral acceſſes that there were unto it, for to give thanks unto the Idol, and chaunt his praiſes for the victory he had the night paſt obtained over the gluttonous Serpent, and cutting off his head: This throng of people continued three days, and three nights, ſo that during that time it was not poſſible to break through the preſs on the way, but with much pain. Now we *Portugals* having little to do, reſolved to go thither alſo for to ſee thoſe abuſes, wherefore we went to ask leave of the Embaſſador, but he denyed us for the preſent, willing us to ſtay till the next day, and that then we ſhould wait on him thither, for in his laſt ſickneſs he had vowed to viſit it; hereat we were very glad, becauſe we thought that by this means we ſhould the more eaſily ſee all that we deſired: The morrow after, which was the third day of this Aſſembly, the greateſt croud being over, we went along with him to the Temple of *Tinagoogoo*, and at length arrived, though with much ado, at the Hill whereon it was built. There we ſaw ſix very fair long ſtreets, all full of Scales hanging on great Rods of Braſs; In theſe Scales a number of people weighed themſelves, as well for the accompliſhment of the vows they had made in their adverſities and ſickneſs, as for the remiſſion of all the ſins they had committed till that preſent, and the weight which each of them layd in the other Scale was anſwerable to the quality of the fault they had done: So they that found themſelves culpable of gluttony, and had not all that year uſed any abſtinence, weighed themſelves with Honey, Sugar, Eggs, and Butter, which were things not diſpleaſing to the Prieſts, from whom they were to receive abſolution; They that were addicted to ſenſuality weighed themſelves with Cotton wool, Feathers, Cloth, Apparel, Wine, and ſweet Odors, becauſe, ſay they, thoſe things incite a man to that ſin: They that were uncharitable to the poor weighed themſelves with Coyn of Copper, Tin, and Silver, or with pieces of Gold; The ſlothful with Wood, Rice, Coals, Pork, and Fruit; and the envious, becauſe they reap no benefit by their maligning the proſperity of others, expiated their ſin by confeſſing it publiquely, and ſuffering a dozen boxes on the ear to be given them in the memory and praiſe of the twelve Moons of the year: As for the ſin of pride, it was ſatisfied with dryed fiſh, Brooms, and Cow-dung, as being the baſeſt of things; And touching them that had ſpoken ill of their Neighbors, without asking them forgiveneſs, they put for that a Cow into the Scale, or elſe an Hog, a Sheep, or a Stag: ſo that infinite was the number of thoſe which weighed themſelves in the Scales that were in theſe ſix ſtreets,

ſtreets, from whom the Prieſts received ſo much Alms, as there were great piles of all ſorts of things made up all along. Now for the poor that had nothing to give for the remiſſion of their ſins, they offered their own hair, which was preſently cut off by above an hundred Prieſts, who for that effect ſat in order one by another on low ſtools, with Sizzars in their hands; There alſo we ſaw great heaps of that hair, whereof other *Grepes*, which were a thouſand at leaſt, and ranked alſo in order, made Wreathes, Treſſes, Rings, and Bracelets, which one or another bought for to carry home to their houſes, even as our Pilgrims uſe to do, that come from *Santiago de Compoſtella*, or other ſuch places. Our Embaſſador, being amazed at the ſight of theſe things, enquired further of the Prieſts concerning them, who beſides other particulars told him, that all thoſe alms, and other offerings which were given there during the fifteen days of this Aſſembly, amounted to a great Revenue, and that even of the hair of the poor alone there was raiſed every year above an hundred thouſand pardanis of Gold, which are fourſcore and ten thouſand Duckets of our Mony, whereby one may judg what a world of wealth was made of all the reſt. After that the Embaſſador had ſtay'd ſometime in the ſtreets of the Scales, he paſſed on through all the other quarters, where were Comedies, dancing, wraſtling, and excellent conſorts of all kinds of muſick, till at length we arrived at *Tinagoogoo*, but with much labor and pain, becauſe the throng was ſo great, as one could hardly break through it. This Temple had but one Iſle, that was very long and ſpacious, and full of great wax lights, each of them having ten or eleven wicks in it, ſet up all about in Silver Candleſticks; there was alſo great ſtore of perfumes of Aloes and Benjamin: As for the Image of *Tinagoogoo*, it was placed in the midſt of the Temple upon a ſtately Tribunal in the form of an Altar, environed with a number of Silver Candleſticks, and a many of Children attired in purple, which did nothing but cenſe it at the ſound of Inſtruments of muſick, whereon the Prieſts played reaſonable well: Before this Idol danced, to the tune of the ſaid Inſtruments, certain Ladies which were wonderful fair, and richly clad, to whom the people preſented their alms and offerings, which the Prieſts received for them, and then layd them before the Tribunal of the Idoll with a great deal of ceremony and complement, ever and anon proſtrating themſelves on the ground. The Statue of this Monſter was ſeven and twenty ſpans high, having the faces of a Gyant, the hair of a Negro, wide diſtorted noſtrils, mighty great lips, and a very ſowre and ill-favored countenance; He had in his hand an Hatchet in the form of a Coopers Addis, but with a far longer handle: With this Addis, as the Prieſts made the people believe, *this Monſter the night before killed the gluttonous Serpent of the Houſe of Smoke, for that he would have ſtolen away the aſhes of thoſe that ſacrificed themſelves.* There alſo we ſaw the Serpent amidſt the place before the Tribunal in the form of an Adder, more horrible to behold then the wit of man can imagine, and done ſo to the life, as all that looked on it trembled for fear; It was layd all along, with the head cut off, being eight fathom long, and the neck of it as thick as a Buſhel, ſo lively repreſented, that though we knew it to be an artificial thing, yet could we not chuſe but be afraid of it. In the mean time all the aſſiſtants ran thronging about it, ſome pricking it with the points of their Halberds, and ſome with their Daggers, every one with railing ſpeeches curſing, and calling it, *Proud, preſumptuous, accurſed, infernal Mannor, Pool of Damnation, envious of Gods goodneſs, hunger-ſtarved Dragon, in the midſt of the night*, and many other names, which they delivered in ſuch extraordinary terms, and ſo fitted to the effects of this *Serpent*, as we could not but admire them. That done, they put into Baſins which ſtood at the foot of the Idols Tribunal a world of alms, of Gold, Silver, Jewels, pieces of Silk, fine Callicoes, Mony, and hundred other things in very great abundance. After we had ſeen all theſe things, we continued following the Embaſſador, who went to ſee the Grots of the Hermits or Penitents, which were at the utmoſt end of the Wood, all cut out of the hard Rock, and in ſuch order, as one would have thought that Nature, rather then the hand of man, had labored in it. There were an hundred forty and two of them, in ſome of the which remained divers men, whom they held for Saints, and that did very great and auſtere pennance; They in the firſt Grots wore long Robes like the *Bonzes* of *Japan*, and followed the Law of an Idol, that had ſometimes been a man, called *Situmpor michay*, who during his life enjoyned thoſe of his Sect to lead their lives in great auſterity, aſſuring them that the only and true way to gain Heaven, was to ſubdue the fleſh, and that the more they labored to afflict themſelves, the more liberally [redacted] them all they could demand of him. They which accompanyed

companyed us thither, told us, that they ſeldom eat any thing but herbs boyled, a few Beans of Aricot roſted, and wilde fruit, which were provided for them by other Prieſts, who as the Purveyors of a Cloiſter took care to furniſh theſe Penitents with ſuch things as were conformable to the Law whereof they made profeſſion. After theſe we ſaw in a Grot others of a Sect of one of their Saints, or rather of a Devil, named *Angemacut*, theſe lived in deep holes, made in the midſt of the Rock, according to the Rule of their wretched order, eating nothing but Flies, Ants, Scorpions, and Spiders, with the juyce of a certain Herb growing in abundance thereabout, much like to ſorrel; Theſe ſpent their time in meditating day and night, with their eyes lifted up to Heaven, and their hands cloſed one within another, for a teſtimony that they deſired nothing of this world, and in that manner dyed like beaſts, but they are accounted greater Saints then all the reſt, and as ſuch, after they are dead, they burn them in fires, whereinto they caſt great quantities of moſt precious perfumes; the Funeral pomp being celebrated with great ſtate, and very rich offerings, they have ſumptuous Temples erected unto them, thereby to draw the living to do as they had done, for to obtain this vain glory, which is all the recompence that the world gives them for their exceſſive pennance. We likewiſe ſaw others of a Sect altogether diabolical, invented by a certain *Gilen Mitray*; Theſe have ſundry orders of pennance, and are not much different in their Opinions from the *Abiſſins* of *Ethiopia*; Now that their abſtinence may be the more agreeable to their Idol, ſome of them eat nothing but filthy thick ſpittings and ſnot, with Graſhoppers and Hens dung; others clots of blood drawn from other men, with bitter fruits and herbs brought to them from the wood, by reaſon whereof they live but a ſhort time, and have ſo bad a look and colour, as they fright thoſe that behold them. I will paſs by them of the Sect of *Godomem*, who ſpend their whole life in crying day and night on thoſe mountains, *Godomem, Godomem*, and deſiſt not from it until they fall down ſtark dead to the ground for want of breath: Neither will I ſpeak of them which they call *Tanilasons*, who dye more bruiſhly then the reſt, for they ſhut themſelves up in certain Grots made of purpoſefor it, that are very little and cloſe, ſtopped on all ſides, and then burning green thiſtles and thorns in them, they choke themſelves with the ſmoke thereof; Whereby one may ſee how by ſuch rude and different ways of living theſe miſerable creatures render themſelves the Devils Martyrs, who in reward thereof gives them everlaſting Hell-fire; and verily it is a pititiful thing to behold the great paine which theſe wretches take to loſe themſelves, and the little that we do to be ſaved.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LVII.

*What we ſaw in the continuing of our voyage, until we arrived at the City of* Timplan.

AFter we had ſeen all theſe things with wonder enough, we departed from this *Pagod* of *Tinagoogao*, and continued on our way for thirteen days together, at the end whereof we arrived at two great Towns, ſcituated on the Bank of the river, juſt oppoſite the one againſt the other, about the diſtance of a ſtones caſt, one of the which was called *Manavedda*, and the other *Singilapan*; In the midſt of this ſame river, which was there ſomewhat narrow, there was an Iſland by nature formed round, and in it a rock ſix and thirty fathom high, and a Croſ-bow ſhoot broad; upon this rock was a Fort built, with nine Bulwarks and five Towers; without the rampire of the wall it was invironed with two rows of great iron gates, and from the Bulwarks to the other ſide of the river ran a huge Chain of iron, to keep veſſels from paſſing along, ſo that nothing could poſſibly enter there: At one of theſe two Towns, which was called *Singilapan*, the Ambaſſadour landed, where he was exceedingly well entertained by the *Xemimbrum*, or Governour of it, who likewiſe furniſhed all his Train with great ſtore of refreſhments. The next morning we left this place, accompanied with twenty *Laulês*, wherein there were a thouſand men and better, and about evening we arrived at the Cuſtom-houſes of the Kingdom, which are two ſtrong places, and from the one to the other run five mighty great chains of Latten all athwart the whole bredth of the river, ſo that nothing can paſs in and out without leave; Hither came a man in a ſwift *Serve* to the Ambaſſadour, and told him that he was to go aſhore at *Campalagro*, which was one of the two Caſtles on the South-ſide, for to ſhew the Letter which this King had ſent by him to the *Calaminham*, to ſee if it were written in the form that was required in ſpeaking to him, as was uſually obſerved. The Ambaſſadour preſently obeyed, and being come to land he was led into a great Hall, where were three men ſet at a table, with a great many Gentlemen, who gave him good entertainment, and demanded of him the occaſion of his coming thither, as they that knew nothing of it; Whereunto the Ambaſſadour anſwered; *That he came thither from the King of* Bramas, *Lord of* Tangu, *and that he had a meſſage to deliver unto the holy* Calaminham *concerning matters greatly importing his Eſtate.* Then having made further anſwer to other queſtions, which were put to him in a way of ceremony by the three principal perſons that were at the Table, he ſhewed them the letter, wherein they corrected ſome words, which were not of the ſtyle wherewith they were accuſtomed to ſpeak to the *Calaminham*; together with this letter the Ambaſſadour ſhewed them the preſent which he had brought for him, whereat they very much wondred, eſpecially when they ſaw the Chair for an Elephant of gold and precious ſtones, which in the judgments of divers Lapidaries was worth above ſix hundred thouſand Duckets, beſides the other rich pieces that he carried him alſo, as I have before related. After we had our diſpatch from this firſt Cuſtom-houſe, we went to the other, where we found more venerable men then the former, who with another new Ceremony looked likewiſe on the Letter, and the preſent, and put to all the ſeveral parcels of it ſtrings of wreathed carnation ſilk, with three Seals in Lacre, which was as the concluſion of the receiving of the Ambaſſy by the *Calaminham*. The ſame day there came a man from the next Town of *Quiſtor*, ſent by the Governour of the Kingdom to viſit the Ambaſſadour with a preſent of refreſhments of fleſh, fruit, and other ſuch things after their manner. During nine dayes that the Ambaſſadour ſtayed in this place he was abundantly furniſhed with all things neceſſary, both for his own Perſon, and his Train, and withall was entertained with ſundry ſports of hunting and fiſhing, as alſo with Feaſts, accompaied with muſick and Comedies repreſented by very beautiful women, and richly attired: In the mean time we *Portugals* went with the permiſſion of the Ambaſſadour to ſee certain things, which they of the Country had much commended unto us, namely very antique buildings, rich and ſumptuous Temples, very fair Gardens, Houſes and Caſtles, that were all along the ſide of this river, made after a ſtrange faſhion, well fortified, and of great charge, amongſt the which there was an Hoſpital for to lodge pilgrims in, called *Manicafaran*, ſignifying in our tongue, *The Priſon of the Gods*; which [illegible] in bredth; Here we ſaw twelve ſtreets, all vaulted over, and in every [illegible] and forty houſes, namely, ſixſcore on each

§. 1.

each ſide, which made in all two thouſand, eight hundred, and ſcurſcore, all full of pilgrims, who the whole year throughout came thither in pilgrimage from divers Countries; for, as they hold, this pilgrimage ought to be of far greater merit then all others, becauſe that theſe Idols impriſoned by ſtrangers have need of company. All theſe pilgrims, which, as they of the Country ſay, are all the year long without diſcontinuing above ſix thouſand, have meat given them the whole time of their abode there, at the charge, and out of the revenue of the houſe: They are ſerved by four thouſand Prieſts of *Manicafaran*, who with many others reſide within the ſame incloſure in ſixſcore religious houſes, where there are alſo as many women that ſerve in the like manner. The Temple of this Hoſpital was very great, with three Iſles after the faſhion of ours, in the midſt whereof was a remarkable Chappel built round, and invironed with three very big Balliſters of Latten; within it there were fourſcore Idols of men and women, beſides many other little gods, that lay proſtrated on the ground, for the fourſcore great Idols only ſtood upright, and were all tied together with chains of iron; As for the little ones, they were, as I ſaid, laid along on the pavement, as the children of theſe greater, and tied ſix to ſix by the middle with other ſlighter chains: Moreover without the Balliſters in two Files there ſtood two hundred, forty and four Giants of braſs, ſix and twenty ſpans high, with their Halberds and Clubs upon their ſhoulders, as if they had been ſet there for the Guard of the captive Gods. There was over-head upon iron rods, that traverſed the Iſles of the Temple, great ſtore of Lamps hanging, having ſeven or eight Matches apiece in them, in the faſhion of Candleſticks, like to them of the *Indians*, all varniſhed without, as alſo the walls were, and every thing elſe that we ſaw there, in token of mourning, by reaſon of the captivity of theſe Gods. Being amazed as well at that which I have recounted, as at many other things which I paſs over in ſilence, and not able to comprehend what they meant by the impriſonment of theſe gods, we demanded the ſignification of it of the Prieſts, whereunto one amongſt them, that ſeemed of more authority then the reſt, made us this anſwer; *Since I ſee that being Strangers, you deſire to learn of me that which I know very well, and which you have never heard ſpoken, nor read of in your Books, I will declare the matter unto you as it paſt, according as it is truly delivered by our Hiſtories. Know then, that is now ſeven thouſand, three hundred, and twenty Moons, which make ſix hundred and ten years after the ſupputation of other Nations, ſince the time that an holy* Calaminham, *named* Xixivarem Melentay, *commanding over the Monarchy of the ſix and twenty Kingdoms of this Crown, waged Wars with the* Siamon, *Emperour of the Mountains of the Earth, inſomuch that there aſſembled what on the one part and the other threeſcore and two Kings, who putting themſelves into the Field, fought ſo cruel and bloody a battail, as it endured from an hour before day till night, and there was ſlain on both ſides ſixteen* Laqueſaas *of men, each of which makes an hundred thouſand; At length the victory remaining to our* Calaminham, *without any more reſting alive of his Forces then two hundred and thirty thouſand, he ran'ned in four months ſpace all the enemies Countries, with ſuch a deſtruction of people, as if credit may be given to our Hiſtories, or to what any other beſides have aſſured, there died fifty* Laqueſaas *of perſons. This battail was fought in the firſt of the ſaid ſeven thouſand, three hundred, and twenty Moons, in the renowned Field* Vitau, *where* Quiay Nivandel *appeared to the* Calaminham, *ſitting in a Chair of Wood, who acquired unto himſelf in this place a greater and more famous Title of honour, then all the other Gods of the* Mons *and* Siammes, *in regard whereof ſo often as they that inhabit the earth deſire to make oath of things which paſs the belief of men, they uſe for the more authorizing thereof to ſwear by the holy* Quiay Nivandel *God of Battails of the field* Vitau. *Now in a great City named* Sarocatam, *where five hundred thouſand perſons were ſlain, all theſe Gods, which here you ſee before you, were made priſoners in deſpight of the Kings that believed in them, and the Prieſts that ſerved them with perfumes in their ſacrifices. Thus by reaſon of ſo glorious a victory all theſe people became ſubject to us, and tributaries to the Crown of the* Calaminham, *Who at this day holds the Scepter of this Monarchy, whereunto he was not raiſed but with much labour, and the ſhedding of a world of blood, during the threeſcore and four rebellions made by the ſaid people ſince that time until this preſent; who not able to endure the captivity of their gods, for that, to ſay the truth, it is a mighty affront unto them, they do ſtill in memory of ſo unhappy a ſucceſs continue making great demonſtrations of ſorrow for it, renewing every year the vow they have made not to celebrate any Feaſt, nor to rejoyce in any kind of ſort whatſoever, until they have provided for the deliverance of theſe priſoners;*

*prisoners; which also is the cause that no Lamps are seen in their Temples, and that they are resolved to light up none during the captivity of their Idols.* Some of us seeming to doubt the verity hereof, because it seemed strange unto them, the *Grepo* swore that it was most true, and that also there had been killed at sundry times about the deliverance of these Gods, whom there we saw captive, above three millions of men, besides those that fell in precedent Battails; whereby one may clearly see in what a strange manner the Devil keeps these poor blinded wretches subjected unto him, and with how much abuse and extravagancy he precipitates them into hell. When we had well observed all the singularities of this Temple, we went to see another, called *Urpanesendoo*, to speak of which I desire to be excused, that I may not be forced to treat of infamous and abominable matters, wherefore omitting the great abundance of riches, and other things which we saw there; it shall suffice me to say, that this Temple is served by none but women, who are all of them the daughters of Princes, and of the principal Lords of the Kingdom, which dedicates them from their infancy to offer up their honour in sacrifice there; Now this filthy and sensual sacrifice is performed with so great charge, that many of them bestow above ten thousand Duckets in it, besides the offerings which are made to this Idol *Urpanesendoo*, to whom they sacrifice their honour. This Idol is in a Chappel that is round, and guilt all over; it is made of silver, and set upon a Tribunal in form of an Altar, invironed over-head with a great number of Candlesticks, which are all of silver likewise, every light in them having six wieks: Round about this Tribunal are many other Idols guilded over, of very comely and well-favoured women, who with their knees on the ground, and hands lifted up, adore this Idol; These same, as the Priests told us, are the holy souls of certain young Ladies, which finished their dayes there to the great honour of their parents, who made more esteem of that then of all the King could give them. They assured us that the Revenue belonging to the Idol, was three hundred thousand Duckets by the year, besides the offerings and rich ornaments of their abominable sacrifices, which was yet worth more. In this Diabolical Temple were shut up within many religious houses that we saw above five thousand women, being all of them old, and for the most part exceeding rich, so that coming to dy, they make a donation of all their wealth to the *Pagode*, wherefore it is no marvel, if it have the revenue I spoke of. From this place we went to see the companies of the strangers, which came thither in pilgrimage in the manner that I have declared. These Companies were forty and six in number, every one of an hundred, two hundred, three hundred, four hundred, or five hundred persons; nay, some of them were more, and were all lodged along by the river, as if it had been a Camp. Amidst these troops of strangers we met by chance with a *Portugal* woman, whereat we wondred more then at all we had seen before, so that desiring to know of her the reason of so strange an accident, she told us with tears, who she was, what occasion had brought her thither, and how she was at that instant the wife of one of those Pilgrims, to whom she had been married three or four and twenty years; whereunto she further added, that not daring to go and live amongst Christians because of her sin, she continued still in her wickedness, but that she hoped God would at length be pleased to bring her into some Country, where before she ended her dayes, she might repent her of her life past; and that although we found her in the company of people devoted to the service of the Devil, yet she left not for all that to be still a true Christian: we remained much amazed at so strange a relation, and not a little sorrowful also to see and understand to what a point of misfortune this poor woman was reduced, so that we told her our opinion, and what we thought was fit for her to do, whereupon she concluded to go along with us to *Timoplam*, and so to *Pegu*, and from thence to set sail for *Coromandel*, there to finish her days in the Island of *St. Thomé*. Having vowed unto us to do thus we quitted her, not doubting that she would lose so good an opportunity to retire her self out of the errors wherein she was, and to restore her self to an estate wherein she might be saved, since it had pleased God to permit her to meet with us in a Country so far distant from that which she could hope for: Howbeit she performed nothing, for we could never see nor hear of her afterwards, which made us to believe, that either some thing was befallen her that kept her from coming to us, or that through the obstinacy of her sins, she deserved not to make her profit of the grace which our Lord had offered to her out of his infinite goodness and mercy.

## CHAP. LVIII.

*The Magnificent Reception of the King of* Bramas *his Ambaſſadour, at the City of* Timplam; *and that which paſſed betwixt the* Calaminham, *and him.*

§. 1. NIne dayes after the King of *Bramas* his Ambaſſadour had repoſed himſelf there by way of ceremony, according to the faſhion of the Country, for the more honour of his Ambaſſage, one of the Governours of the City, called *Quampanogrem*, came to fetch him, accompanied with fourſcore *Seroos* and *Laulees*, very well eqipped, and full of luſty able men: Throughout this Fleet they played on ſo many barbarous and ill accorded inſtruments, as Bels, Cymbals, Drums, and Sea-cornets, that the din thereof coming to joyn with the noiſe, which the Rowers made, terrified all thoſe that heard it; and indeed one would have thought it at firſt to be ſome inchantment, or to ſay better, a muſick of hell, if there be any there. Amidſt this ſtir we drew near to the City, where we arrived about noon; Being come to the firſt Key, that was named *Campalarreia*, we ſaw a great many men, both Horſe and Foot, all richly accoutred, as alſo a number of fighting Elephants, very well harneſſed, having their chairs and fore-head pieces garniſhed with ſilver, and their warlike *Panores* faſtened to their teeth, which rendred them very terrible. The Ambaſſadour was no ſooner come on ſhore, but the *Campanogrem* took him by the hand, and falling on his knees, preſented him to another great man that attended for him at the Key in great pomp; This ſame was called *Patedacan*, one of the chiefeſt of the Kingdom, as we were told; After he had with a new complement of courteſie received the Ambaſſadour, he offered him an Elephant furniſhed with a Chair and harneſs of gold, but whatſoever the *Mandarin* could do to make the Ambaſſadour accept of it, he could by no means draw him thereunto, whereupon he cauſed another almoſt as well furniſhed to be brought, and gave it to him. As for us nine *Portugals*, and fifty or threeſcore *Bramans* they provided Horſes, on which we mounted: In this manner we departed from that place, having his Chariots before us full of men, that amidſt the acclamations of the people played upon divers kinds of inſtruments; namely on ſilver Cymbals, Bells, and Drums; Thus we were conducted through many long Streets, whereof nine were invironed with Baliſters of Latten, and at the entrance into them, there were Arches very richly wrought, as alſo many Chapters of pillars guilt, and great Bells, which like unto clocks ſtruck the hours, nay the quarters of the hour of the day, whereby the people were ordinarily directed: After that with much ado, by reaſon of the great preſs of people that was in the ſtreets, we were come to the outward Court of the *Calaminham's* Pallace, which was as long, or little leſs, as a Faulcons ſhot, and broad proportionable thereunto, we ſaw in it above ſix thouſand Horſes, all trapped with ſilver and ſilk, and thoſe that were mounted on them were armed with Corſlets of Latten and Copper, head-pieces of ſilver, carrying Enſigns in their hands of divers Colours, and Targets at their Saddle-bows. The Commander of theſe Troops was the *Quietor* of Juſtice, who is as the Super-intendent over all the other Civil and Criminal Miniſters, which is a Juriſdiction ſeperate by it ſelf, from whence there is no appeal. The Ambaſſadour being come near unto him, who was alſo advanced to receive him, and the two Governours, they all proſtrated themſelves on the ground three times, which is amongſt them a new kind of Compliment, whereupon the *Quietor* ſpake not a word to the Ambaſſadour, but only laid his hand on his head, and then gave him a rich Scymitar that he wore by his ſide, which the Ambaſſadour accepted of very thankfully, and kiſſed it thrice; That done the *Quietor* let the Ambaſſadour on his right hand, and leaving the two *Mandarins* a little behind, they paſt along through two ranks of Elephants, which made a kind of Street of the length of the outward Court, they being fifteen hundred in number, all furniſhed with Caſtles, and rich Chairs of divers inventions, as alſo with a great many of fair Banners, and gorgeous Coverings; round about were a great Company of Halberdiers, and many other ſhews of Greatneſs and Majeſty, which made us believe that this Prince was one of the mighteſt of the Country. When we were come to a great Gate, that ſtood between two high Towers, two hundred men which guarded it no ſooner ſaw the *Quietor*, but they all fell down on their knees. Through this Gate, we entred into another very long outward Court, where the Kings ſecond Guard was, compoſed of a thouſand men, who

who were all in guilt Arms, their Swords by their ſides, and on their heads Helmets wrought with gold and ſilver, wherein ſtuck gallant plumes of ſeveral colours. After we had paſt through the middle of all this Guard we arrived at a great Hall, where there was a *Mandarim*, Uncle to the King, called the *Monvagarnu*, a man of above ſeventy years of age, accompanied with a great number of Nobity, as alſo with many Captains and Officers of the Kingdom; About him were twelve little boyes richly clad, with great Chains of gold three or four times double about their necks, and each of them a ſilver Mace upon his ſhoulder: As ſoon as the Ambaſſadour was come near him, he touched him on the head with a *Venſiloe* that he held in his hand, and beholding him, *May thy entrance*, ſaid he, *into this Palace of the Lord of the World, be as agreeable to his eyes, as the rain is to our fields of Rice, for ſo ſhall he grant thee all that thy King demands of him.* From thence we went up an high pair of ſtairs, and entred into a very long room, wherein there were many great Lords, who ſeeing the *Monvagarnu* ſtood up on their feet, as acknowledging him for their Superiour; Out of this room we entred into another, where there were four Altars, very well accommodated with Idols of ſilver; upon one of theſe Altars we ſaw the Statue of a woman as big as a Giant, being eighteen ſpans high, and with her arms all abroad looking up to Heaven: This Idol was of ſilver, and her hair of gold, which was very long, and ſpread over her ſhoulders; There alſo we ſaw a great Throne, incompaſſed round about with thirty Giants of braſs, who had guilded Clubs upon their ſhoulders, and faces as deformed as thoſe they paint for the Divel. From this room we paſt into a manner of a Gallery, adorned from the top to the bottom with a number of little Tables of Ebony, inlayed with Ivory, and full of mens heads, under every one of the which the name of him to whom it belonged was written in letters of gold; At the end of this Gallery there were a dozen of iron Rods guilt, whereon hung a great many ſilver Candleſticks of great value, and a number of perfuming Pans, from whence breathed forth a moſt excellent odour of Amber, and Calambuco, or Lignum Aloes, but ſuch as we have none in *Chriſtendom*. There on an Altar invironed all about with three rows of Balliſters of ſilver, we ſaw thirteen Kings viſages of the ſame metal, with golden Mitars upon their heads, and under each of them a dead mans head, and below many Candleſticks of ſilver, with great white wax lights in them, which were ſtuffed ever and anon by little boys, who accorded their voyces to thoſe of the *Grepos*, that ſung in form of a Letany, anſwering one another. The *Grepos* told us, that thoſe thirteen dead mens heads which were under the viſages were the ſkulls of thirteen *Calaminhams*, which in times paſt gained this Empire from certain ſtrangers, called *Reparous*, who by Arms had uſurped the ſame upon them of the Country: As for the other dead mens heads which we ſaw there, they were the ſkuls of ſuch Commanders, as by their Heroick deeds had honourably ended their dayes in helping to recover this Empire, in regard whereof it was moſt reaſonable, that though death had deprived them of the recompence which they had merited by their action, yet their memory ſhould not be aboliſhed out of the world. When we were gone out of this Gallery, we proceeded on upon a great Bridg, that was in the form of a Street, rayled on either ſide with Balliſters of Latin, and beautified with a many of Arches curiouſly wrought, upon which were Scutchions of Arms, charged with ſeveral devices in gold, and the Croſs over them were ſilver Globes, five ſpans in circumference, all very ſtately and majeſtical to behold. At the end of this bridge was another building, the doors whereof we found ſhut, whereupon we knocked four times, they within not deigning to anſwer us, which is a ceremony obſerved by them in ſuch occaſions; At the length after we had rung a bell four times more as it were in haſte, out comes a woman of about fifty years of age, accompanied with ſix little girls, richly attired, and Scymiters upon their ſhoulders garniſhed with flowers wrought in gold: This ancient woman having demanded of the *Monvagarnu* why he had rung the bell, and what he would have, he anſwered her with a great deal of reſpect, *That he had there an Ambaſſadour from the King of* Bramas, *the Lord of* Tangau, *who was come thither to treat at the feet of the* Calaminham *about certain matters much importing his ſervice.* By reaſon of the great authority which this woman was in ſhe ſeemed little to regard this anſwer, whereat we wondred much, becauſe he that ſpake to her was one of the chiefeſt Lords of the Kingdom, and Uncle to the *Calaminham*, as it was ſaid; Nevertheleſs one of the ſix girls that accompanied her, ſpake thus in her behalf to the *Monvagarnu*, *My Lord, may it pleaſe your Greatneſs to have a little patience till we may know whether ſhe may be fit for the kiſſing of the foot of the Throne of this Lord of the World, and advertiſing him of the coming of this ſtranger, and ſo according to the*

*grace which our Lord will ſhew him therein, his heart may rejoyce, and we with him.* That ſaid, the door was ſhut again for the ſpace of three or four Credoes, and then the ſix Girls came and opened it, but the ancient woman that at firſt came along with them, we ſaw no more, howbeit in ſtead of her there came a Boy of about nine years of age, richly apparelled, and having on his head an *burſangua* of Gold, which is a kind of Myter, but that it is ſomewhat more cloſed all about, and without any overture, he had alſo a Mace of Gold, much like a Scepter, which he carryed upon his ſhoulder: this ſame, without making much reckoning of the *Monvagarun*, or of any of the other Lords there preſent, took the Embaſſador by the hand, and ſaid unto him, *The news of thy arrival is come unto the feet of* Binaigaa *the* Calaminhan, *and Scepter of the Kings that govern the Earth, and is ſo agreeable to his ears, that with a ſmiling look he now ſends for thee to give thee audience concerning that which is deſired of him by thy King, whom he newly receives into the number of his brethren, with a love of the ſon of his entrals, that ſo he may remain powerful and victorious over his Enemies*: Thereupon he cauſed him, together with the Kings Uncle, and the other Governors that accompanyed him, to come in, leaving all the reſt without; the Embaſſador then ſeeing none of his Train follow him, looked three or four times back, ſeeming by his countenance to be ſomewhat diſcontented, which the *Monvagarun* perceiving, ſpake to the *Queitor*, who was a little behind, that he ſhould cauſe the ſtrangers to be let in, and none elſe; the doors being then opened again, we *Portugals* began to go in with the *Bramaas*, but ſuch a number of others came thruſting in amongſt us, as the Gentlemen Uſhers, who were above twenty, had much ado to keep the doors, ſtriking many with Battouns which they had in their hands, and of thoſe ſome that were perſons of quality, and yet could they not therewith, neither with their cries, nor menaces, ſtop them all from entering: Thus being come in, we paſt along through the midſt of a great garden, made with ſuch art, and where appeared ſo many goodly things, ſo divers, and ſo pleaſing to the eye, as words are not able to expreſs them: For there were there many Alleys environed with Balliſters of Silver, and many Arbors of extraordinary ſcent, which we were told had ſo much ſympathy with the Moons of the year, that in all ſeaſons whatſoever they bare flowers and fruits; withall there was ſuch abundance and variety of Roſes and other flowers, as almoſt paſſeth belief. In the midſt of this Garden we ſaw a great many young women, very fair, and well clad, whereof ſome paſt away their time in dancing, and others in playing on ſundry ſorts of Inſtruments much after our manner, which they performed with ſo much harmony, as we were not a little delighted therewith: ſome alſo beſtowed themſelves in making of curious Needle-works and Gold-ſtrings, ſome in other things, whileſt their companions gathered fruit to eat; and all this was done ſo quietly, and with ſuch order and good behavior, as made us admire it. At our going out of this Garden, where the *Monvagarun* would needs have the Embaſſador to ſtay awhile, that he might there obſerve ſomething worthy to entertain his King with at his return to *Pegu*, we went into a very great Antichamber, where many Commanders and Lords were ſitting, as alſo ſome great Princes, who received the Embaſſador with new ceremonies, and complements, and yet not one of them ſtirred from his place; Through this Antichamber we came to a door, where there were ſix Gentlemen Uſhers with Silver Maces, by which we entered into another room very richly furniſhed: in this was the *Calaminhan* ſeated on a moſt majeſtical Throne, encompaſſed with three rows of Balliſters of Silver; At the foot of the degrees of his Throne ſat twelve women that were exceeding beautiful, and moſt richly apparelled, playing on divers ſorts of Inſtruments, whereunto they accorded their voyces; On the top of the Throne, and not far from his perſon, were twelve young Damſels about nine or ten years old, all of them on their knees round about him, and carrying Maces of Gold in the faſhion of Scepters; amongſt them there was alſo another that ſtood on her feet, and fanned him. Below, all along the whole length of the room, were a great many of old men, wearing Myters of Gold on their heads, and long Robes of Satin and Damask, curiouſly embroidered, every one having Silver Maces on their ſhoulders, and ranked in order on either ſide againſt the walls: Over all the reſt of the room were ſitting, upon rich *Perſian* Carpets, about two hundred young Ladies, as we could gueſs, that were wonderful fair, and exceeding well favored. Thus did this room, both for the marvelous ſtructure of it, and for the excellent order that was obſerved therein, repreſent ſo great and extraordinary a Majeſty, as we heard the Embaſſador ſay afterwards

talk-

talking of it, that if God would grant him the grace to return to *Pegu*, he would never ſpeak of it to the King, as well for fear of grieving him, as of being taken for a man that reports things which ſeem altogether incredible.

As ſoon as the Embaſſador was entered into the room where the *Calaminhan* was, accompanyed with the four Princes that conducted him, he proſtrated himſelf five times on the ground, without ſo much as daring to behold the *Calaminhan*, in ſign of the great reſpect he carryed towards him, which the *Monvagarun* perceiving, willed him to advance forward, ſo that being arrived neer to the firſt degree of his Throne, with his face ſtill bending downward, he ſaid to the *Calaminhan*, with ſo loud a voyce as every one might hear him; *The Clouds of the Ayr, which recreate the fruits whereof we eat, have publiſhed over the whole Monarchy of the World the great Majeſty of thy Power, which hath cauſed my King, deſiring to be honored with thy amity, as with a rich pearl, to ſend me for that purpoſe, and to tell thee from him, that thou ſhalt much oblige him, if thou pleaſeſt to accept of him for thy true Brother, with the honorable obedience which he will always render to thee, as to him that is the elder, as thou art: And for that end it is, that he ſends thee this Letter, which is the jewel of all his treaſure that he prizes moſt, and wherein his eyes take more pleaſure, for the honor and contentment they receive by it, then in being Lord of the Kings of Avan, and of all the precious ſtone of the mountain of* Falent, *of* Jatin, *and* Pontau. Hereunto the *Calaminhan* made him this anſwer following, and that with a grave and ſevere countenance; *For my part I accept of this new amity, thereby to give full ſatisfaction to thy King, as to a ſon newly born of my intrals.* Then began the women to play on Inſtruments of Muſick, and ſix of them danced with little children for the ſpace of three or four credoes; After that, other ſix little girls danced with ſix of the oldeſt men that were in the room, which ſeemed to us a very pretty fantaſticalneſs. This dance ended, there was a very fine Comedy repreſented by twelve Ladies, exceeding beautiful, and gorgeouſly attired, wherein appeared on the Stage a great Sea-monſter, holding in his mouth the daughter of a King, whom the fiſh ſwallowed up before them all, which the twelve Ladies ſeeing, went in all haſte weeping to an Hermitage, that was at the foot of a Mountain, from whence they returned with an Hermit, who made earneſt ſupplications to *Quiay Paturen*, God of the Sea, that he would bring this Monſter to the ſhore, ſo as they might come to bury the Damſel according to her quality; The Hermit was anſwered by *Quiay Paturen*, That the twelve Ladies ſhould change their lamentations and complaints into ſo many conſorts of muſick, that were agreeable to his ears, and he would then command the Sea to caſt the fiſh upon the ſtrand to be done withall as they thought good; whereupon comes on the Stage ſix little Boys with wings and crowns of Gold upon their heads, in the ſame manner as we uſe to paint Angels, and naked all over, who falling on their knees before the Ladies, preſented them with three Harps and three Viols, ſaying, that *Quiay Paturen* ſent them theſe Inſtruments from the Heaven of the Moon, therewith to caſt the Monſter of the Sea into a ſleep, that ſo they might have their deſire on him, whereupon the twelve Ladies took them out of the hands of the little Boys, and began to play upon them, tuning them unto their voyces with ſo lamentable and ſad a tone, and ſuch abundance of tears, that it drew ſome from the eyes of divers Lords that were in the room; Having continued their muſick about half a quarter of an hour, they ſaw the Monſter coming out of the Sea, and by little and little as it were aſtoniſhed, making to the ſhore where theſe fair Muſicians were; all which was performed ſo properly, and to the life, that the Aſſiſtants could hardly imagine it to be a Fable, and a matter deviſed for pleaſure, but a very truth, beſides the Scean was ſet forth with a world of ſtate and riches. Then one of the twelve Ladies drawing out a Poignard, all ſet with precious ſtones, which ſhe wore by her ſide, ripped up the fiſh, and out of the belly of it drew the Infanta alive, which preſently went and danced to the tune of their Inſtruments, and ſo went and kiſſed the *Calaminhans* hand, who received her very graciouſly, and made her ſit down by him; It was ſaid, that this young Lady was his Niepce, the Daughter of a Brother of his; as for the other twelve, they were all the Daughters of Princes, and of the greateſt Lords of the Country, whoſe Fathers and Brothers were there preſent. There were alſo three or four Comedies more like this, acted by other young Ladies of great quality, and ſet forth with ſo much pomp and magnificence, as more could not be deſired. About evening the *Calaminhan* retired into another room, accompanyed with women onely, for all the reſt they went along with the *Monvagarun*, who took

§. 2.

took the Embaſſador by the hand, and led him back to the outermoſt room of all, where with many complements after their manner, he took his leave of him, and ſo committed him to the *Queitor*, who ſtraightway carryed him to his Houſe, where he lodged all the while that he was there, being two and thirty days, during which time he was feaſted by the principal Lords of the Court in a ſplendid and ſumptuous manner, and continually entertained with ſeveral ſports of fiſhing, hunting, hawking, and other ſuch like recreations; As for us *Portugals*, we took a ſingular content in obſerving, over all the City and about it, the excellent ſtructure of very ſumptuous and magnificent edifices, of ſtately Pagodes or Temples, and of houſes adorned with goodly workmanſhip, and of ineſtimable valne. Now amongſt all theſe Buildings there was not in the whole City a more majeſtical one then that which was dedicated to *Quisy Pimpocan*, who is *The God of the Sick*: In it ſerve continually a number of Prieſts, apparelled in grey Gowns, who being of greater knowledg then all the reſt of the four and twenty Sects of this Empire, do diſtinguiſh themſelves from the others by certain yellow ſtrings, which ſerve them for girdles; they are alſo by the vulgar people in a ſoveraign degree of honor called ordinarily, *Perfect men*. The Embaſſador himſelf went five times to their Temple, as well to ſee very marvelous things, as to hear the doctrine of thoſe that preached there, of which, and of all that concerns the extravagancies of their Religion, he brought a great volume to the King of *Bramas*, which was ſo pleaſing to him, as he afterward commanded the ſaid Doctrine to be preached in all the Temples of that Kingdom, which is to this day exactly obſerved in all his ſtates. Of this Book I brought a Tranſlation into the Kingdom of *Portugal*, which a *Florentine* borrowed of me, and when I asked him for it again, he told me that it was loſt, but I found afterward that he had carryed it to *Florence*, and preſented it to the Duke of *Tuſcany*, who commanded it to be printed under this Title, *The new Belief of the Pagans of the other end of the World*. Upon a day as the Embaſſador was talking in this Pagode with one of the *Grepos*, who profeſſed much kindneſs unto him, for indeed they are all of a good nature, eaſie of acceſs, and communicating themſelves to ſtrangers freely enough, he demanded of him, how long it was ſince the Creation of the World, or whether thoſe things had a beginning which God doth ſhew ſo clearly to our eyes, ſuch as the Night, the Day, the Sun, the Moon, the Stars, and other Creatures that have neither Father nor Mother, and of whom no reaſon can be rendered in Nature how they began: The *Grepo* relying more on his own knowledg, then on the others that were about him, made this anſwer to his Queſtion; *Nature*, ſaid he, *had no other Creation but that which proceeded from the Will of the Creator, who in a certain time, determined in his divine Counſel, manifeſted it to the Inhabitants of Heaven, created before by his ſoveraign power, and according to that which is Written thereof, it was fourſcore and two thouſand Moons, ſince the Earth was diſcovered from under the Waters, when as God created therein a very fair Garden, where he placed the firſt man, whom he named* Adan, *together with his wife* Bazagon, *them he expreſſly commanded, for to reduce them under the yoke of obedience, that they ſhould not touch a certain fruit of a tree, called* Hiluforan, *for that he reſerved the ſame for himſelf; and in caſe they came to eat thereof, they ſhould for a chaſtiſement of their fault prove the rigor of his Juſtice, whereof they and their deſcendants ſhould feel the dire effects: This being known to the great* Lupantoo, *who is the glutonous Serpent of the profound Houſe of Smoke, and perceiving how by this commandment, God would for mans obedience on Earth give him Heaven for a reward, he went to* Adans *Wife and bid her eat of that fruit, and that ſhe ſhould alſo make her Huſband eat thereof, for he aſſured her that in ſo doing they ſhould both of them be more excellent in knowledg then all other creatures, and free from that heavy nature wherewith he had compoſed them, ſo that in a moment their bodies ſhould mount to Heaven. Then* Bazagon, *hearing what* Lupantoo *had ſaid unto her, was ſo taken with a deſire of enjoying that excellent prerogative of knowledg which he promiſed her, as to attain thereunto ſhe eat of the fruit, and made her Huſband likewiſe to eat of it, whence it enſued, that they were both of them by that unhappy morſal ſubjected to the pains of death, of ſorrow, and of poverty. For God ſeeing the diſobedience of theſe two firſt creatures, made them feel the rigor of his Juſtice, by chaſing them out of the Garden where he had placed them, and confirming the puniſhments upon them wherewith he had threatned them before; wherefore* Adan, *fearing leſt the divine Juſtice ſhould proceed further againſt him, gave himſelf up for a long time to continual tears; whereupon God ſent him word, that if he continued in his repentance he would forgive him*

his

*his ſin.* Whileſt the *Grepo* was ſpeaking thus, the Embaſſador wondred at his diſcourſe, which was a great novelty to him; *Certainly*, ſaid he unto him, *I will aſſure thee that the King my Maſter hath never heard the like of this ſtraine by Prieſts of our Temples, for they in recompence of our works propound no other thing unto us but the poſſeſſion of riches in this life; for*, as they ſay, *there is no guerdon after death; and that we muſt finiſh our lives as all the beaſts of the field do, except the Cows, which for a reward of the milk they have given us, are converted into other Sea-cows, of the apples of whoſe eyes are pearls ingendred.* At theſe words the *Grepo*, puffed up with vanity for that which he had ſaid to the Embaſſador; *Think not*, anſwered he unto him, *that there is any one in all this Country can let thee underſtand ſo much as I have done, unleſs it be our* Grepo, *who is as learned as my ſelf*: With this fume of preſumption he chanced to caſt his eyes on us *Portugals*, that were behind the Embaſſador, and as the Miniſter of the Devil, believing that we eſteemed him as much as he did himſelf, *Verily*, ſaid he unto us, *I ſhould be glad, that you, who as ſtrangers have no knowledg of this truth, would come more often to hear me, for to underſtand how God hath created all theſe things, and how much we are bound to him for the benefit of this Creation*: Then one of our company, named *Gaſpar de Meyrelez*, ſhewing himſelf therein more curious then the reſt, after he had thanked the *Grepo* in the name of us all, he prayed him to give him leave to ask him ſomething which he deſired to know of him; Whereunto the *Grepo* made anſwer, that he was very well contented; *For*, added he, *it is as well the property of a wiſe and curious man to enquire for to learn, as of an ignorant to bear, and not be able to anſwer*: whereupon *Gaſpar de Meyrelez* demanded of him, whether God, after he had created all theſe things whereof he ſpake, had not done ſome heroical works upon Earth, either by his Juſtice, or by his Mercy. To this the *Grepo* replyed, that he had, *it being evident, that as long as man lived in this fleſh, he could not chuſe but commit ſins which would render him puniſhable, nor God be without a great deſire to pardon him*; and he added further, *That the ſins of men coming to be multiplyed on Earth, God had overwhelmed the whole World, by commanding the Clouds of Heaven to rain upon it, and to drown all living things, except one juſt man with his Family, which God put into a great Houſe of Wood, from whom iſſued afterwards all the Inhabitants of the Earth.* The *Portugal* again enquired, whether God after this chaſtiſement had not ſent ſome other. *God did not*, anſwered he, *ſend any, which taken in general, was like unto that; but it is true, that in particular he chaſtiſeth Kingdoms and People with Wars, and other ſcourges which he ſendeth them, as we ſee that he puniſheth men with infinite afflictions, labors, diſeaſes, and above all with extream poverty, which is the laſt and extreameſt of all evils.* The *Portugal* continuing in his demands, deſired him to tell him, whether he had any hope that God would one day be appeaſed, ſo as men might have entrance into Heaven; Whereunto the *Grepo* replyed, *That he knew nothing thereof, but that it was an evident thing, and to be believed as an Article of Faith, that even as God was an infinite good, ſo he would have regard to the good which men did upon Earth for his ſake.* Hereupon he demanded of him, whether he had not heard it ſaid, or found written, That after all thoſe things, whereof he ſpake, a man was come into the World, who dying on the Croſs, had ſatisfied God for all men; or whether there was not among them ſome knowledg thereof? Whereunto the *Grepo* anſwered, *None can make ſatisfaction to God but God himſelf, although there be in the World holy and vertuous men, which ſatisfie for themſelves, and for ſome of their friends, ſuch as are the Gods of our Temples, as the* Grepos *do aſſure us; But to ſay, that one alone hath ſatisfied for all, is a thing which we have never heard of till now, beſides, on Earth, which is ſo baſe of it ſelf, a Ruby of ſo high a price cannot be ingendred: It is true nevertheleſs, that in times paſt ſo much was certified to the Inhabitants of this Country by a man, named* John, *who came into this City, and was held for an holy man, having been the Diſciple of another, called* Tomé Modeliar, *the Servant of God, whom thoſe of the Country put to death, becauſe he went publiquely preaching,* That God was made man, and that he had ſuffered death for mankind; *which at firſt wrought ſuch a Diviſion amongſt the people of this Nation, as many believed it for a very truth, and others oppoſed it, and formed a contrary party againſt it, incited thereunto by the* Grepoes *of the Law of* Quiay Figrau, *God of the Atomes of the Sun; ſo that they reproved all that this ſtranger ſaid, by reaſon whereof He was baniſhed from this City to the Kingdom of* Braman, *and from thence for the*

*ſame*

*ſame cauſe to the Town of* Digan, *where he was put to death for preaching publiquely, as I ſaid before, That God became man, and was crucified for men.* Upon theſe ſpeeches *Gaſpar de Meyrelez* and we, ſaid, that this man had preached nothing in this Country which was not moſt true; wherewith the *Grepo* was ſo taken, that he fell down on his knees before all that were preſent, and lifting up his hands and eyes to Heaven, he ſaid with tears in his eyes, *Lord, of whoſe beauty and goodneſs the Heavens and the Stars do give teſtimony, I with all my heart do beſeech thee to permit, that in our times the hour may come, wherein the People of the other end of the World may give thee thanks for ſo great a Grace.* After that theſe matters were paſt in this manner, and many others beſides, which well deſerved to be related, if my groſs wit were able to deſcribe them, the Embaſſador took his leave of the *Grepo* with many complements and words of courteſie, whereof they are nothing ſparing, as being much accuſtomed to practiſe them one with another.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XLIX.

*An ample relation of this Empire of the* Calaminham, *and of the Kingdomes of* Pegu, *and* Bramaa, *with the continuance of our voyage, and what we ſaw among the ſame.*

A Moneth after our arrivall at this City of *Timphan*, where the Court then was, the Ambaſſador demanded an anſwer to his Ambaſſie, and it was immediately granted him by the *Calaminham*, with whom he ſpake himſelf, and being graciouſly entertained by him, he referred him for his diſpatch to the *Monnagarun*, that was, as I have heretofore delivered, the chief man in governing the Kingdome, who gave him an anſwer on the behalf of the *Calaminham*, as alſo a preſent in exchange of that which the King of *Bramaa* had ſent him, withall he wrote him a Letter, that contained theſe words, *Thou arm of a clear Ruby, which God hath newly enchaced into my body, and whoſe fleſh is fitly faſtned to me, as that of my brother, by that new league and amity now accorded unto thee, by me* Prechau Guimiam, *Lord of the ſeven and twenty Crownes of the Montaignes of the earth, inherited by a lawfull ſucceſſion from him, who theſe two and twenty moneths hath not ſet his feet upon my head; for ſo long it is ſince he left me, never to ſee me again, by reaſon of the ſanctification which his ſoul doth now enjoy in feeling the ſweet heat of the beams of the Sun. I have ſeen thy Letter, dated the fifth chaveca of the eighth moon of the year, whereunto I have given the true credit of a brother, and as ſuch a one I accept of the party thou doſt preſent me with, obliging my ſelf to render thee the two paſſages of* Savady *free, that ſo thou mayeſt without fear of the* Siamon *be King of* Avaa, *as thou deſireſt me by thy Letter: And as for the other conditions, whereof thy Ambaſſador hath made ſome mention unto me, I will make anſwer thereunto by one of mine own, whom will ſend unto thee from hence e're it be long, to the end thou mayeſt have a good ſucceſſe in the pleaſure thou ſeemeſt to take in making war upon thine enemies.* The Ambaſſador having received this Letter, departed from the Court the third day of *November*, in the year one thouſand five hundred forty and ſix, accompanied with certain Lords, who by the expreſſe commandement of the *Calaminham* went along with him to *Bidor*, where they took their leave of him, after they had made him a great feaſt, & preſented him with divers gifts. But before I intreat of the way which we held from this place till we came to *Pegu*, where the King of *Bramaa* was, I think it convenient and neceſſary to make a relation here of certain things which we ſaw in this country, wherein I will acquit my ſelf as ſuccinctly as I can, as I have done in all other matters whereof I have ſpoken heretofore; for if I would diſcourſe in particular of all that I have ſeen, and of that which hath paſt as well in this Empire, as in other Kingdomes, where I have been during my painfull voyages, I had then need to make another volume far bigger then this ſame, and be indued with a wit much above that I have: howbeit that I may not wholly conceal things ſo remarkable, I am contented to ſay ſo much thereof as my groſſe ſtile will permit me to deliver. The Kingdome of *Pegu* hath in circuit an hundred and forty leagues, is ſcituate on the South ſide in ſixteen degrees, and in the heart of the Country towards the rhomb of the Eaſt it hath an hundred forty leagues, being invironed all above with an high ground, named *Pangavirau*, where the Nation of the *Bramaas* doth inhabit, whoſe country is fourſcore leagues broad, and two hundred long. This Monarchy was in times paſt one ſole Kingdome, which now it is not, but is divided into thirteen eſtates of Soveraignes, who made themſelves maſters of it by poyſoning their King in a banquet which they made him in the City of *Chalen*, as their hiſtories relate: of theſe thirteen eſtates, there are eleven that are commanded by other Nations, who by a tract of another great country are joyned to all the bounds of the *Bramaas*, where two great Emperors abide, of which the one is called the *Siamon*, and the other the *Calaminham*, who is the ſame I purpoſe only to treat of. According to report, the Empire of the Prince is above three hundred leagues bredth, and as much in length, and it is ſaid that anciently it contained ſeven and twenty Kingdomes, the inhabitants whereof ſpake all one language: within this Empire we ſaw many goodly Cities, exceedingly well peopled, and abounding with all proviſions neceſſary for mans life, as fleſh, freſh water, fiſh, corn, pulſe, rice, paſtures, vines, and fruits; the chief of all theſe Cities is *Tymphan*, where this Emperor, the *Calaminham*, with his Court commonly reſides: it is ſeated along by a great river, named *Pitny*, and invironed all about with two broad walls of earth, made up with ſtrong ſtone

on either side, having very broad ditches, and at each gate a Castle with high Towers; certain Merchants affirmed unto us, that this City had within it some four hundred thousand fires, and albeit the houses are for the most part not above two stories high, yet in recompense thereof they are built very stately, and with great charge, especially those of the Nobility, and of the Merchants, not speaking of the great Lords, which are separated by great inclosures, where are spacious outward Courts, and at the entring into them arches after the manner of *China*, as also gardens, and walks planted with trees, and great ponds, all very handsomely accommodated to the pleasures and delights of this life, whereunto these people are very much inclined: We were also certified, that both within the inclosure of the City, and a league about it, there were six and twenty hundred *Pagodes*, some of which, wherein we had been, were very sumptuous and rich, indeed for the rest the most of them were but petty houses in the fashion of Hermitages: These people follow four and twenty Sects, all different one from another, amongst the which there is so great a confusion of errors, and diabolicall precepts, principally in that which concerns their bloudy Sacrifices, as I abhor to speak of them; but the Idol which is most in vogue amongst them, and most frequented, is that whereof I have already made mention, called *Quiay Frigau*, that is to say, *The God of the Moats of the Sun*, for it is in this false God that the *Calaminham* believes, and does adore him, and so do all the chiefest Lords of the Kingdome, wherefore the *Grepos*, *Menigrepos*, and *Talagrepos* of this false god are honored far more then all others, and held in the retation of holy personages; their superiours, who by an eminent title are called *Cabizondos*, never know women, as they say, but to content their bruitish and sensuall appetites they want not diabolicall inventions, which are more worthy of tears then recital: during the ordinary Fairs of this City, called by them *Chandubos*, we saw all things there that nature hath created, as iron, steel, lead, tin, copper, lattin, saltpeter, brimstone, oyl, vermillion, honey, wax, sugar, lacre, benjamin, divers sorts of stuffes and garments of silk, pepper, ginger, cinamon, linnen cloth, cotton wool, alum, borax, cornalines, christall, camphire, musk, yvory, cassia, rhubarbe, turbith, scamony, azure, woad, incense, cochenill, saffron, myrrhe, rich porcelain, gold, silver, rubies, diamonds, emeraulds, saphirs, and generally all other kind of things that can be named, and that in so great abundance, as it is not possible for me to speak that which I have seen, and be believed; women there are ordinarily very white and fair, but that which most commends them is, that they are of a good nature, chast, charitable, and much inclined to compassion: The Priests of all these four and twenty Sects, whereof there are a very great number in this Empire, are cloathed in yellow, like the *Roolims* of *Pegu*, they have no money either of gold or silver, but all their commerce is made with the weight of *cates*, *casis*, *maazes*, and *conderins*. The Court of the *Calaminham* is very rich, the Nobility exceeding gallant, and the revenue of the Lords and Princes very great, the King is feared and respected in a marvellous manner; he hath in his Court many Commanders that are strangers, unto whom he giveth great pensions to serve him for the safety of his person, our Ambassador was assured, that in the City of *Timphan*, where most commonly the Court is, there are above threescore thousand horse, and ten thousand Elephants: the gentlemen of the country live very handsomely, and are served in vessels of silver, and sometimes of gold, but as for the common people they use porcelain & lattin; in summer they are apparrelled in sattin, damask, and wrought taffeties, which come from *Persia*, & in winter in gowns furred with marterns; there is no going to Law amongst them, nor does any man enter into bond there, but if there be any difference among the common people, certain Magistrates, like to our Aldermen of Wards, do decide it, and if contention happens to arise between persons of an higher quality, then they submit to the judgment of certain religious men, who are expresly deputed for that purpose, and from them matters passe on in manner of appeal to the Queitor of Justice, which is as the superintendent thereof, from whose sentence there is no appeal, how great and important soever the business be: The Monarchy of these seven and twenty Kingdomes hath seven hundred Provinces, that is six and twenty in every Kingdome; and in the capitall town of each of those Provinces doth a Governor preside, all of them being of like and equall power. Now on every new Moon, each Captain is bound to muster the souldiers that are under his charge, which ordinarily are two thousand foot, five hundred

dred horſe, and fourſcore fighting Elephants, one of the which is called by the name of the capitall town of the ſame Province, ſo that if one ſhould make a juſt computation of all thoſe men of war that are in thoſe ſeven hundred companies of thoſe Provinces, they would appear to be ſeventeen hundred and fifty thouſand, whereof there are three hundred and fifty thouſand horſe, and five and fifty thouſand Elephants; for in regard of the great number that there are of thoſe beaſts in that country, this Emperor ſtiles himſelf in his titles, Lord of the indomptable force of Elephants. The revenue which the Monarch draws from his Royall Prerogatives, by them called, *the price of the Scepter*, as alſo from his Mines, amounts to twenty millions of gold, without comprising therein the preſents which are given him by the Princes, Lords and Captains, and a great quantity of money that is diſtributed amongſt the men of war, according to every ones merit, which are not of that accompt. In all this country, pearl, amber, and ſalt are very much eſteemed of, becauſe they are things that come from the Sea, which is far diſtant from the City of *Timplan*, but of all other commodities they have infinite ſtore: The Country of it ſelf is very healthy, the ayr very good, and likewiſe the waters. When they ſneeze they uſe to ſay, *the God of truth is three and one*, whereby one may judge that theſe people have had ſome knowledge of the Chriſtian Religion.

Being departed from the town of *Bidor*, we held on our courſe down the great river of *Pitoy*, and the ſame day at night we went and lodged at a certain *Abby* of the land of *Quiay Jarem*, the God of married folks; this Abby is ſeated on the bank of the river in a plain, where are a great many of trees planted, and very rich buildings, here the Ambaſſador was well entertained by the *Cabizondo* and the *Talagrepoi*; then continuing our voyage ſeven dayes longer, we arrived at a town named *Pavel*, where we ſtaid three dayes to furniſh our veſſells with ſome proviſions which we needed; in this place the Ambaſſador bought divers knacks of *China*, and other commodities that were ſold there at a very cheap rate, as muſk, fine porcelains, wrought ſilks, Ermins, and many other ſorts of furs, which are much uſed in that country, becauſe it is extreme cold there; theſe wares were brought thither by great troops of Elephants and Rhinocero's from a certain far diſtant Province, as the Merchants told us, called *Friomaraniaa*, beyond the which, they ſaid, was a kind of people called *Calogens* and *Buncaos*, tawny men, and great Archers, having their feet like unto Oxen, but hands like unto other men, ſave that they are exceeding hairy, they are naturally inclined to cruelty, and have below at the end of the backbone a lump of fleſh as big as ones two fiſts; their dwelling is in mountains that are very high and rough on ſome parts, where there are mighty deep pits or caves, from whence are heard in winter nights moſt dreadfull cries, and dolefull lamentations: We were told likewiſe, that not far from theſe people there were others, called *Calonhos*, *Timpates*, and *Bugems*, and a good way beyond them ſome, named *Oguens* and *Magores*, who feed on wild beaſts which they catch in hunting, and eat raw, as alſo on all kind of contagious creatures, as lizards, ſerpents, and adders; they hunt thoſe wild beaſts mounted on certain animalls, as big as horſes, which have three horns in the midſt of their foreheads, with thick ſhort legs, and on the middle of their backs a row of prickles, wherewith they prick when they are angry, and all the reſt of the body is like a great lizard; beſides they have on their necks, inſtead of hair, other prickles far longer and bigger then thoſe on their backs, and on the joynts of their ſhoulders ſhort wings like to the fins of fiſhes, wherewith they fly, as it were, leaping the length of five or ſix and twenty paces at a jump: Theſe creatures are called *Bauazes*, upon which theſe ſavage ride into the country of their enemies, with whom they hold continuall war, and whereof ſome pay them tribute in ſalt, which is the thing they make moſt account of, in regard of the need they have of it, for that they are very far diſtant from the Sea. We ſpake alſo with other men called *Buuiems*, who live on high mountains, where there are Mines of Alum and Lacre, and great ſtore of wood; of this Nation, we ſaw a troop conducting of above two thouſand oxen, on whom they had put pack-ſaddles, and ſo made them to carry their Merchandiſe; theſe men were very tall, and had eys and beards like the *Chineſes*: We ſaw others likewiſe, that had reaſonable long beards, their faces full of freckles, and their ears and noſtrills pierced, and in the holes thereof ſmall threds of gold made into claſps, theſe were called *Ginaphogaas*, and the Province whereof they were Natives *Suroboſay*, which within the mountains of the

*Lambas* are bounded with the lake of *Chiamnay*, and are cloathed with hairy skins, going bare-foot and bare-headed, certain Merchants told us that theſe had great riches, and that all their traffique was in ſilver, whereof they had great ſtore. We ſpake alſo with another ſort of men, call d *Tuparoens*, who are tawny, great eaters, and much addicted to the pleaſures of the fleſh; theſe gave us better entertainment then all the reſt, and oftentimes feaſted us. Now becauſe in a certain banquet, where we nine *Portugals* were with the Ambaſſador; one of us, named *Franciſco Temuda*, challenged them to drink, they taking it for a great affront, cauſed the feaſt to continue the longer for the recovery of their honor, but the *Portugal* ſet on them ſo luſtily, twenty that they were, as he laid them all along drunk on the ground, himſelf remaining ſtill ſober; when they were out of their drink, the *Sapiton*, that was their Captain, and in whoſe houſe the feaſt had been made, called his company together, which were above three hundred, and whether the *Portugal* would or no made him to mount upon an *Elephant*, and ſo lead him through all the town, accompanied with a great multitude of people that followed him at the ſound of trumpets, drums, and other ſuch inſtruments; the Captain himſelf, as alſo the Ambaſſador, and the reſt of us, together with all the *Bramaas*, marching on foot after him, with boughs in our hands, and two men before him on horſeback, that rode crying, *O all ye people, praiſe with gladneſs the beams which proceed from the midſt of the Sun, who is the God that makes our rice to grow, for that you have lived to ſee a man ſo holy, that knowing how to drink better then all the men of the world, hath laid on the ground twenty of the principall drinkers of our troop, to the end his renown may be daily more and more augmented.* Whereunto all the crowd of people that accompanied him, anſwered with ſuch cries and acclamations, as the very noyſe thereof frighted all that heard it. In this equipage they lead the *Portugal* to the Ambaſſadors houſe, where they ſet him down with a great deal of reſpect and many complements, then on their knees they rendred him to the Ambaſſador, deſiring him to have a care of him as of an holy man, or the ſon of ſome great King, for, ſaid they, it cannot be otherwiſe, ſeeing God hath beſtowed ſo great a gift on him, as to know how to drink ſo well. Whereupon having made a gathering for him, they got together above two hundred lingots of ſilver, which they gave him; and untill the time that we departed he was continually viſited by the inhabitants, whereof many preſented him with rich pieces of ſilk, and other gifts, as if they had made an offering to ſome Saint upon a ſolemn day of his invocation. After theſe we ſaw other men that were very white, named *Pavilens*, great archers, and good horſemen, apparrelled in caſſocks of ſilk like thoſe of *Japon*, and that carried their meat to their mouths with little ſticks, after the manner of the *Chineſes*; theſe ſame told us that their Coyntry was called *Binagorem*, and that it was diſtant from thence about two hundred leagues up the river, their merchandize was ſtore of gold in powder, like to that of *Menancabo*, of the Iſland of *Sumatra*, as alſo lacre, aloes, muſk, tin, copper, ſilk, and wax, which they exchanged for pepper, ginger, ſalt, wine, and rice: the wives of theſe men which we ſaw there are very white, of better converſation then all the reſt of thoſe countryes, well natured, and exceeding charitable, demanding of them what was their Law, and what was the divinity that they adored they anſwered us, *That their Gods were the Sun, the heaven, and the ſtars, for that from them they received by an holy communication all the good that they enjoyed upon earth; and furthermore, that the ſoul of man was but a breath which ended in the death of the body, and that afterwards tumbling up and down in the ayr ſhe mingled her ſelf with the clouds, untill ſuch time as coming to be diſſolved into water, ſhe died again upon the earth, as the body had done before.* I omit an infinite many of ſuch extravagances which were told us, and that gave us good cauſe to wonder at the blindneſs and confuſion of theſe wretches, and doth alſo oblige us to render thanks continually unto God for delivering us from theſe errors, and this falſe belief. Now from the diverſity of theſe unknown Nations, which we ſaw in theſe parts, it is eaſie to infer, that in this Monarchy of the world there are many countries yet undivided, and unknown to us.

## CHAP. LX.

*Our arrivall at* Pegu, *with the death of the* Roolim *of* Mounay.

CONtinuing our courſe from this town of *Pavel*, we came the next day to a village, §. 1.
called *Luncar*, invironed about the ſpace of three leagues, with a great number of trees of *Benjamin*, which from this place is tranſported into the Kingdoms of *Pegu*, and *Siam*. From thence we ſailed for nine daies together down that great river, all alongſt the which we ſaw many goodly towns, and then we arrived at another river, called *Vantrau*, thorough the which we continued our voyage to *Penauchin*, the firſt Borough of the Kingdome of *Jangumaa*, where the Ambaſſador regiſtred his veſſells, and all that were within them, becauſe ſuch was the cuſtom of the country. Being departed from thence, we went and lay that night at the *Randiteus*, which are two ſtrong places belonging to the Prince of *Poncanor*. Five days after we came to a great town, called *Magdalen*, which is the country from whence lacre is brought to *Martabano*; the Prince thereof, during the time that we ſtayed there, ſhewed the Ambaſſador a generall muſter of all the men of war that he had levied againſt the King of the *Laubos*, with whom he was at difference, becauſe he had repudiated a daughter of his, which he had married three years before, intending to eſpouſe a gentlewoman by whom he had had a ſon: that he had legitimated, and made choice of for heir of his Kingdom, thereby fruſtrating his Nephew (by his daughter) of his right. Paſſing on then thorough the ſtreight of *Madur*, wherein we ſailed five days, we arrived at a village called *Monchell*, the firſt place of the Kingdom of *Pegu*; there one *Chalagemão*, a famous Pyrat, that went up and down robbing in this place with thirty *Coroos*, well equipped, and full of warlike men, aſſailed us one night, and fighting with us till it was almoſt day, he handled us in ſuch ſort, as it was the great grace of God that we eſcaped out of his hands, nevertheleſs it was not without the loſs of five of the twelve veſſells that we had, together with an hundred and fourſcore of our men, whereof two were *Portugals*: The Ambaſſador himſelf had a cut on one of his arms, and two wounds beſides with arrow ſhot, which had almoſt coſt him his life; all of us likewiſe were cruelly hurt, and the Preſent which the *Calaminham* ſent to the King of *Bramaa*, being worth above an hundred thouſand duckats, was taken by the Pyrat, together with a great deal of rich merchandize that was in the five veſſells, whereof he had made himſelf maſter. In this ſad equipage we arrived three days after at the City of *Martabano*, from whence the Ambaſſador wrote the King a letter, wherein he rendred him an accompt of all that had happened to him in his voyage, as alſo in his diſaſter. Whereupon the King ſent preſently away a Fleet of ſixſcore *Coroos*, with a number of choice men, amongſt which were an hundred *Portugals* in queſt of this Pyrat. This Fleet having by good fortune diſcovered him, found that he had put on ſhore his thirty *Coroos*, wherewith he had aſſailed us; and was with all his forces retired into a fortreſs, which was full of divers prizes that he had taken in ſeverall parts thereabout; our men immediately attacqued the place, and carried it eaſily at the very firſt aſſault, only with the loſs of ſome few *Bramaas* and one *Portugal*, howbeit many were hurt with arrowes, but they recovered in a ſhort time without the maiming of any one. As ſoon as the fortreſs was gained, all that were found within it were put to the ſword, not ſparing the life of any, but that of the Pyrat, and ſixſcore others of his company which were led alive to the King of *Bramaa*, who cauſed them to be caſt to his Elephants, that inſtantly diſmembred them. In the mean time the taking of this fortreſs was ſo advantagious to the *Portugals* that were ſent thither, as they returned from thence all very rich; and it was thought that five or ſix of them got each of them the value of five and twenty, or thirty thouſand duckats apiece, and that he which had leaſt, had the worth of two or three thouſand for his ſhare: After that the Ambaſſador was cured at *Martabano* of the hurts which he had received in the fight, he went directly to the City of *Pegu*, where, as I have declared, the King of *Bramaas* Court was at that time, who being advertiſed of his arrivall, and of the letter which he brought him from the *Calaminham*, whereby he accepted of his amity, and allied himſelf with him, he ſent the *Chanmigrem*, his foſter-brother and brother-in-law, to receive him; to which end he ſet forth, accompanied with all the Grandees of the Kingdom, and four battalions of Rangers, amongſt the which were a [redacted] com-

manded by *Antonio Ferreira*, born in *Bragnenca*, a man of great underſtanding, and to whom this King gave twelve thouſand duckats a year penſion, beſides the Preſents which he beſtowed on him in particular, that came to little leſs. Hereupon the King of *Bramas* ſeeing that by this new league God had contented his deſire, he reſolved to ſhew himſelf thankfull for ſo great a favour, wherefore he cauſed great feaſts to be made amongſt theſe people, and a number of Sacrifices to be offered in their Temples, where there was no ſpare of perfumes, and wherein it was thought there were killed above a thouſand, ſtags, cows, and hogs, which were beſtowed for an alms among the poor, beſides many other works of charity, as the cloathing of five thouſand poor folks, and imploying great ſums of money in the releaſing of a thouſand priſoners which were detained for debt. After that theſe feaſts had continued ſeven whole days together, with a moſt ardent zeal, and at the incredible charge of the King, Lords, and people, news came to the City of the death of the *Aixquendoo*, *Reolim* of *Mounay*, who was as it were their Soveraign Biſhop, which cauſed all rejoycings to ceaſe in an inſtant, and every one to fall into mourning, with great expreſſions of ſorrow: The King himſelf retired, the fairs were given over, the windows, doors, and ſhops were ſhut up, ſo that no living thing was ſeen to ſtir in the City, withall their Temples and Pagods were full of penitents of all ſorts, who with inceſſant ſhedding of tears, exerciſed ſuch an exceſſe of repentance, as ſome of them died therewith. In the mean time the King departed away the ſame night for to go to *Mounay*, which was ſome twenty leagues from thence, for that he was neceſſarily to be aſſiſtant at this funerall pomp, according to the antient cuſtom of the Kings of *Pegu*; he arrived there the next day ſomewhat late, and then gave order for all that was neceſſary for his funerals, ſo that the next day every thing being in a readineſs; the body of the deceaſed was about evening brought from the place where he died, and laid on a Scaffold that was erected in the midſt of a great place, hung all about with white velvet, and covered over head with three cloths of Eſtate of gold and ſilver tinſell; in the middle of it was a Throne of twelve ſteps aſcent unto it, and an hearſe almoſt like unto ours, ſet forth with divers rich works of gold and pretious ſtones; round about hung a number of ſilver candleſticks, and perfuming pots, wherein great quantities of ſweet odours were burnt, by reaſon of the corruption of the body, which already began to have an ill ſavour. In this manner they kept it all that night, during the which was no little ado, and ſuch a tumult of cries and lamentations made by the people, as words are not able to expreſs; for the only number of the *Bicos*; *Grepos*, *Menigrepos*, *Talagrepos*, *Guimons*, and *Reolims*, who are the chiefeſt of their Prieſts, amounted to above thirty thouſand, that were aſſembled together there, beſides a world of others which came thither every hour. When divers inventions of ſorrow, that were well accommodated to the ſubject of this mourning, had been ſhown, there came ſome two hours after midnight out of a Temple, called *Quiay Figran*, god of the Motes of the Sun, a proceſſion, wherein were ſeen five hundred little boys ſtark naked, and bound about the neck and the middle with cords, and chains of iron; upon their heads they carried bundles of wood, and in their hands knives, ſinging in two Quires with a tone, ſo lamentable and ſad, as few that heard them could hardly forbear crying: In the mean time one amongſt them went, ſaying in this manner, *Thou that art going to enjoy the contentments of heaven, leave us not priſoners in this exile*; whereunto another Quire anſwered, *To the end we may rejoyce with thee in the bleſſings of the Lord*: then continuing their ſong in manner of a Letany, they ſaid many other things with the ſame tone. After that, when they were all fallen on their knees before the Scaffold where the body lay, a *Grepo* above an hundred years old, proſtrated on the ground with his hands lifted up on high, made a ſpeech to him in the name of theſe little boys, whereunto another *Grepo*, who was neer the hearſe, as if he had ſpoken in the perſon of the deceaſed, came to anſwer thus, *Since it hath pleaſed God by his holy will to form me of earth, it hath pleaſed him alſo to reſolve me into earth, I recommend unto you, my children, the fear of that hour, wherein the hand of the Lord ſhall put us into the balance of his juſtice*; whereupon all the reſt with a great cry replied in this ſort, *May it pleaſe the moſt Almighty high Lord that raigns in the Sun, to have no regard to our works, that ſo we may be delivered from the pains of death*: Theſe little boys being retired, there came others about the age of ten or eleven years, apparrelled in white Sattin robes, with chains

of

of gold on their feet, and about their necks many rich jewels and pearls: After they had with much ceremony done a great deal of reverence to the dead body, they went and floriſhed naked ſcymitars which they had in their hands all about the hearſe, as if they would chace away the divell, ſaying aloud, *Get thee gone, accurſed as thou art, into the bottom of the houſe of ſmoke, where dying with a perpetuall pain, without making an end of dying, thou ſhalt pay, without making an end alſo of paying the rigorous juſtice of the Lord above.* This ſaid, they withdrew, as if they would ſhew that by this action they had left the body of the deceaſed exempt from the power of the divell, which beſieged it before; In the place of theſe ſame came in ſix and twenty of their principall *Talagrepes*, being fourſcore years old and upwards, apparrelled in robes of violet coloured damask, and carrying ſilver cenſors in their hands, before whom for the greater gracing of them marched twelve gentlemen Uſhers with Maces of the ſame metall; as ſoon as theſe Prieſts had cenſed the hearſe four ſeverall times with many ceremonies, they all proſtrated themſelves with their faces on the ground, and then one of them began to ſay, as if he had ſpoken to the dead man, *If the clouds of heaven were able to tell our griefs unto the beaſts of the field, they would forſake their paſture for to help us to wail thy death, and the great extremity whereunto we are reduced; or els they would beſeech thee Lord, to imbarque us with thee into this deadly houſe, where thou ſeeſt not us, becauſe we are not worthy of ſo great a favour. but that all this people may be comforted in thee before the tomb ſhall hide thy body from us, ſhew us, Lord, by figures of earth, the peaceable joy, and ſweet contentment of thy repoſe, that we may be all awaked out of the heavy ſleep, wherein the obſcurities of the fleſh doth wrap us, and that we miſerable wretches may be incited to imitate thee, and follow thy ſteps, for to behold thee in the joyfull houſe of the Sun at the laſt gaſp of our lives.* To theſe words, the people having made a very dreadfull cry, anſwered incontinently, *The Lord grant us this grace.* Then the twelve gentlemen Uſhers that carried the Maces, going on afore to make way thorough the preſs, though with much ado, becauſe the people would not withdraw, there came forth of an houſe on the right ſide of the Scaffold four and twenty little boys richly apparelled, with chains of gold and pretious ſtones about their necks, who playing after their manner on divers inſtruments of muſick, and falling down on their knees in two ranks before the hearſe, they continued playing on their inſtruments, to the tune whereof there were only two of them that ſung, whereunto five others anſwered from time to time in ſuch a dolefull manner, as made all the aſſiſtants ſhed abundance of tears, yea ſome of them were ſo ſenſible of it, as they could not forbear plucking of their hair, and knocking their heads againſt the ſteps of the Throne where the hearſe ſtood. During this and many other ceremonies there performed, ſix young gentlemen *Grepes* ſacrificed themſelves, by drinking out of a golden cup a certain yellow liquor, ſo venemous, that before they had made an end of their draught, they fell down ſtark dead on the ground; this action of theirs brought theſe Martyrs of the divell into the number of their Saints, ſo as they were envied by every one for it, and preſently their bodies were carried with a ſolemn proceſſion to be burnt in a great fire, that was made of Sanders, Aloes, and Benjamin, where they were quickly reduced unto aſhes. The next morning the Scaffold was diſgarniſhed of all the richeſt pieces about it, and the hearſe, but the cloths of eſtate, the hangings and banners; as alſo many other moveables of great worth were not ſtirred, and ſo with divers ceremonies, fearfull cries and lamentations, and a ſtrange noyſe of ſeverall ſorts of inſtruments, they ſet fire on the Scaffold, and all that was upon it, anoynting it often with odoriferous liquors, and confections of great price. Thus was the body conſumed to aſhes in a very ſhort time, but whilſt it was burning, the King and all the Grandees of his Court which were then preſent, caſt in by way of alms many pieces of gold, pretious ſtones, jewels, and chains of pearl of exceeding great value, all which ſo ill imployed were inſtantly conſumed by the fire, together with the body and bones of that wretched dead man, ſo as we were certainly informed afterward, that this funerall pomp coſt above an hundred thouſand duckets, beſides the garments which the King and the Grandees of the country gave to thirty thouſand Prieſts that were aſſiſting at it, wherein was imployed an incredible quantity of ſtuffes of ſeverall ſorts, witneſſe the *Portugals*, who mightily profited by ſo lucky an occaſion, becauſe they ſold at what price they would ſuch as they brought from *Bengala* were paid in lingots of gold and ſilver.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXI.

*The election of the new* Roolim *of* Mounay, *the grand* Talagrepo *of theſe Gentiles of the Kingdome of* Pegu.

§. 1. THe next day between ſeven and eight in the morning, which was the time when the aſhes of the deceaſed began to be cold, the King and all the great Lords of the Court came unto the place where the body had been burnt, marching all in order after the manner of a ſtately proceſſion, and aſſiſted by all the *Grepos*, amongſt whom there were an hundred and thirty with ſilver cenſors, and fourteen with miters of gold on their heads; they were apparrelled in long robes of yellow ſattin, as for all the reſt, to the number of ten thouſand, they were cloathed with taffeta of the ſame colour, and with a kind of ſurpliſs of fine linnen, which was not done without a very great charge, by reaſon of the number of them. Being arrived at the place where the *Roolim* had been burnt, after ſome ceremonies performed, as is uſuall with them, according to the time and ſence that every one had of it, a *Talagrepo* of the *Bramaa* Nation, and Uncle to the King, as Brother to his Father, whom the people held for the ableſt of them all, having been choſen to preach that day, went up into the Pulpit for that effect: The beginning of his Sermon was an Elegy touching the defunct, whoſe life he commended with many ſpeeches that made for his purpoſe, wherein he grew ſo earneſt and hot, as turning himſelf to the King with tears in his eys, and lifting up his voice ſomewhat louder, to the end he might hear him the better, he ſaid unto him, *If the Kings in theſe times wherein we live do conſider how little a time they have to live, and with what rigour of juſtice they ſhall be chaſtiſed by the Almighty hand of the moſt high God for the crimes of their tyrannicall lives, poſſibly it would be better for them to feed in the open fields like brute beaſts, then to be ſo abſolute in their will, and to uſe it with ſo little reaſon, even as to be cruel to the good, and ſlack in puniſhing the wicked, whom by their ſoveraign power they have put into greatneſſe and authority; and truly they are much to be lamented, whoſe good fortune hath raiſed them up to an eſtate ſo dangerous, as is that of Kings at this day, by reaſon of the inſolence and liberty wherein they continually live, without ſo much as the leaſt apprehenſion of any fear or ſhame. But you muſt know, O ye blinded of the world, that God hath made you Kings to uſe clemency towards men, to give them audience, to content, to chaſtiſe them, but not to kill them tyrannically: Nevertheleſſe, O ye bad Kings, in the condition whereunto you are raiſed, you oppoſe your ſelves to the nature which God hath indued you with, and take upon you many other different forms, in apparrelling your ſelves every hour with ſome ſuch livery as ſeems beſt unto you, to the end you may be to the one very bloud-ſuckers, that inceſſantly ſuck from them their goods and their lives, never leaving them ſo long as they have one drop of bloud in their veins; and to others you are dreadfull roaring Lions, who to give a maſk and a colour to your ambition and avarice, cauſe ſupreme Laws of death to be publiſhed for the leaſt faults, and all for to confiſcate other mens goods, which is the main end of your pretenſions. Contrarily if there be any that you love, and unto whom you, or the world, or I know not what, have given the name of* Grandees, *you are ſo negligent in chaſtiſing their proud humors, and ſo prodigall in inriching them with the ſpoils and undoing of the poor, whom you have left naked, and even flayed to the very quick, as you cannot doubt but that they will one day accuſe you before God for all theſe things, when you will have no excuſe to make, ſo that there will be nothing left you but a dreadfull confuſion to trouble you, and to put you into an horrible diſorder.* To theſe he added ſo many other remonſtrances in favour of the poor ſubjects, cried out ſo mainly, and ſhed ſo many tears in their behalf, as the King remained almoſt beſides himſelf, and was touched ſo neerly therewith, that he inſtantly called *Brazagaran*, the Governor of *Pegu*, unto him, and commanded him without all delay to diſmiſſe all the Deputies of the Provinces of the Kingdome, whom he had cauſed to be aſſembled in the Town of *Coſmin*, for to demand of them a great ſum of money, that he might ſet upon the Kingdom of *Savady*, on which he had newly reſolved to make war. Withall he ſweare publikely on the aſhes of the defunct, that during his raign he would never charge his ſubjects with impoſts, nor would make them to ſerve by force, as he had formerly done; yea, and that for the future he would have a moſt ſpeciall care to hear the poor, and to do them juſtice againſt the miſdemeanours of the great ones, conformable to the merit of every one, together with many other things very

poſt

juſt and good, which might well ſerve for a leſſon to us that are Chriſtians. This Sermon being finiſhed, the aſhes of the defunct, which had been gathered up, was diſtributed as a relique into fourteen golden baſons, whereof the King himſelf took up one on his head, and the *Gropes* of chiefeſt quality carried the reſt; ſo the Proceſſion going from thence in the ſame order as it came thither, thoſe aſhes were conveyed into a very rich Temple, which might be ſome flight ſhot from that place, and named *Quiay Docco*, that is, *the god of the afflicted of the earth*, there they were put into a ſhallow grave, without other pomp or vanity, for ſo had *Aixequendoo*, the late *Roolim*, commanded. This grave then was invironed about with three iron grates, and with two of ſilver, and one of latten, and upon three iron rods that croſſed the whole bredth of the chappell, hung ſeventy and two lamps of ſilver, namely four and twenty on each of them, all of great value, and faſtened together with great ſilver chains. Furthermore, there were placed about the ſteps, whereby one deſcended into the grave, thirty and ſix little perfuming pots, with Benjamin, Aloes, and other confections, wherein was great ſtore of Ambergreece, all which was not finiſhed till it was almoſt night, by reaſon of the many ceremonies uſed in this funerall; all that day long they freed an infinite number of birds which had been brought thither in above an hundred cages, theſe Gentiles being of the opinion that they were ſo many ſouls of deceaſed perſons, which before times had paſſed out of this life, and that were depoſited as it were in the bodies of thoſe birds, till the day of their deliverance ſhould come, at which time they were in all liberty to accompany the ſoul of the defunct: The like they did with a great many of little fiſhes which had been tranſported thither alſo in certain veſſells full of water, ſo that to ſet them at liberty, they caſt them into the river with another new ceremony, to the end they might ſerve the ſoul of him whoſe aſhes were then buried: There was alſo brought thither all kind of veniſon and foul, which was diſtributed as an alms to all the poore that were preſent there, whereof the number was almoſt infinite. Theſe ceremonies, and other ſuch like which were performed in this action being finiſhed, the King in regard it was neer night retired into his quarter, where he had cauſed tents to be pitched for to lodge in, and that in ſign of mourning, the like did all the great ones, ſo that all the Aſſembly by little and little withdrew. The next morning as ſoon as it was day, the King made it to be proclaimed, that all perſons of what condition ſoever they were, ſhould upon pain of death diſlodge ſpeedily out of the Iſland, and that they which were Prieſts ſhould return to the attendance of their cures, with this penalty, in care of contravention to be degraded from their dignity. Whereupon all the Prieſts went preſently out of the Iſland, ninety of them excepted, who were deputed for the election of him that was to ſucceed in the place of the defunct. Theſe ſame then aſſembled in the houſe of *Gangspare* to acquit themſelves of their charge; and for that in the two firſt daies, which was the term limited to make this election, it could not ſucceed by reaſon of the diverſity of opinions, and great contrariety that was found amongſt them, which were to give their votes; the King thought fit, that out of thoſe deputed ninety, there ſhould nine be choſen, who alone ſhould make the election. This reſolution being taken, theſe nine continued five daies, and as many nights together in continuall prayer; in the mean time a world of offerings were made, and alms given; a great number of poor people were alſo cloathed, and tables prepared, where all men that would might eat of free coſt, and all this was accompanied with proceſſions in every quarter. At laſt theſe nine being agreed in conformity of votes, elected for *Roolim* one *Manicha Monchan*, who at that time was a *Capizondo*, or Prelate in the town of *Dignus* of a *Pagode*, called *Quiay Figran*, that is to ſay, *god of the atomes of the Sun*, of whom I have oftentimes ſpoken; he was a man of about threeſcore and eight years of age; accounted amongſt them for an holy perſonage, very knowing in the cuſtomes and lawes of thoſe Sects of the Gentiles, and above all exceeding charitable to the poor: With this election the King and all the great ones of the Court remained very well ſatisfied. The King then ſpeedily diſpatched away the *Chaumigrem* his foſter-brother, to whom he gave thereupon the title of *Contalanhaa*, which ſignifies, the Kings brother, to the end he might be the more honorably qualified with an hundred *Lanleas*, wherein was the Flower of all the *Bramas* Nobility, together with the nine Electors, for to go and fetch him which had been newly elected of *Roolim*: And having brought him

him nine dayes after with a great deal of reſpect and honor to a place called *Tagalea*, ſome five leagues from the Iſle of *Mouney*, the King met him with all the great men of the Court, beſides a world of other people, and above two thouſand veſſells with oars. When he was come in this equipage where the new *Roolim* vvas, he proſtrated himſelf before him, and kiſſing the ground three times, *O thou holy pearl*, ſaid he unto him, *which art in the midſt of the Sun, breath forth upon me by an agreeable inſpiration of the Lord of uncreated power, that I may not dread upon earth the inſupportable yoke of mine enemies*: At theſe vvords the nevv *Roolim* putting forth his hand to raiſe him from the ground, ſpake thus unto him, *Labour my Son that thy works may be pleaſing to God, and I will pray for thee without ceaſing*. Hereupon the King riſing up, the *Roolim* made him ſit dovvn by him, and ſtroked him three times vvith his hand on the head, vvhich the King took for the greateſt honor he could do him; then having ſaid ſomething unto him vvhich vve could not hear, for that vve vvere a little too far off, he blovved three times on the Kings head, vvhileſt he vvas on his knees again before him, and all the people laid flat on the earth. This done, he parted from that place amidſt the applauſes that vvere given him from all parts, and the ſound of bells and inſtruments of muſick, and imbarqued himſelf in the Kings *Lanlea*, where he was ſeated in a rich chair of gold, ſet with precious ſtones, and the King at his feet, which was alſo taken for a great honor done him by the *Roolim*; round about, and a little diſtant from him were twelve little boys attired in yellow ſattin, with ſcarfes of ſilver Tinſell, golden Maces, and Scepters in their hands: All along the ſides of the veſſell, inſtead of Mariners, ſtood the Lords of the Kingdom with guilt oars by them; and as well in the Poop as the Prow were two Quires of young ſtriplings, apparrelled in carnation ſattin, and having divers ſorts of inſtruments in their hands, to the tune whereof they ſang the praiſes of God. Some of our company obſerved, that one of their ſongs ſaid thus; *Children of a pure heart, praiſe this admirable and divine Lord, for as for me being a ſinner I am not worthy to do it; and if that too be not permitted unto you, let your eys weep before his feet, that ſo you may render your ſelves agreeable unto him.* In the ſame manner they ſung many other ſongs to the tune of their inſtruments, and with ſo much ardor and zeal, as if they had been Chriſtians; it would have been able to have ſtirred up the devotion of them that heard them. After that the *Roolim* was in this ſumptuous ſort arrived at the City of *Martabano*, he did not go to Land, as it had been reſolved, becauſe it was night, for it was not lawfull for him at any hand to touch the ground with his feet, in regard of the great dignity of his perſon, but ſtayed till the next morning, at which time the King diſimbarqued him firſt of all upon his own ſhoulders, and ſo too did the Princes and great Lords of the Kingdom carry him alternatively to the *Pagode* of *Quiay Ponnedea*, as being the greateſt and moſt ſumptuous of the whole City, in the midſt whereof was a Theater richly ſet forth of yellow ſattin, which is the livery of that ſoveraign dignity. There, out of a new ceremony, being laid all along upon a little bed of gold, he made as though he were dead, and then at the ſound of a bell which gave three toles, the *Bonzes* proſtrated themſelves all with their faces on the ground for the ſpace of half an hour, during which time, all the aſſiſtants for a ſign of ſadneſſe held their hands before their eys, in ſaying aloud, *Lord recall this thy ſervant to a new life, to the end we may have one to pray for us*. Inſtantly thereupon they took him from thence, and put him into a Tomb adorned with the ſame livery, then chanting out certain, I know not what, very ſorrowfull words with tears in their eys, they left him, after they had ſurrounded the Temple thrice, in a grave made expreſly for that purpoſe, covered over with a cloth of black velvet, and invironed about with dead mens heads. This done, they ſaid certain prayers after their manner, weeping, which very much moved the King; and then all the throng of people that made a ſtrange noyſe, being commanded to ſilence, they gave three toles with a great bell, for a ſign to all the reſt of the bells in the City to anſwer them, as they did with ſo horrible and dreadfull a din, that the earth even trembled therewith: After the ceaſing of this noyſe, two *Talagrepos*, men of great reputation amongſt them, and very well verſed in their Laws, went up into two Pulpits, prepared expreſly for them, and that were hung with rich Turky Carpets, where they entertained their Auditors with the ſubject of this ceremony, and gave them the explication of every thing, making an ample relation unto them of the life and death of the deceaſed *Roolim*,

and

and of the election of this ſame; together with the excellent qualities with which he was indued for to be raiſed to ſo high a charge whereunto he was called by a particular grace of God; to this they added many other things wherewith the people were exceedingly ſatisfied and contented; then the ſame bell having tolled three times more, the two Prieſts deſcended from their Pulpits, which together with all their furniture were preſently burned with another new kind of ceremony, whereof I will forbear here making a relation, becauſe it ſeems unneceſſary to me to loſe time in theſe ſuperfluities, having ſaid but too much already thereof. After all things were peaceable and quiet, and that for the ſpace of five or ſix Credoes nothing had been ſpoken, there appeared coming from the next Temple, which was about a flight ſhot off, a very rich and ſumptuous Proceſſion of little children, attired all in white taffets, for a mark of their innocency and pureneſſe; they had about their necks a number of jewells, chains of gold upon their legs in form of bracelets, white wax lights in their hands, and upon their heads bonnets imbroydered with ſilk and gold, and ſet with Pearls, Rubies, and Saphirs; in the middle of this Proceſſion was a rich Canopy of cloth of gold, which twelve of thoſe little children carried, invironed round about with perfuming pans and cenſors of ſilver, from whence breathed forth excellent odors moſt pleaſing to the ſent. Theſe little children played on divers inſtruments of muſick, and went on ſinging praiſes to God, and praying him to reſuſcitate this defunct to a new life. When they were arrived at the place where the *Roolim* lay, they drew to the ſhrine, and taking away the cloth wherewith it was covered, there came out of it a little child, which could not be above three or four years old, and although he was naked, yet was not his nakedneſſe ſeen, becauſe he was all covered over with gold and pretious ſtones, and appeared in the ſame faſhion as we are accuſtomed to paint Angells; he had alſo golden wings, and a very rich Crown upon his head: Whenas he was come from out the ſhrine, the Aſſiſtants being proſtrated on the ground, fell to ſaying aloud with a voice that made thoſe to tremble which heard them, *Thou Angel of God, ſent from heaven for our ſalvation, pray for us when thou returneſt thither again.* The King went inſtantly to this child, and having taken him in his arms with a great deal of reſpect, and a ſtrange ceremony, as if he would ſhew that he was not worthy to touch him, in regard he was an Angell ſent from heaven, he ſet him on the brink of the grave, where after the child had taken away the cloth of black Velvet that covered him, whileſt all were on their knees, with their hands and eys lift up to heaven, he ſaid aloud, as if he had ſpoken to him, *Thou which haſt been conceived in ſin, amidſt the miſery and filthineſs of the fleſh, God commands thee by me, who am the leaſt of his ſervants, that thou do reſuſcitate to a new life which may be agreeable unto him, always dreading the chaſtiſement of his mighty hand, to the end that at the laſt gaſp of thy life thou mayeſt not ſtumble like the children of the world; and that from this place where thou art extended ſtark dead, thou do riſe up preſently, becauſe it hath been ſo decreed by the greateſt of the greateſt in the Temple of the earth, and come after me, and come after me, and come after me.* The King thereupon took this child again in his arms, and then the *Roolim* riſing up in the grave where he was, as it were amazed with this viſion, fell on his knees before the child whom the King held, and ſaid, *Receive of this new grace from the hand of the Lord, conformably to that which thou haſt told me from him, obliging my ſelf to be even till death an example of humility, and the leaſt of all his, to the end the roads of the earth may not loſe themſelves in the abundance of the world.* This ſaid, the child rid himſelf again out of the Kings arms, and going directly to the grave, he lent the *Roolim* his hand to help him out of it. Now he was ſcarce come forth, whenas they gave five toles with a Bell, which was a ſign for all the people to proſtrate themſelves on the ground the ſecond time, ſaying, *Bleſſed be thou, O Lord, for ſo great a grace;* whereupon all the bells in the City began to ring, and all the Ordnance that were on the land to ſhoot of, as alſo thoſe of above two thouſand veſſells that rode at Anchor in the Port, from whence proceeded ſo ſtrange a noyſe, as was moſt inſupportable to the ears of them that heard it.

## CHAP. LXII.

*In what manner the Reolim was conducted to the Iſle of* Monnay, *and put into poſſeſſion of his dignity.*

THe new *Reolim* was conducted from that place in a chair of gold exceeding rich, and ſet with Pretious Stones, which the principall Lords of the Kingdome carried upon their ſhoulders; the King in the mean time marched on foot before him, bearing a rich Scymitar upright in his hand. In this equipage he accompanied him to his Palace, which was gorgeouſly furniſhed, and where he was lodged three dayes, during which time the preparations neceſſary for his entry was made in the Iſle of *Monnay*. Now whileſt he abode in the City of *Marrabaue* there were many ſorts of inventions of great charge made by the Princes, Lords, and Inhabitants; In two of thoſe feaſts the King himſelf was preſent in perſon, with a moſt ſumptuous entertainment, which I ſhall not deſcribe, becauſe to ſay the truth I do not know how it did paſſe. The day being arrived, wherein the new *Reolim*, who is (as I have already declared) their Soveraign High Prieſt, was to make his entry into the Iſle of *Monnay*, the whole Fleet of *Seroe*, *Jangoas*, *Lanleas*, and ſuch other veſſells of divers ſorts which were upon the river, to the number of two thouſand and better, were ranked in two files, ſome a league and half in length, being the ſpace between the City & the Iſland; ſo that of all thoſe veſſels joyned together was formed a ſtreet, the faireſt that poſſibly could be ſeen, for every veſſell was covered with boughs full of ſeveral dainty fruits, together with all kind of flowers, Targets, Standards, and banners of ſilk, each one ſtriving in emulation of another to gain their pretended Jubilee, and a plenary indulgence and abſolution of all the robberies they had formerly committed, without being ſubject to the reſtitution of any thing whatſoever. This they did alſo to be abſolved from an infinite of other abuſes of their abhominable lives, which I paſſe by in ſilence, as a matter unfit for devout ears, but conformable to their diabolicall Sects, and the damnable intentions of thoſe which have inſtituted them, for their whole manner of living is nothing but diſſolution and exceſſe in the laſciviouſneſſe of the fleſh, as in like manner are all other infidells, and arch-hereticques. In the *Reolims* company there were not above thirty *Lanleas*; who were repleniſhed with a great number of the Nobility; as for him he was in a rich *Seroe*, ſeated in a Throne of ſilver, under a cloth of State of cloth of gold, and the King at his feet, as not being worthy to ſit in a more eminent place; round about him were thirty children on their knees attired in Crimſon Sattin, with ſilver Maces on their ſhoulders, and twelve ſtanding on their feet cloathed with white Damask, having cenſors in their hands, from whence breathed forth moſt delicate perfumes. In the reſt of the ſhipping followed two hundred of the moſt honorable *Talagrepos*, ſuch as Archbiſhops and other Prelates may be amongſt us, in the number of whom were alſo ſix or ſeven young Princes, all the Sons of Kings, comprehended. Now becauſe theſe Veſſells were ſo full of people as one could not row, they had fifteen *Lanleas*, or little *Skiffes*, wherein the Supreme religious men of thoſe nine Sects did row, to bring them the ſooner to land. In this equipage, and in this order the new *Reolim* parted from the City of *Marrabaue* two hours before day, and continued his courſe amidſt theſe Veſſells, which made, as I have delivered, a kind of ſtreet, and foraſmuch as it was not yet day, there were a great number of Lanterns of different faſhions placed amongſt the boughs. As ſoon as he began to ſet forth, a Canon was ſhot off three times, at which ſign there was ſuch a noyſe of Bells, and great Ordnance, as alſo of divers ſorts of very ſtrange Inſtruments intermingled with the cries and acclamations of the people, as one would have thought that heaven and earth would have come together. When he was arrived at the *Key*, where he was to land, he was received with a ſolemn Proceſſion by certain religious men that live in ſolitary places, and are called *Menigrepos*, which are like to the *Capucins* in *France*, whom theſe Gentiles infinitely reſpect, by reaſon of their manner of living, for according to the rule which they obſerve, they uſe more abſtinence by far then all the reſt; Theſe ſame, being ſome ſix or ſeven thouſand in number, were all bare foot, and cloathed with black Mat, to ſhew their contempt of the world: upon their heads they wore the ſculls and bones of dead men, and great cords about their necks, having all their faces dawbed over with dirt, and a writing hanging upon them which contained

theſe

theſe words, *Mire, mire, do not caſt thine eye on thy baſeneſſe, but on the recompenſes which God hath promiſed to thoſe that vilifie themſelves to ſerve him.* When as they were very neer to the *Reolim*, who received them very affably, they proſtrated themſelves with their faces down to the ground, and after they had continued ſo ſome time, the chiefeſt amongſt them looking on the *Reolim*, *May it pleaſe him*, ſaid he, *from whoſe hand thou haſt newly received ſo great a bleſſing, as to be the Head of all on the earth, to render thee ſo good and ſo holy a man, that all thy works may be as pleaſing unto him, as the innocency of children which hold their peace when their mother gives them the dug.* Whereunto all the reſt anſwered with a great noyſe of confuſed voices, *Permit O Lord Almighty that it may be ſo.* Paſſing on then, accompanied with this Proceſſion, which the King for the greater honor governed himſelf, together with ſome of the principall perſonages, whom he called unto him for that purpoſe, he went directly to the place where the dead *Reolim* lay buried, and being arrived at his Tomb, he fell down flat with his face upon it, then having ſhed a great many tears, he ſaid with a ſad and dolefull voice, as if he had ſpoken to the deceaſed, *May it pleaſe him, who raigns in the beauty of the Stars, to make me deſerve the honor to be thy Slave, to the end, that in the houſe of the Sun, where now thou recreateſt thy ſelf, I may ſerve as a broom to thy feet, for ſo ſhall I be made a Diamond of ſo high a price, as the world, and all the riches thereof together, ſhall not be able to equall the value of it:* whereunto the *Gropes* anſwered, *God grant it.* Thereupon taking a pair of Beads which had belonged to the deceaſed, and that was upon the Tomb, he put it about his neck as a relique of great worth, giving as an Almes, ſix Lamps of ſilver, two Cenſors, and ſix or ſeven pieces of violet coloured Damask. This done, he retired unto his Palace, accompanied ſtill with the King, the Princes, and great Lords of the Kingdome, as alſo with the Prieſts that were there aſſiſtant, from whom he preſently rid himſelf, and then from out of the window he threw down upon the Aſſembly handfulls of Rice, as amongſt the Papiſts they uſe to caſt Holy Water, which all the people received upon their knees, with their hands lifted up. This Ceremony ended, which laſted very neer three hours, they gave three toles with a Bell, upon which Signal the *Reolim* retired for altogether, and ſo did the Veſſells, and they that came in them, wherein all that day was wholly beſtowed. About evening the King took his leave of the *Reolim*, and returned to the City, making directly the next morning towards *Pegu*, which was ſome eighteen leagues from thence, where he arrived the day following two hours within night, without making any entry or ſhew, to teſtifie the extreme griefe he was in for the death of the late *Reolim*, whom it was ſaid, he greatly affected.

## CHAP. LXIII.

### *That which the King of* Bramaa *did after his arrivall at the City of* Pegu, *together with his beſieging of* Savady.

TWo and twenty daies after the King of *Bramaa* arrived at the City of *Pegu*, he perceived by the Letter which his Ambaſſador brought him from the *Calaminhaut*, that he had concluded the League with him againſt the *Siamon*, yet in regard the ſeaſon was not fit for him, either to commence that war, or to aſſail the Kingdome of *Ava*, as he deſired, he reſolved to ſend his Foſter-brother, unto whom, as I have already declared, he had given the title of lawfull Brother, to the ſiege of *Savady*, which was ſome hundred and thirty Leagues from thence to the North-Eaſt. Having aſſembled an Army then of an hundred and fifty thouſand men, amongſt whom were thirty thouſand ſtrangers of divers Nations, and five thouſand fighting Elephants, beſides three thouſand others that carried the baggage, and the victualls, the *Chammigrem* departed from *Pegu* with a Fleet of thirteen hundred rowing Veſſells, the fifteenth of the moneth of *March*. Fourteen daies after he arrived in the ſight of *Savady*, and having caſt Anchor neer to a great Plain, called *Gampalaor*, he remained there ſix daies in attending the five thouſand Elephants which were to come to him by land, who were no ſooner arrived, but he began to beſiege the Town, ſo that having begirt it round, he aſſaulted it three times in the open day, and retreated ſtill with very great loſſe, as well in regard of the notable reſiſtance which they within made againſt him, as of the extreme trouble his people

people were at in planting their ladders againſt the walls, by reaſon of their bad ſituation, which was all of Slate; whereupon conſulting with his Commanders about what he ſhould do, they were all of opinion to have it battered with the Canon on the weakeſt ſide, untill that by the overthrow of ſome part of the wall, a breach might be made, whereby they might enter with more eaſe and leſſe danger. This reſolution was as ſoon executed as taken, ſo that the Ingineers fell to making of two manner of bullworks on the outſide upon a great Platform, compoſed of great beams and bavins, which in five daies they raiſed up to ſuch an height, as it ſurpaſſed the wall two fathom at the leaſt. This done, they planted on each bulwark twenty great pieces of Ordnance, wherewith they began to batter the Town ſo violently, that in a little time they beat down a pane of the wall; and beſides thoſe pieces of battery, there were above three hundred Falcons that ſhot inceſſantly, with an intention only to kill thoſe that were in the ſtreets, as indeed they made a great havock, which was the cauſe that ſeeing themſelves ſo ill-intreated, and their people ſlain in that manner, they reſolved, like valiant men as they were, to ſell their lives as dearly as they could, ſo that one morning having ſallied forth by the ſame breach of the wall which the Canon had made, they gave ſo valiantly upon thoſe of the Camp, that in leſſe then an hour they almoſt routed the *Bramaas* whole Army. Now becauſe it began to be day, the *Savadis* thought it fit to re-enter into the Town, leaving eight thouſand of their enemies dead on the place. After this they repaired the breach in a very little time by the means of a rampire of earth, which they made up with bavins and other materialls, that was ſtrong enough to reſiſt the Canon. Hereupon the *Chaumigrem* ſeeing the bad ſucceſſe he had had, reſolved to make war, both upon the places neer about, as alſo upon the frontiers that were furtheſt off from the Town, for which purpoſe he ſent *Dioſuay*, high Treaſurer of the Kingdome, whoſe Slaves we *Portugals* were, Colonel of five thouſand men to ſpoil a certain Borough, called *Valentay*, which furniſhed the beſieged Town with proviſions; but this voyage was ſo infortunate unto him, that before his arrivall at the deſigned place, his forces were by two thouſand *Savadis*, whom he incountred by the way, all cut in pieces in leſſe then half an hour, not one eſcaping with life that fell into the enemies hands. Nevertheleſſe it pleaſed our Lord that amidſt this defeat we ſaved our ſelves by the favour of the night, and without knowing whither we went, we took the way of a very craggy mountain, where we marched in exceeding great pain three daies and an half, at the end whereof we entred into certain Mooriſh Plains, where we could meet with no path or way, nor having other company then Tygers, Serpents, and other ſavage beaſts, which put us into a mighty fear. But as our God, whom inceſſantly we invoked with tears in our eys is the true guide of travellers, he out of his infinite mercy permitted, that at length we perceived one evening a certain fire towards the Eaſt, ſo that continuing our courſe towards that place where we ſaw this light, we found our ſelves the next morning neer to a great Lake, where there were ſome Cottages, which in all likelyhood were inhabited by very poor people; howbeit not daring to diſcover our ſelves as yet, we hid us all that day in certain hanging precipices that were very boggy, and full of Horſleeches, which made us all gore blood. As ſoon as it was night we fell to marching again untill the next morning, whenas we arrived neer to a great river, all alongſt the which we continued going for five daies together. At laſt with much pain we got to another Lake, that was far greater then the former, upon the bank whereof was a little Temple in the form of an Hermitage, and there we found an old Hermite, who gave us the beſt entertainment that poſſibly he could: This old man permitted us to repoſe our ſelves two daies with him, during which time we demanded many things of him that made for our purpoſe; whereunto he alwaies anſwered according to the truth, and told us, that we were ſtill within the Territories of the King of *Savady*, that this Lake was called *Oregnantor*, that is to ſay, *the opening of the night*, and the Hermitage, *the God of ſuccour*. Whereupon being deſirous to know of him the ſignification of this abuſe, he laid his hand on an horſe of braſſe, that ſtood for the Idoll upon the Altar, and ſaid that he often read in a book, which intreated of the foundation of the Kingdome, that ſome two hundred, thirty, and ſeven years before, this Lake being a great Town, called *Ocumbalen*, a King that was named *Avan* had taken it in war, that in acknowledgement of this victory, his

Prieſts

Prieſts, by whom he was wholly governed, counſelled him to ſacrifice unto *Quiay Guaſor*, the God of war, all the young male children which had been made captives; and in caſe he did not ſo, they would when they became men regain the Kingdome from him. The King apprehending the event of this threatning, cauſed all theſe children, being fourſcore and five thouſand in number, to be brought all into one place, and ſo upon a day that was kept very ſolemn amongſt them, he made them to be put moſt inhumanely to the edge of the ſword, with an intent to have them burned the next morning in Sacrifice; but the night following there came a great earthquake, and ſuch lightning and fire fell from heaven upon the Town, as within leſſe then half an hour it was quite demoliſhed, and all that was in it reduced to nothing, ſo that by this juſt judgement of God, the King, together with all his were ſtrucken dead, not ſo much as one eſcaping; and beſides them thirty thouſand Prieſts in like manner, who ever ſince during all the New Moons are heard to cry and roar ſo dreadfully, that all the inhabitants thereabouts were ready to go beſides themſelves with fear, by reaſon whereof the Country was utterly depopulated, no other habitation remaining therein, ſave only fourſcore and five Hermitages, which were erected in memory of the fourſcore and five thouſand children, whom the King had cauſed to be butchered through the evill counſell of his Prieſts.

## CHAP. LXIIII.

*A continuation of the ſucceſſe which we had in this voyage, with my departure from* Goa *to* Zunda, *and what paſſed during my abode there.*

WE paſt two daies in this Hermitage, where, as I declared before, we were very well entertained by the Hermite; the third day after betimes in the morning we took our leave of him, and departed from thence not a little afflicted with that which we had heard, and ſo all the ſame day and the night following we continued on our way along by the river; the next morning we arrived at a place where were a great many of ſugar canes, of which we took ſome, for that we had nothing els to nouriſh us withall. In this manner we marched ſtill along by this river, which we kept for a guide of our voyage, becauſe we judged that how long ſoever it were, yet would it at laſt ingulfe it ſelf in the Sea, where we hoped that our Lord would raiſe us up ſome remedy for our miſeries. The day enſuing we arrived at a village called *Pommiſeray*, where we hid our ſelves in a very thick wood from being deſeried by paſſengers, and two hours within night we continued our deſign in following the current of this river, being reſolved to take our death in good part, if it ſhould pleaſe God to ſend it us, for to put an end to ſo many ſufferings as we had undergone day and night; and without lying, the apprehenſion and viſions of this laſt end troubled us more then death it ſelf, wherewith we imagined our ſelves to be already enſnared. At the end of ſeventeen daies, that this painfull and ſad voyage had laſted, God ſhewed us ſo much grace, that during the obſcurity of a very rainy night, we diſcovered a certain light little more then a Faulcon ſhot before us, the fear we were in at the firſt that we were neer ſome Town, made us to ſtand ſtill for a good ſpace, without knowing what to reſolve upon, untill we obſerved that this light ſeemed to move, whereby we conjectured that it was ſome Veſſell which went from one port to another; as indeed half an hour after we perceived one, wherein there were nine perſons, who approaching to the bank of the river, neer to the place where we were, landed all in a Creek that was there in the form of an Haven, and preſently making a fire, they began to prepare their ſupper, which was no ſooner ready, but they fell to eating with great demonſtrations of mirth, wherein they beſtowed a pretty good time. At length when they were well repleniſhed with meat and drink, it happened that all nine of them, amongſt whom there were three women, fell faſt aſleep; whereupon ſeeing that we could not find a more favourable occaſion to make our benefit of this adventure, we went all eight of us very ſoftly into the barque, that ſtuck half in the Ooze, and was tyed faſt to a great ſtake, which puſhing forth with our ſhoulders we ſet afloat, and then imbarquing our ſelves in it with all ſpeed, we began to row down the river with as little noyſe as poſſibly we could make. Now in regard the current of the water and [illegible] both very favourable unto

§. 1.

unto us, we found our ſelves the next morning above ten leagues from the place vvhence vve parted, namely neer to a *Pagode*, called *Quiay Hinarel*, that is to ſay, *the God of Rice*, vvhere vve met but only vvith one man and ſeven and thirty vvomen, the moſt of them old, and Religionaries of this Temple, vvho received us vvith a great deal of charity, although in my opinion they did it rather out of fear of us, then any vvill that they had to do us good. Having queſtioned them about many things vvhich ſerved for our purpoſe, they could give us no pertinent anſvver thereunto, alledging ſtill, that they vvere but poor vvomen, vvho upon a ſolemn vovv had renounced all things in the vvorld, and confined themſelves into this incloſure, vvhere they beſtovved all their time in continuall prayer to *Quiay Ponnedea*, vvhich moves the clouds of heaven, that he vvould be pleaſed to give them rain, vvhereby their grounds might be made fruitfull to produce them abandance of Rice. In this place vve ſpent all the day in caulking our barque, and furniſhing our ſelves at theſe religious vvomens coſt, vvith Rice, Sugar, French Beans, Onyons, and ſome ſmoak-dried fleſh, vvherevvith they vvere ſufficiently provided. Being parted from hence about an hour vvithin night, vve continued our courſe vvith our Oars and Sails for ſeven vvhole days together, vvithout ſo much as once daring to touch the Land, ſo much vvere vve in fear of ſome diſaſter that might eaſily arrive to us from thoſe places vvhich vve ſavv all alongſt the river: But as it is impoſſible to avoid that here belovv vvhich is determined there above, juſt at the inſtant, as vve vvere continuing on our courſe, all confuſed as vve vvere, and in a perpetuall alarm, by reaſon of the danger that vvas alvvays preſent before our eys, as vvell for that vvhich vve ſavv, as for that vve vvere in doubt of, our ill hap vvould have it, that an hour before day, as vve paſt thorough the mouth of a Channell, three *Paraos* of Pyrats aſſaulted us vvith ſuch violence, and vvith ſo many different ſorts of Darts, vvhich they ſhowred upon us, that within leſs then two *Credoes*, they had killed three of our companions; as for us five that remained, vve caſt our ſelves into the Sea all bloudy as we vvere vvith the vvounds vvhich vve had received, vvhereof tvvo others died a little after: When as vve vvere got aſhore vve hid our ſelves in the vvoods, vvhere vve paſt all that day in lamenting our preſent miſhap after ſo many fortunes as vve had run thorough before time. Thus vvounded as vve vvere, parting from thence in more hope of death then life, vve proceeded on our vvay by Land, vvith ſo much pain and irreſolution concerning vvhat vve vvere to do, as vve fell many times a vveeping, vvithout being able to comfort one another, in regard of the ſmall likelyhood there vvas of ſaving our lives by any humane meaus. As vve vvere reduced to this deplorable eſtate, vvith tvvo of our companions ready to die, it pleaſed our Lord (vvhoſe ſuccour doth ordinarily ſupply our defects) that in a place vvhere vve found our ſelves upon the bank of the vvater, there chanced to paſs by a Veſſell, vvherein there vvas a Chriſtian vvoman, named *Violenta*, vvho vvas married to a *Pagan*, to vvhom this Veſſell appertained, vvhich he had laden vvith Cotton Wooll to ſell off at *Coſmin*; this vvoman no ſooner perceived us, but moved vvith pity at the ſight of us, *Ieſus*, cried ſhe, *theſe are Chriſtians which I beheld!* that ſaid, ſhe cauſed the Veſſell vvherein ſhe vvas to come to the ſhore, and leaping on Land, together vvith her husband, they fell both of them to imbracing us vvith tears in their eys, and then made us to be imbarqued vvith them; preſently whereupon this vertuous Dame took a care to have our vvounds dreſt, and provided us of cloaths the beſt that ſhe could, rendring us many other good offices of a true and charitable Chriſtian: Then ſetting aſide all fear, vve parted from this place vvith all ſpeed, & five days after thorough Gods grace vve arrived ſafely at the Tovvn of *Coſmin*, vvhich is a part of the Sea in the Kingdome of *Pegu*, vvhere in the houſe of this good Chriſtian vvoman vve vvere as vvel looked unto, that in a ſhort time vve found our ſelves thoroughly cured of all our hurts. Now vvhereas there is never any vvant in the grace which God doth to his creatures, it pleaſed him that at that very time vve met in this Port vvith a ſhip, vvhereof *Luis de Montarroyo* vvas Maſter, vvho vvas upon the point of ſetting ſail for *Bengala*, ſo that after we had taken our leave of our Hoſteſs, to whom we rendred many thanks for all the benefits vvhich we had received of her, we imbarqued our ſelves with the ſaid *Luis de Montarroyo*, who likewiſe intreated us exceeding well, and furniſhed us abundantly with all that was neceſſary for us. At our arrivall at the Port of *Chatigan* in the Kingdome of *Bengala*, where there was at that time many

*Portugals*,

*Portugals*, I instantly imbarqued my self in the foist of a certain Merchant, called *Fernando Caldeyra*, who was bound for *Goa*, where it pleased God I arrived in good health. There I found *Pedro de Faria*, who had been Captain of *Malaca*, and by whom I had been sent as Ambassador to the *Chaiubanhaa* of *Martabano*, as I have declared heretofore. To him I rendred an exact accompt of all that had past, for which he shewed himself very sorrowfull, and accommodated me with divers things, whereunto his conscience and generosity obliged him, in regard of the goods which I had lost for his occasion. A little after, that I might not lose the oportunity of the season, I imbarqued my self with an intention to go to the Southward, and once more to try my fortune in the Kingdomes of *China* and *Japan*, to see if in those countries where I had so many times lost my coat, I could not find a better then that I had on.

Being imbarqued at *Goa* in a Junck that belonged to *Pedro de Faria*, which was bound in way of trade for *Zunda*, I arrived at *Malaca* the same day that *Ruy vas Pereyra*, termed *Marramaque* died, who was then Captain of the fortresse there. Being departed from that place to go to *Zunda*, at the end of seventeen dayes I arrived at *Banta*, where the *Portugals* are accustomed to traffique. And because there was at that time great scarcity of pepper over all the country, and that we came thither of purpose for it, we were constrained to passe the winter there, with a resolution to go for *China* the year following. We had been almost two moneths in this Port, where we exercised our commerce very peaceably, whenas from the King of *Demaa*, Emperor of all the Islands of *Jaoa*, *Angenia*, *Bala*, *Madura*, and of the rest of the Islands of that *Archipelago*, there landed in this country a widdow woman, named *Nhay Pombaya*, about the age of threescore years, who came as Ambassador to *Tagaril*, King of *Zunda*, that was also his Vassall as well as all the rest of that Monarchy, for to tell him that he was within the term of six weeks to be in person at the town of *Japara*, where he was then making preparation to invade the Kingdome of *Passaruan*. When this woman arrived in this Port, the King went in person to the Vessell where she was, from whence he carried her to his Palace with great pomp, and put her into the company of his wife for her better entertainment, whilest he himself retired to another lodging farther off to do her the more honor. Now that one may know the reason wherefore this ambassage was executed rather by a woman then a man, you must note, that it hath alwayes been the custome of the Kings of this Kingdome to treat of the most important matters of their State by the mediation of women, especially when it concernes peace, which they observe not only in particular messages that are sent by the Lords to their Vassalls, such as this was, but also in matter of publique and generall affairs, which is performed by ambassage from one King to another, and all the reason they give for it, is; *That God hath given more gentlenesse and inclination to courtesie, yea and more authority to women then to men, who are severe, as they say, and by consequent lesse agreeable to those unto whom they are sent.* Now it is their opinion, that every one of those women which the Kings are accustomed to send about affaires of importance, ought to have certain qualities for well executing of an ambassage, and worthily discharging the Commission which is granted to them: for first of all, they say, *That she must not be a Maid, for fear she chance to lose her honor in going out of her house, because that even as with her beauty she contents every one, so by the same reason she may be a motive of discord and unquietnesse in matters where unity is required, rather then an accesse to concord, and the peace which is pretended unto.* To this they adde, *that she must be married, or at leastwise a widdow after a lawfull marriage; that if she have had children, she must have a Certificate how she hath given them all suck with her own breasts, alledging thereupon, that she who hath borne children, and doth not nourish them if she can, is rather a carnall, voluptuous, corrupted, and dishonest woman, then a true mother.* And this custome is observed so exactly over all this country, principally amongst persons of quality, that if a mother hath a child which she cannot give suck unto for some valuable consideration, she must make an attestation thereof, as of a thing very serious, and much importing her honor. That if being young too she happens to lose her husband, and becomes a widdow, she must for the better testifying of her verrue enter into Religion. to the end she may thereby shew, that she did not formerly marry for the pleas[illegible] [illegible]pected from her marriage, but to have children, according to the pur[illegible] [illegible]ion, wherewith

§. 2.

God

God joyned together the firſt married couple in the terreſtiall Paradiſe. Furthermore, that there might be nothing to be found fault with in the purity of their marriage, and that it might be altogether conformable to the Law of God, they ſay, that after a woman is with-child, ſhe ought no longer to have the company of her husband, becauſe the ſame could not then be but diſhoneſt and ſenſuall. To theſe conditions they add many others which I will paſſe over in ſilence, for that I think it unreaſonable to uſe prolixity in matters that I hold worthy of excuſe, if I do not relate them at length. In the mean time after that *Nhay Pombaya* had delivered her Embaſſage to the King of *Zunda*, as I have declared before, and treated with him about the occaſion which brought her thither, ſhe preſently departed from this Towne of *Banta*; whereupon the King having ſpeedily prepared all things in readineſſe, he ſet ſail with a Fleet of thirty *Calaluzes*, and ten *Juripangoes*, well furniſhed with ammunition and victuall, in which forty veſſells there were ſeven thouſand fighting men, beſides the Mariners and Rowers. Amongſt this number were forty *Portugalls*, of ſix and forty that we were in all, in regard whereof they did us many particular favours in the buſineſſe of our Merchandize, and publikely confeſſed, that they were much obliged to us for following them as we did, ſo that we ſhould have had little reaſon to have excuſed our ſelves from accompanying them in this war.

## CHAP. XLIV.

*The expedition of the* Pangueyran, *Emperor of* Jaoa, *and King of* Demaa, *againſt the King of* Paſſeruan, *and all that which paſſed in this war.*

§. 1. THe King of *Zunda* being departed from the Port of *Banta* the fifth day of *January*, in the year one thouſand five hundred forty and ſix, arrived on the nineteenth of the ſame at the Town of *Japara*, where the King of *Demaa*, Emperor of this Iſland of *Jaoa*, was then making his preparatives, having an army on foot of eight hundred thouſand men. This Prince being advertiſed of the King of *Zundaes* coming, who was his brother-in-law and vaſſall, he ſent the King of *Panaruca*, Admirall of the Fleet, to receive him, who brought along with him an hundred and threeſcore *Calaluzes*, and ninety *Lanchares*, full of *Luſſons* from the Iſle of *Borneo*: With all this company he arrived where the King of *Zunda* was, who entertained him very courteouſly, and with a great deal of honor. Fourteen daies after our coming to this Town of *Japara*, the King of *Demaa* went and imbarqued himſelf for the Kingdome of *Paſſaruan* in a Fleet of two thouſand and ſeven hundred ſails, amongſt the which were a thouſand high-built Juncks, and all the reſt were Veſſells with oars. The eleventh of *February* he arrived at the river of *Hicandurea*, which is at the entrance of the bar; and becauſe the King of *Panaruca*, Admirall of the Fleet, perceived that the great Veſſells could not paſſe unto the Port, which was two leagues off, by reaſon of certaine ſhelves of ſand that were in divers parts of the river, he cauſed all thoſe that were in them to be diſimbarqued, and the other Veſſells with oars to go and anchor in the road before the Town, with an intention to burn the Ships that were in the Port, which indeed was accordingly executed. In this Army was the Emperor *Pangueyran* in perſon, accompanied with all the grandees of the Kingdome; the King of *Zunda*, his brother-in-law who was Generall of the Army, went by land with a great part of the forces, and being all arrived at the place where they meant to pitch their Camp, they took care in the firſt place for the fortifying thereof, and for placing the Canon in the moſt commodious places to batter the Town, in which labour they beſtowed the moſt part of the day. As for the night enſuing it was ſpent in rejoycings, and keeping good watch untill ſuch time as it was day, whenas each Captain applied himſelf to that whereunto his duty obliged him, all in generall imploying themſelves according to the ingineers directions, ſo that by the ſecond day the whole Town was invironed with high *Palliſadoes*, and their Platformes fortified with great beames, whereupon they planted divers great pieces of Ordnance, amongſt the which were Eagles and Lions of metall, that the *Achems* and *Turks* had caſt by the invention of a certain *Renegado*, born in the Kingdome of *Algarues*, appertaining to the Crown of *Portugal*, and by reaſon this wicked wretch had changed his belief, he called himſelf *Coia Geinal*, for as for the name which he had before

fore when he was a Chriſtian, I am contented to paſſe it over in ſilence for the honor of his Family, being indeed of no mean extraction. In the mean time the beſieged having taken notice how ill-adviſed they had been in ſuffering the enemies to labour two whole daies together peaceably in fortifying of their Camp, without any impeachment of theirs; and taking the ſame for a great affront, they deſired their King to permit them to fal upon them the night following, alledging how it was probable that men vvearied vvith labour could not make any great uſe of their arms, nor be able to reſiſt this firſt impetuoſity. The King, who at that time commanded the Kingdom of *Paſſaman*, was young, & indued with many excellent qualities vvhich made him to be exeeedingly beloved of all his ſubjects, for as it was reported of him, he was very liberal, no manner of Tyrant, exceedingly affable to the common people, a friend to the poor, and ſo charitable towards Widovvs, that if they acquainted him vvith their neceſſities, he relieved them inſtantly, and did them more good then they asked of him. Beſides theſe perfections that vvere ſo recommendable, he poſſeſſed ſome others ſo conform able to mens deſires, as there vvas not any one that vvould not have expoſed his life a thouſand times for his ſervice if need had been. Furthermore he had none but choice men vvith him, even the flovver of all his Kingdome, beſides many ſtrangers, upon vvhom he conferred much vvealth, honor, and many graces, which he accompanied vvith good vvords, that being indeed the means vvhereby the minds both of great and ſmall are ſo ſtrongly gained, that they make them Lions of ſheep, vvhereas carrying ones ſelf other vvayes, of generous Lions, they are made fearfull hares. This King then examining the requeſt vvh ch his people made unto him, and referring himſelf to the advice of the antienteſt and moſt prudent Councellors of his State vvhich vvere vvith him, there vvas a great contention about the ſucceſſe that the affairs might have, but in the end, by the counſell of all in generall, it vvas concluded *That in caſe Fortune ſhould be altogether adverſe unto them in this ſally which they meant to make againſt their enemies, yet would it be a much leſſe evill, and leſſe conſiderable affront, then to ſee the King ſo beſieged by vile people, who againſt all reaſon would reduce them by force to quit their beliefe, wherein they had been bred by their Fathers, to imbrace another new one by the ſuſcitation of the* Farazes, *who place their ſalvation in waſhing their parts behind, in not eating of ſwines fleſh, and marrying of ſeven wives, whereby the beſt adviſed may eaſily judge, that God was ſo much their enemy, as he would not aſſiſt them in any thing, ſeeing that with ſo great offence they would under pretext of Religion, and with reaſons ſo full of contradiction, compell their King to become a Mahometan, and render himſelf tributary to them* To theſe reaſons they added many others, which the King, and they that were with him found to be ſo good, as they all with one common conſent agreed thereunto, which is en evident mark, that it is a thing no leſſe naturall for a good Subject to expoſe his life for his King, then for a vertuous wife to conſerve her chaſtity for the husband which God hath given her: This being ſo, ſaid they, a matter of ſo great importance was no longer to be deferred; but we all in generall, and each one in particular, are by this ſally to make demonſtration of the extreme affection which we bear to our good King, who we are aſſured will never be unmindfull of them that ſhall fight beſt for his defence, which is all the inheritance we deſire to leave to our children Whereupon it was reſolved that the night following they ſhould make a ſally upon their enemies.

Whereas the joy, which this deſigned ſally brought to all the inhabitants of the Town was generall, they never ſtayed till they were called, but two hours after midnight, and before the time which the King had appointed, they aſſembled all in a great place, which was not far from the Royall Palace, and where they of the country had accuſtomed to keep their Fairs, and to ſolemnize their moſt remarkable feaſts on thoſe principall dayes which were deſtined to the invocation of their *Pagodes*. The King in the mean time, wonderfully content to ſee ſuch heat of courage in them, of ſeventy thouſand inhabitants which were in the Town, drew out twelve thouſand only for this enterpriſe, and divided them into four companies, each of them containing three thouſand, whereof an Unkle of the Kings was Generall, a man whom experience had rendred very knowing in ſuch undertakings, and that marched in the head of the firſt company. Of the ſecond w [illegible] her of the principall *Mandacins*; Of the third a ſtranger, a *Champan* [illegible] in the Iſland of *Barneo*; and of the fourth

§. 11.

one called *Panbacalnio*; all of them good Commanders, very valiant, and exceeding expert in matters of war. When they were all ready, the King made them a Speech, whereby he ſuccinctly repreſented unto them the confidence which he had in them touching this enterpriſe. After which, the better to incourage them, and aſſure them of his love, he took a cup of gold and drunk to them all, cauſing the chiefeſt of them to pledge him, and craving pardon of the reſt, for that the time would not permit them to do the like. This gracious carriage of his ſo incouraged the ſouldiers, that without further delay the moſt part of them went and annoynted themſelves with *Minhamundi*, which is a certain confection of an odoriferous oyle, wherewith theſe people are accuſtomed to frote themſelves with, when they have taken a full reſolution to die, and theſe ſame are ordinarily called *Amaces*. The hour being come wherein this ſally was to be made, four of twelve gates that were in the Town were opened, thorough each of the which ſallied forth one of the four Captaines with his company, having firſt ſent out for Spies into the Camp ſix *Orobalons*, of the moſt valiant that were about the King, whom he had honored with new titles, and with ſuch ſpeciall favours, as uſe to give courage to them that want it, and to increaſe it in them that are indued with ſome reſolution. The four Captains marched a little after the ſix Spies, and went and joyned all together in a certain place, where they were to fight with the enemies: whereupon falling into the midſt of them with a marvellous impetuoſity, they fought ſo valiantly, that in leſſe then an houres time, which the fight indured, the twelve thouſand *Paſſarwans* left above thirty thouſand enemies upon the place, beſides thoſe that were wounded, which were in a far greater number, and whereof many died afterwards. Furthermore they took priſoner three Kings, and eight *Pates*, which are as the Dukes amongſt us, the King of *Zunda* too, with whom we forty *Portugalls* were, could not ſo ſave himſelfe, but that he was hurt with a Lance in three places, a number being killed in defending him. Thus was the Camp put in ſo great diſorder, as it was almoſt deſtroyed, the *Pangueyran* himſelf being wounded with a dart, and conſtrained to leap into the water, where little lacked but that he had been drowned. Whereby one may ſee what the force of a number of reſolute and fearleſſe men is againſt ſuch as are ſurpriſed when leaſt they think of it; for before that the enemies could know what they did, or the Commanders could put their ſouldiers into order, they were twice routed. The next morning, as ſoon as the day gave them leave to know the truth of the buſineſſe, the *Paſſarwans* retired into the Towne, where they found that they had not loſt above nine hundred of their men, nor more then two or three thouſand hurt.

§. 3. It is ſcarcely to be believed how much the King of *Deman* was grieved with the diſaſter of the former day, as wel for the affronte which he received from thoſe within by the loſſe of his people, as for the bad ſucceſſe of the beginning of this ſiege, whereof he ſeemed in ſome ſort to impute the fault unto our King of *Zunda*, ſaying that this fortune had happened by the bad directions he had given to the Centinells. Now after he had commanded that the wounded ſhould be dreſt, and the dead buried, he called to Councell all the Kings, Princes, and Captains of the forces that he had, both by Land and Water, unto whom he ſaid, *That he had made a ſolemn vow, and oath upon the Mezapho of* Mahomet, *which is their Alcoran, or the book of their Law, never to raiſe the ſiege from before this Town, untill he had utterly deſtroyed it, or loſt his own State therein.* Whereunto he added, *That he proteſted he would put to death whomſoever ſhould oppoſe this reſolution of his, what reaſon ſoever he could alledge thereupon*; which begot ſo great a terror in the minds of all that heard him, as there was not one that durſt contradict his will, but contrarily they infinitely approved and commended it. He uſed then all kind of diligence for the new fortifying of the Camp with good ditches, ſtrong Palliſadoes, & divers Bulworks made of ſtone and timber, garniſhed on the inſide with their Platformes, where he cauſed a great many of Canons to be planted, ſo that by this meanes the Camp was ſtronger then the Towne it ſelfe, in regard whereof the beſieged did often times jeere the Centinells without, telling them, *That it muſt needs be concluded they were notorious cowards, ſince inſtead of beſieging their enemies like valiant men, they beſieged themſelves like feeble women, wherefore they bid them returne home to their houſes, where it was fitter for them to fall to ſpinning, then to make war.* Theſe were the jeers which they ordinarily

put

put upon the beſiegers, who vvere greatly offended vvith them. This Tovvne had been almoſt three moneths beſieged, and yet had the enemies advanced but little, for during all that time, vvherein there had been five batteries, and three aſſaults given to it, with above a thouſand ladders planted againſt the vvalls, the beſieged defended themſelves ſtill like valiant and couragious men, fortifying themſelves vvith counter-mires which they oppoſed to the breaches, vvhich they made vvith pieces of timber taken from the houſes; ſo that all the power of the *Pangueyran*, which (as I have declared) was about eight hundred thouſand men, whereof the number was much diminiſhed, was not able to give him entrance into it. Hereupon the principall Ingineer of the Camp, who was a Renegado of *Maillorque*, ſeeing that this affair had not a ſucceſſe anſwerable to what he had promiſed the King, he reſolved to take another far different courſe. To that effect, with a great amaſſe of earth and bavins he framed a kind of a Platform, which he fortified with ſix rows of beames, and wrought ſo, that in nine dayes he raiſed it a fathom higher then the wall; that done, he planted forty great pieces of Canon upon it, together with a number of Baſes and Faulconets, wherewith he fell to battering the Town in ſuch ſort, as the beſieged were therewith mightily dammified, ſo that the King perceiving that this invention of the enemy was the only thing in the world that could moſt incommodate him in the Towne, he reſolved by the meanes of ten thouſand Volunteers, who had offered themſelves unto him for that purpoſe, and to whom for a mark of honor he gave the title of *Tygers of the world*, to attaque this Fort, and they that were upon it; this matter was no ſooner reſolved upon, but was preſently put in execution, and for the better incouragement of them, the King himſelfe would be their Captaine, albeit this whole enterpriſe was governed by the four *Pannrigons*, which had formerly commanded in the firſt ſally. Having put themſelves into the field then with the riſing of the Sun, they fought ſo valiantly without any fear at all of the dreadfull Ordnance, which were planted on the Platform, as in leſſe then two *Credoes* they got to the top of it, and there ſetting on the enemies, who were thirty thouſand in number, they defeated them all in a very ſhort time. The *Pangueyran* of *Pate* ſeeing his forces thus routed, ran thither in perſon with twenty thouſand choice ſouldiers, intending to beat the *Paſſeruans* from the place which they had gained, but they defended it ſo courageouſly, as is not poſſible to expreſſe it in words. This bloudy battell having indured till evening, the *Paſſeruan*, who had loſt the moſt part of his men, made his retreat into the Towne by the gate that was next to the Platforme, whereunto having firſt ſet fire in ſix or ſeven places, it took hold of ſome barrells of powder, whereof there was great ſtore there, which inflamed it ſo terribly in ſeverall parts, as it was not poſſible to approach unto it by the ſpace of a flight ſhoot; this accident was very favourable to the beſieged, becauſe the enemies were thereby kept from joyning together, and ſo the Towne was for this time preſerved from the great danger wherewithall it was threatned; howbeit the *Paſſeruans* eſcap't not ſo ſcot-free, but that of the ten thouſand Volunteers imployed in this ſervice, ſix thouſand remained dead on the top of the Platforme. True it is, that in the *Pangueyran* part there vvas above forty thouſand killed, amongſt the vvhich vvere three thouſand ſtrangers of divers Nations, the moſt part *Achems*, *Turks*, and *Malabares*, as alſo twelve *Pates*, or Dukes, five Kings, with many other Commanders, and men of quality.

All this night was ſpent on both ſides in lamentations and complaints, as alſo in dreſſing the vvounded, and caſting the dead into the river. The next morning as ſoone as it was day the *Pangueyran* of *Pate* ſeeing the bad ſucceſſe which his enterpriſe had had untill that preſent, could not for all that be drawn to deſiſt from it, ſo that he cauſed all his ſouldiers to prepare themſelves for a new aſſauking of the Tovvne, being perſvvaded that the beſieged had no great force left to defend them vvithall, conſidering their vvalls vvere overthrovvn in many places, their ammunition ſpent, the moſt part of their people ſlaine, and their King dangerouſly hurt, at leaſt vviſe it vvas ſo reported. Novv the better to be aſſured thereof, he cauſed ſome of his forces to be laid in ambuſh in certain avennes, by vvhich he had been advertiſed, that divers of the frontizing inhabitants vvould paſſe, to bring unto the Tovvne Eggs, Pullaine, and other ſuch like things neceſſary for the recovery of ſick perſons. Novv they, vvhom he had ſent for that purpoſe, arrived at the Camp a little before day, and brought nine §. 4.

priſoners

priſoners with them, amongſt the which there was one *Portugal*. After then that they had racked and tortured the other eight, & were come to do as much to the *Portugal*, who was the laſt, he imagined that it may be they would ſhew him ſome favour if he declared unto them what he was, ſo that upon the firſt torment he cried out, *That he was a Portugal*, he not knowing hitherto any thing of us, nor we of him: Our King of *Zunda* no ſooner heard this Declaration of his, but he commanded him to be taken from the rack, and inſtantly ſent for us to know whether that which this wretch delivered was true; whereupon ſix of us that were the leaſt hurt went unto him, and at the firſt ſight we judged him by his countenance to be a *Portugal*, ſo that proſtrating our ſelves before the King, we beſought him to give us this man, repreſenting unto him, that in regard he was of our Nation we were bound to make this ſuit for him, which he very willingly granted us, and ſo we in way of thankfullneſſe kiſſed his feet. After we had received him, we carried him to the place where our companions lay wounded, and then we would needs underſtand of him whether he were a *Portugal* indeed, becauſe he looked ſo ſtrangely as we could not well know him, no not by his ſpeech; but after he was a little come to himſelfe, and that he had ſhed a many of teares, *My Maſters*, ſaid he unto us, *I aſſure you that I am a Chriſtian, and a* Portugal, *both by father and mother, although as you ſee I do not weare the habit of one; my country is* Penamocor, *and my name* Nuno Rodriguez Taborda; *I went out of* Portugal *in the year one thouſand five hundred and thirteen, after I had inrolled my ſelf in the Marſhalls Army, and in the Ship called the* S. Joano, *whereof* Ruy Diaz Pereyra *was Captaine. Now becauſe in theſe firſt beginnings I ſhewed my ſelf in all occaſions a worthy man,* Alphonſo d'Albuquerque *made me Captain of the four brigandines which he had in the Indeaes at that time; afterwards I was preſent with him at the taking of* Goa *and* Malaca; *withall I laboured in the foundations of* Ormuz *and* Calecut, *never faſting in any of the ſervices performed in theſe times by that famous Commander, to whom ſo many different Nations do at this day give the title of Great. I continued the ſame proof of my courage during the Governments of* Lopo, Suarez, *of* Diego, Lopez de Siqueyra, *and of other Governors of the* Indiaes, *even unto* Don Antiaque de Meneſez, *who ſucceeded to that charge by the death of the Vice-Roy* Vaſco de Guma; *who at the entrance into his Government made* Franciſco de Sa *Generall of a Fleet of twelve Veſſells, wherein were three hundred men which he was to make uſe of for the building of a Fort at* Zunda, *in regard of the feare they were then in of the* Spaniards, *who at that time went to the* Moluccaes *by the new way which* Magellan *had diſcovered unto them; in this Fleet I was made Captain of a Brigandine, called the S.* Jorge, *where I commanded over ſix and twenty very courageous and valiant men. We departed then from the bar of* Bintan, *whence* Pedro de Maſcarenhas *deſtroyed it; but when we arrived at the Iſle of* Lingua, *we were beaten with ſo furious a tempeſt, that unable to reſiſt it, we were forced to make towards* Jaoa, *where of ſeven rowing Veſſells that we were, ſix were loſt, and my ſins would have it that mine was one of that number; beſides for my greater infortune, the tempeſt caſt my Brigandine upon the coaſt of this Country, where I have now remained theſe three and twenty yeares, not one of all that were in the Veſſell eſcaping ſave three of my companions, who are every one dead but my ſelf, and would to God it had pleaſed him to ſhew me the grace that I had been ſo too, that ſo I might not have offended him as I have done ſince, for ſeeing my ſelf continually preſſed by theſe Gentiles to follow their pernicious errors, I withſtood them a long time, but whereas the fleſh is fraile, being very poor, far from my country, and without hope of liberty, my ſins made me at their intreatits to yeeld to that which they deſired of me with ſo much importunity; by reaſon whereof this Kinge Father did me many great favours; and being ſent for yeſterday from a place where I was to look unto two of the chiefeſt Gentlemen of this country, it pleaſed God that I fell into the hands of theſe dogs, to the end I ſhould no longer be one, for which the Lord be bleſſed for evermore.* This mans diſcourſe exceedingly aſtoniſhed us, and as much as the novelty of ſo ſtrange an accident required, ſo that having comforted him as well as we could in ſuch termes as we thought were neceſſary for the time wherein we were, we asked him whether he would go with us to *Zunda*, and from thence to *Malaca*, where God might ſhew him the grace to die in his ſervice like a good Chriſtian. Whereunto having made anſwer, that he deſired nothing more, and that he had never had other deſign, we gave him another habit, becauſe he was cloathed like a Pagan, and kept him alwayes with us as long as the ſiege laſted.

## CHAP. XLV.

*The death of the King of* Demaa *by a very ſtrange accident, and that which arrived thereupon.*

TO come again now to our hiſtory, you are to underſtand, that the *Pangueyran* of *Pata*, King of *Demaa*, being certified by ſome of the enemies, whom his men had taken priſoners, of the piteous eſtate whereunto the beſieged were reduced, the moſt part of them dead, their ammunition failing, and their King dangerouſly hurt; all theſe things together carried him more ardently then ever to the aſſault, which he had purpoſed with himſelf to give to the beſieged Town. He reſolved then to ſcale it in plain day, and to aſſault it with more violence then before, ſo that inſtantly great preparations were made over all the Camp, where divers Serjeants at Armes, on horſeback, and carrying Maces on their ſhoulders, went proclaiming aloud, after the men of war had been made to aſſemble together with the ſound of trumpets, *The* Pangueyran *of* Pata *by the power of him who hath created all things, Lord of the Lands which inviron the Seas, being willing to diſcover unto all in generall the ſecret of his ſoul, doth let you know, that nine daies hence he will have you be in a readineſs, to the end that with the courages of Tygers, and redoubled forces, you aſſiſt him in the aſſault which he intends to give unto the Town, for a recompence whereof he liberally promiſeth to do great favours, as well in money, as in honorable and remarkable titles, thoſe of the five ſouldiers, which firſt of all ſhall plant colours on the enemies walls, or that ſhall perform actions which ſhall be agreeable to him. Whereas contrarily, they which do not carry themſelves valiantly in this enterpriſe, conformably to his pleaſure, ſhall be executed by the way of juſtice, without any regard had to their condition.* This Ordinance of the Kings, full of menaces, being publiſhed over every part of the Camp, put them into ſuch an alarm, as the Commanders began incontinently to make themſelves ready, and to provide all things neceſſary for this aſſault, without ſcarce taking any reſt either day or night, making withall ſo great a noyſe, by intermingling their hues and cries with the ſounds of drums, and other inſtruments of war, as it could not be heard without much terror. In the mean time, whereas of the nine daies, deſtined for the purpoſe aforeſaid, ſeven were already paſt, ſo as there reſted no more but two, at the end whereof an aſſault was to be given to the Towne, one morning as the *Pangueyran* ſate in Councell, to reſolve of the affairs of this ſiege with the principall Lords of his Army, as alſo of the means, of the time, and places, whereby they were to aſſault the Town, and of other neceſſary things, it was ſaid, that from the diverſity of opinions, which the one and the other had, there aroſe ſo great a contention amongſt them, as the King was conſtrained to take every ones advice in writing. During this time, whereas he had alwayes neer about him a young Page, who carried *Bethel*, an herb whoſe leaves are like unto Plantain, which theſe Pagans are accuſtomed to chaw, becauſe it makes them have a ſweet breath, and alſo purges the humours of the ſtomack; he asked this Page then for ſome of it, who at firſt ſeemed not to hear him, being much about twelve or thirteen years old, for I hold it fit to make mention of his age, in regard of that I am to ſay of him hereafter. Now to return to the *Pangueyran*, as he was continuing his diſcourſe with his Councell of War; thorough much ſpeaking, and ſomewhat *in choler*, his mouth became dry, ſo that he asked the Page again for ſome *Bethel*, which he ordinarily carried in a little box of gold, but he heard him no more this ſecond time, then he had done the firſt; inſomuch as the King having asked him for ſome the third time, one of the Lords that was neere to the Page pulled him by the ſleeve, and bid him *give the King ſome Bethel*, which immediately he did, and falling on his knees he preſented him with the box which he had in his hands; the King then took two or three leaves of it, as he uſed to do, and without being otherwiſe angry, giving him a light touch with his hand on the head, *art thou deaf*, ſaid he unto him, *that thou couldſt not hear me?* and thereupon re-entred into diſcourſe with them of his Councell. Now becauſe theſe *Jaous* are the moſt punctillious and perfidious Nation of the world, and that withall they of this country hold it for the greateſt affront that can be done them, when one gives them a touch on the head, this young Page imagining that the King had touched him ſo out of a mark of ſo great a contempt, as he ſhould thereby be made infa[illegible] though indeed none of the company took notice of it,

§. 1.

it, he went aside weeping and sobbing by himself, and in the end resolved to revenge the injury which the King had done him, so that drawing out a little knife which he wore at his girdle, he stabbed the King with it into the midst of the left pap, and so because the blow was mortall, the King fell instantly down on the ground, not able to say any more then these two or three words, *I am dead*: wherewithall those of the Councell were so frighted, as it is not possible to expresse it. After that this emotion was a little calmed, they fell first unto looking to the King, to see if some remedy might not be applied to his wound; but because he was hurt just in the heart there was no hope of recovery, so that he died within a very short time after: Presently they seized on the Page, whom they put to torture, by reason of some suspitions which they had upon this accident, but he never confessed any thing, and said nought els, save, *That he had done it of his own free will, and to be revenged of the blow which the King had given him on his head by way of contempt, as if he had struck some dog that was barking up and down the streets in the night, without considering that he was the son of the* Pate Pondan, *Lord of* Surebayaa. The Page then was impaled alive, with a good big stake, which was thrust in at his Fundament, and came out at the nape of his neck. As much was done to his Father, to three of his brothers, and to threescore and twelve of his kinsmen, so that his whole Race was exterminated, upon which so cruell and rigorous an execution, many great troubles ensued afterwards in all the country of *Jaoa*, and in all the Islands of *Bale*, *Tymor*, and *Madura*, which are very great, and whereof the Governors are Soveraigns by their Lawes, and from all antiquity. After the end of this execution, question was made what should be done with the Kings body, whereupon there were many different opinions amongst them, for some said, that to bury him in that place was as much as to leave him in the power of the *Passeruans*; and others, that if he were transported to *Demaa*, where his Tomb was, it was not possible but that it would be corrupted before it arrived there; whereunto was added, that if they interred him so putrified and corrupted, his soul could not be received into *Paradise*, according to the Law of the country, which is that of *Mahomet*, wherein he died. After many contestations thereupon, in the end they followed the counsell which one of our *Portugals* gave them, that was so profitable to him afterwards, as it was worth him above ten thousand duckats, wherewith the Lords rewarded him as it were in vye of one another for a recompence of the good service which he did than to the deceased. This counsell was, that they should put the body into a Coffin full of Lime and Camphire, and so bury it in a Junck also full of earth; so that albeit the thing was not so marvellous of it self, yet left it not to be very profitable to the *Portugals*, because they all found it very good, and well invented, as indeed the successe of it was such, as by means thereof the Kings body was carried to *Demaa*, without any kind of corruption or ill savour.

§. 2. As soon as the Kings body was put into the *Junck* appointed for it, the King of *Zunda*, Generall of the Army, caused the great Ordinance and the ammunition to be imbarqued, and with the least noyse that might be, committed to safe custody the most precious things the King had, together with all the treasures of the Tents. But whatsoever care and silence was used therein, the enemy could not be kept from having some inkling of it, and from understanding how things went in the Camp, so that instantly the King marched out of the Town in person, with only three thousand souldiers of the past confederacy, who by a solemn vow caused themselves to be annoynted with the oyle which they call *Minhamundi*, as men resolved, and that had vowed themselves to death. Thus fully determined as they vvere, they went and fell upon the enemies, whom finding busie in trussing up their baggage, they intreated so ill, as in lesse then half an hours space, for no longer lasted the heat of the fight, they cut twelve thousand of them in pieces. Withall they took two Kings, and five *Pates*, or *Dukes* prisoners, together with above three hundred *Turks*, *Abyssines*, and *Achems*, yea and their *Cacismonbana*, the Soveraign dignity amongst the *Mahometans*, by whose counsell the *Pangueyran* was come thither. There vvere also four hundred ships burnt, vvherein vvere the hurt men, so that by this means all the Camp vvas neer lost. After this the King retreated into the Tovvn vvith his men, vvhereof he lost but four hundred. In the mean time the King of *Zunda* having caused the remainder of the Army to be re-imbarqued vvith all speed the same day, being the [illegible] of *March*, [illegible]

directly for the City of *Demaa*, bringing along with them the body of the *Pangueyran*, vvhich upon the arrivall thereof vvas received by the people vvith great cries, and ſtrange demonſtrations of a univerſall mourning. The day after a revievv vvas taken of all the men of vvar, for to knovv hovv many vvere dead, and there vvas found miſſing an hundred and thirty thouſand; vvhereas the *Paſſernuns*, according to report, had loſt but five and tvventy thouſand; but be it as it vvill, and let fortune make the beſt market that ſhe can of theſe things, yet they never arrive, but the field is died vvith the bloud of the vanquiſhers, and by a ſtronger reaſon vvith that of the vanquiſhed, to vvhom theſe events do alvvayes coſt far dearer, then to the others. The ſame day there vvas queſtion of creating a nevv *Pangueyran*, vvho, as I have ſaid heretofore, is Emperor over all the *Pates* and Kings of that great Archipelago, vvhich the *Chineſes*, *Tartar*, *Japon*, and *Lequio*, Hiſtorians are vvont to call *Ratorra Vendan*, that is to ſay, *the eye-lid of the world*, as one may ſee in the Card, if the elevation of the heights prove true. Novv becauſe that after the death of the *Pangueyran*, there vvas not a lavvfull ſucceſſor to be found that might inherit this Crovvn, it vvas reſolved that one ſhould be made by election; for vvhich effect by the common conſent of all, eight men vvere choſen, as heads of all the people, to create a *Pangueyran*. Theſe ſame aſſembled then together in a houſe, and after order had been taken for the pacifying of all things in the City, they continued ſeven vvhole daies together vvithout being able to come to any agreement about this election; for vvhereas there vvere eight pretendents of the principall Lords of the Kingdome, there vvere found amongſt theſe Electors many different opinions, vvhich proceeded from this, that the moſt part, or all of them, vvere meerly allied to theſe eight, or to their kinſmen, ſo that each one laboured to make him *Pangueyran*, vvhich vvas moſt to his mind. Whereupon the inhabitants of the City, and the ſouldiers of the Army, making uſe of this delay to their advantage, as men vvho imagined that this affair vvould never be terminated, and that there vvould be no chaſtiſement for them, they began ſhamelеſly to break out into all kind of actions full of inſolency and malice. And foraſmuch as there vvas a great number of Merchants Ships in the Port, they got aboard them, and fell pell-mell to rifling both of ſtrangers, and thoſe of the country, vvith ſo much licentiouſneſſe, as it vvas ſaid, that in four daies they took an hundred Juncks, vvherein they killed above ſix thouſand men; vvhereof notice being given to the King of *Panarnca*, Prince of *Balambuam*, and Admirall of the Sea of this Empire, he ran thither with all ſpeed, and of the number of thoſe which were convicted of manifeſt robbery, he cauſed fourſcore to be hanged all along the ſhore, to the terror of thoſe that ſhould behold them. After this action, *Quiay Anſedeaa*, *Pate* or Duke of *Cherbom*, who was Governor of the Towne, and greatly in authority, taking this which the King of *Panarnca* had done for a manifeſt contempt, becauſe he had, ſaid he, little reſpected his charge of Governor, was ſo mightily offended at it, as having inſtantly got together about ſix or ſeven thouſand men, he went and fell upon this Kings Palace, with an intent to ſeize upon his perſon; but the *Panarnca* reſiſted him with his followers, and as it was ſaid, he endeavoured with many complements to juſtifie himſelf to him all that ever he could; whereunto *Quiay Anſedeaa* was ſo far from having any regard, as contrarily entring by force into his houſe he ſlew thirty or forty of his men; in the mean time ſo many people ran to this mutiny as it was a dreadfull thing to behold. For whereas theſe two heads were great Lords, one Admirall of the Fleet, the other Governor of the Town, and both of them allied to the principall families of the Country, the devill ſowed ſo great a diviſion amongſt them, as if night had not ſeparated the fight, it is credible that not one of them had eſcaped; nevertheleſſe the difference went yet much farther, and ended not ſo; for the men of war, who were at that time above ſix hundred thouſand in number, coming to conſider the great affront which *Quiay Anſedeaa*, Governor of the Town, had done to their Admirall, they to be revenged thereof went all aſhore the ſame night, the *Panarnca* not being of power enough to keep them from it, notwithſtanding he laboured all that he could to do it. Thus all of them animated and tranſported with wrath, and a deſire of revenge, went and ſet upon *Quiay Anſedeaa* houſe, where they ſlew him, and ten thouſand men; wherewith not contented, they aſſaulted the Town in ten or eleven places, and [illegible] plundering all that ever they met with, ſo that they carried themſelves

ſelves therein with ſo much violence, as in three daies alone, which was as long as the ſiege of this Town laſted, nothing remained that was not an inſupportable object to the ſight. There was withall ſo great a confuſion of howling, weeping, and heavy lamentation, as all that heard it could think no other but that the earth was going to turn topſie turvy. In a word, and not to loſe time in aggravating this with ſuperfluous ſpeeches, the Town was all on fire, which burnt to the very foundations, ſo that according to report there were above an hundred thouſand houſes conſumed, above three hundred thouſand perſons cut in pieces, and almoſt as many made priſoners, which were led away ſlaves, and ſold in divers countries. Beſides, there was an infinite of riches ſtollen, whereof the value, as it was ſaid, only in ſilver and gold, amounted even to forty millions, and all put together, to an hundred millions of gold. As for the number of priſoners, and of ſuch as were ſlain, it was neer five hundred thouſand perſons; and all theſe things arrived by the evill counſell of a young King, bred up amongſt young people like himſelf, who did every thing at his own pleaſure, without any body contradicting him.

## CHAP. LXVI.

*That which befell us, untill our departure towards the Port of* Zunda, *from whence we ſet ſail for* China, *and what afterwards happened unto us.*

§. 1. THree daies after ſo cruell and horrible a mutiny, whenas all things were peaceable, the principall Heads of this commotion fearing as ſoon as a *Pangueyran* ſhould be elected, that they ſhould be puniſhed according to the enormity of their crime, they all of them ſet ſail without longer attending the danger which threatned them. They departed away then in the ſame Veſſells wherein they came, the King of *Panarua*, their Admirall, being not poſſibly able to ſtay them, but contrarily was twice in jeopardy of loſing himſelfe in endeavouring to do it with thoſe few men that were of his party. Thus in the ſpace of two daies only, the two thouſand ſailes which were in the Port went away, leaving the Town ſtill burning, which was the cauſe that thoſe few Lords, which remained, being joyned together, reſolved to paſſ unto the Towne of *Iapara*, ſome five leagues from thence towards the Coaſt of the Mediterranean Sea. This reſolution being taken, they put it preſently in execution, to the end that with the more tranquillity (for the popular commotion was not yet well appeaſed) they might make election of the *Pangueyran*, which properly ſignifies *Emperor*; As indeed they created one, called *Pate Sudayo*, Prince of *Surubayaa*, who had been none of thoſe eight Pretendents of whom we have ſpoken; but this election they made, becauſe it ſeemed to them neceſſary for their common good, and the quiet of the Country: All the inhabitants alſo were exceedingly ſatisfied with it, and they immediately ſent the *Panarua* for him to a place ſome dozen leagues from thence, called *Piſaamenes*, where he at that time lived. Nine dayes after he was ſent for, he failed not to come, accompanied with above two hundred thouſand men, imbarqued in fifteen hundred *Calalucas* and *Juripangos*. He was received by all the people with great demonſtrations of joy, and a little after he was crowned with the accuſtomed ceremonies, as *Pangueyran* of all the countries of *Jaoa*, *Bala*, and *Madora*, which is a Monarchy that is very populous, and exceeding rich and mighty. That done, he returned to the Towne of *Demaa*, with an intent to have it rebuilt anew, and to reſtore it to its former eſtate. At his arrivall in that place, the firſt thing he did was to give order for the puniſhing of thoſe which were found attainted and convicted of the ſacking of the Town, who proved not to be above five thouſand, though the number of them was far greater, for all the reſt were fled away, ſome here, ſome there. Theſe wretches ſuffered onely two kinds of death, ſome were impaled alive, and the reſt were burned in the very ſame ſhips wherein they were apprehended; and of four daies, wherein this juſtice was executed, there paſſt not one without the putting to death of a great number, which ſo mightily terrified us *Portugals* that were there preſent, as ſeeing the commotion very great ſtill over the whole country, and no likelyhood that things would of a long time be peaceable, we humbly deſired the King of *Zunda* to give us leave to go to our ſhi
Port of *Banto*, in regard the ſeaſon for the voyage to *China* was

King having eaſily granted our requeſt, with an exemption of the cuſtomes of our Merchandiſe, preſented every one of us beſides with an hundred duckats, and to each of the heirs of fourteen of ours, which were ſlain in the war, he gave three hundred, which we accepted of as a very honorable reward, and worthy of a moſt liberall, and good natured Prince. Thus went we preſently away very well ſatisfied of him to the Port of *Banta*, and there we remained twelve whole daies together, during the which vve made an end of preparing our ſelves for our voyage. After this, vve ſet ſaile for *China* in the company of other four ſhips, vvho vvere bound for the ſame place, and vve took along vvith us the ſame *Joano Rodriguez*, vvhom vve incountred at *Paſſeman*, as I have before declared, that had made himſelf a Brachman of Pagode, called *Quiay Nacoral*, and as for him, he had named himſelf *Gaixiran Fucalem*, vvhich is as much to ſay as, *the Councell of the Saint*. The ſame *Joano Rodriguez* no ſooner arrived at *China*, but he imbarqued himſelfe for *Malaca*, vvhere (through the grace of God) he vvas reconciled anevv to the Catholike faith, and after he had continued a year there, he died vvith great demonſtrations of a good and true Chriſtian, vvhereby it ſeems vve may believe that our Lord received him to mercy, ſince after ſo many years profeſſion of an infidell, he reſerved him to come and die in his ſervice, for vvhich be he praiſed for evermore. Our five ſhips then, vvith vvhich vve parted from *Zunda*, being arrived at *Chincheo*, vvhere the *Portugals* at that time traded, vve abode three moneths and an half there vvith travell and danger enough of our perſons; for vve vvere in a country, vvhere nothing but revolts and mutinies vvere ſpoken of. Withall, there vvere great armies afoot all alongſt the Coaſt, by reaſon of many robberies vvhich the Pyrats of *Japon* had committed thereabout, ſo that in this diſorder there vvas no meanes to exerciſe any commerce, for the Merchants durſt not leave their houſes to go to Sea. By reaſon of all this vve vvere conſtrained to paſſe unto the Port of *Chabaquea*, vvhere vve found at anchor ſixſcore *Juneks*, vvho having ſet upon us, took three of our five Veſſells, vvherein four hundred Chriſtians vvere killed, of which fourſcore and two vvere *Portugals*. As for the other tvvo Veſſells, in one of the vvhich I vvas, they eſcaped as it vvere by miracle. But becauſe vve could not make to Land, by reaſon of the Eaſterly vvinds vvhich vvere contrary to us all that ſame moneth, vve vvere conſtrained (though to our great grief) to regain the Coaſt of *Jaoa*. At length after vve had continued our courſe by the ſpace of tvvo and tvventy daies vvith a great deal of travell and danger, vve diſcovered an Iſland called *Pulo Condor*, diſtant eight degrees, and one third of heighth from the bar of the Kingdome of *Camboya*. Whereupon as we were even ready to reach it, ſo furious a ſtorm came from the South Coaſt, as we were all in jeopardy to be caſt away. Nevertheleſſe driving along we got to the Iſle of *Lingua*, where a tempeſt ſurpriſed us at *Weſt* and *South-Weſt*, with ſo impetuous a wind, as ſtrugling againſt the billow, it kept us from making uſe of our ſails: ſo that being in fear of rocks and ſhelves of ſand, which were on the Prow ſide, we ſteered the other way, untill that after ſome time the Forekeel of our Poup opened within nine hand-bredths of the water, which was the cauſe, ſeeing our ſelves ſo neer unto death, that we were inforced to cut down our two maſts, and to caſt all our Merchandiſes into the Sea, whereby our Ship was ſomwhat eaſed. This done, vvhereas vve had left our ſhip the reſt of the day, and a good part of the night to the mercy of the Sea, it pleaſed our Lord out of an effect of his divine juſtice, that without knowing how, or without ſeeing any thing, our ſhip ran her ſelf againſt a rock, with the death of ſeventy and tvvo perſons. This miſerable ſucceſſe ſo deprived us of all our underſtanding and forces, that not ſo much as one of us ever thought of any way ſaving himſelf, as the *Chineſes*, whom we had for Mariners in our Junck had done, for they had ſo beſtirred themſelves all the night long, that before it was day they had made a raft of ſuch planks and beams as came to their hands, tying them together in ſuch ſort with the cordage of their ſails, that forty perſons might abide upon it with eaſe. Now whereas we were all in an imminent danger, and in a time wherein (as they [illegible] father does nothing for the ſon, nor the ſon for the father, no man took [illegible] ſafe alone, whereof we had a fair example in our *Chineſe*-Mari[illegible] but as our ſlaves; for *Martin Eſtevez*, the Captain and Maſter [illegible] his own ſervants, vvho vvere upon the raft, to receive [illegible] him, that they could not do it at any hand, vvhich

fully well received and intreated by the *Portugals*, which we found there. Now having been a moneth and better in this City, attending the ſeaſon for the voyage to *China*, that ſo I might paſſe to *Japon* in the company of ſix or ſeven *Portugals*, who had imbarqued themſelves for that purpoſe, I made account to imploy in commodities ſome hundred duckats, which thoſe two, with whom I came from *Zunda*, had lent me. In the mean time very certain news came to the King of *Siam*, who was at that time with all his Court at the ſaid City of *Odian*, that the King of *Chiammay*, allied with the *Timocombos*, *Laaos*, and *Gueos*, people which on the North-Eaſt hold the moſt part of that country above *Capimper* and *Paſſiloco*, and are all Soveraignes, exceeding rich and mighty in Eſtates, had laid ſiege to the Town of *Quiternan*, with the death of above thirty thouſand men, and of *Oyaa Capimper*, Governor and Lievtenant Generall of all that Frontire. The King remained ſo much appalled with this news, that without further temporiſing, he paſſed over the very ſame day to the other ſide of the river, and never ſtanding to lodge in houſes, he went and incamped under Tents in the open field, thereby to draw others to do the like in imitation of him: Withall he cauſed Proclamation to be made over all the City, *That all ſuch as were neither old nor lame, and ſo could not be diſpenſed with for going to this war, ſhould be ready to march within twelve daies at the uttermoſt, upon pain of being burned alive, with perpetuall infamy for themſelves, and their deſcendants, and confiſcation of their Eſtates to the Crown*: To the which he added many other ſuch great and dreadfull penalties, as the only recitall of them ſtruck terror, not into them of the country, but into the very ſtrangers, whom the King would not exempt from this war, of what Nation ſoever they were; for if they would not ſerve, they were very expreſly enjoyned to depart out of his Kingdome within three daies: In the mean time ſo rigorous an Edict terrified every one in ſuch ſort, as they knew not what counſell to take, or what reſolution to follow. As for us *Portugals*, in regard that more reſpect had alwayes been carried in that country to them, then to all other Nations, this King ſent to deſire them that they would accompany him in this voyage, wherein they ſhould do him a pleaſure, becauſe he would truſt them onely with the guard of his perſon, as judging them more proper for it then any other that he could make choice of; and to oblige them the more thereunto, the meſſage was accompanied with many fair promiſes, and very great hopes of penſions, graces, benefits, favours, and honors, but above all, with a permiſſion which ſhould be granted them to build Churches in his Kingdome, which ſo obliged us, that of an hundred and thirty *Portugals* which we were, there were fixſcore of us that agreed together to go to this war. The twelve daies limited being paſt, the King put himſelf into the field with an Army of four hundred thouſand men, whereof ſeventy thouſand were ſtrangers of divers Nations: They imbarqued all in three hundred *Sereos*, *Lanteas*, and *Iangas*, ſo that on the nineth day of this voyage the King arrived at a Frontire Town, named *Saropiſem*, ſome twelve or thirteen leagues from *Quitiruan*, which the enemies had beſieged. There he abode above ſeven daies to attend four thouſand Elephants which came to him by Land. During that time, he was certified that the Town was greatly preſt, both on the rivers ſide, which the enemies had ſeized upon with two thouſand Veſſels, as alſo towards the Land, where there were ſo many men, as the number of them was not truly known, but as it was judged by conjecture, they might be ſome three hundred thouſand, whereof forty thouſand were horſe, but no Elephants at all. This news made the King haſten the more, ſo that inſtantly he made a review of his forces, and found that he had five hundred thouſand men, for ſince his coming forth many had joyned with him by the way, as alſo four thouſand Elephants, and two hundred carts with field pieces. With this Army he parted from *Saropiſem*, and drew towards *Quitiruan*, marching not above four or five leagues a day. At the end of the the third, then he arrived at a valley called *Sipatay*, a league and an half from the place where the enemies lay. Then all theſe men of War, with the Elephants, being ſet in battell array by the three Maſters of the Camp, whereof two were *Turks* by Nation, and the third a *Portugal*, named *Domingos de Soixas*, they proceeded on in their way towards *Quitiruan*, where they arrived before the Sun appeared. Now whereas the enemies were already prepared, in regard they had been advertiſed by their Spies of the King of *Siams* forces, and of the deſign which he had, they attended him reſolutely in the plain field; relying much on their

forty

forty thouſand horſe. As ſoon as they diſcovered him, they preſently advanced, and with their vant-guard, which were the ſaid forty thouſand horſe, they ſo charged the King of *Siams* rearward, compoſed of threeſcore thouſand foot, as they defeated them in leſſe then a quarter of an hour, with the loſſe of three Princes that were ſlaine upon the place. The King of *Siam* ſeeing his men thus routed, reſolved not to follow the order which he had formerly appointed, but to fall on with the whole body of his Army, and the four thouſand Elephants joyned together. With theſe forces he gave upon the battalion of the enemies with ſo much impetuoſity, as at this firſt ſhock they were wholly diſcomfited, from whence enſued the death of an infinite company of men; for whereas their prin^cs all ſtrength conſiſted in their horſe, as ſoone as the Elephants, ſuſtained by the harquebouſes, and the field pieces, fell upon them, they were defeated in leſſe then an half hour, ſo that after the routing of theſe ſame, all the reſt began inſtantly to retreat. In the meane time the King of *Siam*, following the honor of the victory, purſued them to the rivers ſide, which the enemies perceiving, they formed a new Squadron of all thoſe that remained of them, wherein there were above an hundred thouſand men, as well ſound as hurt, and ſo paſt all the ſame day there, joyned together in one entire body of an Army, the King not daring to fight with them, by reaſon he ſaw them fortified with two thouſand ſhips, wherein there were great numbers of men. Nevertheleſſe as ſoon as it was dark night the enemies began to march away with all ſpeed all along by the river, wherewith the King was nothing diſpleaſed, becauſe the moſt part of his ſouldiers being hurt, they were neceſſarily to be dreſt, as indeed that was preſently executed, and the moſt part of the day and the night following imployed therein.

After the King of *Siam* had obtained ſo happy a victory, the firſt thing that he did S. 2.
was to provide with all diligence for the fortifications of the town, and whatſoever elſe he thought to be neceſſary for the ſecurity thereof. After that he commanded a generall muſter to be made of all his men of war, that he might know how many he had loſt in this battell; whereupon he found that ſome fifty thouſand were wanting, all men of little reckoning, whom the rigor of the Kings Edict had compelled to ſerve in this war, ill provided, and without defenſive arms: As for the enemies, it was known the next day that an hundred and thirty thouſand of them had been ſlain. As ſoon as the hurt men were recovered, the King, having put into the principall places of this frontier ſuch guards as ſeemed requiſite to him, was counſelled by his Lords to make war upon the Kingdom of *Guibem*, which was not above fifteen leagues from thence on the North ſide, to be revenged on the Queen of *Guibem*, for having given free paſſage thorough her dominions to thoſe of *Chiammay*, in regard whereof he attributed to her the loſſe of *Oyaa Capimper*, and the thirty thouſand men that had been killed with him. The King approving of this advice, parted from this town with an army of foure hundred thouſand men, and went and fell upon one of this Queens towns, called *Fumbaeor*, which was eaſily taken, and all the inhabitants put to the ſword, not one excepted. This done, he continued his voyage till he came to *Guitor*, the capitall town of the Kingdom of *Guibem*, where the Queen then was, who being a widdow governed the State under the title of Regent, during the minority of her ſon, that was about the age of nine years: At his arrivall he laid ſiege to the Town, and foraſmuch as the Queen found not her ſelf ſtrong enough to reſiſt the King of *Siams* power, ſhe fell to accord with him to pay him an annuall tribute of five thouſand *Tarmas* of ſilver, which are threeſcore thouſand Duckats of our money, whereof ſhe paid him five years advance in hand. Beſides that, the young Prince her ſon did him homage as his vaſſall, and the King led him away with him to *Siam*. Hereupon he raiſed his ſiege from before the Town, and paſſed on towards the North-Eaſt to the Town of *Tayſiran*, where he had news that the King of *Chiammay* was fallen off from the league aforeſaid. In the mean time, whereas he had been ſix daies march in the enemies territories, he ſacked as many places as he met withall, not permitting the life of any male whatſoever to be ſaved. So proceeding onward, he arrived at the Lake of *Singipamor*, which ordinarily is called *Chiammay*, where he ſtayed ſix and twenty daies, during the which he took twelve goodly places, invironed with ditches and bullworks after our faſhion, all of brick and mortar, without any ſtone or lime in them, becauſe in the country it is not the cuſtome to build ſo;

but they had no other Artillery then ſome Faulconets, and certain muskets of braſſe. Now foraſmuch as winter began to approach, and that it was very rainy weather, the King too feeling himſelf not very well, he retired back again to the Town of *Quitiruan*, where he tarried three and twenty daies and better, in which ſpace he made an end of fortifying it with walls, and many broad and deep ditches, ſo that having put this Town into an eſtate of being able to defend it ſelf againſt any attempt, he imbarqued his Army in the three thouſand veſſells which brought him thither, and ſo returned towards *Siam*. Nine daies after he arrived at *Odiaa*, the chiefe City of his whole Kingdome, where for the moſt part he kept his Court. At his arrivall the inhabitants gave him a ſtately reception, wherein they beſtowed a world of money upon divers inventions, which were made againſt his entry. Now whereas during the ſix moneths of the Kings abſence, the Queen his wife had committed adultery with a Purveyor of her houſe, named *Vquumcheniraa*, and that at the Kings return ſhe found her ſelfe gone four moneths with-child by him, the fear ſhe was in leſt it ſhould be diſcovered, made her, for the ſaving of her ſelf from the danger that threatned her, reſolve to poyſon the King her husband, as indeed without further delaying her pernitious intention, ſhe gave him in a meſſe of milk, which wrought that effect, as he died of it within five daies after; during which time he took order by his Teſtament for the moſt important affairs of his Kingdome, and diſcharged himſelf of the obligation wherein he ſtood ingaged to the ſtrangers which had ſerved him in this war of *Chiammay*. In this Teſtament, whenas he came to make mention of us *Portugals*, he would needs have this clauſe added thereunto, *It is my intent that the fiveſcore* Portugals, *which have alwayes ſo faithfully watched upon the guard of my perſon, ſhall receive for a recompence of their good ſervices, half a years tribute which the Queen of* Guibem *gives me; and that in my cuſtome houſes, their Merchandiſe ſhall pay no cuſtome for the ſpace of three years: Moreover my intent is, that their Prieſts may throughout all the Townes of my Kingdome publiſh the Law whereof they make profeſſion, namely of a God made man for the ſalvation of mankind, as they have many times aſſured me.* To theſe things he added many others ſuch like, which well deſerve to be reported here, though I paſſe them under ſilence, becauſe I hope to make a more ample mention of them hereafter. Furthermore, he deſired all the Grandees of his Court which were preſent with him, that they would give him the conſolation before he died, to make his eldeſt Son be declared King, which was incontinently executed. For which effect, after that all the *Oyaas*, *Conchalis*, and *Monteos*, which are Soveraign dignities over all the reſt of the Kingdome, had taken the oath of Allegeance to this young Prince, they ſhewed him out at a window to all the people, who were in a great place below, and they ſet upon his head a rich Crovvn of gold in the form of a Miter, and put a ſvvord into his right hand, and a pair of balances into his left, a cuſtome vvhich they alvvays obſerve in ſuch a like ceremony. Then *Oya Paſſilico*, who was the higheſt in dignity in the Kingdome, falling on his knees before this new King, ſaid unto him with tears in his eyes, and ſo loud that every one might hear him, *Bleſſed child, that in ſo tender an age doeſt hold from the good influence of thy Star the happineſſe to be choſen by heaven there above for Governour of this Empire of* Sornau; *ſee how God puts it into thy hand by me who am thy vaſſall, to the end thou mayeſt take thy firſt oath, whereby thou doeſt proteſt to hold it with obedience from his divine will, as alſo to obſerve juſtice equally to all the people, without having any regard to perſons, whether it be in chaſtiſing or recompencing the great or ſmall, the mighty or the humble, that ſo in time to come thou mayeſt not be reproached for not having accompliſhed that which thou haſt ſworn in this ſolemn action. For if it ſhall happen, that humane conſiderations ſhall make thee ſwarve from that which for thy juſtification thou art obliged to do before ſo juſt a Lord, thou ſhalt be greatly puniſhed for it in the profound pit of the houſe of ſmoke, the burning lake of inſupportable ſtench, where the wicked and damned howl continually with a ſadneſſe of obſcure night in their entrails. And to the end thou mayeſt oblige thy ſelfe to the charge which thou takeſt upon thee, ſay now* Xamxaimpom, *which is as much as to ſay amongſt us, Amen.* The *Paſſilico* having finiſhed his ſpeech, the young Prince ſaid weeping *Xamxaimpom*, which ſo mightily moved all the Aſſembly of the people, as there was nothing heard for a good while together, but ſighing and wailing. At length, after that this noyſe was appeaſed, the *Paſſilico* proceeding on with his diſcourſe in looking on the young King; *This Sword,*

ſaid

ſaid he unto him, *which thou holdeſt naked in thy hand, is given thee as a Scepter of Soveraign power upon earth for the ſubduing of the rebellious, which is alſo to ſay that thou art truly obliged to be the ſupport of the feeble and poor, to the end that they which grow lofty with their power, may not overthrow them with the puffe of their pride, which the Lord doth as much abhor, as he doth the mouth of him that blaſpheweth againſt a little infant which hath never ſinned: And that thou mayeſt in all things ſatisfie the fair enamelling of the ſtars of heaven, which is the perfect, juſt, and good God, whoſe power is admirable over all things of the world, ſay once again* Xamxaimpom; wherennto the Prince anſwered twice weeping, *Maximan, Maximan*, that is to ſay, *I promiſe ſo to do.* After this, the *Paſſilico* having inſtructed him in divers other ſuch like things, the young Prince anſwered ſeven times *Xamxaimpom*, and ſo the ceremony of his Coronation was finiſhed; onely there came firſt a *Talagrepo*, of a ſoveraign dignity above all the other Prieſts, named *Quiay Pennedea*, who it was ſaid was above an hundred years old: This ſame proſtrating himſelf at the feet of the Prince, gave him an oath upon a golden baſon full of rice, and that done, they put him into it, after they had created him thus anew, for time would not permit them to hold him there longer, in regard the King his Father was at the point of death, beſides there was ſo univerſall a mourning amongſt the people, that in every place there was nothing heard but lamentations and wailing.

## CHAP. XLVIII.

*The lamentable death of the King of* Siam, *with certain illuſtrious and memorable things done by him during his life, and many other accidents that arrived in this Kingdome.*

WHenas the day and the night following had been ſpent in the manner that I have related, the next morning about eight of the clock the infortunate King yeelded up the Ghoſt in the preſence of the moſt part of the Lords of his Kingdome, for the which all the people made ſo great demonſtrations of mourning, as every where there was nothing but wailing and weeping. Now foraſmuch as this Prince had lived in the reputation of being charitable to the poor, liberall in his benefits and recompences, pitifull and gentle toward every one, and above all incorrupt in doing of juſtice, and chaſtiſing the wicked; his ſubjects ſpake ſo amply thereof in their lamentations, as if all that they ſaid of it was true, we are to believe, that there was never a better King then he, either amongſt theſe Pagans, or in all the countries of the world. Howbeit, whereas I cannot aſſure, that thoſe things which they affirmed in their complaints were true, becauſe I did not ſee them, I will only inſiſt upon thoſe which paſt concerning him, in the time whileſt I was trading in this Kingdome, whereof I will report three or four amongſt many others, which I have ſeen him do, from the year 1540. untill 1545. The firſt was, that in the year 1540. *Pedro de Faria*, being Governour of *Malaca*, King *Joano* the *Joha*, the third of glorious memory wrote him a letter, whereby above all things he recommended unto him his uſing all poſſible means for the redeeming of a certain *Domingos de Seixas*, who for the ſpace of three and twenty years had been a ſlave in the Kingdome of *Siam*, adding that the doing thereof would be very important for Gods ſervice and his, in regard he was informed, that from him, rather then from any other he might be certified of the great things which were recounted to him of this Kingdome; and in caſe he could redeem this Chriſtian, that he ſhould ſend him incontinently to *Don Garcia*, the Vice-Roy of the *Indias*, to whom he had alſo written, that he ſhould imbarque him in the ſhip which was to part that year for to return into *Portugal*. *Pedro de Faria* had no ſooner received this letter, but ſeeing with how much care the King his Maſter recommended this affair unto him, he ſent us his Ambaſſador to *Siam* one *Franciſco de Caſtro*, a noble and very rich man, to the end he ſhould treat about the ranſome of this *Domingos de Seixas*, and other ſixteen *Portugals*, which were alſo ſlaves there as well as he. According to this Commiſſion *Franciſco de Caſtro* came to the City of *Odiaa*, whileſt I was there, where he delivered his letter to the King of *Siam*, who gave him a very good reception, and after he had read it, and queſtioned him concerning many new and curious things, he anſwered him preſently, which was a thing he did not uſually do to any Ambaſſador, his anſwer contained this much, *As for* Domingos de Seixas, *whom the* [illegible]*aca ſends to me for, adverti-*

*ſing*

*ſing me that I ſhall do the King of* Portugal *a great pleaſure in releaſing him, & do moſt willingly grant to do it, as alſo to deliver all the reſt that are with him.* Whereupon *Franciſco de Craſto*, having had this diſpatch from the King, gave him moſt humble thanks for it, and proſtrated himſelf three ſeverall times before him, with his head bowed down to the ground, as the cuſtome was to do unto this King, in regard he was more abſolute then others. Whenas then the ſeaſon permitted *Franciſco de Caſtro* to return to *Malaca*, the King ſent to fetch *Domingos de Seixas* from the Town of *Gouvalen*, where he was at that time Generall of the Frontire, having under his charge thirty thouſand foot, five thouſand horſe, and eighteen thonſand duckats penſion by the year: With him alſo he cauſed to be brought the other ſixteen *Portugals*, and conſigned them all into the hands of *Franciſco de Caſtro*, who gave him thanks again for the grace which he did him. A little after, whenas *Domingos de Seixas* and his companions went to take their leave of this King, he cauſed a thouſand turmes of ſilver to be given to them, which are in value twelve thouſand duckats of our money, and deſired them to pardon him for giving them ſo little. Another time, which was in the year a thouſand five hundred forty and five, *Simano de Melo*, being Captain of the ſame fortreſſe of *Malaca*, one *Luys de Montarroyo* coming from *China* to go to *Patana*, it happened that the ſhip wherein he was, being beaten with a furious tempeſt, was caſt away in the Port of *Charir*, ſome five leagues from *Lugor*, where all his goods were ſeized upon by the *Xabandar* of the country, after that the Sea had caſt him aſhore, and withall, he himſelf was made a priſoner, together with all the reſt which were ſaved, to the number of four and twenty *Portugals*, and fifty boys, which made in all ſeventy and four perſons; the goods too that were ſaved out of this Shipwrack, amounted at leaſt to fifteen thouſand duckats. Now the reaſon which the *Xabandar* alledged for this ſame was, that by the antient cuſtom of the Kingdome all theſe goods belonged unto him, whereof *Luis de Montarroyo* having advertiſed certain *Portugals* which were at that inſtant in the City, they concluded amongſt themſelves to make an *Odiaa*, or preſent of ſome rich pieces, to the value of a thouſand duckats, and therewith to go unto the King, upon the day which was named *of the white Elephant*, that was ten daies after, and on the which, in regard it was a very ſolemn feaſt, this Prince was accuſtomed to do many graces to ſuch as were ſuitors to him for them. So on the ſolemnity of this day, which they call *Onidaypilen*, that is to ſay, *the rejoycing of good men*, all the *Portugals*, who were threeſcore and odd, placed themſelves in a certain paſſage of one of the three principall ſtreets, thorough which the King was to paſſe with a great deal of pomp and Majeſty, and whenas they ſaw the King come by, they proſtrated themſelves all upon the ground, as the inhabitants of *Siam* uſe to do, and one of them, being deputed thereunto, recounted unto the King the whole buſineſſe of *Luis de Montarroyo* and his companions, juſt as it had paſt, beſeeching him he would do them ſo much grace, as to command the releaſement of thoſe poor priſoners, without ſpeaking of the goods which the *Xabandar* had ſeized upon, becauſe it ſeemed not reaſonable unto them. But the King, who preſently underſtood their demand, was ſo moved with the tears which he ſaw ſome of them ſhed, as he cauſed the white Elephant whereon he was mounted to ſtay, then caſting his eye on the *Portugals*, and the Preſent that ſome of them held out in their hands, which he knew they intended to offer unto him; *My friends*, ſaid he unto him, *I take that for received which you would preſent me with, and do thank you for it; for in ſo ſolemn a day as this is I do not uſe to take any thing of any body, but to give, and oblige every one with benefits; wherefore I deſire you for the love of your God, whoſe ſervant I am, and ever will be, to beſtow this Preſent upon ſuch of your company as are in moſt need of it; for you ſhall do far better in gaining thereby the recompence of this Almes, which you ſhall give for his ſake then you could get by all that which I ſhould confer on you in acknowledgement of this Preſent, it being moſt certain that before him I am but a poor worm of the earth. As for the priſoners which you demand of me, it is my pleaſure to beſtow them as an Almes upon you, that ſo in all liberty they may return unto* Malaca; *and further, I command that all the goods which they ſay have been taken from them, be reſtored to them again; for things which are done for Gods ſake, ought to be accompliſhed with much more liberality then the need of the poor requires, eſpecially when they crave it with tears in their eys.* Hereupon the *Portugals* proſtrated themſelves all before him, and the next day the King by his Letters Patents ordained,

That

*That within the terme of ten daies the priſoners ſhould be brought to the City, together with all that which had been taken from them*; which incontinently was executed very exactly, for there were reſtored unto them all the goods which had been ſaved out of the ſhip, amounting, as I have already ſaid, to fifteen thouſand duckats, which the King freely gave them. Two or three moneths after, in the ſame year one thouſand five hundred forty and five, it greatly importing this King of *Siam* to go in perſon and repulſe the King of *Tuparabos*, who on *Paſſilicaus* ſide had invaded his country, and ſacked ſome of the weakeſt places, with an intent to beſiege the fortreſſe of *Xinan* and *Lauter*, whereon depended the whole ſafety of this ſtate, he reſolved to go againſt him in perſon. Wherefore he ſent certain Colonells over all the Kingdome to levy men, with an expreſſe Commiſſion to return within twenty daies with their men of war to the City of *Odiaa*, for it was his intention to ſet forth from thence about that time. Withall he enjoyned his Commanders upon pain of a rigorous chaſtiſement not to diſpenſe with a man that could fight, from this war, except it were ſuch as were any way impotent, and above threeſcore years of age, whereupon each of theſe Colonells was aſſigned the Province wherein he ſhould make his levies: It happened then that one *Quiay Randiaa*, a man of quality, and one that the King made oftentimes uſe of, had for his lot the frontier of *Blanchaa*, where the moſt part of the inhabitants being very rich, as well in money, as other wayes, gave themſelves to the delights of the fleſh, and ſpent the moſt part of their time in feaſts, in ſports, and other ſuch like pleaſures of this life, ſo that when they ſaw that *Quiay Randiaa* would compell them to go to this war, as he was enjoyned to do, they took it for too heavy a yoke, and too inſupportable a burthen, and that did not well agree with the manner of life which they were wont to lead, and therefore the richeſt of the country aſſembled together, and reſolved to get a diſpenſation from this voyage by the means of a great ſum of money which they made up amongſt themſelves, and carried to the Colonel. Now whereas there is no place where money is not powerfull enough to overthrow all things, and from which a man can hardly defend himſelf, the Colonel *Randiaa* ſuffered himſelf to be overcome with ſuch a maſſe of coyn as theſe men preſented him with, and conſented that they ſhould not budge from their homes. In this ſort he was conſtrained to take up in their ſteads moſt of the poor impotent, and old men of the country, without any regard had to the Kings expreſſe Injunction to the contrary. Being arrived with this goodly company of ſouldiers at the City of *Odiaa*, he was commanded to make a ſhew of them before the King, as all the Colonels did of theirs; as ſoon as this Prince caſt his eye from a window where he was, upon men ſo wretched, old, and poorly clad, he cauſed one file of them to come before him; then having asked of them how old they were, and why they preſented themſelves before him in ſo bad an equipage; one amongſt them ſpeaking for the reſt, recounted unto him the whole buſineſſe as it had paſt, which put the King into ſuch choler, that having preſently commanded *Quiay Randiaa* to be brought before him, and reviled him publikely for his villany and baſeneſſe, he cauſed him to be bound hand and foot, and having given order for the melting of five *Turmes* of ſilver, he made it to be powred into his mouth in his preſence, whereof he died inſtantly. Whereupon beholding him lie dead before him; *If it be ſo*, ſaid he unto him, *that there needed but five Turmes of ſilver to kill thee, how could'ſt thou imagine that the threeſcore thouſand duckats which thou took'ſt of the rewards of* Banchaa *for to diſpenſe with them from the war, ſhould not be capable of ſending thee into the other world? God forgive thee thy avarice, and me the little puniſhment I have inflicted on thee for the ſame.* After this, he ſent preſently to ſearch his houſe, where the five thouſand *Turmes* he had taken were found, which were immediately brought to the King, who cauſed this money to be diſtributed in his preſence to thoſe old and impotent poor wretches which *Randiaa* had brought thither, being in number above three thouſand; that done he ſent them home to their houſes, willing them to pray unto God for him. As for thoſe effeminate men, who to be exempted from going to the war had given the five thouſand *Turmes* to the Colonell, he commanded them to be attired like women, and ſo baniſhed them into an Iſland called *Pulho Caton*; wherewith yet not contented, he confiſcated all their eſtates, which he ordered ſhould be beſtowed on ſuch as behaved themſelves beſt in the war. And not long after, obſerving that one of the hundred and threeſcore *Portugals*,

which went along with him in this expedition, hung back in a certain attempt, which the reſt of his fellows went upon, where they carried themſelves ſo valiantly, and with ſuch courage, as they regained the principall Fort which the enemy had taken in the Town of *Lanter*, he commanded him to return to *Siam*, ſeeing he was not like his other companions, and that as long as he continued there, he ſhould neither offer to go out of the houſe where he was, nor take upon him the name of a *Portugal*, on paine of having his beard ſhaven off, and uſed like thoſe of *Banchaa*, ſince he was as cowardly as they; whereas contrarily to all the reſt of the *Portugals* he ſent treble pay, and exempted them from all duties that were to be paid for their Merchandize, as alſo gave them power to build Churches in any part of his Kingdome for the adoring of the name of the God of the *Portugals*. By theſe and many other examples which I could produce here, it is manifeſt how great and commendable the inclinations of this Prince were, who notwithſtanding that he was a Gentile, was of a wonderfull good nature, and exceedingly addicted to vertuous actions.

§. 2. It is not to be believed with what infinite ſorrow, both all the great Lords, and generally all the ſubjects of this Kingdome bewailed the death of their good King; but at length an Aſſembly was made of all the Prieſts of this City, who as it was ſaid, were twenty thouſand in number, by whoſe direction the principall perſons of the Kingdom concluded upon the funerall pomp, and ceremonies which were to be uſed thereabout, according to the cuſtome of the country: whereupon a mighty great pile was forthwith erected, made of Sandal, Aloes Calembas, and Benjamin, on the which the body of the deceaſed King being laid, fire was put to it, with a ſtrange ceremony: during all the time that the body was a burning, the people did nothing but wail and lament beyond all expreſſion, but in the end, it being conſumed to aſhes, they put them into a ſilver ſhrine, which they imbarqued in a *Lanlea* very richly equipped, that was accompanied with forty *Seroos* full of *Talagrepos*, which are the higheſt dignity of their Gentile Prieſts, and a great number of other Veſſells, wherein there was a world of people; after them followed an hundred ſmall barques laden with divers figures of *Idolls*, under the formes of Adders, Lizards, Tygers, Lions, Toads, Serpents, Bats, Geeſe, *Bucks*, *Dogs*, Elephants, Cats, Vultures, Kites, Crows, and other ſuch like creatures, whoſe figures were ſo well repreſented to the life, as they ſeemed to be living In another very great ſhip was the King of all theſe Idolls, which they called, *The gluttonous Serpent of the profound pit of the houſe of ſmoke*. This Idoll had the figure of a monſtrous Adder, was as big about as an hogſhead, and vvrithed into nine circles, ſo that whenas it was extended, it was above an hundred ſpans long, it had the neck ſtanding upright, and out of the eyes, throat, and breaſt iſſued flames of artificiall fire, which rendred this monſter ſo dreadfull and furious, as all that beheld it trembled for fear. Now upon a Theater three fathom high, and richly guilt, was a very beautiful little boy, about four or five years old, covered all over with pearls, and chains, and bracelets of precious ſtones, having wings, and a buſh of hair of fine gold, much after the manner as we uſe to paint Angells. This child held a rich Curtelas in his hand, by which invention theſe Pagans would give to underſtand, *That it was an Angell of heaven ſent from God to impriſon all thoſe many devills, to the end they ſhould not ſteal away the Kings ſoul, before it ſhould arrive at the place of reſt, which was prepared for it there above in glory, for a recompence of the good works which he had done below in the world.* In this order all theſe Veſſells got to land at a Pagode, called *Quiay Ponter*, where after that the ſilver ſhrine, in which the Kings aſhes were, was placed, and the little boy taken from thence, fire was put to all that infinite number of Idolls, juſt in the manner as they ſtood in the Barques; and this was accompanied with ſo horrible a din of cries, great Ordnance, Harquebuzes, Drums, Bells, Cornets, and other different kinds of noyſe, as it was impoſſible to hear it without trembling. This ceremony laſted not above an hour, for whereas all theſe figures were made of combuſtible ſtuffe, and the Veſſells filled with pitch and rozen, ſo dreadfull a flame enſued preſently thereupon, as one might well have ſaid that it was a very pourtraicture of hell; ſo that in an inſtant the Veſſells, and all that were in them were ſeen to be reduced to nothing. Whenas this, and many other very lively inventions, which had coſt a great deal of money, were finiſhed, all the inhabitants, which were come thronging thither, and whereof the number ſeemed to be infinite, retired back to their houſes,

where

where they remained with their doors and windows ſhut, not one appearing in the ſtreets for the ſpace of ten daies, during which time all places were unfrequented, and none were ſeen ſtirring but ſome poor people, who in the night went up and down begging with ſtrange lamentations. At the end of the ten daies wherein they had ſhut themſelves up ſo, they opened their doors and windows, and their *Pagodes*, or Temples, were adorned with many Enſigns of rejoycing, together with a world of hangings, ſtandards, and banners of ſilk. Hereupon there went through all the ſtreets certain men on horſeback, apparelled in white Damask, who at the ſound of very harmonious inſtruments, cried aloud with tears in their eys, *Ye ſad inhabitants of this Kingdome of Siam, hearken, hearken to that which is made known to you from God, and with humble and pure hearts praiſe ye all his holy name, for the effects of his divine juſtice are great; withall laying aſide your mourning, come forth of your abodes wherein you are ſhut up, and ſing the praiſes of the goodneſſe of your God, ſince he hath been pleaſed to give you a new King, who fears him, and is a friend of the poor.* This Proclamation being made, all the Aſſiſtants, with their faces proſtrated on the ground, and their hands lifted up, as people that rendred thanks to God, anſwered aloud weeping; *We make the Angells of heaven our Attorneys, to the end they may continually praiſe the Lord for us.* After this, all the inhabitants of the City coming out of their houſes, and thinking of nothing but dancing and rejoycing, went to the Temple of *Quiay Fanarel*, that is to ſay, *the God of the joyfull*, where they offered ſweet perfumes, and the pooreſt ſort, fruits, pulſen, and rice, for the entertainment of the Prieſts. The ſame day the new King ſhewed himſelf over all the City with a great deal of pomp and Majeſty, in regard whereof the people made great demonſtrations of joy and gladneſſe. And foraſmuch as the King was but nine years old, it was ordained by the four and twenty *Bracalons* of the Government, that the Queen his mother ſhould be the Protector or Regent of him, and that ſhe ſhould beare rule over all the Officers of the Crown. Things paſt thus for the ſpace of four moneths and an half, during the which there was no manner of diſorder, but all was peaceable in the Kingdome; howbeit at the end of that time, the Queen coming to be delivered of a Son which ſhe had had by her Purveyor, being diſpleaſed with the bad report that went of her, ſhe reſolved with her ſelf to ſatisfie her deſire, which was to marry with the Father of this new Son, for that ſhe was deſperately in love with him: And further, ſhe wickedly enterpriſed to make away the new King, her lawfull child, to the end that by this means the Crown might paſſe to the baſtard by right of inheritance. Now to execute this horrible deſign of hers, ſhe made ſhew that the exceſſe of her affection to the young King her Son, kept her always in fear, leſt ſome attempt ſhould be made upon his life; ſo that one day having cauſed all the Councell of the State to be aſſembled, ſhe repreſented unto them, that having but this only pearl enchaced in her heart, ſhe deſired to keep it from being plucked from thence by ſome diſaſter; for which effect ſhe thought it requiſite, as well to ſecure her from her apprehenſions, as to prevent the great miſchiefs which careleſſeneſſe is wont to bring in ſuch like caſes, that there ſhould be a guard ſet about the Palace, and the perſon of the King. This affair was immediately debated in the Councell, and accorded to the Queen, in regard the matter ſeemed good of it ſelf. The Queen ſeeing then that her deſign had ſucceeded ſo well, took inſtantly for the guard of the Palace, and the perſon of her Son, ſuch as ſhe judged were proper for the executing of her damnable enterpriſe, and in whom ſhe moſt confided. She ordained a guard then of two thouſand foot, and five hundred horſe, beſides the ordinary guard of her houſe, which were ſix hundred *Canebins* and *Lequios*, and thereof ſhe made Captain one called *Tilenbacus*, the cozen of the ſame Purveyor, by whom ſhe had had a child, to the end that by this mans favour ſhe might diſpoſe of things as ſhe pleaſed, and the more eaſily bring to paſſe her pernicious deſign. Whereupon relying on the great forces which ſhe had already on her party, ſhe began to revenge her ſelf upon ſome of the great ones of the Kingdome, becauſe ſhe knew they deſpiſed her, and held her not in that eſteem ſhe deſired, The two firſt whom ſhe cauſed to be laid hands on were two Deputies of the Government, making uſe of this pretext, that they held ſecret intelligence with the King of *Chiamnay*, and were to give him an entry into the Kingdome thorough their lands, ſo that under colour of juſtice ſhe cauſed them to be both executed, and confiſcated their eſtates, whereof ſhe gave the one to her Favorite, and

the

the other to a brother-in-law of his, who (it was ſaid) had been a Smith: But in regard this execution had been done precipitouſly, and without any proof, the greateſt part of the Lords of the Kingdom murmured againſt the Queen for it, repreſenting unto her the merit of them whom ſhe had put to death, the ſervices they had rendred to the Crown, the qualitie of the perſons, and the nobility and antiquity of their extractions, as being of the bloud royall, and lineally deſcended from the Kings of *Siam*, howbeit ſhe made no reckoning thereof, but contrarily a little after making ſhow as if ſhe had not been well, ſhe in a full Councill renounced her regency, and conferred it on *Vquumchenira*, her Favorite, to the end that by this means bearing rule over all others, he might diſpoſe of the affairs of the kingdom at his pleaſure, and give the moſt important charges thereof to ſuch as would be of his party, which he thought to be the moſt aſſured way for him to uſurp this Crown, and make himſelf abſolute Lord of the Empire of *Sornau*, whereof the revenue was twelve millions of gold, beſides other comings in, which amounted to as much more. With all theſe inventions this Queen uſed ſo great diligence for the contenting of the deſire which ſhe had to raiſe her Favorite to the Royalty, to marry her ſelf to him, and to make the illegitimate ſon, which ſhe had had by him, ſucceſſor of the Crown, as within the ſpace of eight moneths, fortune favouring her deſignes, and hoping more fully to execute her wicked plot, ſhee cauſed moſt of the great men of the kingdom to be put to death, and confiſcated all their lands, goods and treaſures, which ſhe diſtributed amongſt ſuch of her creatures as ſhe daily drew to her party. Now foraſmuch as the young King her ſon ſerved for the principall obſtacle to her intentions, this young Prince could not eſcape her abominable fury, for ſhe her ſelf poyſoned him even as ſhe had poyſoned the King his father. That done, ſhe married with *Vquumchenira*, who had been one of the Purveyors of her houſe, and cauſed him to be crowned King in the city of *Odiaa*, the eleventh of November in the yeare one thouſand five hundred forty five. But whereas Heaven never leaves wicked actions unpuniſhed, the year after, one thouſand five hundred forty and ſix, and on the fifteenth day of January, they were both of them ſlain by *Oyaa Paſſitivo*, and the King of *Cambaya*, at a certain banquet which theſe Princes made in a Temple, that was called *Quiay Figrau*, that is to ſay, *the god of the atoms of the Sun*, whoſe ſolemnity was that day celebrated: So that, as well by the death of theſe two perſons; as of all the reſt of their party, whom theſe Princes alſo killed with them, all things became very peaceable, without any further prejudice to the people of the kingdom; onely it is true, that it was deſpoyled of the moſt part of the Nobility, which formerly it had, by the wicked inventions, and pernicious practices, whereof I have ſpoken before.

## CHAP. LXIX.

*The King of* Brama's *enterprize upon the Kingdom of* Siam; *and that which paſt untill his arrivall at the city of* Odiaa, *with his beſieging of it, and all that enſued thereupon.*

§. 1. THe Empire of *Siam* remaining without a lawfull ſucceſſor, thoſe two great Lords of the Kingdom, namely, *Oyaa Paſſilico*, and the King of *Cambaia*, together with four or five more of the truſtieſt that were left, and which had been confederate with them, thought fit to chuſe for King, a certain religious man, named *Pretiam*, in regard he was the naturall brother of the deceaſed Prince, husband to that wicked Queen of whom I have ſpoken; whereupon this religious man, who was *Talagrepo* of a *Pagode*, called *Quiay Mitrau*, from whence he had not budg'd for the ſpace of thirty years, was the day after drawn forth of it by *Oyaa Paſſilico*, who brought him on the ſeventeenth day of January into the city of *Odiaa*, where on the nineteenth he was crowned King with a new kind of ceremony, and a world of magnificence, which (to avoid prolixity) I will not make mention of here, having formerly treated of ſuch like things. Withall paſſing by all that further arrived in this Kingdom of *Siam*, I will content my ſelf with reporting ſuch things as I imagine will be moſt agreeable to the curious. It happened then that the King of *Bramaa*, who at that time reigned tyrannically in *Pegu*, being adverтiſed of the deplorable eſtate whereinto the Empire of *Sornau* was reduced; and of the death of the greateſt Lords of the Country, as alſo that the new King of this Monarchy was a religious man, who had no knowledge either of arme or war, and withall of

a cowardly diſpoſition, a tyrant, and ill beloved of his ſubjects, he fell to conſult thereupon with his Lords in the town of *Anaplen*, where at that time he kept his Court. Deſiring their advice then upon ſo important an enterprize, they all of them told him, that by no means he ſhould deſiſt from it, in regard this Kingdome was one of the beſt of the world, as well in riches, as in abundance of all things; thereunto they added, that the ſeaſon which was then ſo favourable for him, promiſed it to him at ſo good a rate, as it was likely it would not coſt him above the revenue of one only year, what expence ſoever he ſhould make of his treaſure; beſides, if he chanced to get it, he ſhould remain Monarch of all the Emperors of the world, and therewithall he ſhould be honored with the ſoveraign title of *Lord of the white Elephant*, by which means the ſeventeene Kings of *Capimper*, who made profeſſion of his Law, muſt of neceſſity render him obedience. They told him moreover, that having made ſo great a conqueſt, he might, thorough the ſame territories, and with the ſuccour of the Princes his Allies, paſſe into *China*, where was that great City of *Pequin*, the incomparable pearl of all the world, and againſt which the great *Cham* of *Tartaria*, the *Siamon*, and the *Calaminham*, had brought ſuch prodigious Armies into the field. The King of *Bramaa*, having heard all theſe reaſons, and many others which his great Lords alledged unto him, wherein his intereſt was eſpecially concerned, which alwayes works powerfully on every man, was perſwaded by them, and reſolved to undertake this enterpriſe. For this effect he went directly to *Martabane*, where in leſſe then two moneths and an half, he raiſed an Army of eight hundred thouſand men, wherein there were an hundred thouſand ſtrangers, and amongſt them a thouſand *Portugals*, which were commanded by *Diego Suarez d' Albergaria*, called *Galego* by way of nick-name. This *Diego Suarez* departed out of the Kingdome of *Portugal* in the year one thouſand five hundred thirty and eight, and went into the *Indies* with the Fleet of the Vice-Roy, *Don Garcia de Noronha*, in a Junck, whereof *Joano de Sepulveda* of the town of *Enora* was Captain; but in the time of which I ſpeak, namely in the yeare one thouſand five hundred forty and eight, he had of this King of *Bramaa* two hundred thouſand duckats a yeare, with the title of his brother, and Governor of the Kingdome of *Pegu*. The King departed then from the Town of *Martabane* the Sunday after Eaſter, being the ſeventh of *April* 1548. His Army, as I have already ſaid, was eight hundred thouſand men, whereof only forty thouſand were horſe, and all the reſt foot, threeſcore thouſand of them being Harquebuziers; there were moreover five thouſand warlike Elephants; with whom they fight in thoſe countries, and alſo a world of baggage, together with a thouſand pieces of Canon, which were drawn by a thouſand couple of Buffles and Rhinocerots; withall, there was a like number of yoke of oxen for the carriage of the victualls. Having taken the field then with theſe forces, he cauſed his Army to march ſtill on, untill at length he entred into the Territories of the King of *Siam*, where after five days he came to a fortreſſe called *Tapuran*, containing ſome two thouſand fires, commanded by a certain *Mogor*, a valiant man, and well verſt in matters of war. The King of *Bramaa* having inveſted it, gave three aſſaults to it in the open day, and laboured to ſcale it with a world of ladders which he had cauſed to be brought thither for that purpoſe; but not being able to carry it, in regard of the great reſiſtance of them within, he retreated for that time. But having by the counſell of *Diego Suarez*, who was Generall of the Camp, and by whom he was wholly governed, cauſed forty great pieces of Ordnance, whereof the moſt of them ſhot bullets of iron, to be planted againſt it, he fell to battering it with ſo much fury, as having made a breach in the wall twelve fathom wide, he aſſaulted it with ten thouſand ſtrangers, *Turks*, *Abyſſins*, *Moors*, *Malanares*, *Achems*, *Jaaos*, and *Malayos*; whereupon enſued ſo terrible a conflict between the one and the other, that in leſſe then half an hour, the beſieged, vvhich vvere ſix thouſand *Siamites*, were all cut in pieces, for not ſo much as one of them would render himſelf. As for the King of *Bramaa*, he loſt above three thouſand of his men, vvhereat he vvas inraged, as to be revenged for this loſſe he cauſed all the women to be put to the ſword, vvhich no doubt vvas a ſtrange kind of cruelty: After this execution, he drevv directly tovvards the Tovvn of *Sacotay*, vvhich vvas nine leagues beyond, deſiring to make himſelf maſter of that, as vvell as of the other. He arrived in the ſight of this Tovvn one Saturday about Sun-ſet, and incamped all along the river of *Lobran*, vvhich is one of the three that iſſue

one

out of the Lake of *Chiammay*, vvhereof I have formerly made mention, vvith a deſign to march thorough it directly to *Odiaa*, the Capitall City of the Empire of *Siamm*; for he had already been advertiſed that the King vvas there in perſon, and that he vvas making preparation to fight vvith him in the field; he no ſooner received this advice, but his Lords counſelled him to make no tarrying in any place, as vvell that he might not loſe time, as that he might keep himſelf from inſenſibly conſuming his forces, in lying before places vvhich he pretended to take, that vvere ſo vvell fortified, as they vvould coſt him dear if he amuſed himſelf about them, ſo that at his arrivall at *Odiaa* he vvould find the moſt part of his men vvanting, and his victualls quite ſpent. The King having approved of this advice, cauſed his Army to march avvay the next day thorough vvoods that vvere cut dovvn by threeſcore thouſand Pioners, vvhom he had ſent before to plane the paſſages and vvays; vvhich vvith much ado they performed. When he vvas come to a place, called *Tilan*, vvhich is beſides *Jamalan*, on the South-East Coaſt, neere to the Kingdome of *Quedea*, an hundred and forty leagues from *Malaca*, he took guides that were very well acquainted with the way, by whoſe means in nine daies journey he arrived in the ſight of *Odiaa*, where he pitched his Camp, which he invironed with trenches and ſtrong Palliſadoes.

§. 2. During the firſt five daies that the King of *Bramaa* had been before the City of *Odiaa*, he had beſtowed labour and pains enough, as well in making of trenches and Palliſadoes, as in providing all things neceſſary for this ſiege, in all which time the beſieged never offered to ſtir, whereof *Diego Suarez*, the Marſhall of the Camp being aware, as alſo of the little reckoning which the *Siamites* made of ſo great a power as was there aſſembled, and not knowing whereunto he ſhould attribute the cauſe of it, he reſolved to execute the deſign for which he came, to which effect, of the moſt part of the men which he had under his command, he made two ſeparated Squadrons, in each of which there were ſix battalions of ſix thouſand a piece. After this manner he marched in battell array, at the ſound of many inſtruments, towards the two points which the City made on the South-ſide, becauſe the entrance there ſeemed more facile to him then any other where. So upon the nineteenth day of *June*, in the year one thouſand five hundred forty and eight, an hour before day, all theſe men of war, having ſet up above a thouſand ladders againſt the walls, endeavoured to mount up on them; but the beſieged oppoſed them ſo valiantly, that in leſſe then half an hour there remained dead on the place above ten thouſand on either part. In the mean time the King, who incouraged his ſouldiers, ſeeing the ill ſucceſſe of this fight, commanded theſe to retreat, and then made the wall to be aſſaulted afreſh, making uſe for that effect of five thouſand Elephants of war which he had brought thither, and divided into twenty troops, of two hundred and fifty apiece, upon whom there were twenty thouſand *Moors* and *Chalems*, choice men, and that had double pay. The wall then was aſſaulted by theſe forces with ſo terrible an impetuoſity, as I want words to expreſſe it. For whereas all the Elephants carried wooden Caſtles on their backs, from whence they ſhot with muskets, braſſe culverins, and a great number of harquzes a crock, each of them ten or twelve ſpans long, theſe guns made ſuch an havock of the beſieged, that in leſſe then a quarter of an hour the moſt of them were beaten down; the Elephants withall ſetting their trunks to the target fences, which ſerved as battlements, and wherewith they within defended themſelves, tore them down in ſuch ſort, as not one of them remained entire, ſo that by this means the wall was abandoned of all defence, no man daring to ſhew himſelf above. In this ſort was the entry into the City very eaſie to the Aſſailants, who being invited by ſo good ſucceſſe to make their profit of ſo favourable an occaſion, ſet up their ladders again which they had quitted, and mounting up by them to the top of the wall, with a world of cries and acclamations, they planted thereon in ſign of victory a number of Banners and Enſigns. Now becauſe the *Turks* deſired to have therein a better ſhare then the reſt, they beſought the King to do them ſo much favour as to give them the vantguard, which the King eaſily granted them, and that by the counſell of *Diego Suarez*, who deſired nothing more then to ſee their number leſſened, always gave them the moſt dangerous imployments. They in the mean time extraordinarily contented, and proud to ſee themſelves preferred before ſo many other Nations as were in the Camp, reſolved to come off with honor from this ſervice which they had undertaken. For which purpoſe

poſe having formed a Squadron of twelve hundred men, wherein ſome *Abyſſins* and *Janizaries* were compriſed, they mounted with great cries by thoſe ladders up to the top of the wall, which as I have declared, was at that time in the power of the King of *Bramaas* people. Theſe *Turks* then, whither more raſh, or more infortunate then the reſt, ſliding down by a pane of the wall, deſcended thorough a bullwork into a place which was below, with an intent to open a gate, and give an entrance unto the King, to the end they might rightly boaſt, that they all alone had delivered to him the Capitall City of the Kingdome of *Siam*, and ſo might gain the recompence vvhich they might well expect for ſo brave an action; for the King had before promiſed to give unto whomſoever ſhould deliver up the City unto him, a thouſand biſſes of gold, which in value are five hundred thouſand duckats of our money. Theſe *Turks* being gotten down, as I have ſaid, laboured to break open a gate with two rammes which they had brought with them for that purpoſe; but as they were occupied about it, upon a confidence that they alone ſhould gain the thouſand biſſes of gold, which the King had promiſed to whomſoever ſhould open him the gates, they ſaw themſelves ſuddainly charged by three thouſand *Jaos*, all reſolute ſouldiers, who fell upon them with ſuch fury, as little more then a quarter of an hour, there was not ſo much as one *Turk* left alive in the place; wherewith not contented, they mounted up immediately to the top of the wall with a wonderfull courage, and ſo fleſht as they were, and covered over with the bloud of the *Turks*, whom they had newly cut in pieces, they ſet upon the *Bramaas* men which they found there, and fought with them ſo valiantly, that they durſt not make head againſt them, ſo that moſt of them were there ſlain, and the reſt tumbled down over the vvall. The King of *Bramaa* redoubling his courage more then before, would not for all that give over this aſſault, but contrarily reſolved to undertake it anew, ſo as imagining that thoſe Elephants alone would be able to give him an entry into the City, he cauſed them once again to approach unto the wall. At the noyſe hereof, *Oyaa Paſſilico*, Captain Generall of the City, ran in all haſt to this part of the wall, accompanied with fifteen thouſand men, whereof the moſt part were *Luzons*, *Bornous*, and *Champaas*, with ſome *Menancabos* among, and cauſed the gate to be preſently opened, thorough which the *Bramaa* pretended to enter, and then ſent him word, that whereas he was given to underſtand how his Highneſſe had promiſed to give a thouſand biſſes of gold to whomſoever ſhould open him the gates, that ſo he might thereby enter into the City, he had now performed it, ſo that he might enter if he would, provided that like a great King as he was, he would make good his word, and ſend him the thouſand biſſes of gold which he ſtayed there to receive. The King of *Bramaa* having received this jeer, would not vouchſafe to return an anſwer, thereby to ſhew his contempt of *Oyaa Paſſilico*; but inſtantly he commanded the City to be aſſaulted, which was preſently executed with a great deal of fury; for the fight became ſo terrible, as it was a dreadfull thing to behold, the rather for that the violence of it laſted above three whole hours, during the which time the gate vvas tvvice forced open, and twice the Aſſailants got an entrance into the City, which the King of *Siam* no ſooner perceived, and that all vvas in danger to be loſt, but he ran ſpeedily to oppoſe them vvith his followvers, vvhich vvere about thirty thouſand in number, and the beſt ſouldiers that were in all the City; whereupon the conflict grew much better then before, and continued half an hour and better, during the which I do not know what paſt, nor can ſay any other thing, ſave that we ſavv ſtreams of bloud running every vvhere, and the ayr all of a light fire; there vvas alſo on either part ſuch a tumult and noyſe, as one would have ſaid the earth had been tottering; for it was a moſt dreadfull thing to hear the diſcord and jarring of thoſe barbarous inſtruments, as bells, drums, and trumpets, intermingled with the noyſe of the great Ordnance and ſmaller ſhot, and the dreadfull yelling of ſix thouſand Elephants, whence enſued ſo great a terror, that it took from them that heard it both courage and ſenſe; withall, that place at the City gate, whereof the *Bramaa* had been Maſter, was all covered over with bodies drowned in bloud, a ſpectacle ſo horrible, that the very ſight of it put us almoſt beſides our ſelves. *Diego Suarez* then, ſeeing their forces quite repulſed out of the City, the moſt part of the Elephants hurt, and the reſt ſo ſcared with the noyſe of the great Ordnance, as it was impoſſible to make them return

unto the vvall; as alſo that the beſt men of thoſe that had fought at the gate were ſlain, and that the Sun was almoſt down, came to the King, and counſelled him to ſound a retreat, whereunto the King yeelded, though much againſt his will, becauſe he obſerved, that both he and the moſt part of the *Portugals* were wounded, but it was with a purpoſe to returne to the ſame enterpriſe againe the next morning.

§. 2. The King being retired to his quarter, found himſelf wounded with the ſhot of an arrow which he received in that daies conflict, and which he felt not untill then, by reaſon of the heat of the fight. This accident hindered the executing of the reſolution he had taken to give another aſſault to the City the next day; for he was conſtrained to keep his bed twelve daies together, but at ſeventeen days end, when he was fully cured of his hurt, he undertook again the proſecution of his deſign, and to effect that which he had ſo reſolved upon, namely, not to raiſe his ſiege from before the City untill he had made himſelf Maſter of it, though it coſt him both his life and his whole State. He gave then a ſecond aſſault unto the City, which proved like unto the former, for he loſt a vvorld of men in it, ſo that he was forced to retreat; but his wilfullneſſe was ſuch, as nothing daunted with the great ſlaughter of his men, he gave five aſſaults more to it in the open day, wherein he made uſe of many warlike ſtratagems, which a *Greek* Inginer daily invented for him; but whatſoever he could do, he was always fain to retire with loſſe, whereat he was greatly troubled. In the mean time, whereas the ſiege of this City had already indured four moneths and an half, he commanded a generall muſter of his ſouldiers to be made, and he found that an hundred and forty thouſand of them were wanting. Whereupon ſeeing to what eſtate he was reduced, for the putting of an end to the buſineſs, he reſolved to aſſault the City again with another nevv invention, and this aſſault was the eighth he had already given to it, during the ſiege, which he enterpriſed by the Councell of war, and that under the favour of the night; for they alledged unto him, that darkneſſe would make the aſſault leſs dangerous, and the ſcaling of the walls more facile. This reſolution taken, he inſtantly commanded all preparations neceſſary for this deſign to be made, ſo that in ſeventeen days they built up ſix and twenty Caſtles of ſtrong pieces of timber, whereof each one was ſet upon ſix and twenty wheels of iron, which facilitated the motion of ſo great a frame. Every Caſtle was fifty foot broad, threeſcore and five long, and five and twenty high, and all of them were reinforced with double beams, covered over with ſheets of lead: Moreover each of them was full of wood, and had faſtned to them before great iron chains, and that were very long in regard of the fire. Things thus prepared, one Friday about midnight, being very dark and rainy, the King of *Bramaa* cauſed three times one after another all the great Ordnance of the Camp to be diſcharged, which, as I remember, I have already ſaid, conſiſted of an hundred and threeſcore great pieces, vvhereof the moſt part ſhot iron bullets, beſides a many of Falconets, baſes, and muskets, to the number of fifteen hundred, ſo that from all theſe guns ſhot off together three times one after another, proceeded ſo horrible and dreadfull a noyſe, as I cannot think that any vvhere but in hell the like could be; for on whatſoever the imagination can be fixt, it cannot meet with any thing that may be rightly compared thereunto. At this time, it was not only the great pieces of Ordnance, whereof I have ſpoken before, and the ſmall ones too, which were ſhot off, but the like was done by all the guns which were both within the City, and without in the Camp, of what bigneſs ſoever they vvere, being at leaſt an hundred thouſand in all, for whereas there were, as I have already ſaid, threeſcore thouſand Harquebuziers in the King of *Bramaas* Army, there vvere thirty thouſand alſo in the City, beſides ſeven or eight thouſand Falconets and Baſes; ſo that to hear all theſe ſhot off continually for the ſpace of three hours together, and intermingled with thunder, lightning, and the tempeſt of the night, was, to ſay the truth, a thing which was never ſeen, read of, or imagined, and ſuch indeed as put every one almoſt beſides himſelf; for ſome fell flat on the ground, ſome crept behind walls, and others got into walls. During the greateſt violence of this horrible and furious tempeſt, they ſet fire on the ſix and twenty Caſtles which they had before brought cloſe to the walls, ſo that by the force of the wind, which vvas at that time very great, and

by

by the means of barrels of pitch that had been put into them, they fel a flaming in ſuch a ſtrange manner, as there was anew to be ſeen ſo dreadfull a picture of hell (for it is the only name that can be given it, becauſe there is nothing upon earth that may rightly be reſembled unto it) that if even thoſe which were without trembled at it, I leave you to think vvith hovv much more reaſon vvere they to fear it vvhom neceſſity conſtrained to abide the violence of it. Hereupon began a moſt bloudy conflict on either part, they without falling to ſcale the walls, and the beſieged, who took no leſs care for all things then they, valiantly to defend themſelves, ſo that no advantage was to be found on either ſide, but rather both of them were in a condition to be utterly deſtroyed; for whereas the one and other reinforced themſelves continually with freſh ſupplies, and that the King of *Bramaes* obſtinacy vvas ſuch, as he went himſelf in perſon amongſt his ſouldiers, incouraging them with his ſpeeches, and the great promiſes that he made them, the fight proceeded ſo far, and increaſed ſo mightily, as being unable to deliver the leaſt part of that which paſſed therein, I leave it to the underſtanding of every one to imagine what it might be. Four hours after midnight, the ſix and tvventy Caſtles being quite burned to the ground, with ſo terrible a blaze, as no man durſt come within a ſtones caſt of it, the King of *Bramaa* cauſed a retreat to be ſounded, at the requeſt of the Captains of the ſtrangers, for there vvere ſo many hurt men amongſt them, as all the day, and moſt part of the night following was imployed in dreſſing of them.

## CHAP. LXX.

*The King of* Bramaaes *raiſing his ſiege from before the City of* Odiaa; *with a deſcription of the Kingdome of* Siam; *and the fertility thereof.*

THe King of *Bramaa*, ſeeing that neither the great Ordnance vvherevvith he had battered the City, nor the aſſaults vvhich he had given unto it, nor his inventions of Caſtles, accompanied vvith ſo many artifices of fire, whereon he had ſo much relied, had ſerved him to any purpoſe for the execution of that which he had ſo mightily deſired, and being reſolved not to deſiſt from the enterpriſe vvhich he had begun, he called a Councell of War, vvherein all the Princes, Dukes, Lords, and Commanders that vvere in the Army were preſent. Having then propounded his deſire and intention unto them, he required them to give him their advice thereupon; immediately the affair being put into deliberation, and thoroughly debated on either part, they concluded in the end, that the King vvas by no means to raiſe this ſiege, in regard this enterpriſe was the moſt glorious, and moſt profitable of all that ever might be offered unto him; they repreſented moreover unto him the vvorld of treaſure that he had imployed therein, and that if he continued battering the City without deſiſting from his aſſaults, at length the enemies would be ſpent, becauſe it vvas apparent (as they vvere informed) that they vvere no longer able to vvithſtand the leaſt attempt that ſhould be made againſt them. The King being exceedingly contented, for that their opinions proved to be conformable to his deſire, teſtified the great ſatisfaction that he received thereby, ſo that he gave them many recompences in money, and vovved to them, that if they could take the City, he vvould confer upon them the greateſt commands of the Kingdome, vvith very honorable titles and revenues. This reſolution being taken, there was no further queſtion but of conſidering in vvhat manner the buſineſſe ſhould be carried; whereupon by the counſell of *Diego Suarez*, and of the Ingineer, it was concluded, that vvith bavins and green turfe a kind of Platform ſhould be erected higher then the vvalls, and that thereon ſhould be mounted good ſtore of great Ordnance, wherewith the principall fortifications of the City ſhould be battered, ſince that in them alone conſiſted all the enemies defence. Order then vvas preſently given for all that vvas judged neceſſary thereunto, and the threeſcore thouſand Pioners vvhich vvere in the Camp vvere imployed about it, vvho in tvvelve days brought the Fort or Platform into the eſtate vvhich the King deſired. There vvere already planted on it then forty pieces of Canon for the battering of the City the day enſuing, vvhenas a Poſt arrived vvith Letters to the King, vvhereby he vvas advertiſed, *That the* Zemindoo *being riſen up in the King-*

*name of* Pegu, *had cut fifteen thouſand* Bramanes *there in pieces, and had withall ſeized on the principall places of the country.* At theſe news the King was ſo troubled, that without further delay he raiſed the ſiege, and imbarqued himſelf on a river, called *Pazaran*, where he ſtayed but that night, and the day following, which he imployed in retiring his great Ordnance and ammunition. Then having ſet fire on all the Palliſadoes, and lodgings of the Camp, he parted away one Tueſday, the fifteenth day of *October*, in the year a thouſand five hundred forty and eight, for to go to the Town of *Martabano*. Having uſed all poſſible ſpeed in his voyage, at ſeventeen days end he came thither, and there was amply informed by the *Chalegemim*, his Captain of all the *Zemindoes* proceedings, in making himſelf King, and ſeizing on his treaſure; by killing fifteen thouſand *Bramanes*, and that in divers places he had lodged five hundred thouſand men, with an intention to ſtop his paſſage into the Kingdome. This news very much perplexed the King of *Bramaa*, ſo that he fell to thinking with himſelf what courſe he ſhould take for the remedying of ſo great a miſchief as he was threatned with: In the end he reſolved to tarry a while at *Martabano*, to attend ſome of his forces that were ſtill behind, and then to go and fight a battell with his enemy; but it was his ill luck, that in the ſpace of fourteen days only which he abode there, of four hundred thouſand men which he had, fifty thouſand quitted him: For whereas they were all *Pegues*, and conſequently deſirous to ſhake off the *Bramanes* yoke, they thought it beſt to ſide with the new King the *Zemindoe*, who was a *Pegu* as well as they; and they were the rather induced thereunto, by underſtanding, that this Prince was of an eminent condition, liberall, and ſo affable to every one, that he thereby won moſt men to be of his party. In the mean time the King of *Bramaa*, fearing leſt the defection of his ſouldiers ſhould daily more and more increaſe, was adviſed by his Councell to ſtay no longer there, in regard the longer he ſhould tarry, the more his forces would diminiſh, for that a great part of his Army was *Pegues*, which were not likely to be very faithfull unto him. This counſell was approved of by the King, who preſently marched away towards *Pegu*, neer unto which he was no ſooner arrived, but he was certified that the *Zemindoe*, being advertiſed of his coming, was attending ready to receive him. So theſe two Kings being in the view of one another, incamped in a great Plaine, ſome two leagues from the City of *Pegu*, the *Zemindoe* with ſix hundred thouſand men, and the *Bramaa* with three hundred and fifty thouſand. The next day theſe two Armies being put into battell array, came to joyn together one Friday the ſixteenth of *November*, the ſame year, a thouſand five hundred forty and eight. It was about ſix of the clock in the morning when firſt they began their incounter, which was performed with ſo much violence, as a generall defeat enſued thereupon, yet fought they with an invincible courage on either part; but the *Zemindoe* had the worſe, for in leſſe then three hours his whole Army was routed, with the ſlaughter of three hundred thouſand of his men, ſo that in this extremity he was forced to ſave himſelf only with ſix horſe in a fortreſs, called *Batteler*, where he ſtayed but one hour, during the which, he furniſhed himſelf with a little Veſſell, wherein he fled the night enſuing up the river to *Cedaa*. Let us leave him now flying, untill we ſhall come to him again whenas time ſhall ſerve, and return to the King of *Bramaa*, who exceedingly contented with the victory which he had gotten, marched the next morning againſt the City of *Pegu*; where as ſoon as he arrived, the inhabitants tendred themſelves unto him, on condition to have their lives and goods ſaved. Whereupon he took order for the dreſſing of them that were hurt; as for thoſe that he loſt in this battell, they were found to be threeſcore thouſand in number, amongſt the which were two hundred and fourſcore *Portugals*, all the reſt of them being grievouſly wounded.

§. 2. Having already intreated of the ſucceſſe which the King of *Bramaas* voyage had in the kingdom of *Siam*, and of the rebellion of the Kingdom of *Pegu*, me thinks it will not be amiſſe for me to ſpeak here ſuccinctly of the ſcituation, extent, abundance, riches, and fertility which I ſaw in this kingdom of *Siam*, and in this Empire of *Sornau*, to ſhew

conqueſt thereof would have been far more utile unto us, then all the eſtates ow we have in the *India's*, and that we might obtain it with a great deal leſſe charge.

charge. This kingdom, as may be ſeen in the Map, is ſeven hundred leagues in length, and a hundred and threeſcore in bredth; the moſt part of it conſiſts in great plaines, where are a world of corn grounds, and rivers of freſh water, by reaſon whereof the Country is exceeding fertile, and abundantly ſtored with cattell and victualls. In the moſt eminent parts of it are thick Foreſts of *Angelin* wood, whereof thouſands of ſhips might be made; there are alſo many mines of Silver, Iron, Steel, Lead, Tin, Salpetre, and Brimſtone; likewiſe great abundance of Silk, Aloes, Benjamin, Lacre, Indico, Cotton wooll, Rubies, Saphires, Ivory and gold; There is moreover in the woods marvailous ſtore of Brazill and Ebony, wherewith an hundred Juncks are every year laden, to be tranſported to *China*, *Hainan*, the *Lequios*, *Camboya* and *Campbaa*; beſides Wax, Honey, and Sugar, which divers places there do yeeld very plentifully. The Kings yearly revenue is ordinarily twelve millions of gold, over and above the preſents which the great Lords make him, that comes to a great matter. In the juriſdiction of his territories there are ſix and twenty hundred populations, which they call *Predon*, as cities and towns amongſt us, beſides villages and ſmall hamlets, whereof I have no reckoning. The moſt part of thoſe populations have no other fortifications or walls, then paliſadoes of wood, ſo that it would be eaſie for any that ſhould attaque them to make themſelves maſters thereof; the rather for that the inhabitants of thoſe places are naturally effeminate, and deſtitute of arms offenſive and defenſive. This coaſt of this kingdom joyns upon the two North and South Seas; on that of the *Indians* by *Junçale* and *Tanaçarim*, and on that of *China* by *Monpolocata*, *Cuy*, *Lugor*, *Chinsabu*, and *Berdio*. The capitall City of all this Empire is *Odiaa*, whereof I have ſpoken heretofore; it is fortified with walls of brick and mortar, and contains, according to ſome, foure hundred thouſand fires, whereof an hundred thouſand are ſtrangers of divers countries of the world: for whereas the country is very rich of it ſelf, and of great traffick, there paſſes not a yeare whereunto from the Provinces and Iſlands of *Iaoa*, *Bale*, *Madoura*, *Angemio*, *Borneo*, and *Solor*, there ſailes at the leaſt a thouſand Juncks, beſides other ſmaller veſſells wherewith all the rivers and all the harbors are full. The King naturally is no way given to tyranny. The cuſtoms of all the Kingdome are charitably deſtinated for the maintenance of certain *Pagodes*, where the duties that are paid are very eaſie; for whereas the religious men are forbidden to trade with money, they take no more of Merchants then what they will give them out of almes. There are in this Country twelve Sects of Gentiles, as in the Kingdome of *Pegu*; and the King for a ſoveraigne title cauſeth himſelf to be called *Prechau Salim*, which in our tongue ſignifies, *A holy member of God*. He ſhewes not himſelf to the people ſave only twice in the year, but then with ſo much riches and majeſty, as he hath power and greatneſſe, and yet for all this that I ſay, he leſs not to acknowledge himſelf the vaſſall and tributarie to the King of *China*, to the end that by means thereof his ſubjects Juncks may be admitted into the port of *Combay*, where ordinarily they exerciſe their commerce. There is alſo in this Kingdome a great quantity of Pepper, Ginger, Cinamon, Camphire, Allume, Caſſia, Tamarinds and Cardamon; ſo as one may truly affirm that, which I have often heard ſay in thoſe parts, namely, that this Kingdom is one of the beſt countries in the world, and eaſier to be ſubdued then any other Province, how little ſoever. I could here report likewiſe many more particularities of things which I have ſeen only in the city of *Odiaa*, but I am not minded to make mention of them, that I may not beget in them that ſhall read this the ſame grief which I have for the loſſe which we made of it through our ſins, and the gain we might make in conquering this Kingdom.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXI.

*A continuation of that which happened in the Kingdome of* Pegu, *as well during the life, as after the death of the King of* Bramaa.

§. 1. TO return now unto the hiſtory which heretofore I have left, you muſt know, that after the King of *Bramaa* had obtained that memorable victory neer to *Pegu*, as I have declared heretofore, by means whereof he remained peaceable poſſeſſor of the whole Kingdom, the firſt thing he imployed himſelf in was to puniſh the offendors, which had formerly rebelled; for which effect he cut off the heads of a great many of the Nobility, and Commanders, all whoſe eſtates were confiſcated to the Crown, which (according to report) amounted unto ten millions of gold, beſides plate and jewells, whereby that common Proverb, which was common in the mouths of all, was verified, namely, *That one mans offence coſt many men very deare.* Whileſt the King continued more and more in his cruelties, and injuſtice, which he executed againſt divers perſons during the ſpace of two moneths and a half, certain newes came to him, that the city of *Martabano* was revolted, with the death of two thouſand *Bramaas*, and that the *Chelegomin*, Governour of the ſame city, had declared himſelf for the *Xemindoo*. But that the cauſe of this revolt may be the better underſtood by ſuch as are curious, I will (before I proceed any further) ſuccinctly relate, how this *Xemindoo* had been of a religious order in *Pegu*, a man of noble extraction, and (as ſome affirmed) neer of kin to the precedent King, whom this *Bramaa* had put to death twelve years before, as I have already declared. This *Xemindoo* had formerly to name *Xoripam Xay*, a man of about forty five years of age, of a great underſtanding, and held by every one for a Saint: he was withall very wel verſt in the Laws of their Sects & falſe Religion, and had many excellent parts, which rendered him ſo agreeable unto all that heard him preach, as he was no ſooner in the Pulpit, but all the aſſiſtants proſtrated themſelves on the ground, ſaying at every word that he uttered, *Aſſuredly God ſpeaks in thee.* This *Xemindoo*, ſeeing himſelf then in ſuch great credit with the people, ſpurred on by the generoſity of his nature, and the occaſion which was then ſo favourable unto him, reſolved to try his fortune, and ſee to what degree it might arrive. To this end, at ſuch time as the King of *Bramaa* was fallen upon the kingdom of *Siam*, and had laid ſiege to the city of *Odiaa*, the *Xemindoo* preaching in the temple of *Conquiay* at *Pegu*, which is as it were the Cathedrall of all the reſt, where there was a very great aſſembly of people, he diſcourſed at large of the loſſe of this Kingdom, of the death of their lawfull King, as alſo of the great extortions, cruell puniſhments, and many other miſchiefs which the *Bramaas* had done to their Nation; with ſo many inſolencies, and with ſo many offences againſt God, as even the very houſes which had been founded by the charity of good people, to ſerve for Temples wherein the Divine Word might be preached, were all deſolated and demoliſhed; or if any were found ſtill ſtanding, they were made uſe of, either for ſtables, lay-ſtalls, or other ſuch places accuſtomed to lay filth or dung in. Theſe, and many other ſuch like things, which the *Xemindoo* delivered, accompanied with many ſighs and tears, made ſo great an impreſſion in the minds of the people, as from thenceforward they acknowledged him for their lawfull King, and ſwore allegeance unto him; ſo that inſtead of calling him, as they did before, *Xoripam Xay*, they named him *Xemindoo*, as a ſoveraigne title which they gave him above all others. Seeing himſelf raiſed then to the dignity of King, the firſt thing during the heat and fury of this people, was to go to the King of *Bramaas* palace, where having found five thouſand *Bramaas*, he cut them all in pieces, not ſparing the life of one of them; the like did he afterwards to all the reſt of them that were abiding in the moſt important places of the State, and withall he ſeized on the Kings treaſure, which was not ſmall. In this manner he ſlew all the *Bramaas* that were in the Kingdom, which were fifteen thouſand, beſides the women of that Nation of what age ſoever, and ſeized on the places where they reſided, which were inſtantly demoliſhed; ſo that in the ſpace of three and twenty dayes onely he became abſolute poſſeſſor of the Kingdom, and prepared a great Army to fight with the King of *Bramaa*, if he ſhould chance to return upon the bruit of this rebellion, as indeed he fought

fought with him to his great damage, being defeated by him, as I have heretofore declared. And thus having methinks ſaid enough for the intelligence of that which I am to recount, I will come again to my firſt diſcourſe. This King of *Bramaa* being advertiſed of the revolt of the Town of *Martabano*, and of the death of thoſe two thouſand *Bramaaes*, gave order immediately to all the Lords of the Kingdome for their repair unto him with as many men as they could levy, and that within the term of fifteen daies at the furtheſt, in regard the preſent neceſſity would not indure a longer delay. This done, he parted the day following with a ſmall train from the City of *Pegu*, to give example to others to do the like, and wept and lodged at a Town called *Monchan*, with an intention to tarry there thoſe fifteen days he had limited the Lords to come unto him. Now whenas ſix or ſeven of them were already paſt, he was advertiſed that *Xemin de Satan*, Governor of a Town ſo named, had ſecretly ſent a great ſum of gold to the *Zemindoo*, and had withall done him homage for the ſame Town where he commanded. This news ſomewhat troubled the King of *Bramaa*, who deviſing with himſelf of the means which he might uſe to meet with the miſchief that threatned him, he ſent for *Xemin de Satan*, who was then in the ſaid Town of his Government, with a purpoſe to cut off his head; but he, betaking himſelf to his bed, and making ſhew of being ſick, anſwered, that he would wait upon the King as ſoon as he was able to riſe. Now in regard he found himſelf to be guilty, and miſdoubting the cauſe wherefore he was ſent for, he communicated this affair to a dozen of his kinſmen that were there preſent with him, who all of them concluded together, how ſince there was no better way to ſave himſelf then in killing the King, that without further delay it was to be put in execution, ſo that all of them offering ſecretly to aſſiſt him in this enterpriſe, they ſpeedily aſſembled all their Confidents, without declaring unto them at firſt the occaſion wherefore they did it; and withall, drawing others unto them with many fair promiſes, they made up of all being joyned together a company of ſix hundred men. Whereupon being informed that the King was lodged in a certain *Pagode*, they fell upon it with great violence, and fortune was ſo favourable unto them that finding him almoſt alone in his chamber, they ſlew him without incurring any danger. That done, they retired into an outward Court, where the Kings Guard having had ſome notice of this treaſon, ſet upon them, and the conflict was ſo hot between them, that in half an hours ſpace, or thereabout, eight hundred men lay dead in the place, whereof the moſt part were *Bramaaes*. After this *Xemin de Satan* making away with four hundred of his followers, went to a place of a large extent, called *Pontel*, whither all thoſe of the country round about reſorted unto him, who being advertiſed of the death of the King of *Bramaa*, whom they mortally hated, made up a body of five thouſand men, and went to ſeek out the three thouſand *Bramaaes* which the King had brought thither with him: And foraſmuch as theſe ſame were diſperſed in ſeverall places, they were all of them eaſily ſlain, not ſcarce ſo much as one eſcaping. With them alſo were killed fourſcore of three hundred *Portugals* that *Diego Suarez* had with him, who, together with all the reſt which remained with their lives ſaved, rendred themſelves upon compoſition, and were received to mercy, upon condition that for the future they ſhould faithfully ſerve *Xemin de Satan*, as their proper King, which they eaſily promiſed to do. Nine days after this mutiny, the Rebell ſeeing himſelf favoured by fortune, and ſuch a multitude of people at his devotion, which were come to him out of this Province, to the number of thirty thouſand men, cauſed himſelf to be declared King of *Pegu*, promiſing great recompences to ſuch as ſhould follow and accompany him, untill he had wholly gained the Kingdome, and driven the *Bramaaes* out of the country. With this deſign he retired to a fortreſſe called *Tagalaa*, and reſolved to fortifie himſelf there out of the feare he was in of the forces which were to come to the ſuccour of the deceaſed King, thinking to find him alive, having been advertiſed that many were already ſet forth from the City of *Pegu* for that purpoſe. Now of thoſe *Bramaaes* which *Xemin de Satan* had ſlain, one by chance eſcaped, and caſt himſelf all wounded as he was into the river, and ſwimming over, never left travelling all that night, and the day following

lovving, for fear of the *Pegues*, untill he arrived at a place, called *Contaſwem*, where he incountred with the *Chaunigrem*, the deceaſed Kings Foſter-brother, vvho vvas incamped there vvith an army of an hundred and fourſcore thouſand men, vvhereof there vvere but only thirty thouſand *Bramaaes*, all the reſt *Pegues*; finding him then upon the point of parting from thence, in regard of the heat that vvould be vvithin tvvo hours after, he acquainted him vvith the death of the King, and all that had paſt beſides. Now though this news greatly troubled the *Chaunigrem*, yet he diſſembled it for the preſent with ſo much courage and prudence, as not one of his followers perceived any alteration in him: But contrarily, putting on a rich habit of Carnation Sattin, imbroidered with gold, and a chain of precious ſtones about his neck, he cauſed all the Lords and Commanders of his Army to aſſemble before him, and then ſpeaking to them with the ſemblance of a joyfull man; *Gentlemen*, ſaid he, *this fellow which you ſaw come to me but now in ſuch haſt, hath brought me this Letter, which I have here in my hand, from the King, my Lord and yours; and although by the contents thereof he ſeemeth to blame us for our careleſſneſs in lingering thus, yet I hope e're long to render him ſuch an accompt of it, as his Highneſſe ſhall give us all thanks for the ſervice we have done him. By this letter too he certifies me, that he hath very certaine intelligence, how the* Zemindoo *hath raiſed an army, with an intent to fall upon the Towns of* Coſmin *and* Dalaa *and to gain all along the rivers of* Digon *and* Meidoo, *the whole Province of* Danapluu *even to* Anſedaa; *wherefore he hath expreſſly enjoyned me, that as ſoon as poſſibly I may, I put into thoſe places (as the moſt important) ſuch forces as ſhall be able to reſiſt the enemy; and that I take heed nothing be loſt through my negligence, becauſe in that caſe he will admit of no excuſe. This being ſo, it ſeems to me very important and neceſſary for his ſervice, that you my Lord* Xemimbrum *go inſtantly without all delay, and put your ſelf with your forces into the Town of* Dalaa; *and your brother-in-law* Batchaa Quem *into that of* Digon, *with his fifteen thouſand men; as for Colonel* Gipray *and* Monpocaſſer, *they ſhall go with their thirty thouſand ſouldiers into* Anſedaa, *and* Danapluu, *and* Ciguamcan, *with twenty thouſand men ſhall march along to* Xaraa, *and ſo to* Malacou; *moreover* Quiay Brazagaran, *with his brethren and kinſmen, ſhall go for Generall of the Frontier, with an Army of fifty thouſand men, to the end that aſſiſted with theſe forces, he may in perſon give order whereſoever need ſhall be. Behold, what the King hath written to me, whereof I pray you let us make an agreement, and all ſign it together, for it is no reaſon that my head ſhould anſwer for your want of care, and imprudence.* His Commanders preſently obeyed him, and without longer tarrying there, each of them went ſtraight to the place, whither his Commiſſion directed him. The *Chaunigrem*, by means of this ſo cunning and well diſſembled a ſleight, rid himſelf in leſſe then three hours of all the hundred and fifty thouſand *Pegues*, who he knew, if once they came to hear of the Kings death, would fall upon the thirty thouſand *Bramaaes* that he had there with him, and not leave one of them alive. This done, as ſoon as it was night, turning back to the City, which was not above a league from thence, he ſeized with all ſpeed on the deceaſed Kings Treaſure, which amounted, according to report, unto above thirty millions of gold, beſides jewells that were not to be eſtimated; and withall, he ſaved all the *Bramaaes* wives and children, and took as many arms and as much ammunition as he could carry away. After this, he ſet fire on all that was in the Magazines, cauſed all the leſſer Ordnance to be rived aſunder, and the greater, which he could not uſe ſo, to be cloyed. Furthermore, he made ſeven thouſand Elephants that were in the country to be killed, reſerving only two thouſand for the carriage of his treaſure, ammunition, and baggage. As for all the reſt, it was conſumed with fire, ſo that neither in the Palace, where were chambers all ſecked with gold, nor in the Magazines and Arſenalls, nor on the river, where were two thouſand rowing Veſſells, remained ought that was not reduced to aſhes. After this execution, he departed in all haſt, an hour before day, and drew directly towards *Tangou*, which was his own country, from whence he came ſome fourteen years before to the conqueſt of the Kingdome of *Pegu*, which in the heart of the country was diſtant from thence about an hundred and threeſcore leagues. Now whereas fear commonly adds wings to the feet, it made him march with ſuch

ſpeed,

ſpeed, as he and his arrived in fifteen days at the place whither they were a going. In the mean time, whereas the *Chaumigrem* had cunningly ſent away the hundred and fifty thouſand *Pegues*, as I have declared already, it happened that two days after they underſtood how the King of *Bramaa* was dead: Now in regard they were mortall enemies of that Nation, ſixſcore thouſand of them in one great body turned back in haſt for to go in queſt of the thirty thouſand *Bramaas*, but when they arrived at the City, they found that they were gone from thence three days before; this making them to follow in purſuit of them with all the ſpeed that poſſibly they could, they came to a place, called *Guinacemtel*, ſome forty leagues from the City whence they came; there they were informed, that it was five days ſince they paſſed by, ſo that diſpairing of being able to execute the deſign which they had of cutting them in pieces, they returned back to the place from whence they were parted, where they conſulted amongſt themſelves about that which they were to do and reſolved in the end, ſince they had no lawfull King, and that the Land was quite freed of the *Bramaas*, to go to *Xenim de Satan*, as incontinently they did, who received them, not only with a great deal of joy and good entertainment, but promiſed them mighty matters, and much honor, by raiſing them to the principall commands of the Kingdome, as ſoon as time ſhould ſerve, and that he was more peaceably ſetled. Thereupon he went directly to the City of *Pegu*, where he was received with the magnificence of a King, and for ſuch crowned in the Temple of *Conquiay*, which is the chief of all the reſt.

## CHAP. LXXII.

*That which arrived in the time of* Xenim de Satan, *and an abominable caſe that befell to* Diego Suarez; *together with the* Xemindoos *expedition againſt* Xenim de Satan; *and that which inſued thereupon.*

THree moneths and nine dayes had this Tyrant *Xenim de Satan* already peaceably poſſeſſed the city and kingdome of *Pegu*, whenas without fearing any thing, or being contradicted by none, he fell to diſtributing the treaſure and revenues of the Crown to whomſoever he pleaſed, whereupon great ſcandalls inſued, which were the cauſe of divers quarrells and diviſions amongſt many of the Lords, who for this cauſe, and the injuſtice which this tyrant did them, retyred into ſeverall foraigne Countries and Kingdoms. Some alſo went and ſided with the *Xemindoo*, who began at that time to be in reputation again: For after he had fled from the battell onely with ſix horſe, as I have declared heretofore; he got into the Kingdom of *Anſedaa*, where as well by the efficacy of his Sermons, as by the authority of his perſon, he won ſo many to his devotion, as aſſiſted by the favour and forces of thoſe Lords as adhered to him, he made up an army of threeſcore thouſand men, with which he marched to *Meidoo*, where he was very well received by thoſe of the Country. Now ſetting aſide what he did in thoſe parts, during the ſpace of foure moneths, that he abode there, I will in the mean time paſſe to a ſtrange accident which in a few dayes fell out in this city, that one may know what end the good fortune of the great *Diego Suarez* had, who had been Governour of this Kingdom of *Pegu*; and the recompence which the world is accuſtomed to make at laſt unto all ſuch as ſerve and truſt in it, under the ſemblance of a good countenance which ſhe ſhews them at firſt. The matter paſt in this ſort; There was in this city of *Pegu* a Merchant, called *Manbagoaa*, a rich man, and that of good reputation in the country: This ſame reſolved to marry a daughter of his to a young man, the ſon of a worſhipfull and very rich Merchant alſo, named *Manicaniandarim*, about that time that *Diego Suarez* was in the greateſt height of his fortune, and termed the Kings brother, and in dignity above all the Princes and Lords of the Kingdom. So the fathers of theſe young couple being agreed on this marriage, and of the dowry that was to be given, which by report was three hundred thouſand duckats; when as the day was come wherein the nuptialls were celebrated with a great deal of ſtate and magnificence, and honoured with the preſence of moſt of the gentlemen of chiefeſt quality in the city, it happened

that *Diego Suarez*, being come a little before Sun-set from the royall palace, with a great train both of horſe and foot, as his manner was to be alwayes well accompanied, paſſed by *Mambogoaas* door, where hearing the muſick and rejoycing that was in the houſe, asked what the matter was, whereunto anſwer being made him, that *Mambogoaa* had married his daughter, and that the wedding was kept there, he preſently cauſed the Elephant on which he was mounted to ſtay, and ſent one to tell the father of the bride, that he congratulated with him for this marriage, and wiſhed a long and happy life to the new married couple; to theſe words he added many others by way of complement, yea and made him many offers if he would make uſe of him; wherewith the old father of the bride finding himſelf ſo exceedingly honored, as not knowing how to acknowledge it, in regard the perſon who did him ſo much honor, was no leſſe then the King himſelf in greatneſſe and dignity, the deſire which he had to ſatisfie this obligation in part, if he could not wholly do it, made him go and take his daughter by the hand, accompanied with many Ladies of quality, and ſo leading her to the ſtreet door, where *Diego Suarez* was, he proſtrated himſelf on the ground with a great deal of reſpect, and with many complements after his manner, thanked him for the favour and honor that he had done him. Thereupon the new married bride, having taken from off her finger a rich ring, preſented it on her knees by her fathers expreſſe commandement, to *Diego Suarez*; but he that naturally was ſenſuall and laſcivious, inſtead of uſing civility, whereunto the Laws of generoſity and friendſhip obliged him, having taken the ring which the maid preſented unto him, he reached out his hand, and plucked her to him by force, ſaying, *God forbid that ſo fair a maid as you ſhould fall into any other hands but mine*; whereupon the poor old man ſeeing *Diego Suarez* hale his daughter ſo rudely, lifting up both his hands to heaven, with his knees on the ground, and tears in his eys, *My Lord*, ſaid he unto him. *I humbly beſeech thee for the love and reſpect of the great God, whom thou adoreſt, and which was conceived without any ſpot of ſin in the Virgins womb, as I confeſſe and believe, according to that which I have heard thereof, that thou wilt not forcibly take away my daughter; for if thou doeſt ſo, I ſhall aſſuredly die with griefe and diſpleaſure at it; but if thou deſire of me that I ſhould give thee her dowry, together with all that is in my houſe, and that I deliver up my ſelf unto thee for thy ſlave, I will inſtantly do it, provided thou wilt permit that her husband may poſſeſſe her, for I have no other good in the world but ſhe, nor will I have any other as long as I live.* Whereupon offering to lay hold on his daughter, *Diego Suarez* making no anſwer to him, turned himſelf about to the Captain of his guard, who was a Turk by Nation, and ſaid unto him, *kill this dog* The Turk preſently drew out his Scymitar to kill the poor old man, but he ſuddainly fled away, leaving his daughter with her hair all about her ears in *Diego Suarez* his hands. In the mean time the Bridegroom came running to this tumult, with his cheeks all bedeawed with tears, but he was ſcarcely arrived there, whenas theſe Barbarians ſlew him, and his Father too, with ſix or ſeven other of his kinſmen. Whileſt this paſt ſo, the women made ſuch fearfull cries in the houſe, as terrified all thoſe that heard them, ſo that even the earth and the ayr ſeemed to tremble at it, or to ſay better, they demanded vengeance of God for the little reſpect which was had to his divine juſtice, and for ſo great a violence as this was; and truly if I do not more amply report the particularities of ſo black and ſo abhominable an action, I deſire to be excuſed, in regard I paſſe them by for the honor of the *Portugal* Nation. Wherefore it ſhall ſuffice me to ſay, that this poor Maid ſeeing her ſelf upon the point to be forced, ſtrangled her ſelf with a ſtring that ſhe wore about her middle for a girdle, which ſhe choſe rather to do, then ſuffer this ſenſuall and bruitiſh man to carry her away with him by force; but he was therewith ſo diſpleaſed, as he was heard to ſay, that he repented him more for that he had not enjoyed her, then for uſing her in that ſort as he did. Now from the day of this abhorred act, till four years after, the good old man, the Father of the Bride, was never ſeen to go out of his houſe; but at length to give a greater demonſtration of his ſorrow, and to ſhew his extreme reſentment of the matter, he covered himſelf with an old tattered mat, and in that ſad equipage went up and downe, begging an alms of his very ſlaves,

never

never eating any thing, but lying all along naked, and his face fixed on the ground. Thus continued he in ſo ſad a manner of life, untill in the end he ſaw that the ſeaſon invited him to have recourſe unto juſtice, which he demanded in this ſort; perceiving that in the Kingdome there was another King, other Governors, and other Juriſdiction, alterations which time ordinarily produceth in every country, and in all kind of affairs, he went out of his houſe in the wretched faſhion he had ſo long uſed, having a big cord about his neck, and a white beard, reaching almoſt down to his girdle, and got him into the midſt of a great place, where ſtood a Temple called *Quiay Fantaren*, that is to ſay, *the God of the afflicted*; there he took the idoll from off the Altar, and holding it in his armes, he returned out of the Temple, to the ſaid great place, where having cried out aloud three times to draw the people together, as accordingly they came flocking in unto him, he ſaid with teares in his eys; *O ye people, ye people! who with a cleane and peaceable heart make profeſſion of the truth of this God of the afflicted, which you ſee here in my armes, come forth like lightning in a dark and rainy night, and joyn with me in crying ſo loud, that our cryes may pierce the heavens, to the end the pitifull ear of the Lord may be drawn to hear our heavy lamentations, and by them he may know the reaſon we have to demand juſtice againſt this accurſed ſtranger, as the moſt wicked man that ever was born into the world; for this abhominable wretch hath not been contented with ſpoiling us of our goods, but hath alſo diſhonored our families; wherefore whoſoever ſhall not with me accompany the God which I hold in my hands, and water with my tears, in deteſting ſo horrible a crime, let the gluttonous Serpent of the profound pit of ſmoke abridge his dayes miſerably, and tear his body in pieces at midnight.* This old mans words ſo mightily terrified the Aſſiſtants, and made ſo deep an impreſſion in their minds, that in a ſhort time fifty thouſand perſons aſſembled in that place, with ſo much fury and deſire of revenge, as was wonderfull to behold. Thus the number of the people ſtill more and more increaſing, they ran thronging ſtrait to the Kings Palace, with ſo horrible a noyſe, as ſtruck terror into all that heard them; In this diſorder, being arrived at the outward Court of the Palace, they cried out ſix or ſeven times with a dreadfull tone; *O King come out of the place wherein thou art ſhut up, to hearken to the voice of thy God, who demands juſtice of thee by the mouth of thy poor people.* At theſe cries the King put forth his head out of the window, and affrighted with ſo ſtrange an accident, would needs know of them what they would have? whereunto they all anſwered unanimouſly with ſuch loud cries, as ſeemed to pierce the heavens, *Juſtice, juſtice againſt a wicked infidell, who to ſpoil us of our goods hath killed our fathers, our children, our brothers, and our kinſmen.* The King having thereupon inquired of them who it was, *it is*, anſwered they, *an accurſed thief, participating with the works of the Serpent, who in the fields of delight abuſed the firſt man that God created. Is it poſſible*, ſaid he unto them, *that there ſhould be any ſuch thing as you tell me?* whereunto they all replied, *This ſame is the moſt accurſed man that ever was born on the earth, and is ſo out of his wicked nature and inclination, wherefore we all of us beſeech thee in the name of this God of the afflicted, that his veins may be as much emptied of his blood, as hell is filled with his wicked works.* At theſe words the King turning towards them that were about him, *What do you think hereof*, ſaid he unto them? *What am I to do? and how am I to carry my ſelf in ſo ſtrange and extraordinary a matter?* To which they all anſwered, *My Lord, if thou wilt not hearken to that which this God of the afflicted comes to demand of thee, it is to be feared that he will take care no longer to aid thee, and will refuſe to ſupport thee in thy dignity.* Then the King turning himſelf again to the multitude that were below in the Court, *bad them go to the place where the great Market was kept, and he would give order that the man whom they required ſhould be delivered unto them to be diſpoſed of at their pleaſure.* Whereupon having ſent for the *Chirea of juſtice*, who is as the Soveraign Superintendent thereof above all others, he commanded him to go and apprehend *Diogo Soarez*, and deliver him bound hand and foot to the people, that they might do juſtice upon him, for he feared if he did otherwiſe, that God would execute it upon him.

S. 2. The *Chirca* of Juſtice vvent immediately to *Diego Suarez* his houſe, and told him that the King had ſent for him; he in the mean time was ſo troubled to ſee the *Chirca* come for him, that he remained a pretty while not able to anſwer him, as a man that was always beſides himſelf, and had loſt his underſtanding; but at length being ſomewhat come to himſelf again; *He earneſtly deſired him to diſpenſe with him at this time for going with him, in regard of a great pain that he had in his head, and that in acknowledgement of ſo good an office, he would give him forty biſſes of gold.* Whereunto the *Chirca* replied, *The offer which thou makeſt me is too little for me to take upon me that great pain which thou ſayeſt thou haſt in thy head, wherefore thou muſt go along with me, either by fair means or by force, ſince thou obligeſt me to tell thee the truth.* *Diego Suarez* then, ſeeing that there was no means to excuſe him, would have taken along with him ſix or ſeven of his ſervants, and the *Chirca* not permitting it; *I muſt,* ſaid he unto him, *fulfill the Kings command, which is, that thou ſhalt come alone, and not with ſix or ſeven men, for the time is now paſt wherein thou wert wont to go ſo well accompanied, as I have oftentimes ſeen thee do; all thy ſupport is gone by the death of the Tyrant of* Bramaa, *who was the quill wherewith thou blowedſt up thy ſelf to an unſupportable pride, as is apparent by the wicked actions which thou haſt committed, which at this preſent accuſe thee before the juſtice of God.* This ſaid, he took him by the hand, and led him along with him, invironed with a guard of three hundred men, whereat we remained very much diſmayed. Thus marching from one ſtreet to another, he arrived in the end at the *Bazor*, which was a publike place where all kind of wares was ſold; but as he was going thither, he met by chance with *Balthazar Suarez* his ſon, who came from a Merchants houſe, whither his Father had ſent him that morning to receive ſome money that was owing to him. The Son, ſeeing his Father in this plight, alighted preſently from his horſe, and caſting himſelf at his feet; *What means this, my Lord,* ſaid he unto him with tears in his eys, *and whence comes it that you are led along in this ſort? Aſk it of my ſins,* anſwered Diego Suarez, *and they will tell thee, for I proteſt unto thee my Son, that in the caſe I am in, all things ſeem dreams unto me.* Thereupon imbracing one another, and mingling their tears together, they continued ſo, untill ſuch time as the *Chirca* commanded *Balthazar Suarez* to get him gone, which he would not do, being loth to part from his father, but the Miniſters of juſtice haled him away by force, and puſhed him ſo rudely, as he fell and broke his head, yea and withall they gave him many blows beſides, whereat his Father fell into a ſwoun. Being come again to himſelf, he craved a little water, which he had no ſooner taken, but lifting up his hands to heaven, he ſaid with tears in his eys, *Si iniquitates obſervaveris Domine, Domine quis ſuſtinebit? But, O Lord,* added he, *out of the great confidence I have in the infinite price of thy precious blood, which thou haſt ſhed for me upon the croſſe, I may ſay with more aſſurance, Miſericordias Domini in æternum cantabo.* Thus altogether deſolated as he was in this laſt affliction, when he was come in ſight of the place, whither the King had commanded him to be conducted, it is ſaid, that perceiving ſo many people, he remained ſo exceedingly diſmayed, that turning himſelf to a *Portugal*, who was permitted to accompany him, *Jeſus,* ſaid he unto him, *have all theſe accuſed me to the King?* whereunto the *Chirca* made him this anſwer, *It is no longer time for thee to think of this, for thou haſt wit enough to know, that the people are of ſo unruly a humour, that they always follow evill whereunto they are naturally inclined.* It is not that, replied *Diego Suarez* with tears in his eys, *for I know that if there be any unruline ſſe in them, it proceeds from my ſins. Thou ſeeſt thereby,* ſaid the *Chirca, that this is the ordinary recompence which the world is accuſtomed to give to them, who during their life, have loſt the memory of the divine juſtice, as thou haſt done, and God give thee the grace that in this little time thou haſt to live, thou mayeſt repent thee of the faults thou committed, which poſſibly may avail thee more then all the gold that thou leaveſt behind thee, for an inheritance to him, who per adventure is the cauſe of thy death.* Here *Diego Suarez* falling down on his knees, and lifting up his eyes to heaven, *O Lord Jeſus Chriſt,* cried he, *my true Redeemer, I beſeech thee by the pains which thou haſt*

*haſt ſuffered upon the Croſſe, to permit that the accuſation of theſe hundred thouſand hunger-ſtarved dogs againſt me, may ſerve to ſatisfie the chaſtiſement of thy divine juſtice in my behalf, to the end that the ineſtimable price which thou haſt imployed for the ſalvation of my ſoule, without any merit of mine, may not be unprofitable unto me.* This ſaid, he aſcended the ſtaires which led to the market place, and the *Portugal* that aſſiſted him, told mee, how at every ſtep he kiſſed the ground, and called upon the name of *IESUS*; at length when he was come to the top, the *Manbogoaa*, who held the Idoll in his armes, animating the people with great cries, ſaid unto them, *Whoſoever ſhall not for the honour of this God of the afflicted, whom I have here in my armes, ſtone this accurſed Serpent, let him for ever be miſerable, and let the braines of his children be conſumed in the midſt of the night, to the end that by the puniſhment of ſo great a ſinne, the righteous judgement of the Lord above may be juſtified in them.* He had no ſooner made an end of ſpeaking thus, but there fell ſo great a ſhowre of ſtones on *Diego Suarez*, as in leſſe then a quarter of an houre he was buried under them, and they that flung them at him, did it ſo indiſcreetly, as the moſt part of them hurt one another therewith. An houre after they drew forth the poore *Diego Suarez* from under the ſtones, and with another new tumult of cries and voices they tore him in pieces, with ſo much fury and hatred of the whole people in generall, as there was not he which did not believe that he did a charitable and holy work in giving a reward to the moſt mutinous amongſt thoſe, which dragged his members and entrailes up and downe the ſtreets. This execution done, the King willing to confiſcate his goods, ſent men to his houſe for that purpoſe, where the diſorder was ſo great, in regard of the extreme avarice which theſe hungry dogs had, they left not a tile unmoved; and becauſe they found not ſo much as they expected, they put all his ſlaves and ſervants to torture, with ſuch an exceſſe of cruelty, as eight and thirty of them remained dead in the place, amongſt which were ſeventeen *Portugals*, who bore the pain of a thing whereof they were not guilty. In all this ſpoile there were no more then ſix hundred biſſes of goſd found, which are in value three hundred thouſand duckats, beſides ſome pieces of rich houſhold-ſtuffe, but no precious ſtones, nor jewells at all, which perſwaded men that *Diego Suarez* had buried all the reſt; howſoever it could never be found out, notwithſtanding all the ſearch that was made for it, and yet it was verified by the judgement of ſome who had ſeene him in his proſperity, that he had in meanes above three millions of gold, according to the ſupputation of the country. Behold what was the end of the great *Diego Suarez*, whom fortune had ſo favoured in this Kingdome of *Pegu*, as ſhe had raiſed him up to the degree of the Kings Brother, the higheſt and moſt abſolute title of all others; and given him withall two hundred thouſand duckats yearely rent, with the charge of Generall of eight hundred thouſand men, and Soveraigne over all the other Governours or Vice-Royes of fourteene Kingdomes, which the King of *Bramas* had at that time in his poſſeſſion. But it is the ordinary courſe of the goods of this world, eſpecially of ſuch as are ill gotten, alwayes to ſerve for a way to diſgraces and misfortunes.

§.3. I return now to the *Xemindoo*, of whom I have not ſpoken a long time. Whereas that Tyrant and avaritious King *Xenim de Satan* gave daily new increaſes to the cruelties and tyrannies which he exerciſed againſt all ſorts of perſons, never ceaſing killing and robbing indifferently thoſe, who were thought to have money; nor ſparing any thing on which he could lay his hands, his rapines proceeded ſo far, as it was that in the ſpace of ſeven moneths only, wherin he was peaceable poſſeſſor of this Kingdom of *Pegu*, he put to death ſix thouſand very rich Merchants, beſides many ancient Lords of the Country, who by way of right of inheritance held their eſtates from the Crown. Theſe extortions rendered him ſo odious, as the moſt part of thoſe that were with him abandoned him to ſide with the *Xemindoo*, who had for him at that time the towns of *Digon*, *Meidoo*, *Dalaa*, and *Conlam*, even to the confines of *Xaraa*, from whence he parted in haſt to go and beſiege this Tyrant with an army of two hundred thouſand men, & five thouſand Elephants. When he was arrived at the city of *Pegu*, where *Xenim de Satan* then kept his Court, he inveſted it round about with paliſadoes and very ſtrong trenches, yea and gave ſome aſſaults to it, but he could not enter it ſo eaſily as he believed, in regard of the great reſiſtance he found from them within; wherefore judging it requiſite for him to alter his mind, being prudent as he was, he came very ſubtilly to a truce of twenty dayes with the Tyrant upon certain conditions, whereof the principall was, that if within the terme of thoſe twenty dayes he gave him a thouſand biſſes of gold, which are in value five hundred thouſand Duckats, he would deſiſt from the pretenſion and right which he had to this Kingdome; and all this he did (as I have already ſaid) cunningly, hoping by this means to bring him to his bow with leſſe perill. So the time of the truce beginning to run on, all things remained peaceable on either ſide, and the beſiegers fell to communicate with the beſieged. During this pacification every morning two houres before day, they of the *Xemindoos* Camp played after their manner upon divers ſorts of inſtruments very melodiouſly, at the ſound whereof all they of the city ran to the walls to ſee what the matter was. Whereupon thoſe inſtruments ceaſing to play, a Proclamation was made by a Prieſt, accounted by every man a holy perſonage, who ſaid theſe words with a very ſad voice, *O ye people, ye people! unto whom Nature hath given eares to hear, hearken to the voice of the holy Captain the* Xemindoo, *of whom God will make uſe for the reſtoring you to your liberty and former quiet; in order whereunto he admoniſheth you from* Quiay Nimandel, *the god of battells of the field* Vitau, *that none of you be ſo hardy as to lift up your hand againſt him, nor againſt this holy aſſembly which he hath made, out of a holy Zeal towards theſe people of* Pegu, *as brother, that he is, to the leaſt of all the poor: Otherwiſe whoſoever ſhall come againſt the army of theſe ſervants of God, or ſhall have the will to do them any harm, let him be accurſed for it, and as deformed and vile as the children of the night, who foaming with poyſon make horrible cries, and be delivered into the burning jawes of the dragon of diſcord, whom the true Lord of all the Gods hath curſed for ever; whereas contrarily, to thoſe, that ſhall be ſo happy as to obey this Proclamation, as his holy brethren and allies, ſhall be granted in this life a perpetuall peace, accompanied with a great deale of wealth and riches; and after their death their ſouls ſhall be no leſſe pure and agreeable to God, then thoſe of the Saints which goe dancing amidſt the beams of the Sun in the celeſtiall repoſe of the Lord Almighty.* This publication made, the muſick began to play again with a great

great noiſe as before, which made ſuch an impreſſion in the hearts of them that heard it, as in ſeven nights that it continued above threeſcore thouſand perſons went and rendred themſelves to the *Xemindoo*; for moſt of them which heard thoſe words gave as much credit thereunto, as if an Angell from heaven had ſpoken them. In the meane time the beſieged Tyrant, ſeeing that theſe ſecret Proclamations of the enemy were ſo prejudiciall unto him, as they could not chuſe but turn to his utter ruine, brake the truce at twelve dayes end, and deliberated with his Councell what he ſhould do, who adviſed him by no meins to ſuffer himſelf to remaine any longer beſieged, for feare leſt the inhabitants ſhould mutinie, and fall from him to the enemy; and that the beſt and ſureſt way was to fight with the *Xemindoo* in the open field, before he grew to any further ſtrength. This reſolution being approved of by *Zemim de Sátan*, he prepared himſelf for the execution of it; to which effect he two dayes after before it was day ſallied out at five gates of the city with fourſcore thouſand men, which then he had, and charged the enemies with ſtrange fury. They then in the meane time, who alwayes ſtood upon their guard, received them with a great deale of courage, whereupon inſued ſo cruell a conflict between them, that in leſſe then halfe an houre, for ſo long laſted the heat of the fight, there fell on both ſides above forty thouſand men; but at the end of that time the new King *Zemim* was borne from his Elephant by an harquebuze ſhot, diſcharged at him by a Portugall, named *Gonçalo Neto*, which cauſed all the reſt to render themſelves, and the city likewiſe, upon condition that the inhabitants ſhould have their goods and lives ſaved. By this means the *Xemindoo* entred peaceably into it, and the very ſame day, which was a Saturday the three and twentieth of February, a thouſand five hundred fifty and one, he cauſed himſelf to be crowned King of *Pegu* in the greateſt Temple of the city. As for *Gonçalo Neto*, he gave him in recompence for killing the Tyrant twenty Biſſes of gold, which are ten thouſand Duckats; and to the other Portugalls, being eighty in number, he gave five thouſand Duckats, beſides the honors and priviledges which they had in the country; he alſo exempted them for three years from paying any cuſtome for their merchandize, which was afterwards very exactly obſerved.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXIII.

*That which the* Xemindoo *did, after he was Crowned King of* Pegu, *with the* Chaumigrems; *the King of* Bramaaes *Foster-Brothers coming against him, with a great Army; and divers other memorable things.*

THe *Xemindoo* seeing himself Crowned King of *Pegu*, and peaceable Lord of all the kingdome; began to have thoughts far different from those which *Xemin de Satan* had had, being raised to the same dignity of King; for the first and principal thing wherein he imployed himself with all his endeavour, was to maintain his Kingdome in peace, and to cause Justice to flourish; as indeed he established it with so much integritie, as no man how great so ever he was, durst wrong a lesser then himself: withall in that which concerned the government of the Kingdome, he proceeded with so much vertue, and equity, as it filled the strangers that were there with admiration, so that one could not without marvel consider the peace the quiet, and union of the wills of the people; during the happy and peaceable estate of this Kingdome, which continued the space of a year, and better; at the end whereof the *Chaumigrem*, foster-brother to the same King of *Bramaa*, whom *Xemin de Satan* had slaine, as I have before declared, having received advertisement, that by reason of the rebellions and warres, which since his departure from thence had happened in the Kingdome of *Pegu*; the principall men of the State there, had lost their lives; and the *Xemindoo* who then raigned, was unprovided of all things necessary for his defence; he resolved once again to adventure upon the same enterprise, which had formerly been undertaken by his late King. With this design, he entertained into his pay a mighty Army of strangers, unto whom he gave a Tincall of gold by the month, which is five dackets of our mony; when as he had prepared all things in a readinesse, he departed from *Tanguu*, the place of his birth: On the ninth day of March, a thousand, five hundred, fifty and two, with an Army of three hundred thousand men, whereof only fifty thousand were *Bramaas*, and all the rest *Mons*, *Chaleus*, *Calaminhams*, *Sauanis*, *Pamcrus*, and *Auaas*. In the mean time the *Xemindoo*, the new King of *Pegu*, having certain intelligence of these great forces, which were coming to fall upon him, made preparation to go and meet them, with a design to give them battle; for which effect, he assembled in the same City where he was; a huge Army of nine hundred thousand men, which were all *Pegues* by nation, and consequently of a weake constitution, and lesse warlick then all the others, whereof I have spoken; and on Tueseday the fourth of April, about noone, having received advice that the enemies Army was incamped all along the river of *Meleytay* some twelve leagues from thence, he used such expedition, as the same day, and the next night all his Souldiers were put into battle array, for whereas they had prepared every thing long before, and had also been trayned by their Capt. there needed no great ado to bring them into order. The day ensueing, all these men of warre begun about nine of the clock in the morning, to march at the sound of an infinite company of warlick instruments, and went and lodged that night some two leagues from thence neer to the river *Potareu*. The next day, an hour before Sun-set the *Bramaa Chaumigrem* appeared with so great a body of men, as it took up the extent of a league and an half of ground; his Army being composed of seaventy thousand horse, of two hundred and thirty thousand foot, and six thousand fighting elephants, besides as many more which carried the baggage and victuals; and in regard it was almost night, he thought fit to lodge himself all along by the mountain, that he might be in the greater safety. Thus the night past with a good guard, and a strange noise that was made on either part. The day following, which was a Saturday, the seventh of Aprill in the year one thousand, five hundred, fifty and three, about five of the clock in the morning, these two Armies began to move, but with different intentions; for the designe of the *Bramaa* was to passe the foard, and recover an advantageous peece of ground, which lay neer to another river; and the *Xemindoo* had a desire to keep him from it, and to stop his passage; upon this contention, some skirmishes ensued, which continued most part of the day, and wherein about five hundred men on the one side, and the other were slain, how-

howbeit the advantage remained with the *Chaumigrem*, becauſe he gained the place whereunto he pretented, and paſſed all the night there in banquetting, and making great bonfires for this good ſucceſſe. The next day betimes in the morning the *Xemnidoo*, King of *Pegu*, preſented the battail to his enemyes, who did not refuſe it; ſo that they incountred one another with all the fury that a cruel hatred is accuſtomed to kindle in ſuch like caſes; the two vantgards then, vvho vvere the beſt Soldiers amongſt them, fell ſo luſtily unto it, that in leſſe then half an hour, all the Field was covered with dead bodies, and the *Pegues* began to lack courage. Wherupon the *Xemindoo* ſeeing his men give ground, came to ſuccor them with a body of three thouſand elephants, wherewith he ſet upon the ſeventy thouſand horſe ſo couragiouſly, and to the purpoſe, as the *Bramaaes* loſt all that they had gained; which perceived by the *Chaumigrem*, who was better experienced in matters of Warre, knowing full well what he was to doe, to recover all again; made ſhew of retyring, as if he had been vanquiſhed; the *Xemindoo* thereupon, who underſtood not this ſtratagem, and that thought of nothing but the victory, purſued his enemie about a quarter of a league: but incontinently the *Bramaa* facing about with all his forces, fell upon his enemy with ſuch violence and horrible cryes, as not only men, but even the very earth, and all the other elements ſeemed to tremble at it. By this meanes the conflict renewed in ſuch ſort, as in a little time the ayre was ſeen all on fire, and the ground watered all over with bloud; for the *Pegu* Lords and Commanders, beholding their King ſo farre ingaged in the battle, and likely to loſe the day, ran inſtantly to his ſuccor; the like did the *Panonſaray*, the *Bramaaes* brother, on his ſide, with fourty thouſand men, and two thouſand elephants; ſo that there enſued betwixt them, ſo bloudy and dreadfull a fight, as words are not able to expreſſe the truth of it; wherefore I ſhall ſay no more, but that half an hour, or there about, before Sun-ſet, the Army of nine hundred thouſand *Pegues* was utterly diſcomfited; and as it was ſaid, four hundred thouſand of them were left dead on the place, and all the reſt, or the moſt part of them, grievouſly wounded; which the *Xemindoo* ſeeing, fled out of the field, and ſo eſcaped. Thus did the victory remain unto the *Chaumigrem*, who thereupon cauſed himſelf to be crowned King of *Pegu*, with the ſame royal Enſignes, magnificence, and triumph, as the other King of *Bramáa*, whom *Xemin de Satan* ſlew, had formerly been. And in regard it was already night, they beſtowed the time in no other thing, but in dreſſing the hurt men, and keeping good watch in the Camp.

The next day, as ſoon as it was light, all the victorious ſouldiers, as wel wounded as unwounded, ran to the ſpoil of the dead bodies; wherewith divers amongſt them were mightily enriched; for they found there great ſtore of Gold and Jewels, by reaſon the cuſtome of thoſe Gentiles is, (as I think, I have heretofore delivered) to carry all their wealth about them to the War. The ſouldiers being well ſatisfied in this particular, the new King of this miſerable Kingdome parted forthwith from the place where he had gotten the Victory, and marched towards the Citie of *Pegu*, diſtant ſome three leagues from thence. Now foraſmuch as hee would not that day enter into it, for certain conſiderations which I will relate hereafter, hee ſet himſelf down in the view of it, about half a league off, in a Plain, called *Sunday Patir*: and after he had thus encamped his Army, hee gave order for the guard of the four and twenty gates thereof, by placing at each of them a *Bramaa* Commander with five thouſand Horſe. In this manner hee remained there five dayes, without being able to reſolve to enter into the Citie, out of the fear he was in, leſt the ſtrangers ſhould require of him the pillage of it, as indeed, he was obliged to grant it to them by the promiſe which he had made them for it at *Tangun*. Now the cuſtom of men of War, who live but upon their pay, being to have regard to nothing but their intereſts, theſe ſix Nations ſeeing the King thus defer his entry into the Citie, which they could not brook, began to mutinie, and this by the inſtigation of a *Portugal*, named *Chriſtofano Surnento*, a man of a turbulent ſpirit, but otherwiſe a good and valiant Commander; and this mutinie proceeded ſo far, as the King of *Bramaa* for his own ſafety was conſtrained to retire into a *Pagode*, where he fortified himſelf with his *Bramaaes*, untill that the next morning about nine of the clock hee came to a truce with them, and cauſing them to aſſemble together, from the top of a wall he ſpake to *Sect.* 1.

them in this ſort, *My worthy Friends, and valiant Commanders, I have cauſed you to come to this holy reſting place of the dead, to the end that with a ſolemn Oath I may diſcover unto you my intentions; whereof, with my knees on the ground, and my eyes liſt up unto heaven, I take to witneſs* Quiay Nivandel, *the God of Battel of the field* Vitau, *beſeeching him to be Judg of this between you and me, and to ſtrike me dumb, if I do not tell you the truth. I very well remember the promiſe I made you at* Tanguu, *which was, to give you the pillage of this tumultuous Citie; as well becauſe I believed your valor would be as it were the miniſter of my revenge, as in ſome ſort to ſatisfie your avarice, whereunto I know you are naturally very much inclined: Now having given you this promiſe for a gage of my faith, I acknowledg that I am altogether obliged not to break my word with you: But when on the other ſide, I come to conſider the great inconveniences which may accrue to me thereby, and the ſtrict account which I ſhall one day render for it before the equitable and rigorous juſtice of the Lord above, I muſt confeſſe unto you, that I am very much affraid of charging my ſelf with ſo heavie a burthen: wherefore Reaſon adviſes me to render my ſelf faulty towards men, rather then to fall into the diſpleaſure of God: Beſides, it is not reaſonable that the innocent ſhould pay for the guilty, and of whom I am ſufficiently ſatisfied with the death which they have received in this laſt battel by your hands. Behold, how I earneſtly intreat you, as children that you are of my bowels, that having regard to my good intention, you will not kindle this fire wherein my ſoul will be burnt, ſince you ſee well enough how reaſonable that is which I deſire of you, and how unjuſt it would be for you to refuſe it me. Nevertheleſſe, to the end you may not remain altogether without recompenſe, I do here promiſe you to contribute thereunto all that ſhall ſeem reaſonable to you, and to ſupply this default in part with my own goods, with my Perſon, with my Kingdom, and with my State.* Hereupon the Commanders of thoſe ſix Nations hearing the Kings juſtification, and the promiſe which hee made them, yeelded to agree unto whatſoever he would do: howbeit, they prayed him above all things to have regard unto ſouldiers pretenſions, who were not at any hand to be diſcontented, but greatly to be made account of. Whereunto the King replyed, *That they had reaſon, and that in all things he would endeavour to conform himſelf to whatſoever they ſhould judg reaſonable.* In the mean time, to avoid diſputes which might enſue hereupon, it was concluded, that they ſhould referr themſelves to Arbitrators: for which effect the Mutiners were to name three on their ſide, and the King three others on his, which made ſix in all, whereof three were to be Religious men, and the reſt Strangers, that ſo the judgment might be given with leſſe ſuſpicion. This reſolution being taken between them, they agreed together, that the three Religious men ſhould be the *Menigrepos* of a *Pagode*, that was named *Quiay Hiſaron*, that is to ſay, the God of Povertie; and that for the other three Strangers, the King and the Mutiners ſhould caſt lots, to ſee who ſhould chuſe one or two of them on his ſide. This Election being fallen to the King, he made a choice of two *Portugals*, of an hundred and forty that were then in the Citie; whereof the one was *Gonçalo Pacheco*, the King our Maſters Factor for Lacre, a worthie man, and of a good conſcience; and the other a worſhipful Merchant, named *Nuno Fernandez Teixeyra*, whom the King held in good eſteem, as having known him in the life time of the deceaſed King. By the ſame means the Commanders of the Mutiners elected another ſtranger, whoſe name I do not know. Things thus concluded, the Judges deſtined for the reſolution of this Affair, were ſent for, becauſe the King was not willing to ſtirre out of the place where he was, untill the matter was determined; to the end he might diſmiſſe them all peaceably before he entred into the Citie; for fear leſt if they entered with him, they ſhould not keep their word. For this purpoſe then the King about midnight ſent a *Bramaa* on horſeback to the *Portugals* quarter, who vvere in no leſſe fear then the *Pegues* of being plundered and killed. After that the *Bramaa* vvas come into the Citie, and that hee had asked aloud (for ſo they uſe to do vvhen they come from the King) vvhere the Captain of the *Portugals* vvas, he vvas preſently conducted to his Lodging, vvhere being arrived, *It is a thing* (ſaid he to the Captain) *as proper to the nature of that Lord above, who hath created the firmament and the whole heavens, to make good men for the converſion of the wicked, as it is ordinary with the pernicious Dragon to nouriſh in his boſome ſpirits of commotion and tumult, to*

*bring*

*bring diſorder unto the peace which conſerves us in the holy Law of the Lord. I mean hereby* (continued he) *that amongſt all thoſe of your Nation there is one wicked man found, vomiting out of his infernall ſtomack flames of diſcord and ſedition, by means whereof he hath cauſed the three ſtrange Nations of the* Chalons, Meleytes *and* Savadis *to mutinie in the King my Maſters Army, whereupon hath enſued ſo great a miſchief, that beſides almoſt the utter ruine of the Camp, three thouſand* Bramaaes *have been ſlain, and the King himſelf hath been in ſuch danger, as he was fain to retire into a Fort, where hee hath remained three dayes, and ſtill is there, not daring to come out, becauſe he cannot put any truſt in thoſe ſtrangers. Howbeit, for a remedy of ſo great unquietneſſe, it hath pleaſed God, who is the true Father of concord, to inſpire the Kings heart with patience to endure this injurie, being prudent as he is, to the end hee may by that means pacifie the tumult and rebellion of theſe three turbulent Nations, who inhabit the moſt deſert parts of the mountains of* Mons, *and are the moſt accurſed of God amongſt all people. Now, to make an entry into this peace and union, a Treaty hath been had between the King and the Commanders of the Mutiners, whereby it hath been concluded on either part with an Oath, That to exempt this Citie from the plundering which had been promiſed to the Souldiers, the King ſhall give them out of his own eſtate, as much as ſix men, deputed for that purpoſe, ſhall award; of which number there are already four, ſo that to make up the whole ſix, there wants none but thee, whom the King hath choſen for him; and another Portugal, whoſe name is written in this paper, whereby thou ſhalt be aſcertained of that which I have ſaid unto thee.* Thereupon he delivered a Letter unto him from the King of *Bramaa*; which *Gonçalo Pacheco* received upon his knees, and laid upon his head, with exterior compliments ſo full of civilitie and courteſie, as the *Bramaa* remained very much contented and ſatisfied therewith, and ſaid unto him, *Surely, the King my Maſter muſt needs have a great knowledg of thee, in that hee hath choſen thee for a Judg of his Honour and Eſtate.* Hereupon *Gonçalo Pacheco* read the Letter aloud before all the *Portugals*, who heard it ſtanding, with their hats in their hands: The contents of it were to this effect, *Captain* Gonçalo Pacheco, *my dear Friend, and that appears before my eyes like a precious Pearl, as being no leſſe vertuous in the tranquillitie of thy life, then the holyeſt Menigrepos which live in the Deſerts; I, the ancient* Chatamigrem, *and new King of fourteen States, which God hath now put into my hands by the death of the holy King my Maſter, do ſend thee a ſmile of my mouth, to the end thou mayeſt be as agreeable to me, as thoſe whom I cauſe to ſit at my table in a day of joy and feaſting: Know them, that I have thought good to take thee for a Judg of the Affair that is in queſtion, and therefore have ſent for thee, together with my good Friend,* Nuno Fernandez Teixeyra, *to come preſently unto me, for to give an end to this buſineſſe, which I wholly commit unto your truſt. And for ſo much as concerns the ſecurity of your perſons, in regard of the fear you may be in of the late Mutinie, I do engage my word, and ſwear to you by the faith which a King ought to have, whom God himſelf hath annointed, that I will take you, and all thoſe of your Nation, with all others that beleeve in your God, into my protection.* After that this Letter was read, to the great aſtoniſhment of all us that heard it, we could beleeve no other, but that by Divine permiſſion it came from Heaven for the aſſurance of our lives, whereof we ſtood in very great doubt until then. *Gonçalo Pacheco* and *Nuno Fernandez*, with ten other *Portugals* which were choſen for that purpoſe, inſtantly prepared a Preſent of divers rich Pieces to carry to the King, unto whom they went that very ſame night an hour before day, in the company of the *Bramaa* who brought the Letter, in regard the haſte the King was in would brook no delay.

*Gonçalo Pacheco*, *Nuno Fernandez*, and the other *Portugals*, arrived at the camp an hour before Sun-riſing, and the King ſent to receive them one of the chiefeſt *Bramaa* Commanders that he had, and in whom he very much confided, who was accompanied with above an hundred horſe, and ſix Serjeants at armes that carried maces. This ſame received the *Portugals*, and lead them to the King, who did much honour unto *Gonçalo Pacheco*, and *Nuno Fernandez*; and after he had talked with them of divers matters, he put them in mind of the importance of the buſineſſe for which he had ſent for them, and [illegible] by any means to leane rather to the Commanders then to him, [illegible] be very well contented therewith,

with, and ſaid many things to them to that purpoſe. Then he cauſed them to be conducted by the ſame *Bramas* Lord to the Tent, where the other four Arbitrators were with the high Treaſuror and two Regiſters; when as they had commanded ſilence to all that were without, they fell to debating of the buſineſſe for which they were aſſembled together; whereupon there were many opinions, which took up the moſt part of the day, but at laſt all ſix came to conclude, That albeit on the one ſide the King, by the promiſe which he had made at *Taugus* to the forraigne Souldiers, for to give them the ſpoil or pillage of the places which he ſhould take by force, was exceedingly obliged to the performance thereof, yet ſeeing that on the other ſide this promiſe was of great and notable prejudice to the innocent, becauſe it could not be put in execution without greatly offending God; theſe things conſidered, they ordained by their award: *That the King, in regard of the promiſe which he had made them, ſhould pay unto them a thouſand biſſes of gold out of his own treaſure; and that upon the Souldiers receiving thereof, they ſhould paſſe over to the other ſide of the River, and retire directly into their countries; but that they ſhould firſt be alſo paid all that was due to them before this mutiny began, and that they ſhould be furniſhed with victuals ſufficient for twenty daies.* This award being publiſhed, was received with much content to either party; So that the King commanded it to be inſtantly and punctually executed; and for a greater teſtimony of his liberality, after he had paid them all this ſum of mony, he beſtowed upon the Commanders and Officers of each Company many bountifull rewards, wherewith they were all of them very well pleaſed, and ſatisfied. In this ſort were theſe three mutinous nations diſcharged; for the King would by no meanes truſt, or make uſe of them any longer: Howbeit, he would not ſuffer theſe ſtrangers to go all away together, but cauſed them to be divided into troups; each of them conſiſting of a thouſand men, to the end that by this means, they ſhould give the leſſe ſuſpicion in their returne, and ſhould be leſſe able to plunder the open townes, by which they were to paſſe; and thus the next day they departed. As for *Gonçalo Pacheco*, and *Nuno Fernandez Teixyra*, the King gave them ten biſſes of gold, for being his Arbitrators in this affair, whereunto he added a paſſport written with his own hand, whereby the *Portugals* were permitted to retire freely into the *Indies*, without paying any cuſtome or duty for their marchandize, whereof we made more account then of all the mony could have been given us, becauſe that for three years before the precedent Kings had retayned us in this country, with exceeding much vexation and tyranny, whereby we were oftentimes in great danger of our lives, by reaſon of the ſucceſſe of that which I have ſpoken heretofore. This done, there were Proclamations made by men on horſeback, to give notice that the day following the King would enter into the City in a peaceable manner, threatning all ſuch as ſhould do the contrary, with a cruell death. Accordingly, the next morning at nine of the clock the King parted from the *Pagode*, whither he had retired himſelf; and about an hour after arrived at the City, wherein to entring by the chiefeſt gate, he was received by an aſſembly (in form of a *Proceſſion*) of ſix thouſand Prieſts of all the twelve Sects which are in this Kingdome; by one of whom, called *Capizando*, an oration was made unto him, whereof the preface was thus, *Bleſſed and praiſed be that Lord, who ought truly to be acknowledged of all men for ſuch, in regard of the holy works which he hath made with his Divine hands, teſtified to us by the light of the day, the ſhining of the night, and all the other magnificences of his mercy which he hath produced in us; Praiſed be he, I ſay, for that by the effects of his infinite power, which are agreeable unto him, he hath been pleaſed to eſtabliſh thee on the earth above all the Kings that govern it; and ſeeing we hold thee for his favorite, we humbly beſeech thee our Lord, that thou wilt never more remember the faults and offences which we have committed againſt thee, to the end that theſe thy afflicted people may be comforted with the promiſe thereof, which they hope thy Majeſty will make them at this preſent.* This ſame requeſt was likewiſe made unto him by the ſix thouſand *Grepos*, all proſtrated on the ground, and with their hands lifted up to heaven, who with a dreadful tumult of voices ſaid unto him; *Grant, our Lord and King, peace and pardon for that is paſt to all the people of this thy Kingdome of Pegu, to the end they may not be troubled with the feare of their offences, which they confeſſe publikely before thee.* The King anſwered them, that he

was

was contented ſo to do, and ſwore to them by the head of *Quiay Nivandel*, the God of Battel of the field *Vitau*, for the confirmation thereof. Upon this promiſe all the people proſtrated themſelves with their faces on the ground, and ſaid unto him; *God make thee to proſper for infinite years in the victory over thy enemies, that thou mayeſt trample their heads under thy feet.* Hereupon for a token of great gladneſſe, they fel to playing on divers inſtruments after their manner, though very barbarouſly, and untunably; and the *Grepo Capizondo* ſet on his head a rich Crown of gold and precious ſtones of the faſhion of a Miter, wherewith the King made his entry into the City, with a great deal of ſtate and tryumph, cauſing to march before him all the ſpoile of the elephants and chariots, as alſo the ſtatue of the *Xemindoo*, whom he had vanquiſhed, bound with a great yron chain, and forty Colours trayled on the ground; As for him, he was ſeated on a very mighty elephant, harneſſed with gold, and invironed with forty Serjeants at armes bearing Maces: there marched likewiſe all the great Lords and Commanders on foot with their Scymitars covered with plates of gold, which they carried on their ſhouldiers, and three thouſand fighting elephants, with their Caſtles of divers invencions, beſides a world of other people, as well foot as horſe, which followed him without number.

## CHAP. LXXIV.

*The finding of the* Xemindoo, *and bringing of him to the King; with the manner of his execution and death; and other particularities concerning the ſame.*

AFter that the King of *Bramaa* had continued peaceably in this Citie of *Pegu* for the ſpace of ſix and twenty daies, the firſt thing he did was to make himſelf Maſter of the principal places of this Kingdome, which not knowing the defeat of the *Xemindoo*, held ſtill for him: To this purpoſe, having given Commiſſion to ſome Commanders for it, hee wrote to the inhabitants of thoſe places divers courteous Letters, wherein he called them his deare children, and gave them an abolition of all that was paſt: He alſo promiſed them by a ſolemn oath, to maintain them in peace for the time to come, and alwayes to miniſter juſtice to them, without any Impoſts or other oppreſſion; but that hee would contrarily do them new favours, as to the very *Bramaas* which ſerved him in the Warres. To theſe words hee added many others, very well accommodated to the time and his deſire; for the better crediting whereof, they that were already reduced under his obedience, wrote their Letters alſo unto them, wherein they made an ample relation of the Franchiſes and Immunities which the King had granted to them. All this, accompanied with the fame which ran thereof in all parts, wrought ſo great an effect, as all thoſe places rendred unto him, and put themſelves under his obedience: ſo that in imitation of them all the other Cities, Towns, States and Provinces that were in the Kingdom did the like. For my part, I hold, that this Kingdome whereof the King of *Bramaa* made at this time a new Conqueſt, is the beſt, the moſt abundant, and richeſt in Gold, in Silver, and precious Stones that may be found in any part of the world. Things being thus accompliſhed, to the great advantage of the *Bramaa*, he diſpatches divers Horſemen with all ſpeed into all parts, to go in queſt of the *Xemindoo*, who (as I have already declared) had eſcaped from the paſt Batel, and was ſo unhappy, that he was diſcovered in a place named *Faulen*, a league from the Town of *Potew*, which ſeparates the Kingdom from *Aracam*: Preſently whereupon, he was lead with great joy by a man of baſe condition, to this King of *Bramaa*, who in recompence thereof, gave him thirty thouſand Duckats of yeerly rent. Being brought before him, bound as he was with an iron coller, and manacles, he ſaid unto him in way of deriſion, *Thou art welcome (King of* Pegu) *and maiſt well kiſſe the ground which thou ſeeſt; for I aſſure thee, I have ſet my foot on it; whereby thou mayeſt perceive how much I am thy Friend, ſince I do thee an honour which thou couldſt never imagine.* To theſe words the *Xemindoo* made no anſwer; ſo that the King falling to jeer this miſerable man anew, who lay before him with his face on the ground, ſaid unto him, [illegible] *this? Art thou amazed to ſee me, or to ſee thy ſelf in ſo great honour? [illegible] that thou doſt not anſwer to that which I demand of thee?* A[illegible] whether it were

that

that he was troubled with his misfortunes, or ashamed of his dishonour, answered him in this sort; *If the clouds of Heaven, the Sun, the Moon, and the other creatures, which cannot expresse in words that which God hath created for the service of man, and for the beautifying of the Firmament, which hides from us the rich treasures of his power, could naturally with the horrible voice of their dreadfull Thunder explain to them which now look upon me, the estate whereunto I see my self reduced before thee, and the extreme affliction which my soul doth suffer, they would answer for me, and declare the cause I have to be mute in the condition wherein my sins have set me: and whereas thou canst not be Judg of that which I say, being the party that accuseſt me, and the minister of the execution of thy designe, I hold my self for excused, if I do not make thee an answer, as I would do before that blessed Lord, who, how faulty soever I could be, would have pitie on me, moved with the least tear that I should shed.* This said, he fell down with his face on the ground, and twice together asked for a little water: Whereupon the King of *Bramaa*, the more to afflict him, commanded that the *Xemindoo* should receive this water from the hand of a Daughter of his, (held by him as a slave) whom he exceedingly loved, and had at that time of his defeat promised to the Prince of *Nautir*, Son to the King of *Avaa*. The Princesse no sooner saw her Father lying in that manner on the ground, but she cast her self at his feet, and straitly embracing him, after shee had kissed him thrice, she said to him with her eyes all bathed in tears, *O my Father, my Lord, and my King, I intreat you, for the extreme affection which I have always born you, and for that also which you have at all times shewed to me, that you will be pleased to lead me with you, thus imbracing you as I do, to the end that in this sad passage you may have one to comfort you with a cup of water, now that for my sins the world refuses you that respect which is due unto you.* It is said, that the Father would fain have answered to these words, yet could not possibly do it, so much was he oppressed with grief and anguish of minde, to see this Daughter whom he so dearly loved, in such a taking; but fell as it were in a swoun, and so continued a good while; wherewith some Lords that were there present were so moved, as the tears came into their eyes; which observed by the King of *Bramaa*, and that they were *Pegues*, who had formerly been the *Xemindoo's* Subjects, fearing lest they should betray him in time to come, he caused their heads to be presently strucken off, saying with a disdainfull and fierce countenance, *Seeing you have so great pitie of the* Xemindoo *your King, get you before and prepare a lodging for him, and there he will pay you for this affection which you testifie to have for him.* After this, his wrath redoubled in such sort, as instantly he caused this very Daughter to be killed in her Fathers arms; which truly was more then a bruitish and savage cruelty, in seeking to hinder the affections which nature hath imprinted in us. Then no longer enduring the sight of the *Xemindoo*, he commanded him to be taken from thence, and to be carried to a close prison, where he passed all the night following under a sure guard.

The next morning, Proclamation was made over all the City, for the people to be present at the death of the unhappy *Xemindoo*; now, the chiefest reason why the *Bramaa* did this, was, that the inhabitants seeing him dead, might for ever lose all hope of having him for their King, as all generally desired; for whereas he was their Countryman, and the *Bramaa* a Stranger, they were in extreame fear, least the *Bramaa* should become in time like unto him whom *Xemin de Satan* slew, and that had been during his raign a mortall enemy to the *Pegues*; intreating them with such extraordinary cruelty, as their scarcely passed a day, wherein he did not execute hundreds of them; and all for matters of small importance, and which deserved no punishment, had they been proceeded against, by the waies of true Justice. About ten of the clock, the unfortunate *Xemindoo* was drawn out of the dungeon where he was, in the manner ensuing. Before him marched through the Streets, by which he was to passe, forty men on horseback with lances in their hands, to prepare and clear the waies; there were as many behind as before him, which carried naked swords, crying aloud to the people, whereof the number was infinite, to make roome: After them followed about fifteen hundred harquebusiers with their matches lighted; next to these last, which they of the country use to call, the *avant coureurs* of the Kings wrath, went an hundred and threescore elephants armed with their Castles, and covered with silk tapestry,

peſtry, marching by five and five in a rank; after them rode in the ſame order by five in a rank, fifteen men on horſeback, which carried black enſignes all bloudy; crying aloud, as it were by way of Proclamation; *Let thoſe miſerable wretches, which are the ſlaves of hunger, and are continually perſecuted by the diſgrace of fortune, hearken to the cry of the arm of wrath, executed on them that have offended their King, to the end that the aſtoniſhment of the pain, which is ordained them for it, may be deeply imprinted in their memory.* Behind theſe ſame were other fifteen, clothed with a kind of bloudy garment, which rendred them dreadfull and of a bad aſpect; who at the ſound of five Bells, which they rung in haſte, ſaid with ſo lamentable a voice, as they that heard them were moved to weep: *This rigorous juſtice is done by the living God, the Lord of all truth, of whoſe holy body, the hairs of our heads are the feet; It is he that will have the* Xemindoo *put to death, for uſurping the Eſtates of the great King of Brama, Lord of Tangu.* Theſe Proclamations were anſwered by a troupe of people, which marched thronging before with ſuch loud cryes, as made one tremble to hear them, ſaying theſe words; *Let him die without having pity on him, that hath committed ſuch an offence:* Theſe were followed by a company of five hundred *Bramas* horſe, and after them came another of foot, whereof ſome held naked ſwords and bucklers in their hands, and the reſt were armed with corſelets, and coats of maile; In the midſt of theſe, came the poor patient, mounted on a lean ill-favored jade, and the hangman on the crupper behind him, holding him up under both the armes. This miſerable Prince was ſo poorly clad, that his naked skinne was every where ſeen; withall, in an exceeding deriſion of his perſon, they had ſet upon his head a Crowne of ſtraw, like unto an Urinall caſe; which Crowne was garniſhed with muſcle-ſhells, faſtned together with blew thred; and round about his yron collier were a number of onions tyed: Howbeit, though he was reduced to ſo deplorable an eſtate, and that his face was ſcarce like to that of a living man, yet left he not for all that, from having ſomething of I know not what in his eyes, which manifeſted the condition of a King. There was beſides obſerved in him, a majeſticall ſweetneſſe, which drew teares from all that beheld him. About this guard which accompanied him, there was another of above a thouſand horſe men, intermingled with many armed elephants; Paſſing thus thorow the twelve principall ſtreets of the City, where there was a world of people, he arrived at laſt at a certain ſtreet called *Cabam Bainhas*, out of which he went but two and twenty days before, to go and fight with the *Bramas*, in ſuch pomp and greatneſſe, as by the report of them that ſaw it, and of which number I was one, it was without doubt, one of the moſt marvellous ſights that ever hath been ſeen in the world; whereof notwithſtanding I will make no mention here, either in regard I cannot promiſe to recount rightly how all paſt, or for that I fear ſome will receive theſe truths for lies; nevertheleſſe mine eyes having been the witneſſes of theſe two faceeſſes, if I do not ſpeak of the greatneſſe of the firſt, I will at leaſtwiſe declare the miſeries of the ſecond, to the end that by theſe two ſo different accidents, happening in ſo ſhort a time, one may learn what little aſſurance is to be put in the proſperities of the earth, and in all the goods which are given us by inconſtant and deceitful Fortune. Whenas the poor Patient had paſt that ſtreet of *Cabam Bainhas*, he arrived at a place where *Gonçalo Pacheco* our Captain was, with above an hundred Portugals in his Company; amongſt the which there was one of a very baſe birth, and of a minde yet more vile, who having been robbed of his goods ſome yeers before, as he ſaid, at ſuch time as the Patient reigned, and complained to him of thoſe who had done it, he would not vouchſafe to give him audience; ſo that thinking to be revenged on him for it now, with extravagant and unſeemly ſpeech; as ſoon as this poor Prince came where *Gonçalo Pacheco* was, with all the other Portugals, the wickeſſe fellow ſaid aloud to him, that all might hear him *O Robber* Xemindoo, *remember how when I complained to thee of thoſe that had robbed me of my goods, thou wouldſt not do me juſtice; but I hope that now thou ſhalt ſatisfie what thy works deſerve: for I will at ſupper eat a piece of that fleſh of thine, whereunto I will invite two dogs that I have at home.* The ſad Patient having heard the words of this hair-brain'd fellow, lifted up his eyes to heaven, and after he had continued a while paſſive, turning himſelf with a ſevere countenance towards him that uttered them, *Friend*, ſaid he unto him, *I pray thee, by the great goodneſs of that God*

*God in whom thou believeſt, to pardon me that for which thou accuſeſt me, and to remember that it is not the part of a Chriſtian, in this painful eſtate wherein I ſee my ſelf at this preſent, to put me in mind of that which I have done heretofore; for beſides that, thou canſt not thereby recover the loſs which thou ſayeſt thou haſt ſuſtained, it will but ſerve to afflict and trouble me the more.* Pacheco having heard what this fellow ſaid, commanded him to hold his peace, which immediately he did; whereupon the *Xemindoo* with a grave countenance made ſhew that this action pleaſed him, ſo that ſeeming to be more quiet, it made him to acknowledge that with his mouth, which he could not otherwiſe requite, *I muſt confeſs*, ſaid he unto him, *that I could wiſh, if God would permit it, I might have one hour longer of life to profeſs the excellency of the faith wherein you Portugals live; for, as I have heretofore heard it ſaid, your God alone is true, and all other gods are lyers.* The Hangman had no ſooner heard theſe words, but he gave him ſo great a buffet on the face, that his noſe ran out with bloud, ſo that the poor Patient ſtooping with his hands downward, *Brother* (ſaid he unto him) *ſuffer me to ſave this blond, to the end thou maiſt not want ſome to fry my fleſh withall.* So paſſing on in the ſame order as before, he finally arrived at the place where he was to be executed, with ſo little life as he ſcarcely thought of any thing: When he was amounted on a great Scaffold, which had been expreſly erected for him, the Chirca of Juſtice fell to reading of his Sentence from an high Seate, where he was placed; the contents whereof were in few words theſe; *The living God of our heads, Lord of the Crown of the Kings of* Avaa, *commands, that the perfidious* Xemindoo *be executed as the Perturbater of the people of the earth, and the mortal enemy of the* Bramaa *Nation.* This ſaid, he made a ſign with his hand, and inſtantly the Hangman cut off his head at one blow, ſhewing it to all the people, vvhich vvere there vvithout number, and divided his body into eight quarters, ſetting his bovvels and other interior parts vvhich vvere put together, in a place by themſelves; then covering all vvith a yellovv cloth, vvhich is a mark of mourning amongſt them, they vvere left there till the going dovvn of the Sun, at vvhich time they vvere burnt in the manner enſuing.

*Sect.* 2. The eight quarters of the *Xemindoos* body vvere expoſed from mid-day till three of Clock in the afternoon to the view of all the people, whereof there was an infinite company there, for every one came thronging thither, as well to avoid the puniſhment wherewith they had been threatned, as to gain in ſo doing, the Plenary indulgence called by them *Axiperan*, which their Prieſts gave them of their ſins, without reſtitution of any thing of all the Theeveries by them formerly committed. After then, that the tumult was appeaſed, and that certain men on horſeback had impoſed ſilence on the people by making certain publications, whereby the Tranſgreſſors therein were threatned with terrible puniſhments, a bell was heard to toll five ſeveral times; upon this ſignal twelve men clothed in black robes, ſpotted all over with bloud, having their faces covered, and bearing ſilver Maces on their ſhoulders, came out of a houſe of wood, made expreſly for that purpoſe, and diſtant ſome five or ſix paces from the Scaffold; after them followed twelve Prieſts, which they call *Talagrepos*, being, as I have ſaid, the moſt eminent Dignities amongſt theſe Pagans, and held by them as Saints; then appeared the *Xemin Pocaſſer*, the King of *Bramaaes* Uncle, who ſeemed to be near an hundred years old, and was as the reſt, all in mourning, and invironed with twelve little boyes richly apparelled, carrying on their ſhoulders Courtelaſſes curiouſly Damasked. After that the *Xemin* had with a great deal of Ceremonie proſtrated himſelfe three times on the ground, in way of extraordinary reverence; *O holy fleſh* (ſaid he) *which art more to be eſteemed then all the Kingdomes of* Avaa, *thou orient Pearle of as many Carats as there be Atomes in the beams of the Sun, whom God hath placed in an height of Honour, with a Scepter of Soveraign power above that of Kings, I that am the leaſt of thy meiny, and ſo unlike thee through my baſeneſs, as I can ſcarcely ſee my ſelf, ſo little I am, do moſt humbly beſeech thee, O thou Lord of my head, by the freſh Meadow where thy ſoul doth now recreat thy ſelf, to hear that with thy ſorrowful ears which my mouth ſayes to thee in publick, to the end thou maiſt remain ſatisfied for the offence which hath been done thee in this world.* Oretanan Chaumigrem, *thy brother, Prince of* Savady *and* Tanguu, *ſends to intreat thee by me thy ſlave, that before he departs out of*

*this*

*this life thou wilt pardon him that which is paſt if he have given thee any diſcontent, and withall that thou wilt take poſſeſſion of all his Kingdomes, becauſe he doth even now yeild them up unto thee, without reſerving the leaſt part thereof for himſelf; withall he proteſts unto thee by me thy vaſſal, that he makes this reconciliation with thee voluntarily, to the end that the complaints which thou maieſt prefer againſt him there above in heaven, may not be heard of God: Moreover for a puniſhment of the diſpleaſure he hath done thee, he offers to be for thee during this pilgrimage of life, the Captain and Guardian of this thy Kingdome of* Pegu, *for which he does thee homage, with an oath to accompliſh alwaies upon earth whatſoever thou ſhalt command him from heaven above; upon condition that thou wilt beſtow the profit which ſhall ariſe thereof upon him as an almes for his entertainment; for he knowes very well, that otherwiſe he ſhould not be permitted to poſſeſs the Kingdome, neither would the* Menigrepos *ever conſent thereunto, nor at the hour of death give him abſolution for ſo great a ſinne.* Upon theſe words, one of the Prieſts that was preſent, and that ſeemed to have more authoritie then all the reſt, made him anſwer, as if the deceaſed himſelf had ſpoken; *Since I ſee, O my Sonne, that thou doeſt now confeſſe thy paſt faults; and craveſt pardon of me for them in this publick aſſembly, I do grant it thee with all my heart; and it pleaſes me to leave thee in this Kingdome for the paſtor of this my flock, on condition that thou doſt not violate the faith thou haſt given me by this oath; which would be as great an offence, as if thou ſhouldſt now come to lay hands on me without the permiſsion of Heaven.* All the people having heard theſe words, anſwered thereunto with joyfull voices; *Perform ſo much, my Lord, my Lord.* After this, the Prieſt being got into the pulpit, began to ſpeak thus to the aſſiſtants; *Preſent me with part of the teares of your eyes for the entertainment of my ſoul, becauſe of the good newes I now bring you, which is, that by the Wil of God this Country is ſetled on our King* Chaumigrem, *without being eyed to make any reſtitution thereof, for which you have all of you good cauſe to rejoyce, like good and faithfull ſervants as you are.* He had ſcarcely made an end of ſpeaking thus, when as all thoſe of the aſſembly clapping their hands, gave great demonſtrations of joy, and cryed out in a way of thankſgiving, *Be thou praiſed, O Lord.* All this ceremony ended, the Prieſts full of devotion and zeal immediately took all the parts of this poor King, diſmembred in that ſort, and with great veneration carried them to a place below, where a great fire was kindled of Sandal, Aloes, and Benjamin, which coſt a great deal; then three of them taking up of the body of the deceaſed, with the bowels, and all the reſt, threw it into it, and afterwards with a ſtrange ceremony offered many ſacrifices unto him, whereof the moſt part were of ſheep. The body burned all that night untill the next morning, and the aſhes thereof was put into a ſilver urne, wherein, with a very ſolemn aſſembly of above ten thouſand Prieſts, it was carried to a Temple, called *The God of thouſand Gods*, and there was buried in a rich tomb within a Chappel guilt all over. Behold what was the end of the great and mighty *Xemindoo* King of *Pegu*, unto whom his ſubjects bore ſo great reſpect and honour, during the time of his raign, which was ſo flouriſhing, that it ſeemed there was no other Monarch greater then he on the earth; but ſuch is the courſe of all the world.

## CHAP. LXXV.

*My imbarking in the Kingdome of* Pegu *to go to* Malaca, *and from thence to* Japan; *and a ſtrange accident which arrived there.*

THe death of the good King of *Siam*, and the adulterie of the Queen his wife, whereof I have ſpoken at large heretofore, were the root and beginning of ſo many diſcords, and of ſo many cruell warres, which hapning in thoſe two Kingdomes of *Pegu* and *Siam*, indured three years and an half, with ſo much expence of mony and bloud, as is horrible to think of. Now the end of all thoſe warres was, that the *Chaumigrem*, King of *Bramaa*, remained abſolute Lord of the Kingdome of *Pegu*: howbeit for the preſent I will ſpeak no further of him, but will deliver that which arrived in other Countries, untill ſuch time as the ſame *Chaumigrem* King of *Bramaa* returned upon the Kingdome of *Siam*, with ſo mighty an Army, as never any King whatſoever in the *Indies* brought a greater into the field, as conſiſting of ſeventeen hun-

dred thouſand men, and of ſixteen thouſand elephants; whereof nine thouſand were for the carriage of the Baggage, and ſeven thouſand for fighting; an enterprize that was ſo dammageable for us, as I learned afterwards, that it coſt us two hundred and four ſcore Portugals. I come now again to my deſigne, from which I have wandered a good while. After that theſe commotions, whereof I have ſpoken heretofore, were all appeaſed, *Gonçalo Pacheco* departed from the City of *Pegu*, with all us the reſt of the Portugals which remained there, and whom the new King of *Bramaa* had delivered, as I have already declared, cauſing their merchandize to be reſtored unto them, and obliging them with many other courteſies, as well of Honour, as of Liberty: So we, an hundred and three ſcore Portugals as we were, imbarqued our ſelves in five veſſels, which were at that time in the Port of *Coſmin*, one of the principal Townes of that Kingdom; and there we divided our ſelves as pilgrims and travellers to the Indies, for to go into divers Countries, according as each of us thought to be moſt convenient for him. As for me, I ſet ſail for *Malaca*, with ſix and twenty of my companions; where when we were arrived, I ſojourned there one month only, and then imbarqued my ſelf again to go to *Japan* with one *Jorge Alvarez*, who in a Sip belonging to *Simono de Mello*, Captain of the Fortreſſe, went to traffick. Now having been already ſix and twenty dayes under ſail, in continuing our courſe with a good winde, according to the ſeaſon, wee came in ſight of an Iland, called *Tanixumaa*, ſome nine Leagues South towards the point of the Land of *Japan*; ſo that turning our prow that way, we went and rode the next day in the midſt of the haven of *Ganxiroo*: In this place the *Nauaquin*, who was Governour thereof, had the curioſitie to come unto us for to ſee a thing which he had never ſeen before; to which effect he got aboard of us, where amazed with the faſhion and equipage of our veſſel, as being the firſt that ever arrived in that Country, he ſeemed to be infinitely glad of our coming, yea, and was very earneſt with us to have us trade in that place with him: but *Jorge Alvarez* and the Merchants excuſed themſelves, ſaying, that this port was not ſafe for their Ship, if any contrary winde ſhould happen to ariſe. The day following, being parted from this place, to go to the Kingdom of *Bungo*, from whence we were diſtant ſome hundred leagues to the Northward; in five dayes after our departure it pleaſed God that we arrived in the port of the Town of *Fucheo*, where we were well received, as well by the King as the people, who greatly favoured us in that which concerned the duties of our Merchandize; and the King had yet more obliged us, if in the little time that we abode there he had not been miſerably ſlain by a Vaſſal of his named *Futiarandono*, a mighty Prince, Lord of many Subjects, and exceeding rich; a diſaſter, which hapned as followeth. At the time when we arrived there, there was in the King of *Bungo's* Court a young man, called *Axirandoo*, Nephew to the King of *Arimaa*, who in regard of the ill intreaty which he had received from the King his Uncle, had retired himſelf into this Court, and continued there above a yeer, with an intent never to return into his Country again: but his good fortune was ſuch, as his Uncle coming to die, and having no other to ſucceed him, he declared him for his Heir. Whereupon the *Fucarandono*, of whom I lately made mention, deſiring to marry this Prince to a Daughter of his, intreated the King to mediate this marriage for him, which he eaſily condeſcended unto. For which effect the King one day invited the Prince to go a hunting with him into a Wood, which was ſome two leagues off, and where there was great ſtore of game, which he much delighted in. When they were there in private together, he moved this Marriage unto him, and certified how exceedingly it would content him that hee would accept of it; which accordingly he did; wherewith the King ſeemed to be extremely ſatisfied; ſo that upon his return unto the Town, hee ſent for the *Fucarandono*, and told him how he had prevailed for the Marriage of his Daughter with the King of *Arimaa*, and therefore willed him to go and acknowledg unto him with all thankfulneſſe this grace and honour which he did him; for he aſſured him on the word of a King, that he himſelf had deſired him for his Son-in-Law. Hereupon the *Fucarandono* caſt himſelf preſently at the Kings feet, and in convenient terms for ſo great an obligation, kiſſed them, with much ſenſe of ſo extraordinary a favour as he had ſhewed him. That done, he went home to his Palace, where, with much

joy

joy and contentment, he gave an account of this Affair to his Wife, to his Sons, and his kinſmen, who ſhewing themſelves exceedingly ſatisfied therewith, congratulated one another for it, as they commonly uſe to do in ſuch honourable Matches as this. In the mean time, the Mother of the Bride, as ſhe that had the beſt part in this Joy, went unto a chamber where her Daughter was ſowing, with divers other young Maids that ſerved her; and taking her by the hand, lead her into the room, where her Father, Brethren, and kinſmen were, who rejoyced with her for ſo happy a fortune, and honoured her with the Title of *Highneſſe*, as being already *Queen* of the Kingdome of *Arimaa*; and ſo all that day was ſpent in Feaſts, Banquets, viſits of Ladies, and preſenting her with many rich Gifts. But whereas the good or evill of ſuch like Affairs conſiſts more in that which followeth, then in the original thereof, upon the good and joyfull beginning of this Marriage, ſuch great diſaſters enſued, as they almoſt equalled them of the Kingdom of *Siam*, whereof I have ſpoken heretofore: which I ſtick not to ſay, in regard I can affirm it with truth, as having ſeen theſe two Succeſſes with mine own eyes, and been preſent at them with danger enough of my perſon. All this day was ſpent in the viſits of the principal perſons of the Kingdom; But in this publick rejoycing there was none ſave the Bride alone that was diſcontented, in regard ſhe was deſperately in love with a young Gentleman, the ſon of one *Groge Arim*, who was as a Baron amongſt us, but very much different in extraction and quality from the *Fucarandono*, the Father of the Bride: who, as ſoon as it was night, compelled by the violence of the love which ſhe bore to him, ſent him word by her whom ſhe had alwayes ſecretly made uſe of in this Affair, that ſhe would have him come and ſteal her away out of her Fathers houſe before ſome other miſchief arrived. Whereupon the young man, who was no more free from this paſſion then ſhee, failed not to come to her to a place in which they uſed to meet together, where his Miſtreſſe importuned him in ſuch manner, as he was conſtrained to carry her away from her Fathers houſe, and put her into a Monaſtery of Religious women, whereof an Aunt of hers was as it were the Abbeſſe; in which ſhe continued nine dayes concealed, without the knowledg or privity of any body. The next morning her Governeſſe went into her chamber where ſhe had left her the night before; but not finding her there, ſhe preſently repaired to her Mothers chamber, imagining that ſhe was gone thither to trick up her ſelf extraordinarily, in regard of the time, or for ſome other ſuch like occaſion; and miſſing of her there too, ſhe returned to her bed-chamber, where ſhe found one of the windows that looked into a garden, open, together with a ſheet faſtned to one of the barrs, and one of her ſandals lying below on the ground. Preſently miſdoubting the buſineſſe, ſhe went without farther delay to impart the ſad news unto her Mother, who was ſtill in her bed, out of which in all haſte ſhe aroſe, and diligently ſearching all the women chambers, where ſhe conceived ſhe might be, and not finding her, it was ſaid, that ſhe was ſo overcome with grief, as ſhe fell down dead in the place. In the mean time, the *Fucarandono*, who as yet underſtood nothing of the matter, hearing the noiſe which the women made, ran in haſte to know the cauſe thereof: Whereupon, being aſſured of the flight of his Daughter, he ſent with all ſpeed to acquaint his kinſmen therewith; who amazed with the novelty of ſo unfortunate and unexpected an accident, came inſtantly unto him: Having conſulted then amongſt themſelves what they ſhould do in this Affair, they reſolved to proceed therein with all the rigour that poſſibly could be uſed; ſo that preſently beginning with the women of the houſe, they cut off I know not how many of their heads, under pretext of being complices of this rape or flight. After this execution, being of different opinions touching the place where this maid might be, they were all of the minde not to proceed any further, untill they had firſt acquainted the King with the buſineſſe; which inſtantly they did, and withall, very earneſtly beſought him to permit them to go and ſearch the houſes of ſome whom they named unto him, where they beleeved ſhe was: Which the King refuſing, as well to exempt the Maſters of them from ſuch an affront, as alſo to prevent the tumult which this diſorder might cauſe; the *Fucarandono* offended for that the King did not grant him his requeſt, returned with his kinſmen to his Palace, where he reſolved with them to do therein all that in ſuch a caſe he thought was for

his honour, alledging that it was onely for men of little worth, and base mindes, to proceed by way of justice in matters which might be carried by force. This resolution taken, as it is the custome of these people of *Japan* to be more ambitious of honour then all the Nations of the world, he determined to bring his designe to passe at any price whatsoever, without regard to any thing that might arrive thereupon; so that giving intelligence thereof to all his friends and kinsmen that were in the Court, they came all to him that night, and approved of this his resolution, after he had declared it unto them; insomuch that they went without further delay to the houses of them where they were perswaded this Maid lay hid: but they being already fortified and furnished with men, upon notice given them before-hand of their intent, such a great and terrible uproar ensued thereupon, as there were above twelve thousand persons killed that night. To this disorder the King ran in person with his guard, to see if he could pacifie it; but the quarrell grew so hot betwixt them, as it was impossible to appease it: so that after they had lost the respect which they owed to the King, they turned all their fury against him, and slew the most part of them that were with him, so that he was constrained to retire unto his Palace, where he gathered unto him as many as possibly he could upon a sudden; but all that served him to little purpose, for they pursued him thither, and killed him, together with very neer all them that he had drawn to his defence, amounting to the number of seven or eight thousand men; amongst the which were six and twenty *Portugals* of forty that were with the King. But these ministers of Satan, not contented with having committed so horrible a Treason, went directly to the Queens lodging, where having found her sick in her bed; they most mercilesly butchered her with three of her Daughters; and all the women they could meet withall. After this, with an inraged fury, they set fire on the Town in six or seven places, which kindling by the violence of the vvinde, that was very high at that time, it took hold of it in such sort, as in lesse then two hours it was almost burnt down to the ground. Whereupon, vve seven and twenty *Portugals* that remained, retired with much adoe to our Vessel, vvhere we saved our selves as it vvere by miracle, leaving our anchor in the sea, and setting sail with all the speed we could. The next morning the mutiners, who were about ten thousand, having sacked the Town, divided themselves into two troops, and retired to a hill, called *Canaphamau*; there they fortified themselves, with an intent to create a new Head that should govern them, because the *Fucarandono* had been slain with the stroak of a lance, which he had received in his throat, together with all the rest of his kinsmen, which had given a beginning to this Mutinie.

*Sect. 1.* The same day, after the end of this disorder, advertisement was given thereof to the Prince, the Kings Son, who was at that time in the fort of *Osquy*, some seven leagues from the town of *Fuchea*. This young Prince, extremely afflicted with this newes, would presently have gone to the town with some of his favorites, which were all the company that he had then with him; but the *Fingoindono* his governor, was utterly against it, alledging many reasons to perswade him not to budge from that place, until he had been more amply informed in what termes this affair stood; for it was very credible, that they who durst kill his father, would not stick to dispatch him out of the way too, since it lay in their power so to doe, he not being in a condition to defend himself: Wherefore he advised him to assemble all the forces he could, to the end he might by their means subdue and chastise his enemies. The Prince approved of this counsell, and having taken order for that which he judged was most necessary according to the estate wherein he was, he commanded some that were about him, to go and wind the horn, a thing observed in *Japan*, which caused such a hurly burly over all the country, as words are not able to expresse it. Now the better to understand this same, you must know, that by an ancient custome of this Kingdome of *Japan*, all the inhabitants, in whatsoever place they lived, from the least to the greatest, are bound to have in their houses a horn of a great sea-winckles shell, which they are forbidden at any time to winde upon pain of great punishment, save in one of these four cases, namely, a tumult, a fire, a robberie, and a treason; so that if one winds a horn, the cause of it is presently known; because if it be a tumult, one winds it once; if a fire, twice; if a robberie, thrice; and if it be a treason, four times; insomuch, that

that at the firſt winding of the horne, all others are bound upon pain of death to wind theirs, and in ſuch ſort as the firſt hath winded his, to the end that it may be diſtinctly known what it is, and that there may be no confuſion. Now, becauſe this ſignal of treaſon is not ſo ordinary as the others, which arrive very often; when it happens to be given, all the people are ſo affrighted with it, as without further delay, they run thronging to the place where the horn was firſt winded; ſo that by this means, the bruit paſſeth from one to another with ſuch ſpeed, as within leſſe then an hour, one is advertiſed thereof above twenty leagues about. But to return to that which I ſaid but now; as ſoon as the Prince had given order for that particular, he retired into a Monaſtery of Religious perſons, which ſtood in the midſt of a wood; there he remained ſhut up three daies, during the which, he did nothing but bewail his Father, Mother, and Siſters; and that with exceeding demonſtrations of ſorrow, teſtified by his ſighs, and tears. At the end of that time, in regard great numbers of his ſubjects were aſſembled unto him, he went out of that Monaſtery to provide for that which he judged neceſſary, as well for the ſafety of his kingdome, as for the chaſtiſement of the rebels; whoſe goods and eſtates were immediately confiſcated, their houſes demoliſhed, and ſuch terrible Proclamations publiſhed againſt them, as could not be heard without trembling. Seven daies after this deplorable event, the Prince was counſelled, in regard he had, as already I have ſaid, great numbers come unto him, to go and beſiege the ten thouſand Mutiners in the place of their retreat: Whereupon he parted from the fort of *Oſquy*, and marched directly to the town with his Army, which it was ſaid, conſiſted of very neer an hundred and thirty thouſand men, whereof ſeventeen thouſand were horſe, and the reſt foot, all luſty and well armed, and capable of executing any high enterpriſe. Being arrived at the town, he was wonderfully well received by the people, who teſtified a great deal of reſentment for the death of the late King his father: He would not go at firſt to the Roiall Palace, but went before he paſt any further to the *Pagode*, where his father was buried; there he took care to make him a funerall Pomp, with a great deal of coſt and honor, according to the manner of the country, which laſted the two nights following. In concluſion, he was ſhewed the ſame robe all bloudy, that his father had on when he was killed; upon which he took a ſolemn oath, never to pardon any of them that ſhould be found guilty, no not if they were *Bonzes*; and to burn all the Temples whereinto thoſe traitors had fled for ſanctuary. The fourth day after his entry into the town, he was proclaimed King, though but with little ceremony and magnificence, in regard of the general mourning. That done, accompanied as he was, with an hundred and threeſcore thouſand men, he marched directly to the place, whither the mutiners were retired: Now to the end he might the more eaſily take them, and keep them from flying away; he beſieged them in the mountain where they were, and that for the ſpace of nine daies: But whereas they ſaw that they could hold out no longer for lack of victuals, and that they had no hope of ſuccor, they thought it was better for them to die like valiant men, then to let themſelves be beſieged like cowards; with this reſolution, under the favor of a very dark and rainy night, they deſcended from the mountain by four ſeverall waies, and falling on the Kings Army, which was ready to receive them in battel array, as having been advertiſed of their deſign, there enſued ſo dreadfull and furious a fight betwixt them, as it laſted two hours within day, but at length, the conflict ended with the death of ſeven and thirty thouſand men; amongſt the which, the ten thouſand Mutiners were ſlain, not one of them deigning to ſave himſelf upon any termes whatſoever. In the mean time, the death of his men greatly afflicted the King, who after this puniſhment of the rebels, retyring to the town, the firſt thing he did was to provide for the curing of the hurt men, wherein he ſpent a good time, in regard they were very many, and whereof a great number died afterwards.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXVI.

*Our passing from the Town of* Fucheo, *to the Port of* Hiamangoo; *and that which befell us there; together with my departure from* Malaca, *and arrival at* Goa.

After that this revolt had taken an end by the death of so many men on the one and the other side, we few *Portugals* that remained, as soon as time would permit us, got to the port of the town, where seeing the Country desolated, the merchants fled away, and the King resolved to leave the town, we lost all hope of selling our comodities, yea and of being safe in this harbour, which made us set sail, and go ninety leagues further to another Port, called *Hiamangoo*, which is in the bay of *Canguexumaa*; there vve sojourned tvvo months and an half, not able to sell any thing at all, because the country vvas so full of *Chinese* comodities, as they fell above half in half in the price: for there vvas not a Port or Read in all this Iland of *Japan*, vvhere there were not thirty or forty *Juncks* at anchor and in some places above an hundred; so that in the same very year, at least two thousand merchants ships came from *China* to *Japan*. Now most of this merchandise consisted in Silk, which was given at so cheap a rate, that the peece of Silk which at that time was worth an hundred Taies in *China*, was sold in *Japan* for eight and twenty, or thirty at the most, and that too with much adoe; besides, the prices of all other commodities were so low, as holding our selves utterly undone, we knew not what resolution or counsell to take. But whereas the Lord doth dispose of things according to his good pleasure, by waies which surpasse our understanding; he permitted, for reasons only known to himself, that on the new moon in December, being the fifth day of the month, there arose so furious a tempest of wind and rain, as all those vessels saving a few perished, in it: so that the losse caused by this storm, amounted unto a thousand, nine hundred, and seventy two *Juncks*; amongst the which, were six and twenty Portugals ships, wherein five hundred and two of our nation were drowned; besides, a thousand Christians of other Countries, and eight hundred thousand duckets worth of goods cast away. Of *Chinese* vessels, according to report, there were a thousand, nine hundred, thirty and six lost, together with above tvvo millions of gold, and an hundred and threescore thousand persons. Now from so miserable a ship-wrack, not above ten or eleven ships escaped, of which number, was that wherein I was imbarqued, and that almost by miracle; by reason whereof these same sold their commodities at what price they would. As for us, after we had uttered all ours, and prepared our selves for our departure, we put to sea on a twelfth day in the morning; and although we were well enough contented in regard of the profit we had made, yet were we not a little sad, to see things fall out so to the cost of so many lives and riches, both of those of our nation, and of strangers; But when we had weighed anchor, and hoisted our sailes for the prosecution of our course, the ties of our main sail brake; by which means, the sail yard falling down upon the [illegible] of the ship, brake all to peices; so that we were constrained by this accident, to recover the port again, and to send a shallop on shore to seek for a sail yard, and shipwrights to fit it for us. To this effect, we sent a present to the Captain of the place, that he might suddenly give us necessary succor, as accordingly he did; so that the very same day, the ship was put into her former estate, and better then before [illegible] Neverthelesse, as we were weighing anchor again, the cable of our anchor broke, and because we had but one more in the ship, we were forced to indeavor all that we might for the recovery thereof, by reason of the great need we stood in of it; now, to do this, we sent to land for such as could dive, who in consideration of ten duckets that we gave them, fell to diving into the sea, where they found our anchor in six and tvventy fathome depth, so that by the means [illegible] which we fastned unto it, vve hoysted it up, though vvith a great deal of labour, vvherein vve all of us bestovved our selves, and spent the most part of the night. As soon as it vvas day, vve set saile, and parting from this river of *Hiamangoo*, it pleased God, that in fourteen daies, vvith a good vvind, vve arrived at *Chincheo*, vvhich is one of the most renovvned and richest Ports of the Kingdome of *China*; there vve vvere advertised, that at the entrance of this river, there lay

lay at that time a famous Pirate, called *Cheopocheca*, vvith a mighty fleet, vvhich put us into ſuch a fear, that in all haſt vve got avvay to *Laman*, vvhere vve made ſome proviſion of victuals, vvhich laſted us vntill our arrivall at *Malaca*.

Having ſtayed ſome time at *Malaca*, for the diſpatch of certain affaires that I had there, I imbarqued my ſelf for *Goa*, vvithan intent or hope, to return into *Portugal*, if I could meet vvith ſhipping ready to depart from thence at that time; but ſome fevv daies after my arrivall there it happened, that a *Portugal* named *Antonio Ferreyra*, brought a preſent of very rich peeces to the Vice-Roy *Don Pedro Maſcarenhas*, which the King of *Bungo* ſent him from *Japan*, to getherwith a letter, whereof the contents were theſe, *Illuſtrious Lord, and of great majeſty, Vice-Roy of the limits of the Indiaes, the dreadfull Lion in the flouds of the ſea, by the force of thy ſhips and artillerie: I* Yacatanandono *King of* Bungo, Facatan, Omangucha, *and the Countries of the two ſeas, Lord of the petty Kings of the Ilands of* Toſa, Xemenarequa, *and* Miaygimaa, *do give thee to underſtand by this my letter, that Father* Franciſco Xavier *having been not long ſince in this Country, preaching to them of* Omangucha *the new law of the Creator of all things, I ſecretly promiſed to him, that at his return into my Kingdome I would receive from his hand the name and water of holy Baptiſm, howſoever the noveltie of ſo unexpected a thing might put me into bad terms with my ſubjects, Whereupon, he alſo promiſed me on his ſide, that if God gave him life, he would come back again unto me as ſpeedily as he could. And for aſmuch as his return hath been longer then I looked for, I have ſent thee expreſly to know both of him, and of you, the cauſe of this retardment of his. Wherefore my Lord, I deſire you, that he may haſten away to me with all the ſpeed that the firſt ſeaſon which ſhall be proper for navigation, will permit. For beſides, that his arrivall in my Kingdome is greatly important for the ſervice of God, it will be alſo very profitable to my ſelf, for the contracting of a new league with the great King of* Portugal, *to the end that by this amitie, my country and his may hereafter be but one thing, and that his ſubjects may in all our ports and rivers be as free as they are in your* Cochim *where you are; wherefore your Lordſhip ſhall exceedingly oblige me by ſending one unto me, that may be witneſſe of the deſire I have to ſerve your King; for I will do it as willingly, as the Sun is ready to haſten his courſe from the morning to the night. Moreover,* Antonio Ferreyra *will give thee the very ſame armes wherewith I vanquiſhed the Kings of* Fiangaa *and* Xemenarequa, *and which I wore in the day of battel. I am ready in all things to obey my elder Brother, that invincible King of the other end of the world, Lord of the treaſures of great* Portugal. The Vice-Roy having read this Letter, ſent for one father *Belquior*, Rector of the Colledg of the Jeſuits, and having imparted unto him the King of *Bungoes* deſire, he told him, that in regard Father *Xavier* was dead, he could wiſh that he would in his ſtead undertake this voyage to *Japan*, which in all probalitie would very much redound to the ſervice of God, and the propogation of the Chriſtian faith. The Rector upon the hearing hereof, willingly imbraced the imployment, wherewith the Vice-Roy was exceedingly well pleaſed, and very much commended him for ſuch his good and pious reſolution. After this, the Vice-Roy conſulting with ſome of his friends about the chuſing of a man, that in qualitie of his Ambaſſador, might accompany the Father in this expedition; I was nominated unto him, as the fitteſt he could fix upon, in regard of the knowledg I had, both of the Country, and of the then King thereof: whereupon, I was immediatly alſo ſent for, and the Vice-Roy acquainting me with the great deſire he had, that I ſhould take this negotiation upon me, which he ſaid, did ſo much import the honor of God, and the King our Maſters ſervice; he preſt me ſo earneſtly to it, that I knew not how to refuſe him, although I muſt confeſſe, I was very unwilling thereunto: So that conſenting to what I could not well avoide, he commanded that all things neceſſary for our voyage ſhould with all convenient ſpeed be prepared.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXVII.

*Father* Belquior's *and my departure from the Indiaes to go to* Japan, *and that which befell us till our arrivall at the Iſland of* Champeiloo.

FOurteen dayes after, namely on the ſixteenth of *April*, One thouſand five hundred fifty and four, Father *Belquior* and I ſet ſail for *Malaca* in a ſhip, wherein alſo was *Don Antonio de Noronha*, Son to *Don Garcia de Noronha*, who had been Vice-Roy of the Indiaes, that was going to take poſſeſſion of the Government of the Fortreſſe there; from the which the Vice-Roy had ſent order to diſplace *Don Alvaro de Tayda*, who was Captain of it, as well for that he would not obey his Commands, as for many other miſdemeanors which he had committed, whereof I will not ſpeak in particular here, becauſe they are altogether from my purpoſe at this time. The fifth day of June following, we and the new Captain arrived at *Malaca*, where the Licentiat *Gaſper Jorge* Superintendant Generall of the Indiaes, who was the man that proſecuted this buſineſſe, cauſed the people of the Town to aſſemble together upon the tolling of a Bell; and having read unto them the Vice-Roys Letters Patents, whereby he diſplaced *Don Alvaro*, he examined him upon divers Interrogatories, whereof two Regiſters made a verbal proceſs, which was ſigned both by them and the ſaid Superintendent, and the new Captain. After all this, *Don Alvaro* was depoſed from his Government, made a priſoner, and all his eſtate confiſcated: the like was done to all his partakers who had favoured him in the impriſoning of *Gamboa*, Superintendent of the Treaſure, and in diſobeying the Vice-Roys Commiſſions, as alſo in many other diſorders that had been committed thereupon: vvhich was executed with ſo much rigour, as the moſt part fled to the *Mahometens*, whereby the Fortreſſe remained ſo bare of men, as it was in danger of being undone, had not the new Captain provided for it with a great deal of prudence, granting a general Abolition unto all, although they returned for all that but with an ill will. Theſe revolutions, and this exceſſe of juſtice, which put all the Country into an uproar, were the cauſe that Father *Belquior* and I could not this year paſs unto *Japan*, as we had reſolved; ſo that we were conſtrained to winter at *Malaca* until *April* following, in the year One thouſand five hundred fifty and five, which was ten months. During that time, the Auditor *Gaſpar Jorge* continuing the rigorous executions which he exerciſed day by day, was a ſubject of great ſcandal to all the Country; vvherewith not yet contented, and relying on the large Commiſſion vvhich the Vice-Roy had given him, he would needs intermeddle with the Captain *Don Antonio's* Juriſdiction; and indeed, he incroached ſo far on his Authority, as *Don Antonio* had no more but the name of it, and was no other then as a guard of the Fortreſs. Now though he was very ſenſible of this affront, yet he did diſſemble and endure it with a great deal of patience: But theſe exceſſive rigours of this Auditor continuing for the ſpace of four months; during the which there vvere many diſcontentments, vvhereof I will not treat here in particular, becauſe the diſcourſe of it would be infinite. One day *Don Antonio*, ſeeing the time proper for the execution of that which he had formerly reſolved on, cauſed ſome, whom he had deſtined for it, to ſeiſe on him in the Fortreſs, and carry him to a private houſe; vvhere (according to report) he was ſtript ſtark naked, and his hands and feet being bound with cords, he was grievouſly whipped: After which, having drop'd ſcalding oyl on his bare fleſh, (which had almoſt killed him) and clapt irons on his legs, and manacles on his hands, they pluck'd off all the hair of his beard, leaving him not ſo much as one, and did many other ſuch like things unto him, as it was publickly ſpoken: ſo that the poor Licentiat *Gaſpar Jorge*, who termed himſelf Auditor Generall of the *Indiaes*, great Proviſor of the deceaſed and Orphelins, and Superintendent of the Treaſure of *Malaca*, and of the Countries of the South, for the King our Soveraign Lord, vvas thus handled by *Don Antonio*, if the report of it be true. Finally, when the ſeaſon of Navigation was come, he was ſent, ſo manacled as he was, to the *Indiaes*, with an infamous verball proceſs; which the Parliament of *Goa* annulled afterwards: And *Don Antonio* had thereupon an expreſſe Commandment from

from the Vice-Roy *Don Pedro de Maſcarenhas*, who governed the State of the *Indiaes* at that time, to appear perſonally before him as a Priſoner, for to be confronted in judgment with *Gaſpar Jorge*, and render an account of his proceeding againſt him; as indeed *Don Antonio* failed not in making his appearance at *Goa* accordingly: where being about to juſtifie himſelf for that which had paſt, he was ordered to anſwer within three dayes to an ignominious Libel, which *Gaſpar Jorge* had exhibited againſt him: But foraſmuch as *Don Antonio* was naturally an enemy of Juſtifications by Anſwers and Replyes, whereby it was ſaid, the Councellors of the Parliament intended to ſurprize him, the report went (at leaſt wiſe ſuch was the ſaying of Detractors; for as for me, I neither ſaw nor am aſſured of it) that in ſtead of imploying the three dayes which had been given him, in making anſwer to this Libell, hee vvithin four and twenty hours having met accidentally vvith *Gaſpar Jorge*, ſent him to proſecute his Suit in the other World, laying him ſo ſure on the ground, as he never roſe again. Howbeit, there are thoſe vvhich recount this Affair quite otherwiſe, and that ſay, how in a Feaſt, vvhereunto he was invited, hee vvas poyſoned. By this death of his all this difference vvas decided, and this buſineſſe vvholly ceaſed, ſo that *Don Antonio* vvas by Sentence abſolutely cleared, and ſent back to his Government: wherein he continued not above two months and a half, at the end vvhereof he died of a bloody Flux: and ſo vvere all the ſtorms of envie and diſcord vvherewith the Fortreſſe of *Malaca* had been beaten, appeaſed.

When the ſeaſon was come vvherein vve might continue our Voyage, on the *Sect.* 1. firſt day of *April*, in the year One thouſand five hundred fifty and five, wee parted from *Malaca*, after vvee had imbarqued our ſelves in a Carvel belonging to the King our Soveraign Lord, which *Don Antonio*, the Captain of the Fortreſſe gave us by the expreſſe command of the Vice-Roy. Three dayes after our putting to ſea, we arrived at an Iſland called *Pulho Piſan*, at the entering into the Streight of *Sincapura*, where the Pilot having never navigated that way before, ran us with full ſaile ſo dangerouſly on certain Rocks, as we thought our ſelves to be utterly loſt, without all hope of recovery: In regard whereof, by the advice of all the reſt, the Father and I were conſtrained to get into a Manchua, for to go and demand ſuccour of one *Luis Dalmeida*, who two hours before had paſſed by us in a Veſſell of his, and lay at anchor two leagues off us, by reaſon the winde was againſt him: So the Father and I made to him with peril enough. For whereas all that Country, which appertained to the King of *Jantana*, Grand-childe to him that had been King of *Malaca*, our mortall Enemy, were at that time in arms, his *Balons* and *Lanchares*, that were aſſembled in a Fleet of Warr, continually gave us chaſe, with an intention to take us; but by Gods providence we eſcaped them. At length, after we had got to this ſhip, with no little fear and trouble, he that was Captain of her furniſhed us with a Boat and Mariners, and ſo we returned to our Carvel as ſpeedily as we could, for to ſuccour and draw her out of the danger wherein we had left her: But it pleaſed the Lord that we found her the day after delivered from it; though it is true, that ſhe took in water abundantly in the prow's ſide; but in the end we ſtanched it at *Patana*, where we arrived ſeven dayes after. There I went aſhore with two others, to ſee the King; unto whom I delivered a Letter from the Captain of *Malaca*: and being received very graciouſly by him, he read it over, whereby he underſtood, that the cauſe of our coming thither was to provide our ſelves of victuals, and ſome other things which we had not taken in at *Malaca*; as alſo that we were reſolved to proceed on in our courſe directly to *China*, and from thence to *Japan*, where Father *Belquior* and others with him were to preach the Chriſtian Law to the Gentiles: vvhich the King of *Patana* having read, after he had muſed a little, he turned to them that were about him, and ſaid ſmiling to them, *O how much better were it for theſe men, ſince they expoſe themſelves to ſo many travels, to go to* China *and inrich themſelves there, then to recount tales in ſtrange Countreys?* Whereupon, calling the *Xabandar* to him, *Be ſure*, ſaid he unto him, *that thou giveſt theſe men here all that they ſhall demand of thee, and that for the love of the Captain of* Malaca, *who hath greatly re-*

*commended them unto mee: and above all remember, That it is not my custome to command a thing twice.* When we had taken leave of the King, exceedingly contented with the good reception he had given us, we fell presently to buying of Victuals, and other such things as we stood in need of; So that in eight dayes we were abundantly furnished with whatsoever was necessary for us. Being departed from this Haven of *Patana*, we sailed two dayes together with a South-east winde along by the coast of *Lugor* and *Siam*, traversing the Barr of *Cuy*, to go to *Pulho Cambim*, and from thence to the Islands of *Canton*, with an intent there to attend the conjunction of the new Moon: But it was our ill fortune to be surprized by East and South-east winde, (which raign in that Coast the most part of the year) whereof the violence was so great, that we were in fear to be cast away: so that to decline the event thereof, we were forced to tack about again to the Coast of *Malaya*; and arriving at an Island, called *Pullo Timan*, we ran into great danger there, as well by reason of the tempest which we had upon the sea, as in regard of the great treason of the people of the Country. Now after five dayes that we had continued there, without having either fresh water or victuals, because for the easing of our Vessell we had cast out all into the Sea, it pleased God that wee encountred with three *Portugal* Ships which came from *Sunda*, by whose arrivall we were very much comforted in our travels: Whereupon Father *Belquior* and I began to treat with the Captains of those Vessels about that which they thought was requisite we should do; and all were of the opinion, that we should send back the Carvel wherein wee vvere, to *Malaca*; saying, that there was no likelihood wee should be able to make so long a Voyage in her as that of *Japan*. Having approved of this counsel, we presently imbarqued our selves in the Ship of one *Francisco Toscano*, a Worshipfull and rich man, who defrayed our charge during all our Voyage, yea, and most part of the time that vve were in *China*, not permitting any of our Company to spend a peny. From this Island *Pullo Timan* we put to sea on Friday the seventh of *June* in the same yeer One thousand five hundred fifty and five, and discovering the firm land of the Kingdome of *Champaa*, we sailed along the Coast with a North-West winde, and in twelve dayes we arrived at an Island called *Pullo Champeiloo*, in the Straight of *Cauchenchina*, where we took in fresh vvater at a River which descended from an high Mountain. There amongst the Rocks we perceived a very-fair Cross graven on a great free Stone, and under it 1518, with six letters abbreviated, which said, *Duart Coelho*: We observed also towards the River, and on the South-side, two flight shot off, threescore and two men hanged on trees alongst the Strand, besides others that lay on the ground half eaten; a thing which seemed to have been done not above six or seven dayes before. Upon another tree there hung a great Banner, wherein these vvords vvere seen in *Chinese* letters, *Let every Ship or Junck which shall arrive in this place, be sure to dislodg quickly from thence after shee hath furnished her self with fresh Water, whether shee hath time, or hath it not; on pain of incurring the same justice as these wretches have done, whom the fury of the arm of the Son of the Sun hath overwhelmed.* Wee were mightily surprised vvith so strange an accident, so that vvee could make no other judgment of it, but that some *Chinese* Army had arrived there, and meeting with those vvretches, had (as Pirats use to do) intreated them as vve saw, under the specious pretext of Justice.

## CHAP. LXXVIII.

*Our departure from the Iland of* Champeiloo, *and our arrivall at that of* Lampacau; *with a relation of two great disasters which hapned in* China *unto two Portugal Colonies; and of a strange accident that befell in the Country.*

WHen we were parted from the Iland of *Champeloo*, we got to the Ilands of *Canton*, so that on the fifth day of our voyage, it pleased God that we arrived at one of them, called *Lampacau*, where at that time the *Portugals* excercised their commerce with the *Chineses*, which continued untill the year One thousand five hundred

dred, fifty and ſeven; when as the *Mandarins* of *Canton*, at the requeſt of the Merchants of the Country, gave us the port of *Macao*, where the trade now is; of which place (that was but a deſert Iland before) our country men made a very goodly plantation, wherein there were houſes worth three or four thouſand Duckats, together with a Cathedral Church: Moreover, this Colony hath its Governor, Auditor, and Officers of Juſtice; whereunto I ſhal add, that the inhabitants of this place are in as great ſafety there, as if they were in the quieteſt part of *Portugal*. But God grant of his infinite mercy, and goodneſſe, that this Colony may be of longer durance then that of *Liampoo*, which was another of the Portugals, and whereof I have ſpoken at large heretofore, being two hundred leagues from this ſame on the North Coaſt. But ill fortune would, that by the diſorder of one Portugal, it was demoliſhed in a very little time; in which diſaſter, I my ſelf was preſent, and can ſay, that the loſſe which was made there, as well of people, as of riches, was ineſtimable. For in this plantation, were three thouſand men, whereof twelve hundred were *Portugals*, and the reſt Chriſtians of divers nations: Yea, and I have heard many ſay, which ſpoke like knowing men thereof, that the Portugals traffick there, exceeded three millions of gold: Now, the moſt part of this traffick was in lingots of ſilver of *Japan*, which had been found out not above two months before, and was ſuch as a man doubled his mony three or four times by the commodities which he ſent thither. In this Colony, there was a Governor, who reſided in the Country; there were alſo an Auditor, Judges, Sheriffs, Aldermen, a Proviſor of the deceaſed and Orphelins, a town Clark, and all other Officers that are uſually in a Commonwealth; together with four publick Notaries, and ſix Regiſters, each of whoſe offices were ſold for three thouſand duckats; yea, and there were ſome farre dearer. There were alſo two Hoſpitals, wherein above thirty thouſand duckats was ſpent every year, and the Town houſe had in revenue ſix thouſand *per annum*; So that it was generally ſaid, that this Colony was the richeſt, and beſt peopled, of any that was in the Indiaes; beſides, for matter of extent, it had not its fellow in all *Aſia*. Furthermore, when the Regiſters or Secretaries paſſed any Grant, or when the publick Notaries made any writings, they ordinarily uſed theſe termes; *In this moſt noble and alwaies faithfull town of* Liampoo, *for the King our Soveraign Lord.* Now, having ſaid ſo much of it, I hold it not amiſſe to tell you, how and wherefore ſo noble and rich a Colony was deſtroyed, which arrived in this ſort. There was living there a man of a good extraction and rank, named *Lancerote Pereyra*, born at *Pont de Lima*, a town in *Portugal*; it is ſaid, that this ſame had lent ſome thouſand duckats to certain *Chineſes*, who were not men ſolvent, but became bankrupts, and never paid him any thing, nor could he hear any newes of them afterwards; which was the cauſe that deſiring to make good this loſſe, and to recover it of them which were not the occaſion of it, he aſſembled for that effect ſome eighteen or twenty *Portugals*, idle fellows, and of lewd diſpoſitions, with whom, under the favor of the night, he fell upon a village, ſome two leagues from thence, where he robbed eleven or twelve labouring men; and withall, ſeizing on their wives and children, killed about half a ſcore perſons, without any reaſon at all ſo to do. In the mean time, the Alarum being taken up by the whole country round about, by reaſon of this violence, the inhabitants went and complained to the *Chumbin* for Juſtice; and having made a verball proceſs of the buſineſſe, they preſented it in the name of the people to the *Chaem* of the Government, which is as one of the Vice-Roys of the Kingdome; who immediately thereupon, diſpatched away an *Haitan*, who is as an Admirall amongſt us, with an Army of three hundred Juncks, and four ſcore Vançons with Oares; wherein there were threeſcore thouſand men, which being all made ready in ſeventeen daies, came and fell on this misfortunate Colony, and the matter paſſed in ſo ſtrange a manner for them, as I muſt confeſſe, I have not capacity enough to recount it ſufficiently, neither underſtanding enough to imagine it; only it ſhall ſuffice me to ſay, as one who ſaw it, that in leſſe then the ſpace of five hours, which this dreadfull chaſtiſement of the hand of God indured; theſe cruell enemies, left not any thing at all in *Liampoo* to which one could give a name, for they demoliſhed and burnt all that they could find; they put to death withall twelve hundred Chriſtians, amongſt the which, were eight hundred *Portugals*, who were all burned alive in five and twenty ſhips,

and two and forty Juncks. It is ſaid, that in this common ruine, there was loſt to the value of two millions of Gold, as well in Lingots, Pepper, Sandal, Cloves, Mace, and Nutmeggs, as in other Commodities; and all theſe deſaſters arrived by the ill conſcience, and little judgment of an avaricious *Portugal*. Now, from this misfortune, was another fame greater derived; which was, that we loſt our credit and reputation ſo mightily over all the Country, as the inhabitants would no longer endure the ſight of us; ſaying, that we were divels incarnate, ingendred by the malediction of the wrath of God, for the puniſhment of ſinners. This hapned in the year, one thouſand, five hundred, forty and two, *Martim Alfonſo de Souſa* being Governor of the *Indies*, and *Ruy Vaz Pereyra Marramaque* Captain of *Malaca*. Two years after, the *Portugals* deſiring to make another new Colony in a Port, called *Chinchee*, in the ſame Kingdome of China, five leagues lower then *Liampoo*, with an intention to ſettle their trade there, the Merchants of the Country coming to conſider what great profit would redound to them thereby, intreated the *Mandarins* to make ſhew of permitting it, and obliged them thereunto with many great preſents; we had commerce then with thoſe of the Country about two yeares and an half, untill ſuch time as by the expreſſe command of *Simano de Mello*, Captain of the Fortreſſe, there was ſent into this place another man of the ſame humor as *Lancerote Pereyra* was of, unto whom the ſaid *Simano de Mello* gave a commiſſion to be Governor of this Port of *Chinchee*, and Proviſor of the Deceaſed: but the bruit went of him, that the extream covetouſneſſe wherewith he was poſſeſt, made him lay hands on all things, without any the leaſt reſpect to ought whatſoever. It hapned then that in his time there arrived in the Port of *Chinchee* a ſtranger, by nation an *Armenian*, who was held by every one for a very good Chriſtian: This man, who had an eſtate of ten or twelve thouſand duckets, and being a Chriſtian, as I have ſaid, and a ſtranger, as we were, paſſed out of a *Mahometans* Junck, wherein he was, into the ſhip of a *Portugal*, named *Luis de Monteroyo*. Now having lived ſome ſix or ſeven months very peaceably amongſt us, and much reſpected and favored of every one, he chanced to fall ſick of a feaver, whereof he died; but before he gave up the Ghoſt, he declared by his Teſtament, that he had a wife and children in a town of *Armenia*, called *Gaberem*, and that of his twelve thouſand duckets eſtate he left two thouſand to the Hoſpitall at *Malaca*; and for the reſt, he deſired it might be kept in ſafe hands, untill there were an opportunity to have conſigned it unto his children, as to his lawfull heirs; and in caſe they were dead, he left it to the Hoſpitall. Behold, what was the Teſtament of this faithfull Chriſtian, who was no ſooner buried, but *Ayres Botelho de Souſa*, Proviſor of the dead, ſeized on all his eſtate, without making any Inventorie, or other kind of accompt, ſaying, that before any farther proceeding therein, they were to ſend to make enquiry in *Armenia*, which was above two thouſand leagues from thence, to ſee whether there were not ſome ingagements, or ſeizure of Juſtice upon it: There arrived alſo at the ſame time, two *Chineſe* Merchants, who had to the value of three thouſand duckets in ſilk, peeces of damaske, muſk, and porcelaines, appertaining to the deceaſed *Armenian*: the Proviſor arreſted them all, and not contented therewith, he would needs make the *Chineſes* beleeve, that all the merchandiſe which they had, belonged alſo unto the *Armenian*; ſo that under the pretext thereof, he took eight thouſand duckets from them, and bid them go to *Goa* and there demand juſtice of the Proviſor Generall, by reaſon he could do no otherwiſe then he did; for that, he was obliged to deal in that ſort by the duty of his Charge. Now, not to ſtand upon the delivering of the reaſons, which in vain were alledged by them againſt this injuſtice of his; I will only ſay, that theſe two Merchants returning home without any of their merchandiſe, went with their Wives and Children, and caſting themſelves at the *Chaems* feet, repreſented unto him in a Petition the whole buſineſſe, as it paſt: informing him, moreover, that we were men quite void of the fear of God. The *Chaem* willing to do juſtice then to theſe Merchants, and to many others which had formerly complained againſt us, cauſed it to be every where proclaimed, that no man on pain of death ſhould converſe with us; whereupon, the ſcarcity of victuals came to be ſo great amongſt us, as that which was wont to be bought for ſix blanks, was then worth above a ducket; ſo that neceſſity conſtrained us to go unto certain hamlets; where-

whereupon enſued ſuch diſorders, as all the Country roſe up againſt us with ſo much hatred and fury, that ſixteen daies after we were ſet upon by an Army of an hundred and twenty very great Juncke, which intreated us in that manner for our ſins, as of thirteen ſhips which we had in the Port, there was not one that was not burnt; and of five hundred *Portugals* which were abiding in the Country, thirty only eſcaped, who had not the worth of a penny left them. From theſe two ſad hiſtories, recounted by me, I inferre, that it ſeemes the Affairs which we have now in *China*, and the tranquillity and confidence wherewith we live there, (ſuppoſing that the treaties of peace which we have with them be firm and aſſured) wil laſt but til our ſins ſhal ſerve for motives to the inhabitants of the Country to mutine againſt us, which God of his infinite mercy, permit not for the time to come. To return again now to my former diſcourſe, you muſt underſtand, that after we were arrived at the Port of *Lampacau*, as I have declared before, we could not meet with any veſſel that was bound for *Japan*; ſo that we were conſtrained to paſſe another year too in this Port, with a deſign in May following, which was ten months off, to continue our voyage as we had reſolved.

Father *Belquior* and I perceiving that there was no hope of going to *Japan* this yeare, as well for that the ſeaſon was paſt, as for other inconveniences that fell out, we were forced to ſtay in this Iland till the time ſhould ſerve for us to make our voyage thither. Having continued there then til the ſeventeenth of Feb. following, certain news came to us from *Cantan*, that on the third day of the ſame month the Province of *Sanſy* had been ſwallowed up in the manner enſuing. The firſt day of Frebruary, the earth fel a trembling from eleven til one of the clock at night, and the next day from midnight til two in the morning; as alſo the day following from one til three: During this trembling it was a dreadful thing to hear the terrible noiſe which the ſtormes and thunder made: After all this ſuch an horrible inundation of waters borke forth out of the center of the earth, as in an inſtant, all the Country about, was ſwallowed up threeſcore leagues round, without the ſaving of any living creature from periſhing, but only of one child of ſeven years of age, and which was for a great wonder preſented to the King of *China*. In the mean time this news was no ſooner come to the City of *Cantan*, but all the inhabitants thereof were terrifyed with it, yea and all ours were ſo amazed at it, that holding it for an unpoſſible thing, fourteen of our company would needs go thither to know the truth thereof; which they immediately put in execution, and at their return affirmed, that the matter was very certain, whereof an atteſtation was made, ſigned by fourteen ocular witneſſes, who had been upon the place; which atteſtation was afterwards ſent by *Franciſco Teſcano* to the King of *Portugal*, *Don Joano* the third of glorious memory. This prodigious event ſo affrighted the inhabitants of the City of *Cantan*, that all of them generally teſtified a world of repentance; and although they were Gentiles, yet muſt it be acknowledged that they confounded us Chriſtians, who ſaw how far their devotion extended. For on the firſt day when the newes thereof arrived there, Proclamations were made throughout all the Principall ſtreets of the City by ſix men on horſeback, who in long mourning robes, and with a ſad and lamentable voice, rode crying out theſe words; *Miſerable creatures as you are, that ceaſe not from offending day by day, the Lord of all things: Heare, O heare, the moſt lamentable and dreadfull adventure that ever was; For you are to know, that for our ſins God hath drawn the ſword of his Divine Juſtice againſt all the people of* Cuy *and* Sanſy, *overwhelming pell mell with water, fire, and tempeſts from Heaven all that great Province of* China, *none being ſaved but one only Child which is carried to the Son of the Sun.* And thereupon, they rung a little bell thrice, which they had in their hands; Then all the people proſtrating themſelves on the ground, ſaid with fearfull cryes, *God is juſt in all that he doth.* After this was paſt, all the inhabitants retired into their houſes, which were ſhut up for five daies together, ſo that the City was ſo deſolate, as there was not a living creature ſeen ſtirring in it. At the end of the five daies, the *Chaem* and the *Anchaſſis* of the government, together with all the reſt of the people (wherein the men only were comprehended, for as for the women, they held them unworthy of being heard of God, by reaſon of the diſobedience of the firſt [illegible] vvent as it were in proceſſion

ſion, thorow the principall Streets of the Citie, while their Prieſts, which vvere above five thouſand in number, cryed with a loud voyce that pierced the very skies, *O marvellous and pitifull Lord, have no regard to our wickedneſſe; for if thou takeſt account of them, we ſhall remain dumb before thee.* Whereunto all the people with an other fearfull cry, anſwered, *Lord, we confeſſe our faults before thee.* And ſo the Proceſſion continuing, ſtill going on, they at length arrived at a magnificent Temple, called *Nacapyran*, whom they hold for the Queen of Heaven, as I have heretofore related. From thence they went the next day to another Temple, called *The God of Juſtice:* and in this ſort they continued fourteen dayes; during which, were great Alms generally beſtowed, and many priſoners freed; alſo divers Sacrifices were made of the odoriferous perfumes of Aloes and Benjamin: There were many others too, wherein there was good ſtore of blood ſhed, and wherein many Kine, Stags and Swine vvere offered, vvhich were all diſtributed in almes to the poor. In purſuance whereof, during the three months that we abode there, they continued in doing many other good works, which were performed vvith ſo much charge and charity, as it is to be beleeved, that if the Faith of Jeſus Chriſt had been added thereunto, they would have been acceptable unto him. We heard afterwards, and this report was univerſall over all the Country, that during the three dayes of that Earth-quake at *Sanſy*, it had ſtill rained blood in the City of *Pequin*, vvhere the King of *China*'s Court was at that time, vvhich made the *moſt* part of the inhabitants to forſake it, and the King to fly to *Nanquin*, vvhere, it was ſaid, he gave great alms, and ſet at liberty an infinite many of Slaves; amongſt the which were five *Portugals*, vvho had been retained priſoners in the Town of *Pocaſſer* above twenty yeers together. When theſe came to *Cantan*, they recounted unto us divers marvellous things; and amongſt others, they told us, that the almes which the King had given upon this occaſion, amounted to ſix hundred thouſand Duckats, beſides the magnificent Temples which he built to appeaſe the vvrath of God; amongſt the which hee made one in that very City, very ſumptuous, and of great majeſty, under the title of *The Love of God.*

## CHAP. LXXIX.

### *Our arrival in the Kingdome of* Bungo, *and that which paſs'd there.*

THe ſeaſon being come vvherein vve might continue our Voyage, vve parted from this Iſland of *Lampacan* the ſeventh day of *May*, One thouſand five hundred fifty and ſix, after vve had imbarqued our ſelves in a Ship, vvhereof *Don Franciſco de Maſcarenhas*, ſurnamed *Pallia*, vvas Captain. So vve proceeded on in our courſe for fourteen dayes together; at the end whereof vve diſcovered the firſt Iſlands, at the height of five and thirty degrees; and vvhich by gradation regard the Weſt, North-vveſt of *Tanixumaa*: vvhereupon, the Pilot knowing that it vvas ill ſailing there, ſteered to the South-vveſt, to finde out the point of the Mountain of *Minatoo*: We coaſted *Tanoraa* then, and ſtill ran along this coaſt to the Port of *Finngaa*. And foraſmuch as in this Climate the windes are Northerly, and that the current of the vvater vvas contrary to them, the Pilot had a very bad opinion of his Navigation; ſo that vvhen he came to know his fault, although out of an accuſtomed obſtinacy of Mariners, he vvould not confeſs it, vve vvere already paſt threeſcore leagues beyond the Port vvhere vve meant to arrive; by reaſon vvhereof, we vvere fain to tack about for the recovery of it fifteen dayes after, though with travell enough, for that the vvindes were croſſe; and (without lying) our goods and lives were in no little jeopardy, by reaſon all this Coaſt was riſen up againſt the King of *Bungo* our Friend, and the inhabitants, who vvere greatly inclined to the Law of the Lord, vvhich had formerly been preached unto them. At length, after that by the mercy of God vve had got to the Town of *Fucheo*, vvhereof I have oftentimes ſpoken, which is the capitall of the Kingdom of *Bungo*, where the chiefeſt Chriſtians of all *Japan* do now flouriſh; all they of the Ship thought it requiſite that I ſhould go to the Fortreſſe of *Oſquy*, where we heard the King then was: Now though I feared to undertake this Journey, in regard the Country was all up, yet I reſolved

reſolved for it, at the perſwaſion of them of the ſhip, who all in generall intreated me very earneſtly unto it. Having prepared my ſelf then, and received a Preſent worth five hundred Crowns, which *Don Franciſco*, Captain of the Ship ſent to the King, I took four of my companions with me, and ſo went away. After I was landed at the Town Key, the firſt thing I did was to go to the houſe of the Admirall of the Sea, who received me with great demonſtrations of friendſhip, and confirmed me againſt the fear I was in; whereupon, having given him an account of the cauſe of my coming thither, I deſired him to give me horſes and men that might conduct me to the King; which moſt willingly he did, and more freely then I required. Being departed from this Town, the next morning about nine of the clock I arrived at a place called *Fingan*, which might be a quarter of a league from the Fortreſſe of *Oſquy*; There I ſent one of thoſe of *Japan*, which I had with me, to let the Captain of the place underſtand that I was arrived, and that I had an Embaſſie to deliver to his Highneſſe from the Vice-Roy of the *Indiaes*: In which regard, I intreated him *to appoint me ſuch a time as he pleaſed, that I might ſpeak with him.* Hereunto he returned me this anſwer by a Son of his, *That my Companions and I were very welcome, and that the King was in the Iſle of* Xequa, *where he was entertaining himſelf in the catching of a great Fiſh, whereof the name was not known, and which was come thither from the bottom of the Sea, with a great number of many other little fiſhes: and that having cooped him up in a Channel there, it was likely that he would ſpend all the day in that ſport, and not return till night: But that he would howſoever immediately advertiſe him of my arrivall.* Thereupon he ſent me to repoſe my ſelf in a better lodging which he gave me, where I was abundantly furniſhed with all that was neceſſary for mee; yea, and he told me by way of Complement, that all this Country was no leſſe the King of *Portugals*, then *Malaca, Cochin and Goa.* Then one of his Followers, whom he had appointed to wait on us, gave us an extraordinary good reception in a *Pagode*, whereof the *Bonzes* made us a very ſumptuous Feaſt. In the mean time, the King having notice of my arrivall, diſpatched away from the Iſland where hee was catching that great Fiſh, three light Galleys, and in them his Chamberlain, a great Favourite of his, named *Oretandano*, who about evening came to me to the place where I was, and having told me that by word of mouth which the King had enjoyned him, he drew forth a Letter, and having kiſſed it with the Ceremonies and Complements uſed amongſt them, he delivered it unto me, wherein I found this written, *Being at this preſent imployed in an exerciſe which is very pleaſing unto me, I have been advertiſed of thy arrival in my Country, wherewith I am ſo contented, that I proteſt unto thee, I would have come away preſently unto thee, had I not ſworn that I would not part from hence, till I had killed a great Fiſh which I hold coop'd up here: Wherefore I intreat thee, as my good Friend, ſince by reaſon thereof I cannot go to thee, that thou wilt come thy ſelf to me in this Veſſel which I have ſent for thee: for on thy coming, and on the death which I hope to give to this Fiſh, my perfect content depends.* Having read this Letter, I inſtantly imbarked my ſelf in the Galley wherein *Oretandono* came for me, and my followers in the other two, with the Preſent they carried. And foraſmuch as thoſe Galleys were very ſwift, we arrived within leſſe then an hour at the Iſland, which was ſome two leagues and an half off. Now we came thither at ſuch time as the King, with above two hundred men in boats, with darts in their hands, was purſuing a prodigious Whale, which was altogether unknown and ſtrange to them, as having never ſeen ſuch a Fiſh before in all that Country. After they had killed and drawn it to land, the King was ſo pleaſed therewith, that to recompence all the fiſhermen that were imployed in the action, he exempted them from a certain Tribute which they had accuſtomed to pay before: as alſo conferred new Honours on ſome Gentlemen whom he loved, and that were there with him, and gave a thouſand *Taeis* in ſilver to his Pages: withall, he received me with a ſmiling countenance, and queſtioned me very exactly about many particulars; whereunto I anſwered the beſt that I could, alwayes adding ſomething of mine own thereunto, as judging it neceſſary for the increaſing of the Portugals reputation, and of the great

eſteem

eſteem vvherein we vvere at that time in the Country; for all the inhabitants held it for moſt certain, that the King of *Portugal* was indeed the only Prince, which might terme himſelf the Monarch of the world, as well for the large extent of his territories, as for his power, and mighty treaſure; in regard whereof chiefly they of theſe Countryes made great account of our amitie. Theſe things done, the King vvent from this Iland towards *Oſquy*, and about an hour within night he arrived at his Caſtle, vvhere he was received with a great deal of rejoycing, and applaued by every one for ſo honourable an exploit, as that of killing the Whale, attributing to him alone, that which all the reſt had done; whereby one may ſee, that this pernicious vice of flatttery raigns ſo abſolutely in the Courts of Princes, as it hath eſtabliſhed its ſelf a place even amongſt the very Gentiles and Infidels. The King having diſmiſſed all them that had accompanied him, vvent to Sup with his Wife and Daughters, and would not then be attended on by any body, becauſe the feaſt was made at his vvives charge. And whereas vve vvere then at a Treaſurers houſe of his, where vve vvere appointed to lodg, he ſent for us all five, and intreated us that vve ſhould eat in his preſence after the manner of our Country, adding, that the Queen did infinitely deſire it. Then having cauſed a table to be covered for us, and on it placed ſtore of excellent good meat and vvell dreſt, vvhich vvas ſerved up by very fair vvomen; vve fell to eating after our manner, of all that vvas ſet before us, vvhileſt the jeaſts vvhich the Ladies broke upon us, in ſeeing us feed ſo vvith our hands, gave more delight to the King and Queen, then all the Comedies that could have been repreſented before them: for thoſe people being accuſtomed to feed vvith tvvo little ſticks, as I have declared elſevvhere, they hold it for a great incivilitie, to touch the meat with ones hand, as we uſe to do. Hereupon the Kings Daughter, a marvellous fair Princeſſe, and not above fourteen or fifteen years of age, craved leave of the Queen her Mother, that ſhe and ſix or ſeven of her companions might preſent a certain Play before them concerning the ſubject in queſtion; which the Queen with the Kings conſent granted her. That done, they withdrew into another room, where they ſtayed a pretty while, during the which, they that remained in the place, drove away the time at our coſt, by jeering and gibing at us, who were much aſhamed, eſpecially my four companions, which were but novices in the Country, and underſtood not the language; for as for me, I had before ſeen ſuch a like Comedy acted at *Tainxuma* againſt the *Portugals*. As we were thus miniſtring matter for the Company to laugh at us, and ſetting the beſt face on it that poſſibly we could amidſt theſe affronts, in regard of the great pleaſure which we obſerved the King and Queen took therein, we ſaw the young Princeſſe come out of the other room diſguiſed like a Merchant, wearing a Symiter by her ſide, covered all over with plates of gold; and the reſt of her habit anſwerable to the perſon which ſhe repreſented. In this equipage falling down on her knee before the King her father, with the reſpect ſhe owed to him, *Moſt mighty Lord and King* (ſaid ſhe unto him) *albeit this my boldneſſe be worthy of great chaſtiſement, in regard of the inequalitie which it hath pleaſed God to put between your greatneſſe and my baſeneſſe; yet the neceſſity whereunto I find my ſelf reduced, makes me ſhut my eyes againſt all that may happen to me thereby; For being old as I am, and charged with many Children, which I have had by ſeverall Wives, with whom I have been married, my extream poverty, and the deſire I have not to leave them deſtitute of means, hath made me have recourſe to my friends for help, which they have granted me; So that having employed the mony which they have lent me, in a certain Commoditie, which I cannot ſell in all* Japan; *I have reſolved to barter it away for any other whatſoever it be: And having complained hereof to ſome freinds that I have at* Meacoo, *they have aſſured me that your Highneſſe may doe me ſome good. Wherefore, my Lord, I humbly beſeech you, that in conſideration of theſe white haires, and feeble age, as alſo for that I have many Children, and am poor, you will be pleaſed to aſſiſt me in my need, which will be an almes very well beſtowed, and moſt agreeable to the* Chenchicos, *which are lately arrived here in their Ship; for this commoditie of mine will accommodate them better then any other, in regard of the want they have continually thereof.* Whileſt this diſcourſe laſted,

the

the King and Queen could not forbear laughing, to ſee that this old Merchant, who had ſo many children, and ſo many incommodities, was the Princeſſe their Daughter, very young, and exceeding beautifull: But the King forbearing a little from laughing, anſwered her with a great deal of gravity, that ſhee ſhould ſhew ſome ſamples of the Merchandize which ſhe had, and if it were ſuch as would accommodate us, he would deſire us to buy it. At theſe words, the pretended Merchant having made a very low obeyſance, retired into the other room again. In the mean time, we were ſo confounded with what we heard and ſaw, as we could not tell what to think, or what ſhould be the event of it; whileſt the vvomen which were in the room, being about three ſcore in number, (for there were no other men but we five there) fell to jogging one another, and laughing at us. Hereupon, the Merchant comes in again,, bringing with her ſix fair young maids, richly clad, and diſguiſed alſo like Merchants, carrying ſamples of the Merchandize they had to ſell: They had Scymiters and Daggers by their ſides all guilt, with grave countenances and high looks, being all of them Daughters to the greateſt Lords of the Kingdom, whom the Princeſſe had expreſly choſen to act this Play with her. Each of theſe ſix Damſels bare on her ſhoulder a fardle of green Taffata, and all of them together, ſeeming to be Merchants ſons, danced a Ball to the tune of two Harps and a Viol, and ever and anon ſung in verſe with a very ſweet and melodious voyce, words of this ſubſtance, *High and mighty Lord, by the riches which thou poſſeſſeſt, we pray thee to think of our poverty; we are miſerable creatures in this ſtrange Country, and conſequently deſpiſed by the inhabitants thereof, which expoſeth us to great affronts: wherefore we beſeech thee by that which thou art, be mindfull of our poverty.* After that theſe young Merchants had finiſhed their Dance and Song, they fell all on their knees before the King, and then the eldeſt of them having rendred him moſt humble thanks for the favour he did them, in helping them away with their Merchandize, they untied all their fardles, and let fall in the midſt of the room a great number of woodden arms with hands, the ſaid eldeſt of them ſaying with a very good grace, *Since that Nature for our ſins hath ſubjected us to ſo villanous a miſery, that our hands muſt of neceſſity ſmell alwayes of fleſh or fiſh, or of ſuch other meat as wee eat with them, this Merchandize will greatly accommodate us, to the end that whileſt we make uſe of one ſort of hands, the other may be waſhed.* The King and Queen fell heartily a laughing at this Speech; vvhereas in the mean time we five were ſo aſhamed, as the King perceiving it, deſired us to take it in good part, ſaying, That the Princeſſe his Daughter had done this to no other end, but for the better entertainment of us, vvhom ſhe reſpected as her Brothers. Whereunto vve made anſwer, That *we hoped God our Maſter would reward his Highneſſe for this honour and grace that he did us; which we confeſs'd was very great, and for ſuch wee would publiſh it over all the world as long as we lived:* Wherewith the King, Queen and Princeſſe ſhewed themſelves very vvell ſatisfied, giving us thanks vvith many complements after their manner: yea, and the Princeſſe ſaid to us moreover, *If your God would take me for his ſervant, I ſhould endeavour the beſt I could to pleaſe him: but I hope he will not forget me.* At theſe vvords vve proſtrated our ſelves on our knees before her, and kiſſing the hem of her garment, vve anſwered her, *That we hoped no leſſe of her, and that in caſe ſhee became a Chriſtian, we ſhould ſee her Queen of Portugal:* Whereupon the Queen her Mother and ſhe fell a laughing. Having taken leave then of the King, vve returned to our lodging, and the next morning as ſoon as it vvas day, he ſent for us again, and queſtioned us very exactly about the coming of Father *Belquior*, the intention of the Vice-Roy, the Letter which I had brought from him; our Ship, and the goods that were in her; and many other things, wherein we ſpent four hours at the leaſt; after which he diſmiſſed us, ſaying, that within ſix dayes he would be at the Town, and that there he would receive the Letter, ſee the Father, and make anſwer to all.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXX.

*My reception by the King of* Bungo, *as Ambassador from the Vice-Roy of the Indiaes.*

After the six daies were past the King parted from *Osquy* to go to the town of *Fucheo*, accompanied with a great number of Nobilitie, and a guard of [illegible] hundred foot, and two hundred horse, which made a goodly shew. Being arrived there, he was received by the people with great demonstrations of joy, with Shewes, Interludes, and many other inventions after their manner, that were very costly; after which, he went to his Palace, an exceeding fair and magnificent structure, whither the next day he sent for me, and bid me bring him the Vice-Roys Letter, as being come for no other end but to receive it; and that after he had read it, he would speak with Father *Belquior* touching the matters that were most important. Whereupon I presently returned to my lodging, and having made ready all that was necessary for me, about two of the clock in the afternoon, the King sent the Captain of the town, and four other of the chiefest men of the Court for me; who conducted me to the Palace, accompanied with forty *Portugals*, which marched all on foot, because it is the custome of the Country so to do. All the streets thorow which we past, were very handsomly set forth, and there was such a world of people, as the officers had much adoe to make way for us. Three *Portugals* on horseback, carried each of them a peece of the present; and a little after them followed two curious Spanish Gennets, with rich Saddles and Trappings, and with such Armes as are used in Justs. Upon our arrival at the first court of the Palace, we found the King there on a scaffold, which had been erected expresly for him, accompanied with all the Lords of the Kingdome, amongst whom, were the Ambassadors of three strange Princes, namely the first of the King of the *Lequios*, the second of the King of *Chauchim*, and Isle of *Tosa*, and the third of the Emperor of the *Miacoo*; and round about as far as the court extended, there were above a thousand harquebuziers, and four hundred men mounted on good horses, besides a multitude of people without number. After that the forty *Portugals* and I were come to the Scaffold where the King was, we performed all the ceremonies and complements which are used to be done to him in such cases; and then approaching a little neerer to him, I delivered him the Letter from the vice-Roy, which he would not receive but [illegible]ding. Then being set down again in his place, he gave it to one about him [illegible] was as his Secretary who read it aloud that every one might hear. After it was [illegible] the King questioned me before the three strange Ambassadors, and the great [illegible] with whom he was accompanied, about certain things which he was curious to [illegible] touching our *Europe*; whereof one was, how many men, armed *cap-a-pe*, and mounted on such horses as those were that I saw there, the King of *Portugal* could bring [illegible] to the field? Whereupon fearing least I should blush if I came to tell a lie; I must confesse, that I was much troubled how to answer, which one of my companions who was neer me, perceiving, speaking for me, made answer; That he could bring an hundred or sixscore thousand; a matter whereat the King was much abashed, and I too: But the King taking pleasure as it seemed, in the marvellous answer which this *Portugal* gave him, bestovved above an hours time in asking him questions. In the mean season, even the King himself, and all they that were present with him, being exceedingly amazed to hear such great and strange things delivered, he turned to them and said; *I sware truly unto you, that I should desire nothing much in the world, as to see the Monarchy of this great Country, whereof I have heard such wonderfull things, as well concerning the immence treasures, and the infinite number of ships which he hath; for could I but once do this, I should live very well contented the rest of my daies.* Thereupon having sent me, and those that accompanied me away, he said unto me, *When thou shalt think it a fit time, thou maiest bid the Father come unto me, for he shall find me ready here to receive him.*

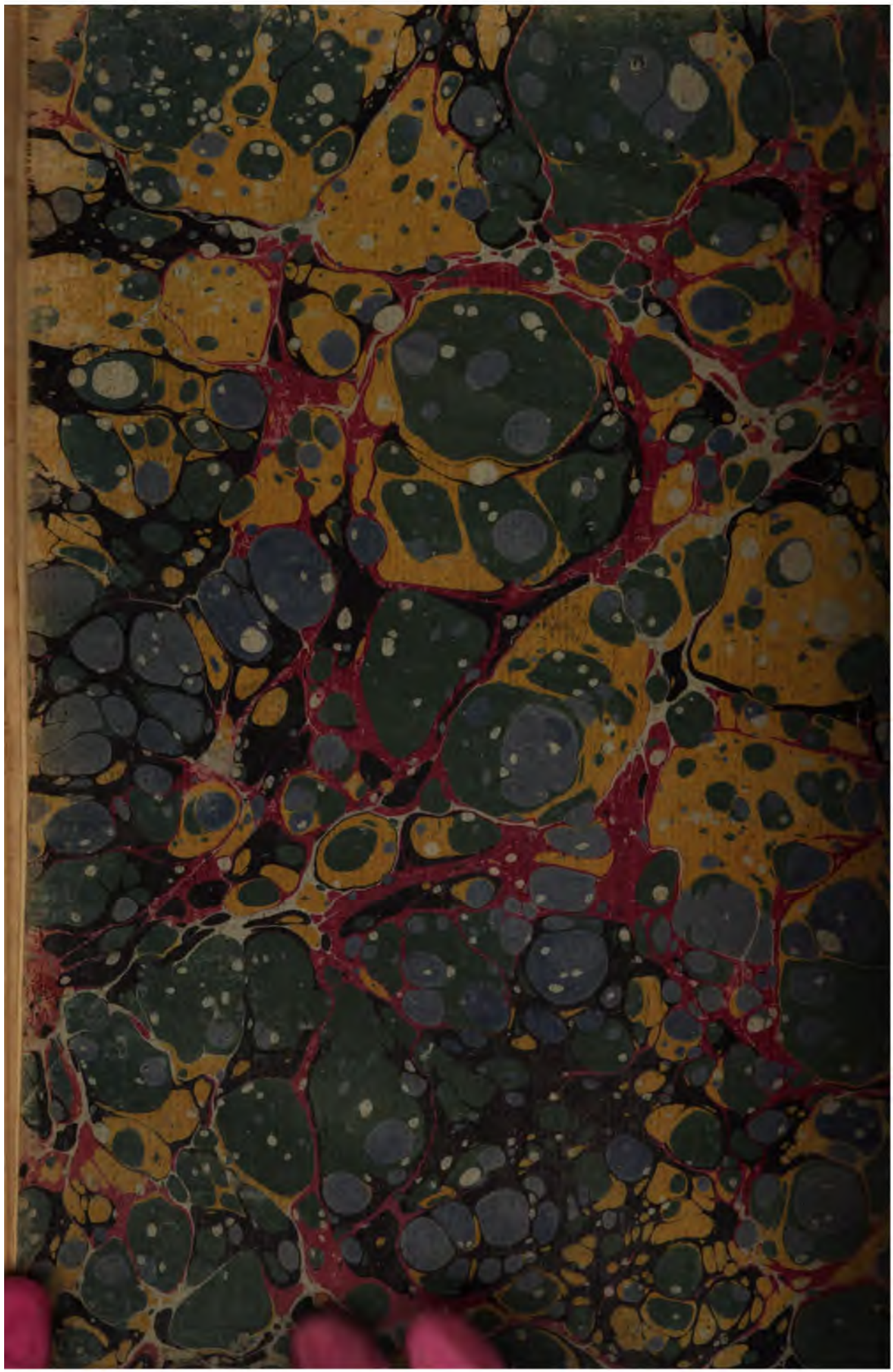
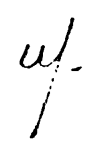
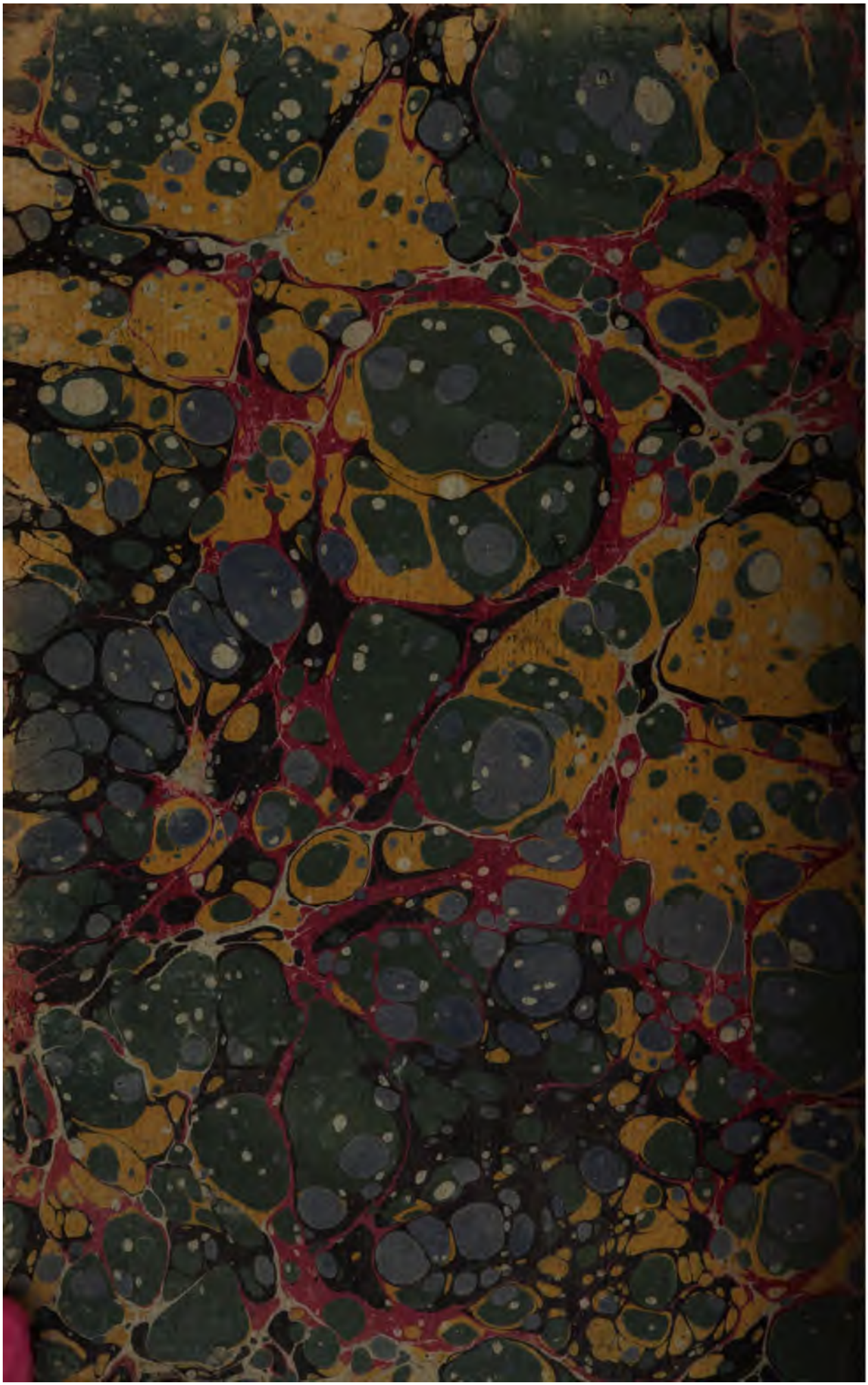
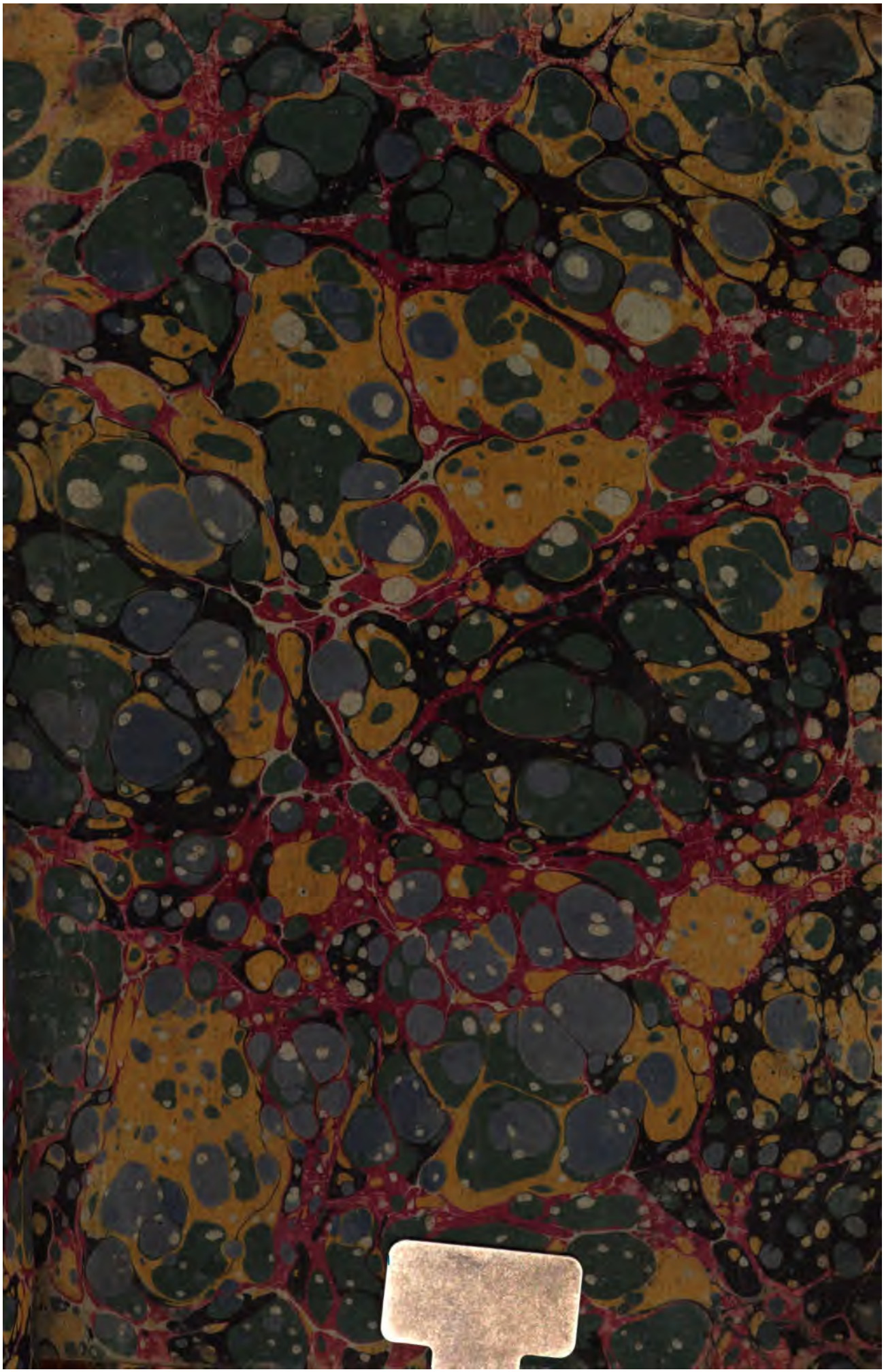
Aft

After I was retired to my lodging, I gave Father *Belquior* an accompt of the Kings good reception of me, together with all that had paſt beſides, and how deſirous he was to ſee him; in regard whereof I held it fit, ſince all the *Portugals* vvere then together, and in their beſt clothes, that he ſhould go to him out of hand, which he liked very vvell of. Having furniſhed himſelf then with certain things neceſſary for the better ſetting forth of his perſon, he and I went avvay, accompanied vvith forty *Portugals*, all very well apparrelled, and vvearing chaines of gold Scarfe-wiſe; and four pretty boyes in caſſocks, and hats of white taffata, and ſilken croſſes on their breſts, together with a converted *Japanois*, Chriſtened *Joana Fernandez*, to ſerve for Interpreter. When wee vvere arrived at the firſt Court of the Kings Palace, we found ſome Lords attending us there, who vvith a great deal of courteſie and demonſtrations of friendſhip brought the Father and me up to a chamber where the King ſtayed for him, who having taken him by the hand with a joyfull countenance, ſaid unto him; *Beleeve me, Father, this day is the only one that I can call mine, in regard of the extreme pleaſure I take to ſee thee before mine eyes, becauſe, me thinks, I ſee Father* Xavier, *to whom I wiſhed as well as to mine own perſon:* Then leading him into another inner chamber, that was richlyer furniſhed, he ſet him down by him, and made very much of the four little Boyes, for that it was a new thing to him, and never ſeen in that Country before. The Father rendred him thanks conformable to the great honor he did him, and after that manner which they are wont to uſe amongſt themſelves, and which *Joana Fernandez* had taught him. After this, he entertained him with the principall cauſe of his coming, which was, that the Vice-Roy had ſent him expreſly to ſerve him, and to ſhew him the aſſured way of ſalvation; which the King ſeemed to like of, by his action of bowing down of his head: The Father going on, made an holy ſpeech ſomewhat like unto a Sermon unto him, agreeable to the buſineſſe in hand; and which, he had directly ſtudied for that purpoſe. Whereunto the King made this anſwer, *Good Father, I know not how to expreſſe the great content which I take in ſeeing thee in this houſe, and in learning all that which my ears have heard thee ſay; which I do not anſwer for the preſent, in regard the affaires of my State are ſuch, as thou maieſt peradventure have heard: Wherefore, I earneſtly intreat thee, ſince God hath brought thee hither, that thou wilt repoſe thee a while from the travel which thou haſt endured for his ſervice. And as for that which the Vice-Roy hath written to me, touching the buſineſſe which I ſent to him about by* Antonio Ferreyra, *I ſtill avow it; but the Affaires of the preſent time, are reduced to that paſſe, as I am much afraid, if my ſubjects ſee any change in me, that they will approve of the* Bonzoes *counſel; Beſides, I make no queſtion but the Chriſtians which are here, have told thee the great danger I run in this Country, by reaſon of the mutinies that have paſt here, during the which, I have been in as great jeopardy as any other; ſo that for the ſafety of my perſon, I have been inforced to execute in one morning thirteen of the Principalleſt Lords of my Kingdome, together with ſixteen thouſand perſons of their faction and league, beſides as many more which I have baniſhed. But if it ever happen, that God ſhall grant me that which my ſoul deſires of him, I ſhall hold it a ſmall matter, to conſent to what the Vice-Roy adviſes me by his Letter.* Hereunto, the Father replied, *That he was greatly ſatisfied with his holy reſolution; but he was to remember, that his life was not in the hands of men, becauſe they were mortall; and that if he ſhould chance to die before he effected it, what would then become of his ſoul?* To which he anſwered ſmiling, *God knows.* The Father ſeeing that he could receive no other ſatisfaction from the King at that preſent but good words, without making any concluſion on a matter that was ſo important for him, diſſembled with him, and changing diſcourſe, talked to him of other things, wherein he knew he took more pleaſure. So, having ſpent the moſt part of the night with the Father, in queſtioning him about divers novelties, whereunto he was much affected, he diſmiſſed him in very plauſible termes, with hope that he would become a Chriſtian, but not ſo ſoon; a thing which was then well enough underſtood, and that ſufficiently diſcovered his intention. The next day about two a clock in the afternone the Father went to ſee the

*Sect.* 1.

been ſatisfied, the ſame happens by the only fault of the pipes, and not of the ſource; or rather it is a work of the Divine Juſtice, which cannot fail, and which diſpoſeth of all things for the beſt, and as is moſt neceſſary for us; in regard whereof, I render infinite thanks to the King of Heaven, whoſe pleaſure it hath been, that his divine will ſhould be this way accompliſhed, and do not complain of the Kings of the earth, ſince my ſins have made me unworthy of meriting more.

# *FINIS.*

## *ERRATA.*

PAg 4. l. 17. *read* firſt Vice-Roy. p. 10. l. 36. *r.* victual and ammunition. p. 21. l. ult. *r.* of a Pagan. p. 60. l. ult. *r.* ſhrewd. p 77. l. 33. *r.* ſpeech. p. 80. l. 30. *r.* lands aſide. p. 83. l. 7. *r.* equalled. p. 95. l. 8. *r.* remorſe of conſcience. l. 49. *for* deſerved, *r.* demanded. p. 100. l. 28. *r.* poor folks. p. 103. l. 33. *for* Chaucer *r.* Chaucir. p. 104. l. 48. *for* as, *r.* us. p. 111. l. 20. *r.* picos of ſilver. p. 121. l. 10. *for* levied, *r.* lived. p. 123. l. 8. *r.* render. p. 124. l. 44. *r.* many light. p. 125. l. 3. *r.* canals. l. 12. *r.* praiſes. p. 127. l. 18. *r.* conſervation. p. 128. l. 19. *r.* allegeions. p. 129. l. 1. *for* conſtrained, *r.* painted. p. 130. l. 2. *r.* ſtandiſh. l. 17. *for* ye are, *r.* yea are. l. 32. *r.* valuable. l. 40 *r.* who being able. p. 132. l. ult. *r.* Paguen. p. 133. l. 19. *r.* baliffers. p. 135. l. 30. *r.* Ushers. l. 44. *for* righly *r.* richly. p. 136. l. 12. *r.* remarkable. l. 48. *r.* antiquitie. p. 137. l. 10. *r.* Harraes. l. 46. *r.* ſo extravagant. p. 138. l. 5. *r.* Exiles: l. 9. *r* abutting on. p. 139. l. 1. *r.* plenary. p. 141. l. 13. *r.* arches or vaults. p. 142. l. 15. *for* entertained, *r.* infolded. p. 144. l. 25. *for* love, *r.* lone. p. 149. l. 2 *r.* ſtratagems. ſtrangeneſſe. p. 150. l. 21. *r.* breaking. p. 155. l. 16. *r.* Nizianeoo. p. 155. *r* obliged to hold. p. 163. l. 13. *r.* at their pleaſure. p. 241. l. 1. *r.* Timplan. l. 46. *r.* this Prince. l. 47. *r.* leagues in bredth. p. 242. l. 21. *r.* reputation. p. 244. l. ult. *for* undivided, *r.* undiſcovered. p. 248. l. 14. *r.* Elegie. p. 243. *r.* ſavages.